
我在漫威做英雄
超凡凡小云 著

Information

Table of Contents URL: https://www.fanmtl.com/novel/ke407806.html

Host: Jason Lee Hero Attributes: Primary Internal Skill (Minor Success) Hero Abilities: Basic Fighting (Proficient) Basic Cold Weapons (Proficient) Basic Firearms (Proficient) Strength: 180KG (Internal Skill with Bonus) Speed: Top speed of 9 meters in 122 seconds (Internal Skill with Bonus) Reaction: Instantaneous response speed [-] milliseconds (Internal Skill with Bonus)...

Chapter 1 Peaceful Coexistence

In a special ability school in the suburbs of Beijing, since the last time Deacon attacked Li Jie, Deacon's life has become very difficult. The reason is that no matter from which angle you look at it, Li Jie is an extremely important partner of the mutants.

Li Jie, who is both an underground covert operative, Nightcrawler, and the boss of the publicly known Marvel Comics company, is a very critical figure for the mutants, especially Charles.

As the boss of Marvel Comics, Li Jie holds a very important position in Charles' heart, because his comic magazine "Special Forces" is almost the only media that openly supports and speaks for mutants.

Charles doesn't care about the copyright fees or other extra income this comic brings him. If necessary, he is even willing to pay out of his own pocket to fund the expansion of the comic's distribution area and increase advertising efforts. This is because after years of careful consideration and understanding of the current situation of mutants, Charles' most anticipated thing is to spread his concept of harmonious coexistence between mutants and ordinary people.

For him, this matter is too important. He is eager to spread this idea, and more importantly, the vision that Charles has always hoped for in his heart - ordinary people and mutants can one day coexist peacefully.

Therefore, this usually amiable old man showed some anger for the first time. Nevertheless, he still maintained the demeanor of a scholar when expressing his anger. He did not roar loudly, but adopted the method commonly used by teachers to deal with it. He put Deacon in solitary confinement for two days in order to thoroughly investigate the whole incident and find out why Deacon suddenly attacked Li Jie.

"So, you saw Paul and Daken talking, but you didn't hear clearly what they said,

and then Daken rushed to Jason and attacked him?" In Charles' office, Iceman Bob, as an eyewitness, described in detail all the circumstances he knew. Because this involved violence between students and even malicious incidents of attempting to hurt others, Charles took a more cautious attitude towards this.

In the office, besides Charles and Iceman, only Daken's father Wolverine was listening. Unlike Charles, who could maintain his composure and rationality even when angry, Wolverine, as a father still in the internship period, had a simple and rough way of education. He believed that if a child was disobedient, especially if he tried to hurt others, he should be taught a lesson with his fists, so that he would understand what to do and what not to do.

Wolverine always educated those street thugs in this way, but before taking action, the professor stopped him: "Violence can't solve the problem. You are his father, not an instructor who is here to punish him! Do you want him to become a street thug, or follow your old path?"

The professor's words immediately calmed Wolverine down. He followed the professor's advice and only punished Daken with two days of confinement. As a father, Wolverine was also eager to find out the truth of the matter. Although he had just started practicing as a father, he also hoped to do better. As the professor said, he hoped that his son Daken could have a real life, have his own friends and lovers, and eventually form a family and live a complete life, instead of being lonely all his life like himself.

So, in a way, Logan (Wolverine) actually cares about Daken. However, this rough guy doesn't know how to express or release his love.

When Iceman told Wolverine everything he had witnessed, he immediately lost control, "That kid! I knew it! Someone must have instigated Daken to do bad things!" He instantly found an excuse for Daken: It must have been Fireman Paul who instigated him, it must have been that kid who said something to provoke Daken.

Without any hesitation, Wolverine pushed open the office door, intending to capture Paul and ask him what he had said.

"Logan! Logan!" Professor Charles called twice behind Wolverine, but he ignored him.

Paul and Iceman are classmates and in the same class. When Iceman Bob was called to Professor Charles' office for a talk, Fireman Paul was in the classroom.

The teacher in the class was Jean Grey. Wolverine barged into the classroom without saying hello to Jean, and walked straight to Paul's seat. Before the others in the classroom could react, he grabbed Paul's collar and tried to drag him out of the classroom. Paul didn't understand and instinctively wanted to resist: "What are you doing!"

At this moment, Logan was in a terrible mood and had no intention of talking to Paul. He pulled Paul hard, dragged him from his seat to the ground, and began to drag him on the ground. Paul's desk and chair were pulled over by Wolverine in the violent pulling, making a loud noise.

"Logan! What are you doing!" Jean was stunned and didn't understand what was going on with Wolverine.

"What am I going to do? Jean, you should ask this guy what he did to Deacon. Now please get out of the way!" This time, Logan rarely cared about Jean's face.

Perhaps after meeting Daken, the positions of some important people in Wolverine's heart have quietly changed.

Ignoring Jean's cries, in front of all the students, Wolverine dragged Paul all the way to Professor Charles' office in an extremely rough manner.

"Tell me the truth, what did you say to Deacon? You'd better not lie to me!" The Fire Man was thrown roughly to the floor of Professor Charles' office by Logan. The fall was so strong that his ribs were in great pain.

This caused the fireman's chest to come into close contact with the hard floor, causing Paul to grimace in pain, and even his ribs began to hurt.

"Logan, calm down!" Seeing Logan treating Paul so rudely, Professor Charles seemed a little anxious and spoke out to stop him.

At the same time, Qin followed Logan into the office, "Professor, what's going on? We were in class, and Logan suddenly broke in and dragged Paul away!"

Jean was very angry about Logan's behavior and complained to the professor.

"Ask him yourself what he said to Daken!" Logan looked at Paul with his eyes wide open.

The Iceman in the office turned to Jean and explained the whole incident. Paul then realized that it was Bob who went to complain to the professors. He glared at Bob fiercely.

"I didn't instigate Deacon to do anything bad!" Paul struggled to get up from the floor and began to defend himself. At this moment, he was full of hatred for the informer Bob and the Wolverine Logan who dragged him out of the classroom and made him look as miserable as a dead dog.

Logan's behavior made him lose face in front of his classmates, especially in front of those important people! A rage burned in his heart. But he knew that losing his temper here would not benefit him, so he could only choose to clarify himself.

"I've already warned you not to lie to me!" Logan didn't want to believe what Paul said at all.

"I didn't lie! I can tell you what I said to Deacon at that time, but before that, Dr. Jean and Bob have to leave here first." Paul met Logan's gaze without fear.

Although he knew that he might not be Logan's opponent, Paul was tough and fearless, and he was really not afraid of Logan at all.

Seeing Paul's firm words, Charles glanced at Bob and Qin, and finally said, "Well, Bob and Qin, you go back to the classroom first."

After Bob and Jean left and closed the door, Charles asked Paul, "So Paul, can you tell me exactly what happened that day?"

Paul glared at Logan again, which made Logan even angrier.

"I've already said it, I didn't instigate Daken to attack anyone. I just asked him to play basketball together. We are good friends!" Paul defended loudly to Charles.

However, Logan was dismissive of this and snorted coldly, "Ha, my friend. You have a great excuse!"

"Logan, if you are a father and you know nothing about your son, then I think you'd better not talk nonsense in front of me!" Paul was rude to Logan and didn't give him any face at all.

Logan's behavior just now had already humiliated him, and now he could no longer tolerate it.

When Logan heard this, he wanted to stretch out his claws and stab Paul directly.

"It's because you don't know at all that your son Daken now likes a girl, Katie. And that day Katie was walking with a man named Jason. I just told him about it!" Paul questioned Logan angrily.

"I never encouraged Daken to do anything aggressive. He liked that girl and wanted her to be his girlfriend. I just told him, 'Your girlfriend was taken away by someone else.' I just reminded him that he should act quickly and express his feelings instead of lying on the grass in the sun! If you don't believe me, you can ask the professor to check my memory!"

"If I tell you a lie, you can use your claws to rip out my heart, stuff it into the belly of a Christmas roast turkey, and let the homeless eat it!"

Paul's passionate roar frightened Logan so much that he was speechless for a moment, "You, you said, Daken is in love?"

Instantly, Wolverine's momentum softened, and Charles showed an expression of "as expected". If a man falls deeply in love with a woman, it is not surprising that he would do something outrageous.

"Yes, to be exact, he is in unrequited love. He has a crush on the girl named Katie, but he doesn't dare to confess. Logan, if this is all you can do as a father, you might as well quit as soon as possible. You don't even know what your own son likes. And you blame others so casually. I really doubt whether you are suitable to be a teacher in this school."

Paul continued to mock Logan fiercely, but Charles did not stand up to speak for Logan. After all, what Logan had just done to Paul was indeed worse than that.

After Paul finished speaking, he raised his voice to Logan provocatively, "If you have any questions about your son that you don't understand, you can continue to

ask me. I may know him better than you do. If you don't want to ask, I'll go back to class now."

After hearing what Paul said, Logan sighed deeply, and sat down weakly on a velvet single chair, scratching his hair with both hands. His thoughts were in a mess...

A few days later, when Daken finished his two-day confinement, Logan did want to find an opportunity to talk to Daken about girls. However, Logan himself had never experienced a normal relationship. And Daken did not take the initiative to tell him about this. Did he not want him to know?

Logan tried to bring it up several times, but in the end he had to give up. He was quite troubled by this matter because he was not good at communicating with others, and Daken was also not willing to open up to him because of his childhood experience. Although he could feel Daken's dependence on him, Logan found himself helpless in responding and expressing himself. He really felt that he was a failure as a father.

Chapter 2 Wolverine

When everyone thought that what happened at Xavier's School for Gifted People was a thing of the past, Paul found Daken in the common room during his evening break.

"Hi, Daken. I know some little secrets about Katie, do you want to know?" Paul looked at Daken with a smile on his lips.

It was already 8 o'clock in the evening. For the students of Xavier School for Gifted People, they were either doing their homework in the library or playing with something in the common room to kill time, because the school's lights-out time was set at 10 o'clock in the evening.

Therefore, the children still have plenty of time to play and have fun at night. However, at this time, there will be no more students on the school lawn. After all, what are they doing on the lawn at night?

Paul led Daken out of the common room, and the two strolled on the lawn inside the school. Because the school is located in a more remote area in the suburbs of New York, the light pollution here is not as serious as in the center of New York City.

Therefore, on a clear night, you can see many twinkling stars. With the twinkling stars in the sky, Paul and Deacon walked to a bench next to the lawn and sat down.

Paul mentioned some little secrets about Katie, and Daken followed him out without much thought. Although Daken came to the mutant school and met a group of classmates with the same identity and level, he was still not very good at communicating with others. This was due to his life experience in the first fifteen years, which made his personality a little closed, which was understandable.

However, the strange thing is that for some reason, Daken always feels that Paul is different from others. In the few times they met, Paul won Daken's favor. The two of them felt that they had met too late and had a very pleasant conversation.

For example, regarding his crush on Katie, Daken never thought of telling his father Wolverine, but instead accidentally revealed the secret in a casual chat with Paul.

When you accidentally reveal your secret to someone, deep down in your heart, you actually trust this person more.

As for Paul, Deacon has a similar sense of trust. The interactions between people often have no clear logic, nor many reasons to explain, just like the situation between Deacon and Paul.

"I apologize for the trouble my impulsiveness caused you last time." Deacon was referring to the last time he was so hot-blooded on campus that he wanted to kill Li Jie immediately.

Paul shook his head. "No need to apologize. It's nothing. If the girl I love deeply was taken away by someone, I would probably lose my mind and want to kill that person. It's just that your behavior was too radical that time. I really didn't expect it at the time, and that's why you were put in solitary confinement."

Daken shrugged. "It doesn't matter. I'm used to things like confinement. I've experienced worse times before."

Paul smiled, looked at the starry sky, and said with emotion: "You know, Daken. People like us, mutants, are actually very difficult to integrate into society."

"There will always be people harassing us in various ways. Some are afraid of us, some are terrified of us, and there are also those who harbor ill will towards us and even try to take advantage of us. This world is not fair to us mutants, and it can even be said to be quite cruel!"

Daken agrees with Paul's words, because he has experienced far more cruel things than these. In his opinion, the world where even his own mother cannot be trusted is extremely malicious.

If Logan hadn't appeared and taken him away from the East, Daken didn't know

how long he could have lasted in this environment. That crazy and painful life tortured him every moment. Maybe one day, his nerves would suddenly collapse and he would become a soulless puppet at the mercy of others.

Daken doesn't want to recall that life. For him, the life he has now is what he longs for. He has a father, even though he doesn't know how to express his fatherly love, but at least he is much better than Mariko.

In addition, there is a group of companions here. Although not everyone can become a friend, since everyone is a mutant, there will be no discrimination or fear when getting along with each other.

This is a state of life that makes people feel comfortable and at ease, coupled with the beautiful and charming girl Katie. When Daken saw her for the first time, he knew that from that moment on, every beat of his heart was timing this encounter.

From then on, I opened my eyes every morning just to see that girl’s smile again.

She is like the dew on the petals in the morning, like the morning star in the night sky; she is like the most mouth-watering honey in the world, and like the last orchid in the valley.

Just like the stars accompany the sun and the moon, just like white clouds decorate the blue sky; just like rivers will eventually flow into the sea, just like flying birds will eventually land.

When the moment becomes eternity, when the glance back turns into a vow.

Her laughter became the morning bell and evening drum in my heart, and her light and cheerful steps were the most moving dance steps in the world.

I fall for you and make an eternal vow for you. Like a knight loyal to the empire, I will never retreat on the road to charge for you until the moment my body is stepped on by someone.

My soul will eventually return to you, and you are everything to me, my goddess - Katie.

Daken's love is suppressed yet fierce, which may be related to the lack of love

and care he has suffered over the years.

Paul looked up at the sky and continued, "I am different from you and the other students inside. We are the same kind of people, Daken. I know it very well. I felt this way when I first saw you."

Paul glanced at Daken briefly.

"I used to kill people. They were my adoptive parents." He said calmly, "When my parents found out that I was a mutant, they abandoned me. Then the government gave me to adoptive parents."

"If adopting me hadn't allowed them to get some government subsidies, I guess they wouldn't have adopted me. They didn't treat me very well." Paul said with a smile, without going into detail about how badly his adoptive parents treated him.

"As my abilities grew, I killed them. It's hard for normal people and mutants to live in peace. I've always believed that only mutants can truly save mutants."

"Do you know how Katie met that Jason?" Paul changed the subject and mentioned something about Katie.

"What's going on?" Daken was still very interested in Katie.

"I heard it from her best friend. Katie used to work in a cafe, but she lost the job due to the fierce criticism of the society against the mutant issue." Paul continued in a low voice.

"Once she accidentally revealed her superpowers, the customers at the cafe started to discriminate against her. They were afraid of her and even wanted to hurt her!"

Hearing that someone wanted to hurt Katie, Daken couldn't help but clench his fists.

"Just then, Jason showed up and helped her solve those problems, so Katie immediately got so close to this man." After Paul finished speaking, Daken couldn't help but feel a little regretful. Now it seemed that he had no chance to play the role of a hero saving a beautiful woman. What's worse, the last time he

tried to kill Li Jie in front of Katie, Katie left a very bad impression of him.

Now, whenever Katie saw Daken in the corridor, she would deliberately take a detour. If she had to avoid him, she would pretend that she didn't see him at all.

To be honest, Katie had tried her best to restrain herself. After all, Li Jie was her best friend, and she actually wanted to find an opportunity to teach Daken a lesson.

However, Katie's indifference towards him alone was enough to frustrate Daken.

"I wish I had been there." Daken sighed helplessly.

"So what if you were there?" Paul said with a hint of self-mockery, "You are also a mutant. Are you going to kill those people in public and become a wanted criminal?"

"Finally, you and Katie will be arrested together. If you are lucky, the state court may sentence you to a fixed-term imprisonment. But if you are unlucky, you will be sent to the laboratory as experimental subjects. What can you do then?"

Paul's words made Deacon feel very discouraged, and he didn't know how to respond for a moment.

"I like my current life, Daken. Going to school every day, studying with classmates, playing with friends, and being with people I like - these days are so good. I don't want to see anyone ruin all this." Paul's words were met with repeated nods from Daken.

"I don't like such a peaceful life being disturbed either, Paul. This is the life I yearn for."

Paul listened to Daken's words and smiled faintly, without commenting. "But some people don't want us to live such a stable life forever. Have you heard of Macaulay?"

"I've heard my father mention him occasionally, but I don't really know much about him." Daken shook his head.

"That's right. Professor Charles hopes to turn this place into a greenhouse so that

we 'flowers' can grow safely here. But although the greenhouse isolates the wind and rain, it does not mean that there is no wind and rain in the outside world." Paul began to explain.

"Macauley is a guy who hates mutants extremely. He has great influence in the government and has a lot of say in the media. He has been pushing for a bill - what he calls the 'Mutant Management Bill'!"

Paul gritted his teeth as he pronounced these words. "But the so-called mutant management bill is actually no different from the concentration camp policy against the Jews seventy years ago. The reason Katie exposed her mutant identity was because she was frightened by Macaulay's speech on TV."

Hearing this, Daken couldn't help but frown.

"I said, I like my life now, Daken," Paul said firmly.

"At the same time, I also believe that only mutants can truly save mutants. I don't pin my hopes on others. I hope that the people I care about can live in a land that is safe for mutants."

"To achieve this, we need to take action. I tell you the truth, Macaulay is on TV promoting his mutant management bill. As long as you search carefully on the Internet, I believe you can find relevant information."

"He wants to put me, you, Katie, and everyone like us in a cage and keep us there to die. We have to do something."

"Professor Charles is a good man, but he always puts his hopes on others. I think we should take the initiative."

Paul's eyes sparkled with a firm belief. "Mutants should fight for the future of mutants!"

Daken whispered, "So what do you want to do?"

"I'm going to kill someone, would you like to join me?"

Although the Mutant School is located in the suburbs of New York City and adopts a semi-closed teaching method, this does not mean that Charles will let

his students study and live in this closed state all the time.

Chapter 3 New Movie

Ultimately, his goal is to integrate students into the lives of ordinary people and ultimately achieve peaceful coexistence between mutants and ordinary humans.

Therefore, at Xavier School for the Gifted, there are outdoor courses every month, organizing students to visit museums and famous tourist attractions in New York City, such as the Statue of Liberty.

Of course, the school also has holidays. For lower grade students, they cannot go out alone. If they want to go to New York City, they must be accompanied by a teacher. However, there are no such strict rules for higher grade students.

After all, teenagers aged fourteen or fifteen are already quite independent, and they can no longer be imprisoned in school. Young people always like to be lively, and they can't be kept in this remote suburban school in New York.

Therefore, during the holidays, if senior students apply and inform teachers on campus of their itinerary, including where they are going, when they will return and leave contact information, teachers will usually approve them to travel to downtown New York.

On weekends, many senior students would call their friends to go to New York City, some to watch the latest movies, some to go shopping in the mall, or to find the special snacks and delicacies of New York City to satisfy their appetite.

Through the training at Xavier's School for the Gifted, students can control their superpowers well and no longer have their mutant powers out of control. So Professor Charles himself supports students going out to play.

In addition to relying on him, the old professor, normal social interactions more importantly depend on the children themselves to practice.

When a new round of rest days came, Daken asked his father Logan for

permission to go out.

"Where do you want to go?" Logan was preparing lessons in the office. It was unbelievable that such a rough guy could become a teacher. He was mainly responsible for teaching physical education and history.

"Going around New York City, I want to buy some things." Daken answered standing in front of Logan.

"Do you need me to go with you? You're not familiar with New York City yet." Logan tried to get closer to Daken.

"Hmm~" Daken seemed a little hesitant, "No, I want to buy some personal items."

Logan tried to look Daken in the eye, but Daken didn't meet his gaze. Finally, Logan had to give up, put down the textbook in his hand, leaned back in his chair and shook his head helplessly.

"Okay, remember to come back early. I'll give you one hundred and fifty dollars, which should be enough for you to use in New York City. Don't spend it recklessly." As he said that, Logan took out his wallet from his shirt pocket, pulled out two bills and handed them to Daken.

Since Paul mentioned that Daken had a crush on Katie, Logan could not help wondering if Daken went out to buy Katie a gift to win her favor. However, Daken had not told Logan the truth, and Logan did not ask him. He felt that he should not treat Daken like Mariko did. Maybe he should give Daken some personal space and let him grow freely, and he only needed to protect him silently.

Daken took the money from Logan and nodded to him. "I'll be back soon after I finish my work."

At this moment, Logan did not realize what the purpose of his son's trip to New York was.

As Paul said to Daken last night, "We're on the same page."

"I killed my adoptive parents with my own hands." "We are the same kind of

people."

"I want to maintain the status quo, and no one can disrupt it."

"You and Katie will be captured and used as experimental subjects!"

These words lingered in Daken's mind like a spell, until Paul said the most crucial sentence: "Only mutants can save mutants!"

Deacon is convinced of the truth of this sentence. For the sake of his current life - school, father, and the girl he loves, he is willing to pay any price, even if it means killing someone again!

When they arrived at the shuttle bus station to New York, Paul had been waiting for Deacon there for a long time.

"You didn't let me down, Daken." Paul walked up and put his arm around Daken's shoulders.

"Because only mutants can save mutants." Daken said this in a firm tone.

……

Macaulay is a vehement anti-mutant activist. This is evident in his many television speeches and comments. He is both a New York City council member and a well-known news commentator.

The anti-mutant policies he advocated include requiring all mutants in the United States to be legally registered and made public. Allowing the public to choose whether they want to live in the same community with mutants and whether they want their children to go to the same school as mutants. Companies and businesses should also have the right to know whether their employees are mutants.

In some more radical occasions, Macaulay even proposed that all mutants live in the same community, attend the same school, and adopt a similar isolation management model to the Jews in the past to control mutants.

This is like the treatment of lepers in the 13th century, where they were rounded up and left to die. Macaulay sees mutants as a contagious disease, as if society

would be plagued by the disease as long as there are mutants.

This radical policy made many mutants dissatisfied and even fearful. However, Macaulay's remarks won him the support of some people, especially those radical factions who were full of fear of mutants.

He had just returned from Washington the day before yesterday, where he tried to persuade Congress to adopt his proposal.

"If all vampires can register, why can't mutants? I think the bill against vampires is great!" he said.

However, Congress is having a headache at the moment, mainly because of problems in Eastern Europe. The war in Latvia is mostly at a stalemate, Russia has lost a lot of soldiers, and their president is unwilling to make unnecessary sacrifices.

Tony began lobbying Congress, the President, and even the other five permanent members, claiming that he could try to persuade Doom and others. This sparked a heated debate within Congress.

Some people advocate a peaceful solution to the Eastern European crisis, but others insist on continuing the war. But obviously, only a very small number of people want to go to war.

Due to these problems, the bill proposed by Macaulay did not attract much attention. Nevertheless, his trip to Washington to promote his bill still attracted the attention and follow-up reports of many media.

It seems that Macaulay has been at odds with mutants all his life. As long as there is an issue involving mutants, he will definitely suppress it to the end. As for why he has such a deep hatred for mutants, no one knows.

Under Paul's guidance, Daken also began to understand the man named Macaulay. This middle-aged man wore gold-rimmed glasses, had a slicked-back hair, and wore a neat and clean suit that was ironed flat without a single wrinkle. He looked like any successful person.

But beneath his mild-mannered exterior lies a demon that strikes fear into the hearts of all mutants.

Daken couldn't imagine whether the new life he had just begun to like could be maintained if Macaulay's new bill was implemented and all mutants were pushed to the point of being at the mercy of others.

As Paul said, they are likely to end up as experimental subjects in the laboratory like him and his father. Daken must stop this from happening, for himself, for Logan, for Katie, and for all mutants!

Macaulay's residence in New York is in a small independent villa on Long Island. This bachelor, who is nearly 40 years old, only has hourly workers come to help with cleaning every Thursday.

He has been the only one living in this small villa for a long time.

He had just flown back to New York from Washington yesterday, which made him feel a little tired, so he got up much later than usual this morning, and it was almost noon when he woke up.

Shaking his slightly tired head, Macaulay wanted to go to the kitchen to make a cup of coffee to refresh himself.

While he was making coffee, he noticed that there seemed to be something different in the room.

His intuition was right, Daken was lurking among them. After many training sessions with the Black Ninja, Daken relied on his experience to master some basic ninjutsu of the Black Ninja, such as how to sneak in and conceal his own breath. If he didn't know these basic ninjutsu, in a fight with the Black Ninja, Daken would often suffer a tragic end.

Killing Macaulay was Paul's plan, and Daken agreed, because it was the bills pushed by Macaulay and his speeches on TV that exacerbated the plight of mutants.

Paul wanted to get rid of the man named Macaulay quietly without touching the security system in the villa. But he was not sure he could do it, so he found Daken. Daken was also moved by Paul's argument and agreed to participate.

Now that this man who is the enemy of all mutants appears before him, Daken jumps out of his hiding place without hesitation and rushes straight towards

Macaulay.

Macaulay was terrified when a stranger suddenly broke into his home and obviously posed a threat to him.

He instinctively put his hand to the faucet, as if he wanted to take some action. But when Daken's fingertips popped out the bone claws,

Macaulay realized that the person who wanted to kill him was a mutant, and he immediately gave up his original plan.

A fiery spark flashed in his eyes, but it was fleeting. He seemed to have turned into a rusty forty-year-old middle-aged man. He barely dodged before Daken's claws pierced his heart. He didn't scream or even press any alarm in the room until he died.

When the claw pierced his heart, a strange smile flashed across his face, and then quickly disappeared.

When Daken pierced his heart, Macaulay fell silently on the floor of his home, bleeding everywhere. He was killed simply like an ordinary person, without any resistance, which was easier than Daken expected.

Paul, who had been keeping watch outside for Deacon, learned that the mission was completed, so he used his fire control ability to set the entire villa on fire, especially Macaulay's body, which was destroyed without a trace, making it impossible to tell that he was killed by the Claw.

Paul wanted to disguise the incident as a fire caused by an accident in the kitchen. After everything was done, Paul and Deacon left the scene early according to the pre-planned escape route.

Just as they were evacuating, in another place unknown to them, a man in a black windbreaker stood on the top of a distant mountain, holding an ultra-high-definition telescope and watching the Macaulay Villa which was beginning to burn.

Chapter 4 Jean Grey

Thank you very much for everything you have done so far, Congressman Macaulay. I will take care of the rest of the matter and do my best to fulfill your wishes.

Katie has been in a bad mood recently. This is all due to the previous incident of Deacon attacking Li Jie, which made her feel deeply guilty, especially towards Li Jie.

At that time, Li Jie came to visit her specially and brought gifts from the East. However, such a thing happened in school, which made Katie very distressed. Since joining Xavier School for Gifted People, the atmosphere here makes her feel that her classmates and teachers are as close as a family.

This is also the atmosphere that Professor Charles has been working hard to create. He hopes to build a warm place that students can regard as home.

Influenced by this atmosphere, Katie regarded the entire mutant school as a big family, where everyone supported each other like family members. However, a member of this "family" actually tried to kill her best friend Li Jie, which made her feel as sad as if she had hurt Li Jie herself. Although Li Jie repeatedly told her that it was not a big deal, Katie still felt guilty and hoped to do something for Li Jie.

Katie, who usually gets along well with everyone and always has a smile on her face, unexpectedly begins to hate one person for the first time, that is Deaken, who tried to kill Li Jie but ultimately failed.

Daken wanted to deal with murder, but his punishment was just two days of confinement! In Katie's opinion, this was undoubtedly a huge injustice. She couldn't help but wonder if it was because Daken's father was Wolverine that the professor protected him in this matter?

As a result, Katie even hated Wolverine. Now, if she met Wolverine in the corridor, she would choose to pretend not to see him unless it was necessary.

Logan could probably guess that Katie acted like this because what Deken did was too outrageous.

As for Daken himself, Katie has now completely pretended that this person does not exist in the world. She has crossed out Daken's name from the list of mutant families in her mind and no longer recognizes that he belongs to this school or this family.

Katie did not go back to her home in New York on weekends. The reason was that her parents were both office workers with irregular working hours, and sometimes they had to work on weekends. So when both her parents were at work, she usually would not go home.

In addition, due to her parents' limited income, Katie was very frugal in her living expenses. She had no extra money to spend on taking a bus to the movies or going to the mall to buy clothes.

Katie is very talented in the field of art, whether it is dancing or painting, she is good at it. However, no matter which country or which era, art requires a lot of financial investment.

Katie's parents couldn't afford ballet lessons or expensive art classes, so for a long time, these talents were just ways for Katie to entertain herself.

Due to the lack of professional guidance, she could only teach herself painting, but without the guidance of professional teachers, her progress was always slow, even though she had talent in this area.

But after entering the mutant school, some of the teachers here had some knowledge of painting, such as Jean Grey, who received a long period of professional painting training during her teenage years.

Jean Grey can give Katie some guidance from basic sketching to color application, which makes Katie's life in her spare time colorful. On sunny afternoons, she can carry her homemade easel and go to the school lawn or the pond to paint quietly. Whether it is still life sketching or trying watercolor coloring, she can devote herself to it until sunset.

Katie thought, maybe she could become a painter in the future? Even if she couldn't become a painter, it would be nice to work as a painter in Li Jie's company. She could participate in creating works that tell the stories of mutants and let more people know about this group.

With this simple and pure belief, Katie was particularly attentive in learning painting.

When Deacon returned to school from New York, it was afternoon. Katie was sitting in the courtyard of the campus painting, the golden sunlight shining on her body, giving her a halo.

The sunlight penetrated the air, illuminating the delicate and soft hair on the girl's ears - a feature common to every young girl. Her slightly upturned mouth, plump lips, long and delicate eyelashes interlaced between her drooping eyelids, and her seemingly casually coiled golden hair made her look like the goddess of love, Aphrodite.

Daken was holding the gifts he brought back from New York. He did not lie to Logan and was indeed going to New York to buy some items.

He brought back paints and brushes from the art supply store, a brand new set of painting tools, and spent all the $150 that Logan gave him, plus the $50 in pocket money he had saved, for a total of $200.

This new set of painting tools is far superior to Katie's current old, bald paintbrushes and homemade easel.

Daken wanted to use this to ease the relationship between him and Katie, but he had no idea how outrageous his behavior was last time, and even less did he know how much Katie hated him. When he walked towards Katie for the first time in his life and was about to speak, it was not Katie's smile that greeted him.

There was a "pop" sound. It was the sound of Katie putting away the easel. She didn't even care that the paint on the canvas hadn't dried yet, and she closed the easel in a hurry. She didn't seem to care whether the painting would be ruined, because the person she didn't want to see the most at the moment was the person she hated.

"Hello, Katie, I recognize you, my name is Deacon. I came here to apologize to

you for what happened last time." Deacon watched Katie busy packing up to leave. He could see that Katie obviously didn't want to face this person.

"You are Daken, right?" Katie responded to Daken with a fake smile, not even pretending to be friendly. "You should not apologize to me, you should apologize to the person you want to hurt. And I'm leaving now, don't stand in my way!" Katie pushed Daken away, not intending to continue talking to him.

Daken quickly followed and said, "I really want to apologize to you. Look, I bought you new painting tools in New York."

He showed the new painting tools in his hand to Katie. "I know you like painting. The tools you used before are very old, so I bought this new set. I sincerely apologize to you and ask for your forgiveness. Please don't be angry anymore, okay?"

Katie walked very fast, just wanting to get back to the dormitory as soon as possible to avoid this annoying guy. After hearing what Daken said, she stopped and gently patted the painting tools that Daken handed over. "No need, Daken, as long as you don't appear in front of me again, I won't be angry with you anymore!" Then, Katie used her superpowers to pass through the obstacles and left Daken.

All of this was seen by Logan from a distance, and he said to himself, "This silly boy." Despite what he said, Logan still decided to comfort Daken. After all, this was his son's first time to fall in love, and also his first time to break up, so he must be feeling bad.

"Young man, you have to know that men will always experience a few heartbreaks. Not every woman will like you." As Daken was walking back dejectedly, Logan came out from the aisle next to him and talked to him.

Logan looked like he was trying to enlighten him, but Daken said in surprise: "Dad! Why are you here? You saw everything!"

Logan waved his hand, telling Daken not to take it too seriously, "Hey, every man will encounter this situation. Either you reject others or you are rejected. As long as..." However, when he approached Daken and wanted to pat him on the shoulder to have a deeper conversation, he noticed something unusual.

"Boy, where does the smell of blood come from?" Logan smelled a very faint, almost negligible smell of blood on Daken, but this smell did not belong to Daken, but the smell of a stranger's blood.

Daken was stunned by the fact that Logan saw through him immediately. He himself had a strong sense of smell and had repeatedly confirmed that there should be no smell of blood on his body.

However, compared to the old wolf, the young wolf cub lacks not only physical fitness, but also the experience and wisdom of the old wolf. In this regard, he is still far from enough.

"Show me your hand! Quick!" Logan's tone was extremely serious. This was the first time he showed such strong anger towards Daken. His veins were already bulging.

Daken stretched out his claws, and Logan immediately smelled a stronger smell of blood, and an ominous association flashed through his mind - Daken killed someone!

Once you kill the first one, it won't be that difficult to kill the second one.

As Charles was typing out the course schedule for the next semester in his office, Logan burst into the room with Daken without knocking. He threw Daken roughly into a separate seat before closing the door.

"Logan, I've told you many times that you are a teacher now and you can't behave so rudely!" Charles accused dissatisfiedly.

"But Charles, this kid just killed someone!" Logan pointed at Daken who was sitting in his seat with a confused look on his face, which surprised Charles.

"Daken, tell me who you killed and if there was anyone else with you. You must tell the truth now! Now!" Logan bent down and looked at Daken in the seat anxiously.

However, Daken was unwilling to answer and kept his mouth tightly shut. Logan wanted to hit him several times, but he finally held back.

"Charles, keep an eye on him for me! I'm sure he must have accomplices! He

doesn't know anyone in New York!" As he said that, Logan rushed out like crazy, sniffing around every student.

"Really? Deacon? You killed someone? Did you kill him on your own initiative?" Charles looked at Deacon and deliberately emphasized the word "on your own initiative".

"You know we can't just kill people at will. We don't have the right to take other people's lives."

Daken turned his head to the side and said in a low but firm voice: "I am doing this for the future of mutants!"

Charles' pupils contracted. He had heard this slogan from someone countless times.

When Logan found Paul, who also had that smell, and brought him to Charles' office again like a dead dog, ready to use violence to force the truth out of him, Cyclops Scott rushed in.

He still didn't know what was going on here, but that didn't stop him from telling the professor about the big thing that was about to happen. "Professor, turn on the TV. Something big is happening."

Chapter 5 Spider Beacon

Charles said as he turned on the TV in his office and tuned it to Fox News New York. The live broadcast on the screen showed that at noon that day, a fire broke out in the home of Mr. Macaulay, a New York City council member who lived in Long Island. According to the police, Mr. Macaulay was indeed at home at the time of the incident and unfortunately died in the fire.

As we all know, Mr. Macaulay is a politician who is firmly against mutants. The fire caused serious damage to his body, and the police found it difficult to determine the cause of death. However, some analysts believe that it cannot be ruled out that the fire may have been assassinated by radical mutants.

The reason for Macaulay's murder was most likely related to a bill against mutants that he had been pushing hard... As the news was broadcast, Logan and Charles looked at Daken and Paul with surprise, while Scott, who had just arrived, was still confused and didn't understand.

Logan asked with a dry throat: "Did you do this?" After hearing this question, Scott immediately understood something. He said in surprise: "Wait, Logan, you mean the two of them? Oh my God!"

At this point, it was no use for Daken and Paul to argue. When Logan smelled the blood on them, their secret had been exposed.

"We do this just for the future of mutants!" Paul was thrown heavily to the ground by Logan and he was unable to get up yet.

Logan and Scott's eyes naturally turned to Charles. Charles seemed a little hesitant, but finally said apologetically: "I'm sorry, kids, I may need to enter your mind to take a look."

Charles realized that something was not right. It was irrational for two children to have the audacity to go to New York City and kill a city councilman.

Daken is less likely to have committed a crime because he has been under close surveillance by Logan; in contrast, Paul is more likely to be suspected. Charles is not a stubborn person, and he will not read other people's minds at will unless it is necessary. However, when it is really necessary to do so, he will act without hesitation.

So, while Logan and Scott were patiently waiting for Charles's findings, Charles couldn't help but gasp and leaned back in his wheelchair.

He stared at Paul in amazement, and uttered a shocking name - "Master of Illusion!"

Logan was not familiar with the name "Master of Illusion", and he had never heard of it. But Scott beside him was terrified of this man. When Charles said this name, he almost instinctively took a breath.

"Who is this guy?" Seeing Charles' shocked expression and Scott's fear, Logan couldn't help but ask.

However, Charles did not have time to answer him at this moment. Sitting in a wheelchair, Charles' eyes were fixed on Paul. Although it seemed that he was just simply looking at him, Charles was actually using his super powers.

It is a mind-controlling power that can change the whole world by himself. Some people have suggested that he use this power to brainwash all of humanity, after all, there are only a handful of people in the world who can resist his superpowers. Charles is fully capable of shaping the world into what he wants, but he sticks to his moral bottom line and prefers to realize his ideal world through normal means.

He didn't use his abilities easily, but that didn't mean his abilities had degraded. Just like now, he stared into Paul's eyes and used his mutant superpowers to cleanse Paul's mind of the illusions left by the Illusion Master.

Paul's body was shaking violently, as if he was hit by a strong electric current, and his muscles were twitching uncontrollably. It was not until Charles stopped casting the spell that Paul stopped shaking, fainted, and fell to the ground. Meanwhile, Deacon at the side still had no idea what had happened.

Logan, the father who also didn't know the truth, was also confused at the

moment.

After Charles finished investigating Daken's superpowers, he slowly spoke, "Master of Illusion Jason is actually one of the students who were sent here before."

"His mutant ability is just as the name suggests. He is good at creating mental illusions and manipulating other people's minds." Charles explained to Logan while looking at Paul who was lying on the ground.

"I'll explain the details later. I've set up a mental cage for Paul, allowing him to temporarily escape the control of the Master of Illusions. Logan, take Daken back to the dormitory now. You must keep a close eye on him in the future. I think it's best to put him in a detention room. Scott, you also send Paul to a separate detention room."

Logan and Scott followed the instructions and sent the two children to separate detention rooms. At this time, Charles clenched his fists, and his knuckles turned pale due to excessive force.

Bang! His fist slammed heavily on the armrest of the wheelchair, making a deafening sound. Charles was angrier than ever before. Even though he had experienced countless setbacks, blows, and even betrayals, he had never been as angry as he was now.

Because someone had touched his most precious thing - the children of this academy!

Charles always treats all the students in the academy as his own children, because he places all his hopes for a better future on these children. For them, protecting and educating these children to grow up healthily is his mission and responsibility. He has decided to devote all his energy and life to the great cause of promoting the peaceful coexistence of mutants and ordinary people.

Charles could never accept the fact that his students had been trained to be bloody executioners. At this moment, for the first time, a strong urge to share () sprouted from deep in his heart.

Under Charles's manor, there is a secret base built specifically for the X-Men. Here, the Blackbird stealth fighter and advanced equipment for the X-Men are

all parked here. In addition, there is also a conference room dedicated to the X-Men.

At this moment, Charles summoned all the X-Men to this conference room. "I think everyone has understood the specific situation. What do you think about it?" Charles spoke without his usual gentleness, replaced by a serious tone.

Logan was the first to speak, and he raised the same question: "Who is that illusion master? What kind of person is he?"

Charles looked Logan straight in the eye and answered, "Master of Illusion Jason is a mutant with the talent of mind control and mental illusion. He was once a student in our school. His mind control ability is extremely terrifying, and he is good at creating all kinds of illusions."

Logan seemed a little surprised: "I thought there weren't many people with this kind of talent. Besides you and Jean, this illusion master can actually do what you do, and even remotely control people's minds?"

Charles heard this and shook his head. "That's not the case. The Master of Illusion does not have the ability to remotely control people's minds. His control range is limited. But he is good at setting up illusions, planting a seed in people's hearts, allowing it to take root and sprout, and influencing others through subtle hypnosis."

"And that's how Paul was influenced. The Master of Illusion planted a seed in his heart. As a mutant, Paul had accumulated anger towards humans because of the discrimination and abuse he had suffered. He also had a desire to build a safe and harmonious mutant society. The Master of Illusion took advantage of this gap and cleverly planted a seed that almost no one noticed."

"That makes Paul fight for the future mutant society. This is an idea that comes from deep in his heart and is irresistible to him." Charles said with a slight lament.

"Paul's weakness was exploited by the Master of Illusion. Once extreme ideas are born in one's mind, any extreme behavior is possible. Just like this time, he went with Daken to assassinate Macaulay. Paul was actually hypnotized."

"No wonder I felt something was wrong with Paul when I first saw him. His

eyes were dull at the time. He was in a state of exhaustion after losing control of his abilities for the first time. I thought it was a reaction after losing control. It turns out that the seeds of illusion had already been planted in Paul at that time." Cyclops Scott recalled the first time he met Paul.

"In that case, it is very likely that someone found an opportunity for him at the very beginning, and the seeds were planted when he lost control of his abilities." Charles nodded in agreement.

Charles stopped talking here, unwilling to discuss further. Logan understood that Charles did this to save Paul's face. Although Paul was hypnotized, Daken was deceived and foolishly used as a tool. Thinking of this, Logan couldn't help but feel a little worried.

Charles continued, "Master of Illusion Jason has poor control over his abilities. When he first came to our academy, his father begged us to heal his son."

At this point, Charles shook his head and sighed: "He regarded his son's mutant awakening as a disease and believed that it could be treated with medicine, just like an infectious disease."

"I tried to guide Jason onto the right path, but..." Charles shook his head again, "His father didn't want this. He simply wanted me to eliminate his son's superpowers. Until finally Jason lost control and killed his mother. His father, the man named Stryker, took Jason away and never came back."

Speaking of Stryker, Charles's face turned gloomy: "Stryker is a military general. Because of his son's affairs and the death of his wife, he has a strong prejudice against mutants. Now, Paul has traces of the Master of Illusion's supernatural powers, and he wants to use this to provoke other people's hostility towards mutants, especially hatred towards the students in our school!"

Charles shook his head firmly: "I can't let this happen again! Our students should not become tools of others. Now that this has happened, I believe Stryker must have a follow-up conspiracy. I will not allow these children to become his victims! X-Men, we need to rely on you this time!"

All the X-Men present looked at Charles with firm eyes and nodded heavily.

In this secret underground base, there is a terrifying weapon for all mankind: the

brain thinking enhancer. This device was built with the help of Charles' friend Magneto.

It can expand the range of Charles' brainwaves and strengthen their intensity. It can be said that when using this machine, the earth is almost invisible to Charles. Most of the brains of the seven billion people on the earth are unable to resist his invasion, with only a few exceptions.

Normally, Charles rarely uses this device. But today, he decided to use it to track Stryker's location. Because the illusion master Jason is proficient in illusion thinking, his thinking is one of the few in the world that can avoid Charles' detection. Therefore, Charles had to lock the search target on Stryker.

After locating the location of Stryker's mind, Charles immediately informed the X-Men of Stryker's current location.

Chapter 6 X-Men

It's your job to bring back the Master of Illusion, because it's too risky to leave him with Stryker. Hank has prepared a special injection for you that will help you resist the attacks of the illusion mind for a period of time. But you must act quickly when you see Jason, because the injection is only effective for a short period of thirty seconds. You need to immediately inject Jason with a specially customized tranquilizer.

Before all the X-Men boarded the Blackbird fighter, Charles gave them final instructions and handed them the special injection developed by Hank.

After all preparations were completed, the Blackbird fighter activated stealth mode and flew in the direction indicated by Charles.

……

In a hidden base located 1,000 kilometers away from New York City, a middle-aged man in military uniform with a stern look is arranging some matters for his subordinates. This serious middle-aged man is Stryker, and this secret base is used to develop X-weapons against mutants. Since Hydra launched the X-weapon project, in fact, the project has never really stopped, but has been transferred from the original Germany to the current United States. The person in charge of the project has also been replaced by Stryker from the former Red Skull.

"How is he doing lately?" The "he" Stryker mentioned was the person who caused this trouble - the illusion master Jason.

"Since the last incident, he has been relatively stable and has not shown any abnormal behavior." Stryker's adjutant reported to him.

Stryker nodded. "I'm flying to Washington right now. Macaulay's death is a good opportunity. Compared to the death of a New York City councilman, the guys in

Congress will be more aware that for mutants, killing an official is not much different from killing an ordinary person."

"This is a great opportunity. We can use this to promote that plan. Mutants are like cancer and pests in society. They must be eradicated!" Stryker made no secret of his hatred for mutants. He planned to use this incident to promote mutant-related plans and bills.

At this moment, he ordered his adjutant to prepare a plane for him and fly to Washington immediately. At this moment, his flight just passed by the Blackbird fighter plane that the X-Men were riding.

……

The camera turns back to New York City, where Li Jie rents a separate swimming pool at a swimming pool called Aquabeach. He is training Thor, who has become like a swollen Alaskan dog.

"You bastard! Swim faster! If you can't swim 50,000 meters within the time limit, you won't have dinner!" Li Jie adopted a cruel training method on Thor.

The former Thunder God has been disciplined by Li Jie. Why did Li Jie choose to rent the entire independent swimming pool venue? The reason is that his training methods are too cruel and not suitable for the public to see.

He held a sports pistol in his hand. This type of gun has a low firing rate and a low bullet power. It is usually used for target shooting or skeet shooting. But for Li Jie, this pistol is now useful. He has a large number of rubber bullets. The power of the rubber bullets fired by this type of gun is much lower than that of regular pistols.

This is exactly what motivates Thor to swim. If Thor becomes a little lazy in the water, Li Jie will decisively shoot him, of course avoiding the head area.

Although rubber bullets are not fatal, especially after their power has weakened, they can be extremely painful if they hit the body.

"Swim faster, fat pig! It's a great blessing that I can give you boiled chicken breast and salted celery today! If you dare to slack off, you know the consequences!" Li Jie said as he fired a shot at the water around Thor.

The rubber bullet hit the water, splashing water on Thor's face, and he felt more wronged than ever before. Ever since Li Jie last saw him in his current state, he began to exercise strict control over him.

Thor's daily food was strictly controlled. He was forbidden to consume fats and oils. The protein he needed was provided by egg whites. Salt was provided by a fixed amount of salt water. All vegetables were either boiled or eaten raw, and there was absolutely no oil, salt or seasoning.

According to Thor, the livestock raised at home eat better than this. But if he dares to resist, Li Jie will immediately teach him a lesson with rubber bullets. If the resistance is strong, Li Jie will even switch to a low-powered pistol and start the continuous shooting mode.

During that period, Thor was beaten so badly from his initial resistance that he was covered in bruises, and in the end he dared not resist anymore. I really don't know what he went through.

However, good dog trainers know one thing: when the dog responds enough, it needs to be rewarded appropriately to ensure that the dog remains motivated in training.

Thor, who had not seen meat for many days, finally had boiled chicken breast today. Usually, Li Jie would feed this kind of hard and tasteless food to the dog. But today, Thor ate it with joy like a puppy.

While Li Jie was training Thor, Peter Parker called him. "George activated the Spider-Searchlight? What happened? A New York City councilman was killed? Suspected to be a mutant? I see, I'll be there right away."

Li Jie glanced at Thor who was still struggling in the swimming pool and shouted, "Okay, let's stop here for today's training."

Hearing Li Jie's words, Tol felt much more relaxed, as if a heavy burden had been lifted off his shoulders. For the first time, he realized that being able to sit down, rest, drink some water, and eat something could actually make him feel so satisfied and happy.

However, Li Jie's next words poured cold water on him. "Because today's training has not been completed, I will cut your dinner in half." Li Jie said it

lightly, but this sentence made Thor fall into the abyss in an instant.

You are simply a devil! You must be a devil disguised as Li Jie to play a trick on me!

Some time has passed since the Spider Lamp was handed over to George Stancy. The idea of making the Spider Lamp was naturally inspired by a superhero movie he watched in his previous life.

The film tells the story of a playboy who lives in a simple city called Gotham and dons a black mask and cape at night to transform into a vigilante. Li Jie thought this idea was very suitable for Spider-Man.

Of course, he also made some minor changes to the tool of the searchlight. In the original story of the Gotham City Vigilante, because the citizens were simple and kind, all they had to do was shoot the light with the flying bat logo into the sky, and the criminals in Gotham City would voluntarily surrender themselves.

After entering Arkham Prison, the criminals in Gotham City can no longer escape the fate of prison escape, because the light of the flying bat hangs above the city like an inviolable brand.

However, New York is completely different from Gotham, a city with simple folk customs. The criminals here are not as law-abiding as the prisoners in Arkham Prison.

In addition, the New York police also need to take into account the face of the problem. If the police have any problems that cannot be solved, they will activate the spider lights so that people all over New York can see them, which is tantamount to a heavy blow to the prestige of the police.

Therefore, after repeated considerations, Li Jie designed this spider lamp that can only be seen by wearing special glasses.

After Spider-Man and Sheriff George showed goodwill last time, although George had generally accepted Spider-Man's point of view and the two sides showed a trend of easing, George never really used the spider light because he was worried about damaging the prestige of the police system.

Perhaps it is because up to now the police have not encountered any thorny

problems that have left them helpless.

But the fact that George was able to put aside his pride and activate the Spider-Lamp to summon Spider-Man this time clearly shows that a major incident has occurred, and this matter will probably cause the police a lot of trouble.

When Li Jie, dressed as a Night Walker and flying a hang glider, arrived at the location designated by Peter, Spider-Man and George had been waiting there for a long time.

In front of us is a ruin - the Macaulay family's villa. As a single building, it is separated from other villas by a distance, thus preventing the fire from spreading to the neighboring houses.

In addition, in order to protect privacy, a circle of oak trees was planted around each single-family house as a barrier. Therefore, when the fire first broke out, the nearby neighbors did not immediately notice the abnormality. Similarly, Deacon and Paul were not discovered by other neighbors during their escape.

The news of the murder of a New York City councilman was undoubtedly a puzzling event. At this moment, the city's top leaders all felt a chill. The police have not yet fully determined whether Macaulay's death was caused by a kitchen fire that accidentally caused his death, or whether someone deliberately murdered him and then set the fire to interfere with the audience's hearing and vision.

If it was a simple murder case, or if the identity of the deceased was relatively ordinary and the interpersonal relationships were relatively clear and easy to identify, George would not activate the spider light. After all, solving the case is his duty.

However, the victim now is a New York City council member, and because of the council member's political stance, the case involves many aspects and may even involve mutants.

Assuming the murderer is a mutant, the difficulty of investigating such cases increases dramatically, and even if the real murderer is found, it may not be possible to arrest him. Because facing these criminals with super powers, ordinary police often seem powerless.

So, that night, the investigation at Macaulay Villa came to an end, and the police set up a cordon for the wreckage and evacuated. George came to the scene alone, turned on Spider-Man's searchlight, and decided to have a conversation with Spider-Man.

However, when Peter followed the searchlight and came here to discuss the cause of Macaulay's death with George, his spider sensor kept vibrating, as if reminding him that he had overlooked something important. Therefore, Peter contacted Li Jie.

Li Jie got off the hang glider and handed Peter a piece of equipment as requested. At this time, George glanced at Li Jie in confusion, "It seems that the rumors that you have a good relationship are not groundless."

"A good man needs a capable assistant." Li Jie just smiled. "Sheriff, what happened here?" Looking at George in police uniform, Li Jie directly called him Sheriff.

"Senator Macaulay was killed. He was a radical who was extremely opposed to mutants. So I boldly speculate that he did not die in the fire, but was deliberately murdered, and the murderer was most likely a mutant." George glanced at Li Jie. Compared to Spider-Man, he seemed more inclined to trust Nightwalker.

Because Night Stalkers always deal with criminals that the police find difficult to intervene in, or criminals who are known to have committed crimes but cannot be arrested due to lack of evidence.

Chapter 7 Shocking

On the surface, the actions of the night action personnel should not be publicized, but in private, many police officers praise them because some of their colleagues died heroically and some became disabled in order to catch certain criminals. However, after going through so much trouble, they finally caught the criminals, but due to insufficient evidence, they could not be convicted in court, which made George and his colleagues, including himself, extremely dissatisfied.

"If the criminals this time involve mutants, then the police alone will not be able to catch such super criminals. So I plan to ask Spider-Man for help. Of course, if you, Nightcrawler, are also willing to help, I will be very grateful. You can provide us with some strength support at the critical moment."

George made it clear that he was worried that he would not be able to catch the mutant criminals by then, so he hoped that the two could act as his assistants.

Obviously, Spider-Man didn't intend to just be a laborer, so he asked Li Jie to bring the relevant equipment. It was a device about the size of a briefcase, and when opened, it looked a bit like a laptop. In fact, it was a portable X-gene detector, another unlisted product in the Osborne Group's technology library.

In this world, X-gene detection equipment is not rare, and some companies that produce large-scale security equipment have manufactured such equipment. Initially, Osborne Group launched this portable X-gene detector, focusing on the differentiated competition strategy.

The design of this product is completely different from other similar products. It is not only lighter and easier to carry, but also has much higher detection accuracy than other products. However, this naturally increased the manufacturing cost, resulting in a high price. After a period of poor sales, the product was removed from the shelves and the production line was shut down. Today, except for a small amount of inventory and sold products, this device is

almost invisible on the market.

Li Jie watched Spider-Man begin to operate the instrument and couldn't help but ask, "What are you going to do with this?"

"Didn't they say that the suspect might be a mutant? I'll use it to check if there are any traces of mutants at the scene." Peter said, snapping his fingers, looking ready to take action.

"Night Walker, help me collect some samples from the surrounding area to see if there are any suspicious clues."

Peter used his spider-sense to feel that things were not that simple, and Li Jie also trusted Peter's intuition very much. After all, his intuition was almost never wrong.

And if it was really done by mutants, Li Jie felt that he needed to remind Professor Charles to be more vigilant recently to prevent anyone from doing harm to their school.

Just like that, the two superheroes of New York City seemed to have transformed into criminal investigation and evidence collection police officers and began to gradually search through the ruins of the Macaulay family. George, who originally just wanted to find someone to help, seemed a little confused at this moment. What on earth were these two guys doing? Are they New York detectives?

……

More than 300 kilometers away in Washington, Stryker had just gotten off the plane and was in a hurry to meet three heavyweight congressmen. He tried to persuade Congress to promote legislation on mutants.

The meeting place was chosen to be in a private club box in Washington. As soon as Stryker stepped into the box, he immediately began his speech without any courtesy.

"Gentlemen, I think you have learned about the death of Councillor Macaulay. Although the police have not yet released all the details, I believe that everyone here has their own intelligence sources and understands the special nature of

Councillor Macaulay's death. This is what the mutants did! Today they can kill a city councillor who opposes them."

Stryker glanced at everyone present, "Then it could be a congressman tomorrow. We have no time to hesitate. Gentlemen, I need you to pass the Mutant Management Act proposed by Mr. Macaulay, and even call an emergency meeting for it. We don't have much time left!"

Stryker's words shocked everyone. The three congressional leaders looked at each other. They were never easily convinced, but what Stryker said today might have a point. The mutants' behavior was indeed a bit excessive!

……

At the secret base, Weapon X, more than a thousand kilometers away from New York, a fully invisible Blackbird fighter plane slowly landed on a base hidden in the mountains. Jean had already driven the Blackbird fighter plane to the place Charles had discovered.

As the captain of this operation, Cyclops Scott has begun to give orders to his team members. "Storm, we need to use the storm as cover. Colossus, you will be the one to attack. Xuanyin, create some distractions for our enemies later!"

Scott assigned the tasks one by one. "Cuckoo, use your clone to confuse the enemy. Blink, use your teleportation ability to quickly locate the position of the Illusion Master. Jean, stay in the fighter and be ready to assist us in evacuating at any time."

"And I will provide you with sufficient firepower support." Scott pointed at his glasses. It seems that he has assigned tasks to each team member, except for one person - Wolverine Logan.

Assigning a task to Logan was probably the most difficult thing to do. He was in a state of rage at the moment. Someone had used his son to kill a congressman, and it might even cause a bigger storm. The guy who had stained his son's hands with blood was among them!

You'd better not let me catch you, otherwise I will tear you to pieces with my own hands!

Washington.

Stryker was discussing with the three congressional leaders in front of him: "You should all know how much danger mutants will bring to us."

Whether by design or by mistake, their power is dangerous to the rest of us. Stryker decided to capitalize on the death of Senator Macaulay.

"Just like what happened to Congressman Macaulay, those radical mutants don't care whether they kill government officials or not. As long as they have the idea, they will take action. As long as their interests are hindered, they will definitely do something deviant!" Stryker's words were extremely inflammatory.

However, a congressman said: "General Stryker, you should be aware that the mutant community is not entirely made up of radicals. There are also moderates among them, such as some people we are familiar with."

"One of the main reasons why Macaulay's bill has been delayed is the concern that it might exacerbate tensions among moderate mutants. It would not be a wise move to force all mutants to become radicals." This congressman has a profound view of the issue, and there is obviously no shortage of wise people in Congress.

"But Congressman, you should also understand that not all mutants are willing to be considered mutants. I am a soldier, my hands are stained with blood, and I am here to eliminate everything that poses a threat to this country, to our citizens, to all of you here, and to defend the country - this is my duty and responsibility!" Stryker said passionately, "It is very difficult for mutants and ordinary people to coexist peacefully. I will not be surprised if a conflict occurs."

"But what if there is a strong backlash?" The congressman was still a little worried.

"We can advance the plan step by step and gradually solve the problem like 'boiling a frog in warm water', but this requires us to take the first step first." Stryker said he was willing to make appropriate compromises.

The bill proposed by Macaulay was indeed too radical, and there would be problems if it was implemented all at once. So he proposed another plan: "We can first learn from the special management bill for vampires and use it as an

opportunity to gradually advance."

After Stryker finished speaking, the other two congressmen nodded in agreement. Only the congressman who initially refuted him raised a key question: "If there is irresistible external pressure or resistance, General Stryker, how confident are you that the weapons in your hands can effectively contain the possible situation?"

The congressman's eyes were shining, and the other two congressmen also turned their eyes to Stryker. This was a crucial issue.

Stryker raised the corners of his mouth and answered with a hint of arrogance: "Since the founding of the United States of America, we have never lost a battle! We have never lost, but sometimes we choose not to fight. If we persist, I believe we can win the final and complete victory!"

"Besides, I have prepared something for the mutants to fight against them!" Stryker said confidently.

The three congressional giants exchanged glances, then nodded at the same time and said, "In this case, we will work hard to promote this bill in Congress and convince the president to sign a special decree!"

Stryker showed a proud smile, but he didn't know that the secret base of Weapon X that gave him this confidence was now under a violent attack.

Colossus is an Alpha-level super-powered mutant. When he transforms into a steel giant, his entire body is invulnerable to weapons. Even if he were to take a direct hit from an Iowa-class battleship's main gun, which is 50 times the caliber of a 406mm gun, he would only tremble slightly and remain unscathed.

He is a burly man, over two meters tall, and looks like a rough man, but he is actually a gentle and considerate man. Among all the mutant teachers, he is the one most likely to be bullied by students. However, hidden under his gentle appearance is a firm will, as deep as the earth.

Colossus is like a fertile land, nurturing this group of mutant teenagers with his warmth and patience, hoping that they will grow up healthy and strong. This aspect of his character is almost identical to Professor Charles. To let his students become executioners, assassins or criminals is an unbearable evil for

him. This kind of evil is even more outrageous than the suffering Colossus suffered in the Siberian wilderness.

"Peaceful people usually don't like to lose their temper, but if you irritate a person who is responsible, that person will not stop fighting back until one party completely admits defeat!" This is the most basic experience in life.

Now, this peaceful man is angry. Someone must pay the price! The secret Weapon X base is the one that will bear his wrath.

The Iron Man, who has transformed into a steel giant, is like a train that can't stop, rushing madly in Stryker's secret base. For him, fighting does not require any skills, just constant destruction and impact are enough! Nothing can stop him.

The most important defense facilities outside the base were completely destroyed by the lightning storm controlled by Storm before they could take effect.

Chapter 8 Villa

Under the control of Lady Storm, the dark clouds in the sky gradually gathered. Countless thunderbolts intertwined and shuttled between the clouds. Then, in an instant, as if the end of the world had come, thousands of tiny lightning bolts poured down from the sky like a punishment from the gods.

All defense systems outside the base became ineffective before they were even activated.

Then, Cyclops' laser beams were fired fiercely, and the thousands of degrees Celsius of high temperature contained in it, along with the laser cutting technology, burst out powerful power from Scott's eyes, like a red dragon sweeping across, and everything turned into dust wherever it went. The ground licked by it was extremely clean, without a trace of debris, because everything that touched it evaporated instantly after the destructive red dragon passed by.

The sound waves released high-intensity noise, and the soldiers who were still trying to organize a counterattack in the base suddenly felt their ears filled with countless loud noises. In just a moment, their eardrums were broken. At the same time, the ear fluid in their bodies was unbalanced, causing them to lose their sense of balance and collapse to the ground, unable to stand up again.

Wolverine's fighting style in this conflict became more and more violent, because this incident concerned his son. In his view, everyone present at the moment was an accomplice! His claws easily penetrated human skin like cutting tofu. Wherever Wolverine walked, blood splattered all over the ground.

Today, all mutant teachers are performing as never before, exerting their abilities to the utmost, because this incident has touched their bottom line - the students in the school are their most hated targets!

In contrast, the soldiers in the base were attacked unexpectedly. After all, this was the continental United States, and they had never thought that anyone would

dare to come here to attack them. Therefore, when they were attacked by the first wave, they had no time to react before they suffered a fatal blow. Afterwards, these mutants almost exerted their superpowers to the limit, leaving the soldiers no time to fight back.

On the battlefield, once you miss an opportunity, there will never be another one. In this situation of decline and gain, the soldiers and defense facilities in the base were completely conquered by this group of X-Men before they could even play a role.

It must be admitted that this raid was unexpected and caught everyone off guard.

At this moment, Flash was frantically shuttling around inside the base, looking for the location of the Illusion Master.

"This is obviously a secret base!" After Cyclops rushed into the base, he witnessed the scene inside the base: numerous experimental equipment and mutants used for experiments.

"Damn it! They are actually conducting Weapon X experiments!" Scott cursed and realized the real purpose of this place - to experiment on the lives of mutants!

Wolverine Logan has an indescribable sense of familiarity with this place, as if he had been here before.

"Colossus! Find a way to take these mutants away, and destroy all experimental equipment and data!" Scott roared angrily, his laser ability was fully activated, and massive amounts of laser energy continued to spew out of his eyes, and everything he saw was instantly reduced to ashes.

At this moment, just as Scott was destroying everything in anger and Logan was trying to recall the past, Flash passed through the shuttle gate she created and announced to everyone: "I have found the location of the Master of Illusion!"

……

The destroyed Macaulay House in New York.

"I don't think you are likely to find any valuable information here. My men have

been searching here for more than six hours, and all the useful items they could find have been taken away." George looked helplessly at Li Jie and Peter who were still playing the role of detectives in the ruins of the villa.

He believed that the police had done all they could and that it would be a waste of time for the two of them to continue investigating here.

"Don't worry, Sheriff. Maybe a superhero's angle of looking for clues is very different from that of an ordinary policeman!" Li Jie looked up and glanced at George, giving him some comfort.

However, Li Jie's words made George laugh and cry. He smiled helplessly and planned to leave after the two of them finished the so-called detective game. After all, the work of arresting mutant criminals still depended on their help.

"What is this?" Peter picked up a piece of burnt object from the ground with a pair of micro tweezers, which looked like a burnt chicken claw.

George carefully identified it, and his tone was uncertain: "Perhaps it is part of the remains left by Mr. Macaulay. The shape of this piece is quite similar to human finger bones. But this area is too small. The fire burned a lot of things, and Mr. Macaulay's remains also shrunk, deformed, and even shattered due to the high temperature. It is very likely that the official in charge of the identification at the time failed to find this piece of remains."

After listening to George's description, Peter fell into deep thought, as if he had captured some inspiration from this finger bone.

"What ideas do you have? If you have an idea, implement it immediately! Trust your intuition." Li Jie glanced at Peter, seemed to notice his thoughts, and encouraged him.

After listening to this, Peter put the burnt finger bone into the special device that Li Jie brought with him for detecting X genes without hesitation. He activated the detector of the device and repeatedly examined the remains in detail while constantly adjusting the parameters of the machine. Due to the fire, there was very little DNA information left in the remains.

Peter was extremely patient while debugging the machine. He operated faster and faster, and his attitude became more and more focused, as if he was looking

for a possibility - a possibility that seemed the most unlikely. Li Jie also stood beside Peter with a solemn expression, silently watching him do all this.

It was only now that George Stancy became truly serious. He realized that Spider-Man and Nightcrawler might actually have discovered something, and it might be an important clue that the police have not yet discovered.

Ten minutes later, Peter finished operating the machine. He said to himself in an unbelievable tone: "Impossible. This is absolutely impossible. I must have made a mistake somewhere." From Peter's whispered words, one can feel that even he himself could not believe this fact.

When George heard Peter say this, he couldn't help but become curious about what he had discovered, so he asked, "What do you mean by impossible?"

"Sheriff George, are you sure that the remains are those of Congressman Macaulay? Or, could the person who was burned to death be someone else?" Peter's question was full of doubt and disbelief.

"The remains were almost completely burned, with very few parts left. We obtained the results through DNA comparison, and it is indeed confirmed that this is Congressman Macaulay." George didn't understand why Peter had such a question.

"I mean - listen, I mean." Peter was at a loss for words. "Assuming that the remains are really Senator Macaulay's, there is a huge problem!"

"what is the problem?"

"Congressman Macaulay is a radical who is firmly against mutants, but according to the test results of this remains, Congressman Macaulay himself--" Peter took a deep breath and gave a shocking answer: "He is actually a mutant!"

Needless to say, today is the fourth update, with a total of 16,000 words presented to you!

In the secret base of Weapon X, Blink has found the location of the Master of Illusion. Just as Stryker treats all mutants, he also regards his son, the mutant Jason, as a highly contagious virus.

And it is the most serious one, which can be seen from the place where Jason is imprisoned. Although he is Stryker's son, Jason still cannot escape his father's attitude of treating mutants like pests. Jason is imprisoned in the deepest and most heavily guarded place in the base.

When Twinkle found him, she wasn't sure if she could rescue him quietly and alone. Because the Illusion Master is very dangerous, his brain and thoughts may cast many illusions on you without you realizing it, just like Paul was affected by him without knowing it.

Therefore, Blink needs the help of other X-Men. "I have found the Master of Illusion, we must act quickly!" After saying that, Blink led all the X-Men to the place where Jason was found.

This is the most heavily guarded area of the entire base. Previous conflicts in other areas of the base have caused the guards here to be highly alert.

Because the war police spent too much time clearing the enemies ahead, the guards here had enough time to set up all the warning facilities.

However, all this did not work. Under the guidance of Flash, the mutant teachers quietly appeared at various defensive points and easily defeated the ordinary soldiers, who had no power to resist.

Jason, who had been trapped in the sturdy cage, stared blankly at everything in front of him through the 20-centimeter-thick special bulletproof glass.

His expression seemed a little dull, probably because Stryker had been injecting him with special sedatives for a long time. The battles and bloody storms outside seemed to have nothing to do with him. He just sat quietly in the room where he was imprisoned, without saying a word, tilting his head, and watching everything calmly.

After all the X-Men solved all the problems in front of them, they injected the anti-psychotic drugs provided by Dr. Hank. Blink held another special sedative prepared for Jason and instantly traveled to the room where Jason was imprisoned.

She held the potion in one hand and extended her other hand to Jason. "Jason, we should get out of here."

Jason turned to look at her, motionless.

……

Macaulay House, New York City.

"Macaulay is a mutant, are you sure, Spider-Man?" Li Jie also found this conclusion unbelievable.

"I have confirmed it repeatedly, and the result cannot be wrong. He is indeed a mutant!" Peter firmly stated that he was not wrong.

The person who had the same reaction as Li Jie was George. "This is inexplicable, anyone could be a mutant, but Congressman Macaulay definitely can't be a mutant! You know, he is a complete mutant opponent, his mutant bill is radical and extreme, just like the concentration camp policy towards Jews during World War II!"

"That's right. Logically speaking, Senator Macaulay shouldn't become a mutant. Even though some mutants are resistant to their own identities. But why did he do those things and want to kill all the mutants?" Li Jie touched his chin and thought about what the problem was.

At this time, Peter interrupted and said, "Nightcrawler, do you remember? When you and the Punisher were solving those difficult mysteries, you often said something."

"Sometimes, the more impossible something seems, the closer it is to the truth." Li Jie took over Peter's topic and said the sentence in full.

As a veteran police officer with many years of experience, George Stancy has a deep understanding of this sentence. In the many cases he has handled, the answers finally revealed by those confusing cases are often beyond people's imagination, and are often even situations that were initially considered absolutely impossible.

Chapter 9 New Act

Therefore, George also interrupted and asked: "So, what do you think is the most unexpected or impossible situation in this case?" At this moment, he suddenly realized that the detective game played by these two superheroes was not as simple as he originally thought, and they might really have some extraordinary qualities.

"We can analyze it from one angle, Sheriff." After thinking for a while, Li Jie said uncertainly, "What do you think is the biggest impact that Congressman Macaulay's murder may have?"

"Congressman Macaulay is a radical who strongly opposes mutants, and there is a high possibility that mutants will assassinate him. The worst possible outcome of this incident is that government officials will be insecure. Because in the past, no senior government official has ever been deliberately murdered by mutants." George continued to talk along the topic of Li Jie, habitually pointing his index finger at his forehead as he spoke.

"And the biggest impact of this incident is that it will make those officials feel that if one loses the other, the other will suffer."

"In this way, they will most likely take the opportunity to promote new bills targeting mutants!" Peter guessed what George was thinking before he finished speaking.

"Yes, this is indeed an extremely bad result." Li Jie nodded, "Then who do you think is most likely to benefit from this incident, and who will be the unlucky one?"

"As for the beneficiaries, it's of course those who are against mutants. They have always wanted to promote new mutant regulations, and now is a good opportunity." Peter answered before George.

George continued Peter's words: "The unlucky ones are definitely the mutant community. Once the government really passes the mutant control bill, their lives will only become more difficult."

Li Jie looked up at the night sky of New York. Alas, he could not see even a single star. The light pollution in this city was so serious that when he looked up at the sky at night, he could see almost nothing except a few bright stars.

Li Jie could only stare at the dark sky and continued in a confused and ethereal voice: "According to common sense, this is probably the case. Even the death of Congressman Macaulay was probably caused by extremists in the mutant opposition, with the purpose of promoting such a bill.

However, a new question now arises: Councilman Macaulay is a mutant himself. He has hidden his identity for many years, working his way up to the position of New York City councilman and having great influence in the media. Why would a mutant want to fight other mutants? And how did he avoid the equipment designed to track mutants for so long?

Li Jie was concentrating on thinking. As he said just now, sometimes the most unlikely things are often closer to the truth. This thought kept coming to his mind, and at a certain moment, he felt that he had caught some inspiration. He immediately asked George, "Where was the body of Congressman Macaulay sent to?"

"His body was severely deformed after being burned in the fire, and his muscles were almost all carbonized and cracked. After being confirmed by the identification personnel, the body has been temporarily sent to the morgue of the Metropolitan Hospital in Queens, which is our police's cooperative unit." George did not hide the whereabouts of Macaulay's body.

When Li Jie asked questions about the body of Congressman Macaulay and thought about it while answering, George Stancy also vaguely realized that something seemed unusual.

"Wait, are you saying that Congressman Macaulay's body will be key evidence?"

Li Jie has already started the gliding device. "Sheriff George, please tell your people to keep a close watch on the body. No one is allowed to enter the morgue. Also, tell me you are going there now! I'm afraid this matter is not that simple!"

"A guy who is against mutants is actually a mutant, and the person who seems to benefit may be the real victim! I think everyone has fallen into a huge trap! Spider-Man, pack up your things quickly, let's go to Metropolitan Hospital together, and take the sheriff with us."

"Why me?" Peter was packing his luggage quickly.

"Because I don't have bioelectricity, it will be very troublesome if I can't hold Sheriff George." After Li Jie said this, he piloted the glider straight into the sky.

Then Peter followed closely behind. He whispered to George, "Hold on tight." Then he picked up George with one hand and put him on his shoulder, and began to spray spider silk to rush to Metropolitan Hospital.

at the same time--

When Blink stretched out his hand and prepared to inject Jason with a special mental sedative, Jason, who was originally motionless and looked like a puppet, suddenly avoided Blink's hand with indescribable agility.

Then, Jason kicked Twinkle's chin hard with his heel. This fierce attack from bottom to top instantly kicked Twinkle away. Because the impact was on the chin, which is connected to the nerve center of the brain, the space portal originally opened by Twinkle became unstable and eventually disappeared.

The X-Men who were waiting outside the room for Blink to bring Jason out had no time to react, only to see Blink completely knocked down, and Jason, who was originally like a puppet, showed flexibility like a ballerina.

"Red Tank! It's time to act!" Jason suddenly shouted loudly to the front.

Then, a terrifying loud noise like an earthquake suddenly sounded, and the sound of footsteps like a Titan stepping onto the earth came from behind the X-Men.

A man who was much stronger than Colossus appeared. His muscles were as strong as a tank and he had the power to overturn everything. To him, the wall in front of him was as fragile as a piece of paper. He didn't need to use any strength, he just walked through it casually, and the wall collapsed one after another.

The scene when he launched the charge was like a huge army galloping, and no one could stop his might! Even the powerful Steel Warrior was easily knocked away by him and disappeared.

Before the X-Men could stop him, he knocked everyone over like a rushing train, destroying the prison where Jason was imprisoned. As the Red Tank ran away, Jason landed lightly on the back of the Red Tank, which was as broad as the roof of a car.

Jason on the red tank blew a kiss to the X-Men and left a sentence: "Give my regards to Charles." As soon as he finished speaking, Jason's image changed immediately: layers of blue scales emerged and began to change his appearance.

After the final transformation, Jason turned into a blue-skinned, red-haired woman, and this woman was the one Scott knew - Mystique. Hearing Scott's exclamation, Mystique turned back and smiled, then urged Red Hulk to leave as soon as possible. The two had no intention of fighting with the X-Men.

At this moment, Scott's heart was full of bitterness. He realized that they, even the professor, might have fallen into a trap, and no one knew what fate awaited them.

At Xavier School for Gifted Children in the suburbs of New York, Charles suddenly felt uneasy, as if something was about to happen, but he couldn't tell why. This uneasiness made him feel quite uncomfortable.

At this time, on the grass outside the school, there was a light "bang" sound, and after a cloud of blue smoke, two people suddenly appeared. One of them was an old man wearing a black windbreaker and a helmet, with a stern face and bright eyes. Despite his advanced age, there was still a tenacious fire in his eyes.

The other one is more like a devil than a human, with blue skin, long ears, a devil's tail, and sacred words all over his body. His name is Blue Devil.

The old man ordered the Blue Devil: "Blue Devil, go and rescue our children. And I, it’s time to go meet my old friends." The Blue Devil then turned into blue smoke and disappeared without a trace.

The old man was strolling leisurely in the campus, as if he was very familiar with everything here. He was reminiscing about the old days until the owner of

this place, Professor Charles, appeared in front of him in a wheelchair.

The old man greeted him as an old friend: "Long time no see, Charles."

Professor Charles, who was sitting in a wheelchair, looked at him in disbelief: "Marx?"

The old man smiled and shook his head: "Charles, I have said many times that I prefer you to call me Eric. Of course, if you hate me like those people out there, you can also call me Magneto."

It turns out that the old man is Charles' long-time friend and the leader of the radical mutants - Magneto Eric Lansherr.

"What are you doing here?" Seeing Magneto appear, Charles had an ominous premonition in his heart.

Magneto smiled at Charles and said, "You are always hesitant and cannot distinguish right from wrong, Charles, my old friend. It is because you lack decisiveness and never know how to choose a position."

Magneto stopped talking here and glanced at Charles's manor, which was once the ancestral property of Charles's family, but now has become a school. Magneto did not comment on this, but just shook his head.

"Your problems have been slowing down our progress. I came to you this time because since you can't make a decision yourself, I'll do it for you."

"Old friend, this time, it's for the mutants!"

In the courtyard of Xavier's School for Gifted People, two old friends from the past, who were also the two leaders of the mutant group - the moderate Charles and the radical Eric, were facing each other in a stalemate.

"This is all for the mutants, old friend. You need to make the right choice." Magneto Eric looked at Charles with a subtle smile on his face.

However, Charles's uneasiness grew stronger. He vaguely caught a hint of ominous thoughts, but he was not sure. "What do you mean, Max!"

When Magneto King Eric heard Charles' question, the corners of his mouth slightly raised and he smiled silently. The old man with a cold face smiled with a hint of kindness: "I heard that the students in your school have been a little noisy recently."

What Magneto mentioned gave Charles a bad omen: "I heard that a student tried to assassinate New York City Councilman Macaulay, the extremely anti-mutant guy, for the future of mutants."

When Eric told this, Charles' heart immediately sank, something was wrong, because this happened in the morning, Paul and Daken had just left the house, and they assassinated Macaulay at noon. Charles and his team only knew about this in the afternoon.

Chapter 10 Unstoppable

This is because they were at school, and Charles used his mind reading ability to discover this matter. But how did Magneto get the news so quickly? Charles thought about it and could only come to one conclusion, that is, Magneto had a direct relationship with this matter.

"Magneto!" Charles, realizing this, suddenly became furious, followed by a deep sense of powerlessness. For the first time, he called his old friend by his alias instead of his real name.

But now, even if he shouted with all his might, it was no use. At this moment, Charles seemed to have lost all his strength, and he leaned weakly on the back of the wheelchair.

Eric knew how smart his old friend was, and he could figure out a lot of things as long as there was a little clue. But now the whole plan had been set in motion, like a boulder rolling down a mountain.

The boulder rolled forward, crushing anyone who stood in its way mercilessly. Therefore, Eric no longer cared whether Charles had guessed something by now.

Magneto looked at Charles's powerlessness with satisfaction. Charles now no longer had the spirit of the past and looked more like a real old man.

"So, Charles. I have chosen which side to stand on for you. The future of mutants requires our joint efforts." Magneto looked at Charles leaning weakly in the wheelchair, and said in a relaxed tone.

"Why?" Charles lowered his head and asked in a tired and confused voice: "Why? Why did you let those two kids kill Macaulay? Everything you are doing now will only make the situation of the mutants worse!"

When Charles said the last sentence, he almost shouted it out at the top of his

lungs.

Facing Charles's anger, Eric did not waver or show any sympathy. He replied calmly and calmly: "The reason is very simple, Charles. Because Macaulay is also a mutant, and a member of the Brotherhood of Mutants!"

Magneto's words were like a bolt from the blue. Charles looked up suddenly and looked at Magneto in disbelief. "What did you say?" Charles couldn't believe what he heard.

Macaulay is actually a mutant, and a member of the Brotherhood of Mutants! Then what about the anti-mutant bills he promoted? Charles had more questions in his mind.

"That's right, my old friend. Senator Macaulay does belong to the Brotherhood of Mutants, and is a member who has a fanatical belief in the mutant revival cause." Eric continued to explain.

"Well, don't look at me like that. Although some mutants do master the skill of faking their own death to deceive others. But Macaulay is really dead, killed by your students. Your students have blood on their hands because of this, and that has not changed."

Eric felt satisfied as he watched the hope fade in Charles' eyes.

"Why?" Charles asked again. This "why" contained multiple meanings: Why did Macaulay, a mutant, do those things? Why did he let his own students kill Macaulay? And what benefit would Macaulay's death bring to Eric? Many questions were contained in this "why".

Eric looked at his former friend, who had a confused and even painful expression on his face, and said slowly and sadly: "For the mutants, Charles."

"You know, after going through so much suffering in the concentration camps and seeing so many of my people being killed, I should have understood this - peace is never achieved through compromise."

Eric adjusted the cuffs of his windbreaker and continued, "I am a Jew, a Jew living in Germany. When I was a child, when I was still a child. Everything I experienced..."

"At first, the Nazi decree was just that Jews were not allowed to sit on park benches. So I stopped going to the park, and my mother told me: Be patient, everything will pass."

"Then the Nazis ordered all Jews to wear a star. So I had a star on my chest to show my difference from others. This made me lose friends at school. But my mother still told me: Be patient, everything will pass."

"Then my father's grocery store was hit hard. Nazi law stipulated that all Jewish shops had to pay high taxes because they claimed that it was immoral for Jews to make money. Our lives became more and more difficult. But my mother still said to me: Be patient, everything will pass."

"Then, I was expelled from school, and my family was forced to leave our community. The Nazis implemented new laws that required all Jews to live together and all Jewish children to attend the same school. We were taught in school that Jews were born guilty and that they needed to spend their lives atonement. Even at that point, my mother still told me: Be patient, everything will pass."

"Until we were sent to a concentration camp and my mother died in front of me, she could no longer say to me: Be patient, everything will pass. Because in this world, some things will never pass!"

At this point, Eric's facial features began to distort.

"When I was at my lowest point in life, I met you and Hank. You persuaded me to join your organization, to cleanse my past sins, and we could let mutants rise in a peaceful way. But look at what I have now, Charles!"

Magneto put his hands on the armrests of Charles' wheelchair, his face was extremely close to Charles, and his angry roar sounded like a dragon's roar, as if he wanted to tear Professor Charles apart.

"My wife and baby are gone! All gone! Since then, I've understood. No matter how time passes, no matter how strong I become, my situation has not changed. I am still the kid who was kicked out of the park, kicked out of school, and eventually locked up in a concentration camp!"

"The government today is no different from the Nazis back then. Charles, the

peace philosophy you advocate is just like what my mother said to my mutant companions and children: Be patient, it will eventually pass. But Charles, there are some things that you can't tolerate!"

"Now, the mutant population seems to be tolerable, Charles. But this is actually like boiling a frog in warm water, just like pushing me into the concentration camp step by step. If we had resisted at the beginning, perhaps my parents would not have died in the concentration camp! That kind of endurance and concession is truly fatal."

Eric looked Charles straight in the eyes, a determined gleam in his eyes.

"When the mutants get used to their current lives and continue to endure the increasing interference and control of human society, when everything starts to explode, our fate will be over! So I have been thinking about this problem over the years."

Eric suddenly said something that surprised Charles: "I understand that violence cannot solve the fundamental problem, Charles."

Professor Charles was extremely shocked. Eric had done so much, but he still said that violence was not the solution to the problem. So why did he still resort to violence?

Fortunately, Eric's next words revealed the answer: "Violence really can't solve the problem, only revolution can!"

"My real name is Marx. There is a philosopher with the same name in my hometown. The thought he founded - communism - ignited the flames of revolution in Eastern Europe and Asia." Eric calmly expressed his views.

"That revolutionary from the East once said something that I deeply agree with: Where there is oppression, there is resistance! The greater the oppression, the stronger the resistance!"

"Boiling a frog in warm water is slowly wearing away the lives of us mutants. When we want to resist, we find that we are powerless. So, why not just push all mutants to the brink of life and death? Only in this way can we unite and gather strength!"

Magneto's ideas seem extremely radical, and Charles has been so deeply shocked by Eric's philosophy that he can't even respond.

"Many years ago, I was thinking about how to implement this plan. When I was working with you to form the X-Men, I learned a lot from the officials of the US government, those dirty and despicable political methods."

Magneto said, with a hint of smile on his face, "So I thought of the current solution. Since the human government can create an X-weapon plan against mutants, why can't I develop an anti-X plan? Use drugs to control the X gene in the mutant's body and make it invisible. As long as you don't use your mutant ability, your identity will not be exposed."

"We can form companies and push politicians. Propose new bills. The introduction of those cold and cruel bills will surely make all mutants realize how fake their current lives are."

"Only in this way will they abandon their false illusions and come to my side. The death of Congressman Macaulay is a good inducement, and I am grateful for his sacrifice for our great cause."

Charles was silent for a long time before he finally spoke, his voice low and weak: "Do you know how many mutants will die?"

"Great causes require noble sacrifices, Charles." Magneto didn't care.

"So, actually, Master Illusion and Stryker are both fake, right? It's a trap you set."

"Yes, Jason is a key character. I rescued him a long time ago. Including Paul, I found him before he lost control. Because of the out-of-control mutant incident, you began a large-scale search for out-of-control mutants, and the reappearance of the X-Men gave me an opportunity. Do you think Paul's abilities were simply out of control?" Magneto had a victorious smile on his face.

"By now, your students, the new generation of X-Men have probably completely destroyed Stryker's secret base. Well done, because I hate the Weapon X program just as much! Think about it, Charles."

"When Stryker went to Washington to try to convince Congress to pass a bill, his

base was destroyed by a group of mutants. What do you think will happen to him? Your students killed a city council member, and your mentor destroyed a US military base. What kind of situation will your school be in?"

Magneto said in an unquestionable tone: "There is a good saying in the East: The tide of history is mighty and powerful. Those who follow it will prosper, and those who go against it will perish. Now, the wheel of history has turned."

"You are always indecisive and unable to distinguish right from wrong. As your old friend, I will help you make the decision this time, Charles. This time, let us work together for the mutants!"

Chapter 11: Precise Calculation

Indeed, the origins of all these disputes and conflicts all stem from a carefully planned layout by Magneto Eric. Ever since the mutants got out of control, Li Jie has been lobbying Professor X to restart the X-Men team, which gave Magneto an opportunity.

From the moment Paul was found, Eric's plan was doomed to unfold. He knew Professor X's weaknesses and was aware of Stryker's conspiracy. As Magneto himself said:

Great undertakings are always accompanied by sacrifices, and waiting for death slowly like a frog in boiling water is tantamount to chronic suicide for mutants. He urgently needs to gather the strength of all mutants and force them to take a clear stand at a certain moment: either kneel down and wait for death, or hold on to their weapons and fight back, life and death are up to fate!

Therefore, he designed such a complex and sophisticated plan. He understood Professor X's character and also understood the true face of Stryker and the members of Congress.

He wanted to speed up these people's decision behind the scenes. He used Paul to induce Daken to kill Senator Macaulay, a pawn he had laid out many years ago. Although he was a mutant, he disguised himself as a radical against mutants.

The death of the congressman will undoubtedly cause panic within the government. And the mutant teachers in the academy will definitely not be able to hide the fact that Paul and Daken killed people. After all, they are still immature, and there are many teachers in the academy who can see through the fact that they committed crimes.

Professor X will definitely find out why these two kids want to kill people, and Paul is the most suspicious at this time. According to Professor X's usual

practice, he will definitely investigate Paul. What the professor has not yet realized is that the illusion master Jason has already been rescued by Magneto. In order to carry out the plan, Mystique has been pretending to be Jason and imprisoned in the original prison instead of him. Therefore, Stryker did not realize that his son had been replaced.

The Master of Illusion was once Professor X's student, and the professor clearly remembered that the Master of Illusion was finally taken away by Stryker. So the professor naturally cast his doubtful eyes on Stryker.

Because according to normal logic, General Stryker, a radical mutant, is very likely to use the Master of Illusion's ability to control Paul to kill people, and then reveal that it was the mutants who did it, and propose new mutant management regulations when it causes an uproar in Congress.

Professor X's overall analysis was correct. After learning the news, he immediately sent the X-Men to attack Stryker's base in order to prevent Stryker's next move.

However, this time everyone was being manipulated. Whether it was the X-Men, Stryker, or the US military and Congress, at this moment, they all became pawns in Eric's hands. He cleverly sowed discord without making a sound.

A member of the Brotherhood of Mutants, Macaulay, was sacrificed, but Stryker's base was successfully destroyed, and Magneto himself did not even fire a bullet. At the same time, Stryker, who originally wanted to use this incident to moderately pressure Congress to strengthen the control of mutants, how would he respond after learning that the base was destroyed?

This strategy of Magneto can be said to kill two birds with one stone. It is very likely that Stryker was extremely angry and pushed for the passage of the mutant management bill at all costs.

The most crucial point is that Professor X, who originally represented the moderate faction in the mutant community, played the role of executioner in this incident.

The congressman was the work of his students, and the base was the work of his teacher. If government officials still believe that Professor X is a moderate and a mutant leader who can be talked to, they are wrong.

I am afraid that when the truth comes out, all government officials will label Charles a terrorist, thinking that he is more terrible than Magneto because his radical actions are more forgiving. This is the real horror!

"Why are you doing this?" Charles looked at Magneto, his eyes filled with uncontrollable grief.

"Because of you, Charles." Eric stood and looked down at Professor X in a wheelchair. "I told you that I need to unify the power of all mutants. Only at the critical moment of life and death can our race unite and recognize what is good or bad for us!"

"But because of your existence, the existence of your school is really a hindrance. Just like my mother, you always instill harmful ideas into those mutant children."

"You let them always think that all problems can be solved by patience and friendly coexistence. You will weaken the mutants' fighting spirit. Your philosophy, your school. So you must choose the right side. And you always chose the wrong direction in the past. This time I made the choice for you. Charles, do you know what you will face from now on?"

Magneto Eric looked around the entire academy, taking a 360-degree look. "From this moment on, the days of your school's existence will begin to count down. This place should not be a safe haven for mutants, at least not at this moment. You now have only two choices, either join me or stay and witness your school and the children you care about being arrested and executed by the human government!"

Magneto's words were calm and firm. He never felt that there was anything wrong with him betting the lives of hundreds of mutant children. Great causes require sacrifice, and this sentence seemed to be deeply engraved in his bones and blood.

You can't do this, you shouldn't do this, Eric. Professor Charles' lips trembled slightly, and he muttered in a low voice. At this moment, he looked extremely desperate, as if he had aged twenty years in an instant.

His spirit, his strength, and all the support he relied on for survival were stripped away by Magneto in an instant. There was no warmth, only cold and bloody

facts, so much so that Charles seemed to be able to smell the strong and lingering smell of blood.

Magneto just stared at him quietly, not eager to wait for Charles' response. At this moment, there was a slight bang, accompanied by a thin blue smoke. The mutant named Blue Devil had brought Paul out.

Paul was so excited when he saw Magneto that he didn't notice Professor Charles beside him. Charles, who witnessed all this, felt the same pain in his heart. He couldn't help but ask himself: Was everything he did in the past wrong?

Magneto looked at the dazed Charles, and a hint of sarcasm appeared on his lips. He knew this old friend's character very well, and his evaluation of his indecisiveness was indeed reasonable.

"Charles, you have to make a decision quickly. Time is running out for you. And I'm leaving now. If you are ready to join us, come find me. You know how to find me." Charles stared at Magneto, and an impulse suddenly surged in his heart, wanting to do something.

However, Eric obviously knew how Charles would react, so he said first: "Don't even think about doing anything, Charles. You know you can't control me."

Eric patted his helmet and reminded: "You have sent all the powerful warriors available to you to attack Stryker's base. Do you think those immature mutant children can fight against me? I don't care about blood, but I don't want to slaughter mutant children."

Hearing this, Charles could no longer hold back and roared angrily: "What you are doing now is no different from slaughtering them!"

Eric looked at Charles with pity: "At least they still have a chance to choose now!"

Bang! There was another light sound, and blue smoke filled the air. Charles was left alone, lost in thought. He had lost, and lost completely!

……

At the Metropolitan Hospital in New York, when Li Jie arrived in a glider, a fire

broke out in the hospital morgue.

It is difficult to tell whether the fire was an accident or caused by human beings, and whether something was intentionally hidden or destroyed. Li Jie grabbed a policeman who was using a fire extinguisher to try to control the fire and asked:

"Where is the body of Councillor Macaulay?"

"Night Walker? Oh! The congressman's body is in Cabinet B No. 51!" The police officer had obviously received a notice from George Stancy and knew that the Night Walker would come here. So he informed Li Jie of the relevant information without hesitation.

The fire in the morgue was so fierce that ordinary police officers could not rush in, and the fire extinguisher could only barely control the fire from spreading. It would take another minute and a half for the fire truck to arrive at the scene.

Even if the fire brigade arrived quickly and controlled the fire, the body of Congressman Macaulay would probably be burned! Li Jie took a deep breath without hesitation, installed a mechanical arm on himself, and resolutely rushed into the fire scene.

No matter who was behind the scenes or what their intentions were, Li Jie could not tolerate their success, because the advantages he had accumulated with great difficulty had suffered setbacks one after another.

He had finally managed to calm down the mutant issue, but now someone was ready to stir up trouble again. The world had only been quiet for a few days, and the air in Eastern Europe was still filled with the smell of sulfur, but now someone was trying to stir up trouble where he lived. Li Jie would never tolerate this!

Whether it was Thor, the god of thunder, whose plan was affected by his weight gain, or the mastermind behind this incident, Li Jie wanted to dig them out and teach them a lesson. I'm already doing my best, can't you let me take a break?

Spider-Man and George arrived at the scene a minute later. They learned from the police that Nightcrawler had entered the fire. Peter was very worried and wanted to rush in to save people. At this time, Li Jie broke out of the fire, holding a body that was not completely burned.

At least a good portion of Congressman Macaulay’s remains were still preserved!

……

When the Blackbird fighter slowly landed at the Mutant Academy, the moment the plane door opened, Scott and others saw Professor Charles who looked extremely tired.

"Professor, we met Mystique at Stryker Base. It looks like we may have fallen into a trap." Scott planned to tell everything he saw and heard at the base.

However, Professor Charles waved his hand tiredly to stop Scott from talking. "Don't say anything, Scott. Magneto just came. He told me everything." The mention of this name made all the X-Men in the plane suffocate instantly.

"Professor, what is he doing here?" Scott realized that the situation was not good. But after listening to Charles' words, he really understood how serious the matter was.

"It doesn't matter what he came here for. Now you need to act immediately and completely delete all the information of all the students. No records or clues about the students can be left." Charles' words shocked all the X-Men present.

"Why?" This is the answer that all the X-Men are eager to know.

"It's time to close this school."

Chapter 12 Destruction

A fire broke out in the morgue of the Metropolitan Hospital. Although the fire brigade arrived at the scene and conducted a careful investigation, they did not find any abnormal signs. In the end, they could only speculate that the fire was caused by a short circuit caused by the hospital's aging electrical wires.

Although the explanation given by the fire department seemed reasonable, Li Jie had doubts about it and was supported by Peter and George. He thought something was fishy: first, Congressman Macaulay was killed by a suspected mutant, and the congressman himself was also a mutant; then a fire broke out in the morgue, which seemed like an intentional accident.

Li Jie suspected that someone had deliberately destroyed the evidence, and this evidence might be the remains of Congressman Macaulay. He looked at the extinguished fire for a while and felt that he could not easily draw a conclusion based on the aging of the wires. If it was true, it would be too coincidental.

Although George Stacy agreed with Li Jie's opinion, he had no idea about the real intention behind it. It was already early in the morning, and Li Jie decided to talk to Professor Charles of the Mutant School the next morning, because Charles was a leader in the mutant community and might be able to provide some information.

Li Jie suggested to George that the body of Congressman Macaulay should be kept by him as a key piece of evidence to prevent it from being damaged again, and George's help in communicating with the police was needed. George was not a stubborn person, and he nodded in agreement after weighing the pros and cons, and emphasized that this important piece of evidence should be properly kept.

The next morning, Li Jie rushed to the mutant school with questions and saw an unusual scene: all the mutant teachers were busy running in and out of the school, holding all kinds of information and documents. Some of them moved the items to the Blackbird fighter jets, while others used the ability of flashing to

shuttle and move them, and their destination was unknown.

It was not until Li Jie found Storm to ask about the situation that she revealed that they were moving and might never come back. Storm's tone was full of melancholy, which reminded Li Jie of the fact that he had just left the villa where Senator Macaulay died yesterday and the mutant school was going to move today. He couldn't help but wonder if it was related to Macaulay's death.

A series of bad possibilities surged in Li Jie's mind until he stepped into Professor Charles' office. Charles in front of him looked exhausted, like an old man in his twilight years, not the leader of mutants.

Li Jie anxiously questioned Charles why they had to leave and whether Senator Macaulay was really killed by his mutants. However, Charles looked indifferent and said that it didn't matter who the murderer was. The school could no longer be saved and was no longer a safe haven for mutants. They all had to leave.

Charles' negative attitude angered Li Jie. He remembered that he risked his life to rescue the body of Congressman Macaulay from the fire yesterday in order to prevent unknown risks, but now Charles said it was unimportant.

Bang! Bang! Li Jie pounded the professor's desk angrily, his eyes full of dissatisfaction with Charles's behavior.

Charles' Adam's apple moved, and he finally told the truth slowly: "It was Magneto who planned all this. He knew where my weakness was, and everything was within his calculations. I lost, completely lost."

The professor slowly told Li Jie everything that happened last night. Li Jie became more and more shocked, and found that Magneto's plan this time was really unfathomable. It can be said that the professor's original prediction and action were not wrong.

However, because he knew Professor Charles' character very well, Magneto could always predict what Charles would do next. So he carefully designed a series of strategies and successfully involved Charles. The result of Charles falling into the scheme was very direct, and he was used as a pawn by Magneto.

At this moment, if the truth were to come out, the school would certainly be in danger. More importantly, the mutant children in the school, who were the group

Charles cared about the most, were very likely to become innocent victims in this incident.

"Bang!" The sound of heavy punches on the desk came from the office again. Li Jie was extremely angry when he learned about Magneto's plan. He couldn't help but think: Can't you let me live a few days of peace and tranquility?

Why do you villains have to jump out and cause trouble? Ah! Isn't it nice for everyone to have a good time eating hot pot and singing? Why do you want to stir up a mutant revolution and promote mutantism? Aren't you just looking for trouble, Eric!

Li Jie was very indignant about this: "This is simply stupid. How many innocent ordinary mutants will be affected by Magneto's plan, and how many ordinary people will lose their lives. What he is doing is no longer as simple as sacrificing countless lives to achieve great things. He wants to establish his own regime on the corpses of human beings!"

Professor Charles also agreed with Li Jie's point of view on this point: "He no longer cares. His goal is to unify the power of all mutants, and I have become a thorn in his side. After this incident, I think the moderates among mutants probably won't exist anymore." Charles said, revealing his disappointment.

"Don't lose heart, professor. At least there is still hope, and things may not get so bad. At least Senator Macaulay's testimony is still there, and we still have evidence." Li Jie comforted.

"Even if there is evidence, it's useless because the Stryker base was indeed destroyed by the people I sent. Do you think the government will still believe what I said?" Charles shook his head helplessly.

"Alas--" Li Jie sighed. "Well, professor, I was planning to tell you about this later. But now that the situation has developed to this point, it seems that I can only tell you in advance. But before that, you'd better seal this room. I don't want anyone to hear what we are going to talk about next."

Li Jie said this to Charles in an unprecedented serious tone. Although Charles was puzzled, he still did as he was told and used his superpowers to isolate the room.

"Although the government may no longer believe your explanation, we may have other solutions. And you may also do something for mutants and ordinary people, for our plan."

"I don't mind using my powers as long as they are used for the right things. So, what is this plan you are talking about?"

“An organization.”

“What organization?”

“The Illuminati!”

Starting from the early morning, the children of the mutant school were awakened one by one and then taken to the common room to wait. All the mutant children did not know what was going on, and they put on their clothes as required by the teacher.

Some younger children were still very excited, thinking that this was a special class and that perhaps a teacher used his teleportation ability to send them to the other side of the earth to visit scenic spots!

The older students noticed something was wrong from the nervous expressions of their teachers. Katie was one of them. She felt uneasy and always felt that something big was going to happen in school.

Sure enough, what happened next did develop in the bad direction she expected, even worse than she imagined!

The school started to dismiss students!

This is undoubtedly the worst news for many mutant children, and it is like a bolt from the blue. If mutant children in other schools accidentally show their mutant abilities, they will often be excluded because they are different.

Worse still, some children face discrimination, like Katie, whose abilities, while not harmful in themselves, cost her a part-time job at a coffee shop.

Many children began to cry. They were reluctant to leave because even their parents outside might not accept them. Only in this mutant school could they feel

the warmth of home.

Many children burst into tears, even the senior students had tears in their eyes. However, this time, the teachers were heartless and did not give them any explanation. Instead, they began to escort all the children home.

The first to be sent away are the younger children, who cry the most and are too young to protect themselves. If the worst happens and the school is attacked, they will be the most vulnerable.

After a night of evacuation efforts, the campus, which was once bustling with hundreds of students, now seemed exceptionally empty.

There were a lot of scraps of paper scattered on the floor of the corridor, and only about 30 senior students were left in the common room. The teachers arranged for them to be dismissed in the last batch. Little Naughty, who was one grade higher than Katie, kept crying and whispering repeatedly: "What's going on, what's going on!" However, no one could give an answer. Iceman Bob patted Little Naughty's back weakly, trying to give her some encouragement and comfort, but in fact he was also confused in his heart.

Chapter 13 What do you want to do?

Katie felt empty inside. This place was like a second home to her. Here, her classmates were like her brothers and sisters. The days she spent here over the past six months were the happiest moments of her life. How she wished that such a life could continue, instead of facing a sudden disbandment like now.

The door of the common room had been locked from the outside by the teachers. They did not want the students to leave at this time because the entire college was in chaos.

However, it didn't matter to Katie whether the door was locked or not. She could easily walk through the wall. Just as she was about to do so, the Iceman shouted, "Katie! What do you want to do?"

Katie didn't even turn her head, just left a sentence: "At least I want to know what happened here, this is my home!"

As soon as Li Jie walked out of the professor's office, he immediately sent a message to Iron Man: "We must form an organization in advance, put aside the alien matter, and find a safe place on Earth. It seems that we should hold a meeting."

"Nightwalker!" At this moment, Katie found Li Jie. She knew Nightwalker, and many students in the school had heard of him. He was one of the superheroes who got along best with mutants.

"Night Walkers, we are going to be disbanded! What exactly happened in the school? The teachers don't tell us anything. Do you know what happened here?" Katie asked Li Jie a series of questions at once.

Li Jie scratched his head. In any case, even if his subsequent plan was successfully implemented, this mutant school could not be saved. After all, Charles did send people to attack the military base.

However, Li Jie was still skeptical about Charles's behavior of hiding everything, not even telling his own students.

It's easier for lower grade students, but upper grade students already have the ability to distinguish right from wrong. They will eventually enter society and face the reality of this cruel world. Sometimes it's better to vaccinate them early than to let them experience the bloody reality in person.

Especially considering that he had a good relationship with Katie, Li Jie did not think much about it and quickly told Katie exactly what had happened the day before.

"So, from now on, you must learn to protect yourself. Before this matter is completely settled, the situation of mutants may become increasingly difficult. You must learn to be strong." Li Jie patted Katie's shoulder. As a Night Walker, he was not Jason Lee, and the relationship between him and Katie was not close. After saying these words, he left the mutant school on a hang glider.

Katie whispered to herself, "Why did it turn out like this!" She returned to the common room in frustration and looked at her classmates, all of whose faces were filled with sadness.

Katie felt that this was not the life she wanted. Shouldn't everyone be happily studying in the classroom or playing on the grass at this moment? Or would there be naughty children running to find Colossus or Hank to make trouble?

Maybe there are a few pranksters who use their super powers to play harmless jokes on everyone.

Where have all the laughter and joy disappeared to? And what is the purpose of all this?

In fact, in human society, women are often more resilient than men. They are better at forbearance, but once they decide to fight back, they will show amazing strength. At this moment, Katie suddenly realized what she should do.

This may be due to a sentence her good friend Jason Lee once said: "We were born ordinary. Now that we have power, we should make a little contribution to the world, even if it is just a small step. The key is whether we take action, not how much change we can make."

This is also the original intention of Li Jie to establish Marvel. He never hides his insistence on certain ideas. At this moment, Katie feels that she should also take action. In order to keep the smile of this school blooming, she must do something.

It might take a long time, and there might be twists and turns, but she knew what she should do to protect those precious things.

With such determination, Katie looked firmly at the remaining thirty or so senior classmates in the common room. Like her, they all had extraordinary abilities! She was not alone, she had friends!

They are different from Magneto and Professor X! They are the future of mutants! And they will embark on a different path!

Gradually, Katie's thoughts became more and more firm, and the vague picture in her mind became clearer and clearer. She walked to the center of the common room and stood in front of all the classmates.

She felt that she had to say something, to do something. Although she was a little shy at first and spoke in front of so many people, she stuttered a little: "Everyone, listen to me!"

She patted her cheeks gently, so that her stiff tongue could flexibly speak out the words in her heart: "Please listen to me!"

The people who were originally in the common room turned their eyes to the direction where the sound came from - where Katie was.

There are not many students in the mutant school. The maximum number is about 500, and the minimum is only about 300. The number of senior students is the smallest. Therefore, many senior students are familiar with each other, even if they are in different classes.

So, everyone is familiar with this girl named Katie, because she is the most smiling girl in school, not only is she sweet and charming, but she also likes to draw. In fact, in addition to Deacon, there are many other boys who secretly like her.

Everyone stared at Katie, not knowing what she would do next. But at least she

succeeded in breaking the depressing and dull atmosphere just now, temporarily diverting everyone's attention from that melancholy.

Katie silently warned herself in her heart, "Take a deep breath, take a deep breath!" She needed a deep breath to relieve her inner tension. After all, this was her first time to give a speech in front of so many classmates, and she had that absurd and immature idea in her heart. She was not sure whether her speech was correct, but she thought she had to give it a try. Even if she failed, at least she had tried, and she would not have any regrets in the future.

"I know what caused the difficulties our school is facing now!" As soon as Katie said this, all the students were immediately cheered up. They were all eager to know the reasons behind the current situation.

Katie tried hard to suppress her nervousness and excitement, and told everyone the information she had just learned from Nightcrawler in a calm tone: "All this was planned by Magneto..."

As Katie's story went on, she told her classmates everything she had heard from Nightcrawler. When they heard that all this was actually a trap set by Magneto, some people finally couldn't hold back.

"How could he do this! He framed the professor, and we lost our school, our partners, our friends! And I will have nowhere to go!" Rogue was excited. She is a mutant with the ability to absorb the vitality of others, and her ability is very dangerous.

Recently, under the guidance of the school, her superpowers began to mutate in a more bizarre direction. It seemed that she could begin to absorb the superpowers of other mutants and release them.

Because of this danger, Little Naughty is hardly recognized in human society. Even in the mutant school, she needs to wear special gloves at all times to prevent accidental contact with other people's skin. However, even so, this mutant school is still her favorite place. Because the teachers here are not afraid of her, nor do they discriminate against her.

They told Rogue that this was not a disease, but a mutant ability, and she needed to learn how to control it and not let this power hurt others.

The love for the school was not unique to the little rascal, but to all the students present. The older the students were, the more they understood how much this school meant to them. They were mature enough and wise enough to know how to distinguish right from wrong.

Among the students, voices of condemnation against Magneto arose everywhere, and everyone hated him to the core because he had destroyed everyone's originally peaceful life. Some students even said that they were unwilling to leave the school and wanted to stay and fight side by side with the teachers to fight Magneto until their death.

This idea was quickly recognized by other students. It seemed that in an instant, this group of enthusiastic young people formed an alliance. They knew that they were powerful, and the school taught them how to use this power. They firmly believed that they were capable of achieving great things.

"Quiet! Quiet!" Seeing the heated atmosphere at the scene, Katie shouted twice: "Everyone sit down! Listen to me!"

Katie at this moment was like a Valkyrie possessed, suddenly becoming majestic and awe-inspiring, and shouted to all the students: "Your plans can't solve the problem at all! Now it has come to this, even if you kill Magneto, can the school be restored to its original state!"

This statement was like a bucket of cold water poured over the students' heads, making them sober up: Even if Magneto died, he had already provoked the human government's hatred of mutants. The next situation would be a struggle to the death. In this way, the school would be difficult to preserve, and the originally peaceful life would never return.

After understanding these principles, several girls in the audience burst into tears.

"So what should we do? Are we just going to watch Magneto wreak havoc and see the Professor's hard work destroyed? The Professor built a home for us, a home that truly belongs to us. We must take action!" Iceman Bob felt that he should do something. As an Alpha-level mutant, his abilities had increased significantly, especially after he went to the North Pole with Nightcrawler and others last time.

Katie looked at the somewhat excited Iceman and replied, "You are right, Bob. The professor built a home for us and provided us with a protective umbrella. But until today, I never realized it, or we all ignored it."

Katie glanced at all the students present. Her words became more fluent and her thoughts became clearer: "The man who provided protection for us mutants is already old!"

"We have been growing and learning under his love and protection. He has been protecting us like a pillar standing tall. All this has made us forget that the professor is actually an octogenarian."

Katie whispered this, and the whole audience fell silent. Professor X, Charles Xavier, was born around World War II, and now, 72 years have passed since the end of World War II. Although he looks energetic, this gentleman has undoubtedly entered the ranks of old age.

It's just because of his mental state and super powers that he doesn't look as old as his actual age.

"When my grandfather was the professor's age, he had already retired for 20 years. He would play chess with people in the park every day, and occasionally he would cook some delicious food and invite me and my parents to visit." Katie's words touched people's hearts.

Chapter 14 Magneto

Although Professor Charles is old, he is still busy as usual. He has devoted his life to the cause of mutants, and he has done his best for me and everyone here, mutant teenagers like us.

"No matter how strong a protective umbrella is, it will decay one day. The professor is indeed old." When Katie mentioned that the professor was old, the whole audience fell silent. What Magneto had thought of might also be a fact that they had never dared to imagine in their hearts. Due to the influence of X-gene fusion, mutants with higher degrees of fusion, such as Alpha and Beta, may have longer lifespans. But this still cannot change the fact that the professor is indeed entering old age. Facing the silence in the audience, Katie continued: "The professor has done enough for us, he should rest. Just like my grandfather, who worked hard all his life, I hope that the professor will no longer spend his days in struggle in the future. He should be like an ordinary person, with time to play chess with others, or play his favorite games, or even attend senior citizen gatherings and find a suitable life partner."

Katie's last words drew laughter from everyone. She interpreted the image of Professor X in another way from a female perspective. In the eyes of this gentle and tough girl, Professor X was not an extraordinary hero, but a kind old man.

Katie smiled and continued, "The professor is old, and so is Magneto. Moreover, Magneto's ideas are no longer relevant, and he is even older than the professor. To put it bluntly, he already has one foot in the grave! Why would a dying person interfere in the lives of us living people?"

Katie waved her little fist and shouted: "Perhaps the Professor and Magneto don't realize that their time has passed!"

Katie's point of view shocked many students at this moment. They exchanged glances with each other and found that each other's eyes were also full of surprise.

"And we are the future of mutants! We are younger and we have more time. Only we ourselves can choose the path we want to take! The future of mutants should be decided by young people, not two old people! Because they may not understand at all what kind of life we are pursuing!" Katie's speech became more and more fluent, and she only wanted to express her thoughts.

"So what do you want, Katie?" Bob looked at Katie, his eyes full of disbelief. The naughty girl beside him looked at Katie, her eyes full of recognition and even admiration.

"It's an idea that may be immature and a little ridiculous. I'm not sure if it can be put into practice, but I want to give it a try." Katie seemed a little hesitant, but finally said it.

"I think we should build a country - a real mutant country! This does not mean the radical idea of mutants ruling ordinary people or ordinary people ruling mutants! What we need is actually a platform for equal dialogue, to be able to communicate with governments of various countries on an equal footing!"

Katie's eyes sparkled with anticipation. "Only when we stand on the same level as them will they be willing to listen to our opinions. This country will welcome mutant immigrants, and those mutants who are discriminated against in human society will have a place to go. In my opinion, this is an upgraded version of Xavier's School for Gifted People, and we are going to expand it into a country!"

"We should love peace, but we are not afraid of war. We should not take the initiative to provoke trouble, but if trouble comes, we will not shrink back! The Jews can establish Israel, so why can't mutants establish their own New Eden?"

"My ideas are still immature, and I don't even know how to build a political system. But I am willing to try, and I hope to contact those mutant friends outside, especially those pacifists and neutrals. I believe they may be impressed by my ideas." At this point, Katie smiled shyly, she was not sure if she was confident enough.

"Of course, my plan may fail. But I want to give it a try. At least I won't regret it after doing so. Now I want to ask everyone here, is there anyone who shares the same ideals as me? Let us use the voices of young mutants to express our own position on the future! This time, the future of mutants should not be decided by a few people!"

Katie said this firmly, and at the same time slowly raised her right hand, clenching her fist and holding it in the air.

The students in the audience looked at each other, then the first one raised his fist, followed by the second, the third, and more and more students raised their arms into the air.

Naughty Girl raised her fist, and Iceman Bob also raised his fist. Soon, all the students present raised their fists. At this moment, everyone who raised a fist was a comrade!

Katie had tears in her eyes and tried hard not to let them fall. She said in a trembling voice: "Our future should be decided by ourselves!"

On this day, perhaps Magneto, Professor X, and Li Jie did not expect it. Katie interpreted the future development of mutants with her female perspective and unique charm.

And the phrase "Our future is determined by ourselves" will spread to every corner of the world from now on.

In this world, the differences between boys and girls are not only reflected in their physical structure. Many times, there are huge differences in the way women and men think, which many boys do not understand deeply.

Take Magneto and Professor X, for example, they are both committed to improving the living environment of mutants. Professor X hopes to gradually change the world through peaceful evolution over time.

However, Magneto is looking forward to a revolution, a thorough change. He hopes to establish a clear boundary between ordinary people and mutants, trigger racial confrontation, and then use the power of unified mutants to launch an armed uprising, striving to solve the problem in one fell swoop.

The leaders of these two mutant factions are like two sides of the same coin, with the same vision but diametrically opposed methods of action. However, one thing they have in common is that their goals are extremely grand, and from the very beginning they have focused on the survival of mutants on a global scale.

They don't just want to solve the problems of a certain city or region, but to

create a global wave. Their goal is to quickly expand their influence around the world based on the United States. To some extent, this idea is not wrong. After all, as a world power, the United States' every move will always attract many followers.

Whether it is Charles (Professor X)'s plan or Magneto's plan, it will take a long time to realize, and there may be countless unknown twists and turns in the whole process.

Men, especially those with extraordinary powers like Magneto and Professor X, often set ambitious goals. However, as a woman, Katie's views and way of thinking are completely different. She does not intend to provoke any kind of revolution, whether it is an armed uprising or a peaceful evolution, these are not among her appeals.

Katie does not put herself in a superior position, nor does she think that anyone can decide the future of mutants alone. For her, such an approach is both authoritarian and selfish. All she really wants is to create a "home", which is the biggest difference between her and other male leaders. She does not have such lofty ambitions, nor does she fantasize about changing the world of the entire mutant group. As a woman, she is naturally inclusive and tender.

The destruction of Xavier's School for Gifted People left her without a shelter, so in Katie's simple idea, she hopes to rebuild a larger, safer, and more welcoming shelter - a "home" for mutants. For her, confrontation and violence, evolution and revolution are not her focus.

Just as she had vowed, she only wanted a place where discriminated mutants could find a place to belong. It was precisely because of this pragmatic attitude and personal charm that all the students at the scene firmly chose to support Katie instead of Magneto or Professor X.

For most ordinary people, they don't have the lofty ideal of changing the world. They don't dare to hope to do this, because most people are just ordinary people, and even if they have superpowers, they can't expect everyone to become a superhero.

Therefore, Katie's proposal was widely recognized. At this time, Iceman Bob suddenly realized that there might be someone who could help Katie's plan, because she wanted to build a country!

"Katie, I think I know someone who can help!" said Bob.

"Who is it?" Katie asked expectantly.

"A super-rich man living in Brazil, he used to be a student of our school, his name is Roberto Scieta. Of course, if you find this name hard to remember, you can call him 'Sunspot'!" Bob's face was filled with smiles when he mentioned this name. Maybe with his help, Katie's plan will be more successful!

……

Because Magneto's plan triggered a series of changes, the Illuminati's plan was supposed to be announced after the organizational structure was perfected. But now the situation is pressing and it has to be made public in advance.

Therefore, the saying "plans cannot keep up with changes" is indeed very reasonable. On the night of the call with Tony, Tony replied that he had found a secret base that was absolutely confidential and would not be discovered by any government agency as a temporary base, but the base was far away from New York. Li Jie agreed with this and thought it was safer to stay away from New York.

When Li Jie arrived at the meeting place designated by Tony, Professor Charles and Hank were already waiting there. Before Tony arrived, to Li Jie's surprise, Captain Rogers also showed up here.

"Tony told me he had some crazy ideas and hoped I could be involved. To be honest, I never thought he would invite me to join any of his plans. I thought he didn't like me." Captain Rogers said when he met Li Jie.

Although Captain Rogers has always been one of the candidate members of the Illuminati, Li Jie did not expect Tony to take the initiative to invite Captain to join. He thought he needed to bring it up himself. However, in view of the current turmoil among mutants caused by Magneto, Li Jie felt that they needed more supporters from the official side, and Captain Rogers was one of the few trustworthy people in the official organization.

Chapter 15 My Knowledge

"Professor, have all the students evacuated?" What Li Jie was most concerned about were the children in the Mutant School. After all, they were the innocent representatives in this incident.

Professor Charles nodded. "Everyone has been evacuated, and all the information about the students in the school has been completely deleted. There will not be any traceable clues left. Even if the government wants to cause trouble in the future, they will come to me, and it has nothing to do with those children."

Hank was still wearing his black-framed glasses, with a hint of sadness in his eyes. "Max was too radical. Even though he told us in advance and gave us time to escape, the school could not be saved after all. I have completely sealed off the entire school's underground base, and the teachers have also been arranged to hide first."

Li Jie could only shake his head and sigh at all this. Magneto had gone too far this time. Captain Rogers, who didn't know much about the whole thing, shook his head helplessly after listening to several people's stories and understanding what happened. It seemed that Magneto's instigation was very effective this time, and the division and confrontation between the government and mutants was almost inevitable.

Just then, Tony Stark belatedly arrived at the scene.

"I thought you forgot about the party today, Stark!" Rogers saw Tony and complained about his lateness.

"You have to understand, as a super-rich man, I always have a lot to do." Tony shrugged nonchalantly.

"Are you planning to use this dilapidated Stark Corporation warehouse as the

place for our future gatherings? This is not a good idea." Li Jie looked around. This warehouse was an abandoned warehouse located by the Stark Group in the suburbs of New York. It looked like it had never been used. It was empty and there was nothing inside. There were only a few pretentious security guards standing at the door. It looked like an abandoned place.

Tony waved his hand, "Like I said, this is just our meeting point. Where we're going is a bit far, and we'll need transportation to get there."

"How far is it?" Li Jie asked curiously.

"About 6,800 kilometers. The place we are going to is in Europe - Rome!" Tony said with a smile.

Li Jie, the professor, Hank and Captain Rogers were all stunned when they heard the name of this place.

"Wait! I just asked you to find a safer place. I have no objection if it's a bit far away, but isn't going to Rome too much of an exaggeration?" Li Jie's voice expressed the common thoughts of the other three.

Tony stroked his beard and said, "Because I recently found some clues in the relics left by my father. It seems that they were specially left for me, waiting for me to uncover them."

"I've never been interested in his relics before, until you told me about the new element formula he left behind." Tony was referring to Li Jie.

"Since then, I have been sorting through my father's legacy and have read a lot of relevant materials, some of which are very surprising and some of which are quite interesting. He recorded a lot of things in a way that only I can decipher, using many secret codes that only I know, which are the knowledge he repeatedly taught me when I was a child."

"I found an interesting place, a place related to the origin and secrets of S.H.I.E.L.D., and that place is in Rome. I think there is probably no more hidden place on earth than there." As Tony said this, he showed an expression as if he was sharing a precious treasure.

Li Jie had no choice but to follow his words and asked, "Well, our genius friend,

what is hidden in that place?"

Li Jie answered at the right time, satisfying Tony's vanity. He said slowly: "A city, a city called 'Immortal City'!"

At this point, Tony showed a mysterious smile on his face: "Speaking of the identity of the founder of this city, you will never guess who it is, right?"

Li Jie continued to cooperate and asked, "Who is it? Sometimes chatting with you is like coaxing a child. I feel very tired. Because in this, except for me, no one else will cooperate with you like this."

Tony, satisfying his vanity once again, replied: "An organization that has never been mentioned before and is buried deep in the dust of history."

"However, the great people we know in history, the great inventors, scientists, mathematicians, astronomers, artists, and even mystics and prophetologists, were all members of that secret organization, and the name of this organization is - the Holy Shield Brotherhood!"

Li Jie also has one of these anti-gravity sports cars. The reason is that he facilitated the secret cooperation between Stark Group and Osborn Group, so Pepper gave it to him as a gift.

However, because the car was so conspicuous, Li Jie had kept it in the garage and never driven it out. Only once did Rocky secretly drive it.

As Iron Man, how could Tony Stark use the same items as others? Those things that can be bought with money cannot show his taste at all. Don't forget, he is a world-class scientist.

Once scientists have countless research funds at their disposal, they tend to produce some astonishing scientific and technological achievements, whether good or bad.

Just like Tony's sports car, it can fly at 7.5 times the speed of sound per hour, which does not surprise Li Jie at all. As we all know, Tony is a madman who pursues speed.

His Iron Man armor is also constantly being modified and upgraded, always

requiring faster speeds. Perhaps for Tony, it is indeed difficult to apply the speed of Mach 7.5 to the Iron Man armor with limited volume.

But designing and manufacturing such an anti-gravity flying car was not a challenge for him. The straight-line distance from Rome to New York is 6,883 kilometers.

If they took a regular flight, the journey would take at least more than ten hours. But with the help of Tony's newly developed means of transportation, Li Jie and his team arrived in Rome in less than an hour.

"When did you learn how to make a stealth device?" During the flight, Hank was surprised to find that Tony's car was equipped with a complete stealth device.

"I've learned it since I saw you dismantle my iron armor and install the invisible field in hell last time." Tony said calmly, as if for him, mastering a high-tech invention just by watching was not something worth bragging about.

"Of course, I made some improvements based on the original. What you made before should just be a basic version, Doctor. Maybe we should find some time to discuss the technology in this direction in the laboratory."

Beast Hank couldn't help but shook his head. No matter from which aspect, Tony Stark was a genius.

Rome, a city that occupies an important position in Western history, was once the capital of the Roman Empire and the political, cultural and economic center of all Europe.

At the same time, many pioneers of Western civilization also put forward those inspiring ideas here. For the Western world, "all roads lead to Rome" is not just a proverb, it also symbolizes the civilization originating from the Mediterranean, and Rome is the birthplace of their thoughts and spirit.

Many of Rome's ideas and ideologies also laid the foundation for the modern Western society. Although Rome has lost its former glory, it has become a world-famous tourist city. However, it is incredible that deep underground in this modern city, there is another city hidden - the Eternal City.

"It seems that this place does not live up to its name. It is called the Immortal

City, but in fact it is already in ruins." When Li Jie and others followed Tony to activate the special switch and entered the city through the secret passage, what appeared before their eyes was a ruin.

It can be seen that this underground city was once quite prosperous. It has carefully planned streets and marble-paved sidewalks; granite is precisely cut and used to create the square's art wall; street lamps and Baroque-style buildings are lined on both sides, and this underground city even had a complete ecosystem, with broad-leaved trees planted on both sides of the road.

However, all the prosperity seems to have become a thing of the past. The first thing to collapse should be the ecosystem. When the ecosystem stops functioning normally, the broad-leaved trees and other vegetation will lose their vitality first. The once exquisite buildings are now in ruins, and the marble roads are full of potholes. There are also large areas of burn marks on the dome of this underground city.

Surprisingly, however, the city's power system was still functioning normally! When Tony replaced the city's power module with his new energy module, some lights actually came on.

"It seems that there was a war here." Li Jie said as he looked around.

"Yes, there was indeed a war that broke out in the Brotherhood of Shield. An internal dispute split them into two factions, and then they fought each other. However, my father's notes did not record this part in detail, and he stopped recording here. What I can be sure of is that before 1955, the Brotherhood of Shield still existed in this world." Tony was filled with emotion as he looked at the desolate Immortal City in front of him.

"So, your father's notes do not mention what happened in 1955 or what happened afterwards."

"So, your father is also a member of the Brotherhood of the Shield?" Charles asked Tony.

"Yes, it has always been. The Holy Shield Brotherhood adheres to the ancient secret tradition. They keep secret everything they do and the information they know. Confidentiality is the basic principle of this organization. I was inspired by this organization to create the Illuminati."

"Tony, you mentioned that S.H.I.E.L.D. is connected to the Brotherhood of Aegis?" As a member of S.H.I.E.L.D. and also the captain of the Avengers, Charles was quite interested in what Tony mentioned.

Chapter 16 The Key Question

"That's right. Not only is it connected to the Brotherhood of Shield, even your captain's birth is closely related to this organization." Tony glanced at Captain Rogers and said slowly.

"The super soldier serum and the infinite serum in SHIELD, everyone thought that these were things developed by the military's super soldier program. But in fact, the results may not be what everyone thinks, Captain." Tony Stark seems to hold an amazing secret.

"Many people think that you are the only successful example of the Super Soldier Program, so you are special. Everyone thinks that the Infinite Serum is a by-product of the Super Soldier Program, developed by the National Strategic Science Agency." Tony smiled.

"But they were all wrong. The Super Soldier Program has never really succeeded. The most successful example is the creation of the Red Skull. If the Super Soldier Program continues, it will only produce more Red Skulls, not another Captain America."

Li Jie was quite surprised to hear this, while Captain Rogers seemed even more confused: "But didn't I succeed? Doesn't this prove that Dr. Erkins' plan is feasible?"

But Tony shook his head: "His experiment never succeeded. The formula of the super soldier serum was wrong from the beginning. As for you, Captain Rogers, your existence is not the result of military technology, but the choice of the Aegis Brotherhood! They chose you to save the world at that time."

"The seemingly minor coincidences are actually carefully calculated. The subtle changes in the super soldier serum in your body are not a blessing bestowed by chance. The accidents in the experiment are not that simple. The Shield Brotherhood chose you to be the savior at that time. Don't you feel that you were

helped by God at that time? Just like the protagonist in the TV series, you are omnipotent and can overcome any difficulties." Tony's words made people feel surprised and shocked.

"Of course, I don't mean to belittle you, Captain. After all, you were the only one who could complete those missions back then, so the Holy Shield Brotherhood chose you. They did help you secretly."

Rogers seemed a little confused. In fact, not only him, but also Li Jie, the professor and Hank were still confused - what kind of organization is the Brotherhood of the Shield?

"So what exactly is this Holy Shield Brotherhood you are talking about?" Li Jie asked the most crucial question.

Tony clapped his hands. "It was a very special organization. The best thinkers and scientists you could imagine in the human world were all members of this organization. It was the most outstanding organization in the world until it disappeared in 1955."

"The organization's members include famous figures in history, such as Michelangelo, Leonardo da Vinci, Galileo, Copernicus, Newton, Tesla, and in the East, the most famous members include Mozi, Zhang Heng, Lu Ban and others. This is an organization that goes beyond the norm."

"They were founded with only one purpose: Our world should not end!"

"In 2620 BC, mankind encountered the first alien invasion, and the earth was almost destroyed. Imhotep wielded his spear and shield and led his army to defeat the invaders. The whole of Egypt was stained with blood, and corpses were piled under the pyramids. But Imhotep judged that this alien invasion was just the beginning. Under his leadership, an organization dedicated to the continuation of human civilization began to be established."

“Perhaps the exchange and collision of ideas between Eastern and Western cultures began much earlier than what we learned in history textbooks.”

"After his death, the spear and shield he left behind became the symbol of the organization. The shield was once embedded in the dome!" Tony pointed above his head.

At this moment, there was no trace of any shield on the dome, only traces of pits and holes.

"What about his spear?" Li Jie thought Tony's story was quite interesting.

"The spear is in the hands of members of the Brotherhood in the East. The most famous holder is Zhang Heng of the Han Dynasty in China. It is said that he once talked with the gods while holding the spear. But no one knows what they talked about. After that, the whereabouts of the spear became confusing." Tony shook his head, indicating that the notes left by his father did not mention more.

"My father met many people after joining the Brotherhood of the Holy Shield, people we thought were no longer alive. Among them was the most famous Isaac Newton, who was still alive until at least 1955!"

"That's impossible, Newton died in 1727!" Dr. Hank suddenly felt that what Tony said was ridiculous.

"Doctor, some things may not be as simple as we think. For example, the real formulas of the Super Soldier Serum and SHIELD's Infinity Serum both come from Newton. But my father doesn't know much information because his status in the SHIELD Brotherhood is not very high." Tony said seriously.

"My father left me a lot of information, but also many mysteries. The predecessor of S.H.I.E.L.D. was the National Strategic Science Bureau. S.H.I.E.L.D. was officially established and established after 1955, and it was promoted by my father. I can't be sure what happened inside the S.H.I.E.L.D. Brotherhood at that time, but one thing is certain, almost all members of the Brotherhood were either dead or missing." Tony went on to tell him some of the information his father left him.

Tony looked at Li Jie intently. "So, after you shared your crazy ideas with me, I didn't refute you immediately. The reason is that I believe that we will always face more severe challenges. This is also the fundamental reason why I want to establish the Illuminati. Now that the West as a defensive barrier has been shattered, I am not sure whether the sharp spear of the East is still sharp. What makes me even more uneasy is that I am not even sure whether they still have that sharp spear, or whether it has disappeared like a shield."

Li Jie took a deep breath. He felt that he had been shocked too much recently.

This world was far more terrifying than he had imagined. If the mages of Kamar-Taki existed to defend against attacks from the mysterious realm, then the Brotherhood of the Holy Shield might exist to defend against attacks from the technological realm.

Li Jie had no idea what kind of disaster had happened to this city to make it look like this. What kind of people lived here before?

The most outstanding thinkers, scientists, and philosophers in human history, perhaps this city once brought together the world's smartest people. They chose concealment as their identity, blending into the long river of history, and maintaining and protecting the prosperity of the earth's civilization in a different way.

Li Jie looked around at the buildings around him. If those Baroque-style buildings had not been destroyed, they would have been very beautiful. As he thought, he cast his eyes towards a monument in the distance. It was a monument set up by the Holy Shield Brotherhood to commemorate the founding of the organization. A sharp spear and a solid shield constituted the main elements of the monument. Li Jie always felt that he seemed to have seen these two items somewhere, but he couldn't remember them for a moment.

Until the professor woke him up and brought him out of that thoughtful state, it seemed that everyone had ended the discussion about the Brotherhood of Shield and turned to talk about the possible problems of the current mutants. In fact, there were many things that Tony couldn't explain clearly, after all, it was his father who joined the organization instead of himself.

"Nightwalker, what are your plans for the possible problems that may arise with mutants?" The professor asked Li Jie for his opinion. After all, it was Li Jie who invited him to this place.

Li Jie narrowed his eyes slightly, "Well... an old method, I used it once before. Although the method is a bit old-fashioned, I think it is still effective."

"Magneto failed to destroy the evidence against Senator Macaulay, and that is our best weapon. The evidence against Senator Macaulay proves that he is a mutant, and that alone is enough to make many government officials concerned."

"There were conflicts between the New York City Police Department and

Spider-Man before, but now the two sides have reached an agreement. George, the deputy commissioner of the New York City Police Department who is handling this case, is a fair and selfless policeman. It was because of his notification that Spider-Man was able to assist us in saving the evidence of Councillor Macaulay in the fire. Therefore, allowing him to appropriately exert influence on this case is enough to arouse the suspicion of many officials."

The four people present were all smart people, and they understood the intention of Li Jie's words without him having to explain too much.

"Are you trying to take advantage of their chain of suspicion and Cold War mentality?" Tony quickly understood Li Jie's intention.

"That's right. After all, for politicians, we just don't do what the enemy wants us to do. This is their basic principle." Li Jie nodded in agreement with Tony's point of view.

He planned to make public the news that Senator Macaulay was a mutant, but this news could not come from their mouths. It had to be made public by Deputy Director George himself to be more convincing. Director George did not even have to persuade anyone. Just reporting the facts he had learned to his superiors was enough to arouse many people's suspicion.

After all, this was a major event that revealed that mutants were lurking in the upper echelons of the government. Was there some kind of conspiracy hidden in the mutant bill he was promoting? Li Jie was sure that more than one or two officials would have doubts about this.

"But there is still a problem, that is Magneto. Since he took action first, he will definitely act again. Perhaps the exposure of Senator Macaulay's identity will not affect his subsequent plans." Dr. Hank pushed his black-framed glasses for analysis.

"Indeed, so we also need a second-hand preparation." Li Jie nodded and continued: "Magneto wants a mutant revolution, and all the things he wants to do, those violent means, to be honest, are too much like the Nazis."

This statement was recognized by the other four people present.

"I have always believed that a person's character is largely determined by his

childhood experiences. For Magneto, there must be someone in his life who he hates extremely, and he would like to give up everything just to kill that person." Li Jie continued.

"I think you all know who it is."

"The Nazis who set up the Jewish concentration camps and experimented on Magneto." Professor Charles answered the question.

"Professor, we can make this answer more specific. Some Nazis were not only the murderers who built the Jewish concentration camps, but also killed his parents and used Magneto for experiments. These are what you told me before, Dr. Hank." Li Jie pointed at Hank.

"Are you talking about Hydra?" Hank understood what Li Jie meant.

"That's right. The last time SHIELD tried to capture the remnants of Hydra, they happened to encounter a prison riot and the fall of their headquarters. I don't believe that there is no one behind all this." Li Jie shook his head.

Chapter 17 Secret

Anyway, this organization has done a lot of bad things, and people have long hated it. I think they definitely don't care about being blamed for a few more things. Hmm? Maybe it can't be said that they are being blamed, but it should be said that they deserve it. I guess Magneto would be happy to kill a group of Hydras before messing up the situation. After all, compared to the human government, Hydra is his mortal enemy.

Those Hydras are worse than the Nazis. They have a very bad attitude towards mutants. Dr. Hank, didn't you say that they openly experiment on mutants? So, let Magneto focus on cleaning up these guys first. In this way, at least unnecessary casualties can be reduced. Li Jie roughly expressed his views.

Rogers smiled slightly: "Does this count as inviting trouble?"

"To put it bluntly, it can also be said that it is a dog-eat-dog situation, with both sides suffering losses." Li Jie spread his hands, indicating that the captain could call this plan whatever he wanted.

"Speaking of which, there are still many captured Hydra members imprisoned in the SHIELD prison." Captain Rogers remembered this incident, "But they are all very stubborn and no useful information can be obtained from them."

Li Jie patted Professor Charles' wheelchair gently and said, "No one can keep a secret in front of a professor. I'm afraid I'll have to trouble you again this time, professor."

Professor X smiled helplessly. At least by letting Magneto deal with Hydra, everyone present felt no psychological pressure.

Li Jie suddenly thought that perhaps compared to superheroes, Hydra is the indispensable and vital organization in this world. Whenever we have some shameful thoughts or want to divert our attention, we can always see them in the

right place.

No matter if you pay attention to them or not, they are there unwaveringly; no matter if you take action to eliminate them or not, their number will not increase or decrease. This is Hydra - a "knight" who is committed to the cause of opposing humanity and is willing to bear all the blame. As long as you dare to throw the blame, they will help you catch it without hesitation.

This world cannot do without you, Hydra! Li Jie thought silently in his heart. Thanks to you, Hydra, if you were not in this world, I really don’t know how to deal with it. Long live Hydra!

When General Stryker returned to the X-Weapon Project base from Washington, he saw only a mess of ruins. Most of the soldiers and researchers in the base had been killed, and there were only a handful of survivors.

The research results of the Weapon X project that he had spent many years on were also completely destroyed, and the mutants that he had captured as test subjects at great length were all rescued.

In other words, General Stryker's years of hard work were all in vain in an instant. And who else could be the mastermind behind all this? Of course, it's the mutants!

The X-Men attacked the base primarily to rescue mutants, not to wreak havoc, so when some soldiers and researchers fled the battlefield, the X-Men did not pursue them.

So, Stryker soon knew who attacked his base. Even if no one was alive in the base at that time, Stryker would eventually find out the truth. Because since Magneto set this step, he must consider what might happen next. Even if Stryker failed to find out the identity of the murderer at that time, Magneto would make him understand it later.

At this time, the furious Stryker had long forgotten the plan he had made with the congressmen to gradually control the mutants. At this moment, he just wanted to arrest and imprison all the mutants! In his eyes, these mutants are the virus and the root of the evil of human society!

"Let the plane take off! I want to go back to Washington immediately!" Stryker

had almost no other thoughts. At this moment, he just wanted to push the bills to control mutants as soon as possible. A cancer is a cancer after all, and it will be eradicated sooner or later! Stryker thought so before boarding the plane.

……

In New York, George Stacy learned the exact news that Congressman Macaulay was assassinated. Since the whole plan required his assistance, Li Jie revealed some necessary information to him, but did not mention the irrelevant parts.

"So, Magneto Eric, who is listed as the number one mutant criminal by SHIELD, is actually the main planner of this incident?" George rubbed his temple.

It was already difficult enough to have an assassination case involving a city councilor, and this city councilor was a mutant. What's worse now is that this mutant turned out to be a disguised person of a mutant terrorist organization lurking in the top government.

This means that the spy's previous actions are highly suspicious. However, when it comes to a difficult character like Magneto, it is not something the New York police can handle. Magneto alone can make the entire New York police helpless.

"That's right, Sheriff George. There are many doubts in this matter. I think you should know what the consequences will be if the conflict between mutants and ordinary people intensifies." Li Jie nodded at George.

Sheriff George nodded with a frown on his face. He didn't think Nightwalker had any reason to deceive him. As early as when he learned that Councilman Macaulay was a mutant, he had a vague feeling that this matter would not be so simple.

Now the whole thing has just been confirmed by Night Walker.

"So, what do you think, Night Walker?" George asked Li Jie for his opinion.

"My opinion does not count with the deputy sheriff. This is a case being investigated by the New York police, but if you need extra help in this case, just signal at any time and Spider-Man and I will appear to help immediately." Li Jie knew that sometimes silence was more effective than speaking, because George was very smart and had his own independent opinions, so talking too much

would be useless.

"I have arranged for Spider-Man to send Congressman Macaulay's body back to the morgue, and our people will guard it in secret around the clock. As a support force for the police, we will be here whenever you need us!" Before leaving, Li Jie waved his hand and emphasized again.

"I just don't want a war to break out in New York, after all, my family and friends live here."

George Stancy watched Li Jie jump out of the window and leave his office with the help of a hang glider. He folded his hands in front of his eyes and fell into deep thought.

About five minutes later, he seemed to have sorted out his thoughts. George picked up the landline on his desk and dialed a special number: "I am George Stancy, Deputy Commissioner of the New York City Police Department. Regarding the death of New York City Councilman Macauley, I have important information that needs to be notified to Congress and the White House. Please transfer me to the relevant contact person."

The death of Congressman Macaulay caused a great shock in Congress, and Congress even considered sending someone to handle the matter, but George refused. However, insiders in Congress left contact information and told George to contact the congressmen immediately if there were any new discoveries. They were eager to learn about the latest developments in the case.

George hung up the phone and waited for a reply. He looked towards Queens, where his home was. "That's right. We must not let the war happen in New York!"

……

Since the last prison break, the security measures of SHIELD prisons have been significantly strengthened. However, due to SHIELD's recent financial difficulties, Hill is unable to invest a large amount of money in a comprehensive equipment upgrade.

Especially after the jailbreak, many facilities in the prison needed repair, making the already tight budget even tighter.

Therefore, on the basis of repairing the equipment damaged last time, Hill could only take the relatively primitive method of increasing the frequency of agent patrols to enhance the overall security of the prison.

When Captain Rogers walked into the prison, all the agents who passed by him saluted him, and many people shouted: "Captain! The trial is about to begin! We will fully support you! Win this case and make those bastards in the army pay the price!"

In the face of all this, Captain Rogers just smiled helplessly. The purpose of his trip was clear, which was to interrogate the Hydra members who were arrested last time - those traitors who infiltrated S.H.I.E.L.D.

These Hydra members were very tight-lipped and could not be pried open no matter how they were interrogated. Although SHIELD did not give up interrogating them, it still did not obtain any valuable intelligence.

"I need to interrogate a group of prisoners, the ones on the list." Captain Rogers handed a list to the agent in charge of prisoner management in the prison.

"More than thirty prisoners? Captain, are you planning to interrogate them all in one day?" The agent in charge couldn't help but click his tongue when he saw the long list.

"Are you alone?" he asked again. Interrogating a prisoner is not an easy task, it takes both time and energy.

Captain Rogers nodded. "Yes, I am losing my patience. Hydra should have been eradicated long ago. I thought I had done it, but it was obviously not enough. It is my responsibility to eliminate them."

Hearing this, the agent in charge nodded in agreement, because in the cartoons he watched as a child, Captain Rogers and Hydra had always been opposing entities.

"S.H.I.E.L.D.'s image has been damaged in recent times. We need something to boost everyone's morale." Captain Rogers' words were met with repeated nods from the agents.

"You mean we have to deal with Hydra, Captain?" The agent seemed a little

excited.

"Yes, I hope that when I interrogate the prisoners later, no one will disturb them and turn off all the surveillance in the interrogation room." Captain Rogers said to the agent.

"This doesn't quite comply with regulations." The agent in charge hesitated.

"There's no other way. You have to understand that sometimes I have to use some unconventional means to deal with specific prisoners. We've wasted too much time." Captain Rogers hinted that he might have to use some illegal torture methods.

After hearing this, the agent immediately understood: "I understand, Captain, don't worry, you will not be disturbed, and no surveillance records will be used as evidence in court!"

As an agent of the underground front, who can guarantee that his actions are completely legal? Moreover, it was the captain himself who made such a request, so he agreed to do it without hesitation.

In a completely closed interrogation room, the captain was quietly waiting for the prisoner to arrive. He seemed to be talking to himself and said, "It will depend on you in a while."

At this moment, in the invisible darkness, a pair of old hands gently patted Captain Rogers on the shoulder.

……

Washington, a special closed-door meeting of Congress. This was a temporary meeting with very few participants, only eight participants, and these eight people are the bigwigs who hold real power in Congress.

Among them were the three congressmen who met with Stryker privately last time.

Chapter 18 Loss of Power

You said all your military bases were destroyed, General Stryker? "On the other side of the long table, the congressman sitting in the chief seat had been questioning Stryker that day, exploring the possibility of his plan about mutants. He was a rational person in Congress, and his attitude towards mutants was neutral but slightly disgusted. However, he was not extreme.

He was willing to push for Stryker's plan only if it showed it was feasible. In Congress, people like him made up the majority.

The most powerful people in this superpower are not stupid. For the current Congress and the US government, maintaining a peaceful and stable rule is the top priority. As long as the mutant problem can remain in a controllable balance, they will not be stupid enough to push the mutants into a desperate situation. Such a choice will obviously lead to chaos in the country, and as officials and politicians, chaos means the rise of military power and the loss of their own power.

Therefore, no matter how Macaulay promoted his bills, he received a cold response from Congress, and sometimes even used him as a propaganda tool. Until Macaulay's death, this incident touched the nerves of many people. The first senior government official was killed by mutants. If it was done by radical mutants, it meant that they would strike again and might even target themselves.

It was out of concern for their lives that the bigwigs in Congress began to be willing to adopt General Stryker's plan. And not long after accepting Stryker's plan - probably no more than 40 hours, he came to tell everyone that his base had been destroyed.

"That's right, it's those mutants! First they killed Senator Macaulay, and then when I was away, they suddenly attacked my base." Stryker gritted his teeth in hatred when he mentioned this.

If he hadn't been attacked, if he had been at the base at the time, if that was the case... But there are no assumptions on the battlefield. This time, he was completely defeated.

"These mutants obviously had this plan planned! It wasn't just one or two radicals acting alone! The mastermind behind this is Professor X!" The name Stryker said caused the meeting room to fall silent instantly.

"Wait, you mean Charles Xavier?" The chief senator was a little confused. "He has always been a moderate and has never done anything against the government. This is the prerequisite for us to allow him to establish a mutant school. We need to maintain the ecological balance of the mutant population."

"That's right, gentlemen, it was him, Charles's X-Men who did this!" Stryker answered without hesitation, "I have a lot of evidence and proof!"

Stryker did have a lot of evidence that the X-Men attacked his base, and at this moment, all eight senators were confused. They didn't understand when Charles, who had always been moderate, became such a radical.

"So, congressmen, we don't have much choice. Charles is no different from Magneto! He's just better at disguise! We need to strengthen control, because since the murder of Congressman Macaulay, the war has actually begun! If we don't take action, we will be in a passive situation in the war!" Stryker's words and the evidence he brought were quite convincing.

Many members of Congress were lost in thought. Some agreed with Stryker's opinion, but others disagreed. The scene was in a stalemate. For the members of Congress, the best way to deal with this deadlock was: "Let's vote!" The chief member suggested.

The minority obeys the majority. This is a common method when encountering an unsolvable problem. Just as the members were about to raise their hands to vote, the door of the meeting room that had been closed was suddenly pushed open. The assistant of the chief member walked in quickly. He knew that he should not interrupt the meeting at this moment.

But he had an important message to report, and regardless of the discontented looks from others, he resolutely walked to his congressman and whispered a few words. After hearing the news brought by his assistant, the congressman was

shocked at first, and then suddenly realized.

He signaled his assistant to leave first, and after closing the door, he stood up and clapped his hands: "Everyone, there is an important message from the New York City Police Department."

"Our Councillor Macaulay is also a mutant himself!"

"Sorry everyone, we have some unfortunate news. Our Congressman Macaulay is actually a mutant himself!" When Congressman Ebut, who was presiding over the meeting, announced this shocking news, all the other congressmen attending the meeting were dumbfounded.

"I have received a clear notification from the New York City Police Department. After repeated DNA comparisons, they confirmed that it indeed belongs to Congressman Macaulay, and also confirmed that he is a mutant." Congressman Ebut calmly conveyed this information.

At the meeting, some members could no longer sit still: "This is simply illogical. If he is a mutant, why does he oppose mutants and even promote anti-mutant bills?"

Another councillor suggested: "Maybe it's because of self-denial? There is a group of mutants who do not recognize their identity as mutants."

“But that doesn’t explain why he went too far.”

"Perhaps there is another purpose? A mutant is lurking among us, perhaps for some other plan."

"Everyone, please be quiet." Seeing that the meeting room had become noisy, Senator Ebut asked everyone to listen to what he was going to say next: "There is a new turn in the issue now. The fact that Senator Macaulay is a mutant is a major change."

The question we need to consider now is no longer simply whether to implement a bill against mutants. The point is that Macaulay was able to evade the detection of mutant detectors and hide in the government for more than 20 years, and no one knew about it. Ebbot pointed out the most urgent problem at present.

Why did he sneak in and hide for so long? Did he have any accomplices? Was his death an accident or a carefully planned plot? Councillor Ebute raised several questions in one breath, but no one responded.

If it was premeditated, what was his intention behind it? Or who was manipulating Macaulay?

These issues are extremely difficult for those in power. Governing a superpower is not easy, and the slightest mistake may lead to global turmoil.

At this moment, any deviation in the political struggle could have devastating consequences. The agenda in Congress has shifted, and the bill that Stryker pushed has been shelved.

Some people believe that there may be an organization behind Macaulay.

"It's hard to say. Maybe it's the Brotherhood of Mutants, but it could also be our enemy country."

"Hostile country?!" everyone was surprised.

"Don't forget that there are intrigues among the five permanent members of the Security Council. What if someone deliberately sets a trap and uses the mutant issue to fan the flames in the country?"

"In other words, is there anyone deliberately pushing all this, even including creating a color revolution in the United States?"

"That's right. Many countries are eager to pull the United States down from its position as the world's number one superpower!"

Conspiracy theories, chains of suspicion, and Cold War thinking filled the entire conference room at this moment. This is exactly how experienced politicians think. They are used to looking at problems from the worst angle. Those politicians with naive ideas have long been silent in this sea of politics.

Stryker stood in the conference room, listening to the debate among the congressmen, and could not help but sigh that he was only a stone's throw away from success. If it weren't for that assistant's sudden report, if it weren't for the New York police finding clues...

"Everyone, we are facing a serious problem now!" Congressman Ebut asked everyone to suspend the discussion, "We need to find out whether there are other mutants in our team, and whether the bills they promote are really intended to subvert our government!"

"Before we figure out these issues, please stay calm and restrained, and don't trust any possible traps. This is crucial at this critical juncture! I will go to New York in person to verify the true situation of Congressman Macaulay!"

Congressman Ebut ended his speech like this, and General Stryker, who remained in the meeting room, seemed to have been completely ignored. The congressmen began to leave. This made Stryker anxious: "Congressman Ebut, but the X-Men did destroy our base!"

As he was about to leave, Councilman Ebut looked back at Stryker, as if he was looking at a stray dog: "I understand. I will hand this matter over to the New York police."

"New York police? How can they handle such a thing! Congressman, regardless of whether there is someone manipulating them behind the scenes, mutants themselves are a real threat!" Ebut neither agreed with nor directly refuted Stryker's point of view. He just stood there quietly, waiting for Stryker to continue speaking.

"So, Congressman, Plan X is crucial to fighting mutants. But now it has been destroyed by them. We need to rebuild the entire plan, and this will require huge amounts of money. I hope Congress can..." However, Stryker was interrupted by Ebut before he could finish.

"To be honest, General Stryker, I'm not surprised at all that Professor X sent people to attack your base. From the mutants' point of view, the fact that you used a large number of their compatriots for experiments is enough to arouse their anger, even if Professor Charles is considered a moderate."

"Project X has been implemented for many years. This plan cannot be exposed or made known to the public. If the public knew its nature, no matter mutants or ordinary people, no one would support such a crazy plan. After all, mutants still look like humans. If that happens, Congress's approval rating will probably drop to a historic low."

"In fact, Weapon X should have been declared a failure." Abbott glanced at Stryker, as if he wanted to laugh, but he held it back. "As a weapon plan to fight mutants, it was defeated by a group of mutants in its own base camp, and it was defeated miserably. If this happened on the front battlefield, General Stryker, you should have been tried by a military court long ago!"

Congressman Ebut criticized Stryker harshly and had obviously lost confidence in the Weapon X program: "Congress has invested too much budget in you over the years, but you have not produced any worthy results. General Stryker, it is time to abandon those unrealistic ideas. It is the right way to put these programs back into the regular army sequence. I will discuss this with the generals in the Pentagon later. Let's stop with Plan X!"

Stryker couldn't believe his ears. Congress was going to completely abandon Plan X because of this failure? You know, this was just an accident. If he had been there at the time!

However, Congressman Ebut would not listen to such explanations. For these congressmen, only the victors were qualified to be called generals, and the fact that the losers were not sent to military courts was already a great forgiveness.

Chapter 19 Information in the Brain

Stryker was still making his last struggle: "We still have a chance, Mr. Congressman! As long as we restart Trisco's Sentinel Project..."

"No! Trisko is a member of Hydra. The biggest mistake the US government made back then was to indiscriminately accept a large number of former Nazi scientists. That was a huge mistake! It is because of this that SHIELD is in its current situation." Ebut interrupted Stryker without hesitation.

"Well, General Stryker, enjoy the rest of your military career. You are approaching retirement age, so you might as well think about where to buy a farm and enjoy your old age after retirement." Ebut patted Stryker on the shoulder.

"I have to meet General Ross later. After all, his Hulk Project seems more reliable than Project X with the help of Dr. Richards."

With that, Ebut left, leaving Stryker in deep thought.

……

When Captain Rogers walked out of the SHIELD prison, Li Jie just sent a message. "What's going on, Captain?"

"I think the professor should have found a lot of useful information." It was Professor X who had been following Rogers in secret using an invisible stance.

Under the cover of Captain America, Professor X successfully sneaked into the SHIELD prison and read the information in the brains of those Hydra agents.

Oftentimes, people’s cognition and understanding are limited. This is because our perspectives are fixed and our thinking is easily misled by certain factors, which leads to cognitive bias.

Just like the huge organization Hydra, which split into many branch organizations after its defeat in World War II, many members of Hydra don't even know how big their organization is.

Since there is no communication between the organizations, only their top leader, the Red Skull, knows about the existence of these organizations. These are the pawns left by the Red Skull before his defeat, in order to make a comeback in the future.

Professor X read more than 30 years of in-depth information from the memories of 20 prisoners, including every detail of their lives and the places where they were deceived by others. From the perspective of an outsider, the professor saw it clearly.

"I did find some interesting clues, and I think my old friend Magneto will be interested in these findings. This involves the disappearance of his wife and children in the past. I can now give him a reasonable explanation, and he finally has a clear goal." The professor passed this information to Li Jie.

Li Jie smiled after receiving the message, thinking that it would be best to let the Brotherhood of Mutants and Hydra fight first, so that he could have less worries. As for how to convey the message to Magneto, Li Jie believed that as an old friend, the professor had his own way.

At this moment, Li Jie received a special email in his mailbox.

The sender was not a stranger, but an assistant from Marvel. However, after reading the content of the email, Li Jie suddenly felt a headache.

"I am Wade Wilson, nicknamed Deadpool, and I currently work as a professional superhero. I am interested in selling the copyright of my image to your company, and I look forward to discussing it in detail."

Although the content of the email was brief, it caused a lot of trouble. Because the sender was the Deadpool who made Hawkeye's future bleak. Li Jie didn't know how to respond for a moment.

To be honest, Li Jie didn't want to provoke this character who was as sticky as chewing gum. But now that he had come to him, if he rejected him directly, would he retaliate by throwing feces, welding the door, or spraying paint at the

entrance of his own company?

Just the thought of it scared him. "Well, he said he was a superhero? I hope so, but he's not a super villain." Finally, Li Jie had no choice but to reply to his assistant and agreed to arrange a meeting with Deadpool at the company on May 5 to discuss the details.

May 5th is also a day that has attracted much attention from the whole world. But this is not because there is any major festival on that day, but because on this day, the case in which Captain Steve Rogers sued the US military and the government for infringement of rights was officially opened for trial!

Note: The revolution here refers to a series of political changes that took place in Eastern Europe in the late 1920s, which is as famous as the Arab Spring. You can search Baidu for details.

Wade Wilson, a professional mercenary and a top expert in the industry, is considered to have no mission that he cannot complete. He attaches great importance to moral bottom line and conscience and never does anything that violates these two principles.

As a result, most of the missions Wade took on were not very lucrative and could be dangerous, such as when he was hired to protect a village in Africa because a local warlord was planning to plunder it.

The bounty offered by the village is minimal, and the mission is extremely difficult. This type of mercenary work is almost unpopular in the industry and is purely a thankless job.

However, Wade Wilson still took on the task. In order to protect more than 400 villagers in the village from persecution by warlords, he fought wits and courage with more than 300 African soldiers.

This was just one small example of his career as a mercenary. He had done many similar actions, such as helping a girl find her father's stolen belongings or assisting a museum director in recovering stolen artifacts. Wade Wilson always accepted low pay and took great risks.

In the world of mercenaries, he is undoubtedly an outlier. Fighting in the hail of bullets every day, but living a life of poverty, compared to those mercenaries

who receive huge rewards after completing the mission and live a life of luxury, Wade's life is more like an ascetic monk.

Wade's income was not high to begin with, and most of his salary was used to maintain the daily maintenance of weapons and equipment. Coupled with the huge medical expenses after each injury, his life was extremely difficult.

Wade, who lives in the attic of an apartment building, lives a tight life, but it is precisely because of his tenacity and eccentricity that he has won praise in the mercenary world. People call him the modern version of Zorro, which is why S.H.I.E.L.D. once intended to recruit Wade to join its ranks.

However, these are all things of the past. Before Wade got cancer, he always believed that good and evil would eventually be punished, and he called himself a messenger of justice and a superhero in the mercenary world.

However, cancer changed everything. He completely lost faith in such concepts as retribution for good and evil, especially after experiencing that inhumane research.

Ever since Wade Wilson transformed from the king of mercenaries to Deadpool, he has made clear his future path in life - to live only for himself!

So, Wade, as Deadpool, returns to the mercenary world, and now he only works for money.

At nine o'clock in the morning, Li Jie had an appointment with Deadpool. Li Jie came to the office early, but found that Deadpool arrived earlier than him.

Deadpool, wearing a red and black tight combat suit, greeted Li Jie who had just entered the door: "Mr. Jason Lee, you are late!" and put his weapons and double swords aside.

Li Jie glanced at his watch. It was exactly nine o'clock. "I'm not late, Mr. Deadpool. You're the one who came too early."

Deadpool put one leg on Li Jie's desk, crossed his hands and twirled his thumbs, and said to Li Jie in a frivolous tone: "I am a big star, a big shot who can bring huge amounts of money to your company! You should pay more attention to me!"

Li Jie doesn't have a very good impression of Deadpool, no matter how he is portrayed in the movie. However, his previous prank on Hawkeye made Li Jie afraid of him, and this person does things without scruples.

If Li Jie wasn't worried that Deadpool would follow his example and cause damage in front of the company, he really didn't want to see him.

"Let's not talk about anything else, Mr. Deadpool. What is your purpose in coming to our company?" Li Jie didn't want to chat with Deadpool.

Deadpool pointed at Li Jie's computer: "I have made it very clear in the email! I think we can cooperate! Your company needs superhero images and stories to make comics and make money, and I just happen to need to make money too!"

"I have no objection to licensing my image to your company. Of course, I want a higher share, at least half of the profits!" Deadpool said to himself.

He said you could launch a Deadpool comic series, in which he would share many of his own stories, such as how he outsmarted the Pharaoh in an Egyptian tomb, defeated the resurrected army of Qin Shi Huang at the Great Wall of China, and how he killed the octopus that had been causing trouble for years in the Caribbean Sea.

Listening to Deadpool's excited narration, Li Jie felt strange, as if these stories sounded familiar.

"Wait a minute, Mr. Deadpool. Your story seems to be the plot of Hollywood movies "Indiana Jones", "The Mummy Returns" and "Pirates of the Caribbean"? " Li Jie pondered for a long time and finally remembered that he had read these stories.

So, he directly interrupted Deadpool's nonsense: "We can't force the plot of a Hollywood movie on you!"

In this regard, Deadpool didn't care at all that his lies were exposed, and shamelessly admitted: "Plagiarism is the source of progress in all story creation, whether it is Japanese anime or Chinese online novels."

"Ah?" Li Jie wondered if he had heard it wrong.

"The most important thing is hype! Do you understand hype, Mr. Li?" Deadpool patted Li Jie's shoulder, walked behind him, leaned close to his ear and whispered.

“Do you know why I chose your company?”

"Why?" Li Jie was also very interested in this.

"Because you recognize the value of us superheroes and are willing to pay the copyright fees!" Li Jie reserved his opinion on Deadpool calling himself a superhero.

"So I thought I could give something valuable back to your company." Deadpool spun Li Jie's rotating boss chair a few times, making Li Jie dizzy.

"I can make my name even more famous! Do you know how popular I am now? When you open a web page, it's all news about me." As he spoke, Deadpool opened the search engine on Li Jie's computer and typed in the keyword "superhero".

Soon, the search results showed the hottest topics at the moment: [Captain America Lawsuit], [All for One, One for All], [Spider-Man]. The atmosphere instantly became awkward, and Deadpool quickly cut off the power to the computer screen.

"It seems you are not on it." Li Jie looked at the computer screen and spread his hands helplessly.

"It's okay, I can take advantage of Hawkeye's popularity!" Deadpool said nonchalantly, seemingly unaffected by the embarrassment just now. However, Hawkeye Barton of S.H.I.E.L.D. suddenly sneezed, and inexplicably felt a chill on his back.

"No, you must not do this!" Li Jie immediately stopped Deadpool's behavior. After all, he had just spent a million dollars to buy the brand usage rights of Hawkeye not long ago. If Deadpool continued to do this, it was unknown how long this brand in his hands would be ruined.

Chapter 20 The Birth of Deadpool!

Don't worry, Mr. Li, I have a way to deal with SHIELD. They will definitely not be able to find fault with me. Whether it is taking various legal means or propaganda, I am very good at it! "As he said, Deadpool began to frantically flip through his phone, as if looking for some important information.

"Come on, come on, Mr. Deadpool! What do you want to do?" Li Jie snatched Deadpool's phone. This guy is really scary when he gets crazy. Li Jie is afraid that he will do something out of line again. After all, Captain Rogers is now an important member of the Illuminati.

"I've already said it, I want to cooperate with you! Make a lot of money, enough to buy a small island in Spain, and then let those lively girls dance on the island in bikinis!" Deadpool did not hide his greedy desire.

"I have to thank your company for reminding me of this. I know Rogers once came to you, and then he started to sue the US military because they embezzled tens of billions of dollars from him! Those colorful dollars are enough to fill a swimming pool for me to swim in!" Deadpool said longingly.

"Captain Rogers is not doing this for money. He's not that vulgar." After hearing Deadpool describe Captain Rogers like this, Li Jie couldn't help but say a few fair words for him.

"Let him be. He doesn't care about money, but I do." Deadpool waved his hand to interrupt Li Jie. "From then on, I realized that being a superhero can make so much money."

"Listen, Lee, we can launch my comics first, and then find a company to produce cartoons. Then we can launch all kinds of my peripheral products, including figures, toys, stickers, key chains, mugs, etc., everything!" Obviously, Deadpool has done a lot of homework to make money.

"Then we can find the six major Hollywood film companies to cooperate in shooting a live-action movie that truly belongs to me. It's called "Marvelous Wade: The Birth of Deadpool!" Of course, I must be the leading actor, and the salary cannot be less than 25 million US dollars. In addition, I have to get 20% of the global box office!" Deadpool said, getting more and more excited.

However, Li Jie could only hold his chin up and try his best not to show his contempt on his face. This guy is simply dreaming! How can such a salary and treatment be realized? Even if the story of Deadpool is made into a movie, it will probably only be restricted. How can it be about him collecting debts every day?

"Okay, okay, Mr. Deadpool. Our company's business is to publish superhero comics, and all the stories revolve around superheroes. They are real superheroes!" Li Jie deliberately emphasized the word "superhero".

"Huh? I'm also a superhero! Do you dare to deny it?" Faced with Deadpool's shameless statement, Li Jie really wanted to slap him twice.

"Mr. Deadpool, we may have some differences on the definition of superheroes. Why don't you take a look at the Spider-Man comics first? I can lend it to you, but you have to return it to me after reading it. It is our company's property." Li Jie was about to hand him the Spider-Man comics on the bookshelf.

"I feel like he and I are similar." Deadpool said after casually flipping through the comics, "Look, our uniforms are simply couple outfits!" He pointed at Spider-Man's red and blue tights and his red and black tights in the comics. These two uniforms unexpectedly have a sense of CP.

"We can use this as a selling point. You know there are a lot of fan comics of Spider-Man and Nightcrawler on the Internet. Why not replace Nightcrawler with me! I believe this will definitely be more popular and can help both of us increase our popularity!" Li Jie felt dizzy after hearing this. Can he really have a good conversation with Deadpool?

"Okay! Mr. Deadpool. Then I'll tell you the truth. Our company only accepts stories about superheroes! And right now, you haven't reached the status of a superhero yet. You're just a mercenary who does things for money! Do you understand?"

Suddenly, the scene fell into a depressing silence, and the atmosphere was

extremely awkward. Deadpool just stared at Li Jie until Li Jie got goose bumps. In this confrontation, Li Jie was finally defeated.

"Okay! Okay! Don't look at me like that! I give up!" Li Jie felt that his decision to meet Deadpool was a stupid one.

Maybe he could let Deadpool do something if he wanted to use his fame to make money, Li Jie thought to himself.

Well, the bad reputation of Hawkeye is still in his hands. If he can't clear it up in the future, the one million investment will be completely wasted. As a businessman, Li Jie feels that he is still competent.

"Mr. Deadpool, if you really want to become a superhero and become a national idol like Captain Rogers, it is not impossible."

Li Jie's words hit the nail on the head for Deadpool. He actually just wanted to be as rich as Captain Rogers - or, in other words, to be loved by the people and become a representative of the national spirit.

"It's just that I think a little hype is needed so that your debut can cause a sensation. I can promise you that we will pay you 50% of the royalties for your comics in the future." This payment ratio is almost unprofitable for Marvel, and it is a pure cost operation. However, if Deadpool can be retained, Li Jie thinks it is worth it in the long run.

"What kind of hype? Do you want me to go to Black Hawkeye or Black SHIELD?" Deadpool seemed eager to try.

"No, those hype methods are outdated, Mr. Deadpool. Nowadays, people pay attention to the news and like to read news with strong reversals. The more intense the previous news, the stronger the drama brought by the reversal, and the more it can attract people's attention!" Li Jie pointed at his eyes.

"So what?" Deadpool asked.

Therefore, I hope you will join the Avengers! Li Jie had a strange smile on his face. Hey, I really don't know how Hawkeye will get along with his new colleagues. It's really exciting. In this way, Hawkeye's comics can appear in Deadpool's special!

At this moment, in the distant gym of SHIELD, Hawkeye, who was practicing archery, missed the target for the first time. Just when he had drawn the bow, he suddenly felt a shock all over his body, and he almost couldn't hold the bow.

Agent Barton muttered in confusion, "Why do I feel so uneasy?"

While Li Jie and Wade were discussing the copyright of Deadpool comics and thinking about how to get Deadpool to join the Avengers, the other side of New York City was already bustling with reporters from all over the world waiting on standby.

This is the State Court in New York City. On weekdays, this court is not well-known on the global stage and does not attract much attention. After all, it is neither the International Court of Justice in The Hague nor the Supreme Court of some superpower.

However, today, the New York City State Court stole the limelight from all the famous courts because the lawsuit regarding Captain America Rogers is about to go to trial!

The case attracted global attention on the day the lawsuit was filed. In fact, the case itself is not complicated. It is just that a well-known person commissioned others to accuse a certain organization of illegally using his portrait rights and constituting infringement.

Usually, this type of news is mostly reported by newspapers and media in the entertainment section. If the infringed party is a famous Hollywood star or a top NBA player, perhaps the current affairs news will mention it at the end of the report.

However, this infringement case has received unprecedented attention from thousands of media outlets around the world. Reporters from North America, South America, Europe, Asia, and even faraway South Africa have stationed teams in the United States just to get the latest news on the case.

It turns out that the character who was infringed this time was Captain America, and the infringer was the US military. This protagonist setting alone is enough to attract the attention of the world.

In most people's perception, Captain America and the US military are two sides

of the same coin. Captain America is the embodiment of the military and the idol of countless American soldiers. Many young people choose to join the military career because they have been inspired by Captain America's stories since childhood.

Now that the captain has openly broken off relations with the military, how can the global media not be shocked!

Almost all the world's well-known media have gathered in New York at this moment. This trial can be regarded as the most important global trial event since the 21st century.

The number of seats for spectators inside the court is extremely limited. Apart from the SHIELD personnel who accompanied Captain America to the trial and the representatives sent by the military, there are very few seats left for others to attend.

The media that were lucky enough to be allowed in were almost all top-level in the world. More media could only wait outside the court, waiting for the latest news from inside.

Thousands of reporters have gathered around the New York State Legislature, and even the New York police and SHIELD agents have to work together to maintain order.

Steve Rogers looks particularly handsome in a dark blue suit. Following him is the lawyer in charge of this case, Daredevil Matt.

"Captain Rogers, is the reason you sued the U.S. military just because of infringement? Or is there something else going on?"

"Captain, are you going to give up your spiritual beliefs just for the sake of money?"

"Captain, what are your chances of winning this lawsuit?"

When Captain Rogers arrived at the scene, reporters swarmed in like vultures smelling rotten meat. Prior to this, Captain Rogers had not made any comments to the outside world about the lawsuit, which led to a lot of speculation.

At this time, Captain Rogers made his first public statement on the matter. Standing on the steps, he looked at the noisy and anxious reporters and said in a steady and firm tone: "Everyone should have the right to protect his own rights, whether he is a superhero or an ordinary citizen."

"This country should be a country ruled by law, and relying on the law to operate is the most basic guarantee of the country. I know there are a lot of rumors now, and there are many speculations about my lawsuit against the military, and there are also many speculations about me personally."

As Captain Rogers said, the US military, especially the political propaganda department, has put a lot of thought into this matter. They tried to help Captain Rogers through public opinion, hoping that he would give up the lawsuit.

As a result, various smears and moral blackmails were staged one after another. For example, it was said that Captain America, as a symbol of the American spirit, should show magnanimity and should not sell out the national government for personal gain. Where does this view put the US government?

They put Captain Rogers on a moral high ground, hoping that he would put national interests first and sacrifice personal interests. These were all carefully planned by the Political Propaganda Department.

Captain Rogers responded to this for the first time in front of the global media: "This country does not belong to a few people, and the US government should not become a plaything of some people in power."

"Laws are made so that they can become the code of conduct that every citizen of this country must abide by, no matter how noble or humble they are! Laws should also not lose their due effectiveness due to the forced intervention of certain organizations!" Captain Rogers spoke fearlessly to the global media.

He seemed to be born with this charm, as if he were an excellent orator.

Chapter 21 Legal Sanctions

There are many doubts about me from the outside world. I just want to say, when the rights of any citizen are violated, why should we judge whether he is qualified for protection based on his identity?

I have been in cold storage for seventy years, and have been away from this world for seventy years. In the past, I have worked hard to protect this world, hoping that it will become more peaceful and better. However, when I return to modern society, sometimes I think that maybe it would be better if I died in 1945! Rogers waved his arms. What did he mean? Did he think that the current era was worse than before?

All the reporters present were pondering this question.

Some big stars want to keep their private lives, but paparazzi keep exposing them and even threaten the safety of their families. Am I right to consider these questions? Many people claim on the Internet that as stars and public figures, they should have no privacy and should live in the spotlight for people to see clearly.

Isn't the law supposed to protect the privacy rights of every citizen? Why don't these people dare to resist and sue those who violate their rights? It's because they are kidnapped by public opinion! Those people can use the privacy of celebrities as a selling point today, and they can spy on the privacy of ordinary people tomorrow! Rogers' speech was full of Shandong accent, and the problems he mentioned have already appeared in the network society of modern society.

I have heard that some prostitutes and women from Kabukicho were raped on the street, but the police did not accept these cases, on the grounds that they were prostitutes and it was difficult to confirm the authenticity of the case, so the cases were shelved. I want to ask, is raping a prostitute really less harmful than raping an ordinary woman? Rogers questioned many reporters.

"This rapist can attack prostitutes today and get away with it. Once he gets his taste of success, he will attack your mothers and sisters tomorrow!"

When anyone cannot speak freely or even exercise their civil rights due to their identity, public opinion pressure or various social shackles, or even encounters invisible but real discrimination and kidnapping, I wonder, is this really what I am pursuing? Rogers stood on the steps and spoke loudly, saying what many people wanted to say but dared not say.

The existence of the law is to give citizens a tool to protect their own rights and interests. Everyone must abide by it, whether ordinary citizens or lawmakers. When your rights and interests are violated, you should stand up and should not easily succumb to public opinion and moral kidnapping. What I am doing now is just like what I did in the past. I just did something that others wanted to do but didn't dare to do!

Rogers is right. How many people have given up defending their rights because of moral kidnapping and public opinion kidnapping, allowing criminals to go unpunished and victims to endure grievances.

Now I declare that my lawsuit against the US military is just a struggle for the rights that a citizen deserves! This is a struggle of a new era! This should not be limited by my identity. If someone still regards me as a role model, then I want to tell you now that what I want to teach you is how to defend your own rights!

In addition, if I win this lawsuit, I will donate all the compensation paid by the military, and not a single cent will go into my personal pocket. These funds will be used for medical assistance and food subsidies for poor families, as well as for study bonuses for outstanding students. Rogers finally said this at the door of the court.

From beginning to end, I just want our country and the world to become a better place.

When he turned and walked into the court, the faces of the US military representatives who were listening to his speech in the distance changed. The propaganda department's propaganda and moral kidnapping against Rogers should have been effective. However, many celebrities would choose to compromise under the pressure of public opinion. Captain Rogers' willpower was obviously very strong. He didn't care what people said online. Especially

after the short film "One for One, One for All" became a global hit.

Many people realized that superheroes are ordinary people, and a considerable number of people who originally criticized Captain Rogers have turned to support him. On that day, many TV stations set up live broadcasts outside the court, and Captain Rogers' speech instantly spread all over the world.

His speech and his emphasis on the fact that he was not doing it for money but for the protection of citizens' rights instantly ignited the fire in many people's hearts. Captain Rogers quickly dispelled all the previous attacks on him with a speech and once again put himself on the moral high ground.

What's wrong with a citizen exercising his rights? What's more, he challenged the most authoritative institution in the country! At this moment, almost every American watching the live broadcast stood on the side of Captain Rogers.

Challenging authority and enforcing the law will win the support of the people in any era, especially when a national icon like Captain Rogers stands up and says such things.

Afterwards, Captain Rogers' social media accounts, including Facebook, Twitter, Weibo, etc., were instantly flooded with his large number of fans, and the screens were filled with messages of support for him.

In contrast, when the US military representatives heard the content of these speeches, their faces were extremely ugly. All the propaganda done by the Political Propaganda Department before seemed pale and unconvincing at this moment.

Ironically, Rogers' excellent speaking ability was specially trained by the US military so that he could tour the country. This time, he used his ability to fight against the US military.

The image of Captain America is extremely important to the military, as the use of this image for publicity can bring them billions of dollars in revenue each year, which can be spent by the military at its discretion without the need for budget approval from Congress.

No one knows how much supervision the US Congress has done on this fund, and where this huge sum of money is ultimately spent by the military. Many

military plans that cannot be made public and cannot be approved by Congress all rely on the support of this fund.

In addition, the image of Captain America Rogers is also very important. Modern warfare requires the quality of soldiers to be increasingly improved, but high-quality soldiers have always been scarce.

Captain America's image has always been an important bargaining chip in the hands of the US military. Many fans choose to join the army because they admire Captain America. However, at the peak of annual conscription, in order to maintain military bases all over the world and its global dominance, the number of soldiers needed by the military is always stretched. This has led to some unqualified soldiers, such as those with criminal records, being able to sneak into the army.

Now, due to the impact of the Captain America case, the recruitment work has become more difficult. Many people have reservations about the military. "If they can even steal Captain America's money, if I die, I'm afraid the military will also take the pension for themselves." Many people expressed similar views. This puts the US military in a rather embarrassing situation.

In contrast, the government representatives, as joint defendants, were more calm.

"I think I've guessed what the captain wants to do," said a White House representative.

"What did you guess?" asked the congressional representative.

"We may have underestimated Captain Rogers' ability. He is not only an outstanding war commander, but also an excellent politician. He is good at using tortuous ways to achieve his goals." The White House representative said with a smile.

"Like how things developed this time?"

"On the surface, he is suing the US military and our (government) for rights violations. But this is a roundabout strategy. Recently, S.H.I.E.L.D. has not had a good time. Congress cut most of their budgets, and it is said that the new director is considering reducing the benefits of the agents."

In fact, welfare cuts have already been implemented.

"The reason why Congress cut SHIELD's budget, in addition to the excuse of financial constraints, may be more importantly the opposition of generals in the Pentagon." said the White House representative, and the congressional representative nodded in agreement.

"In fact, the generals in the Pentagon have long been dissatisfied with S.H.I.E.L.D. Although S.H.I.E.L.D. has a high budget, its number of personnel is pitifully small. This unfair allocation of resources is the main contradiction between them."

At this moment, the congressional representative immediately understood what the other party meant: "So, the captain wants to force the army to let go in this way?"

"That's right! He has been emphasizing the importance of public opinion and morality. It seems that he is reflecting on himself, but is he actually reminding the military? Compared with individuals, Congress, the president and even the military are the ones who cannot withstand the pressure of public opinion! The shift in public opinion is enough to prompt Congress to reorganize!" The congressional representative couldn't help but break out in a cold sweat.

"You mean Captain is using this method to force Congress to pass S.H.I.E.L.D.'s budget?"

The White House representative shrugged. "Believe it or not, as long as the military doesn't give in and Congress doesn't approve S.H.I.E.L.D.'s budget, this lawsuit will never end. Captain Rogers' influence is enough to change the direction of public opinion in the entire country as long as he has enough perseverance. The military and the government have spent seventy years shaping his image, but now they have become the most powerful tools in his hands."

"But he is Captain America! How could he go against the US government?" The congressional representative was still shocked.

The White House representative looked at the scale sculpture on the roof of the New York State Supreme Court, which symbolizes justice, and said: "He is Captain America, but he is not the captain of the US government! Captain Rogers has lofty goals, but he is not a puppet of the government. He has been

working for this country, not just for a certain party. When there are differences of opinion, those bigwigs can't influence him at all."

“Isn’t he afraid that he will make things too big and end up not being able to clean up the mess?” The congressional representative still had some concerns about this.

"Why should he worry about the ending? How it ends is none of his business. It is the military and the government that need to clean up the mess." The White House representative shook his head.

"I suddenly feel that Captain Rogers might be a good choice to become the president of the United States one day. He has courage, determination, vision, and will never easily compromise on the wrong things."

"It seems that you are a fan of Captain America." The congressional representative teased.

"Maybe. This case is indeed quite interesting. After all, the military seems to have too much power now, and billions of dollars of funds go unaccounted for every year. It's time to clean it up." The White House representative responded with a smile.

The congressional representatives did not make any rebuttal. It seems that the government and the military are not as indestructible as the outside world believes.

Chapter 22 Different Interests

Ultimately, the key factor affecting the situation in all four directions lies in public opinion. Although ordinary people have little individual power, they constitute the foundation of society. Whether it is a superhero or a government, once they lose the support of the people, they will quickly wither, just like a plant without soil nourishment.

The attitude of public opinion will directly determine the final outcome of this incident. One of the main reasons for cutting SHIELD's budget comes from the continuous pressure from the military, coupled with some problems within SHIELD.

The constant pressure from the military is particularly critical. Where there are people, there are conflicts, and where there are conflicts, it is easy to form two opposing camps. When Nick Fury was in office, he used various means to ensure sufficient budgets, although some of these means were not so fair and honest, which also made the military gnashing their teeth. You know, the predecessor of S.H.I.E.L.D., the National Strategic Science Agency, was originally an organization under the jurisdiction of the US military. Until 1955, it had to act according to the mood of the military.

Now SHIELD has grown into a significant armed force in the country, and even dares to compete with the military, which makes the generals in the Pentagon quite dissatisfied.

Politics is a profound and complex subject, involving countless conspiracies, compromises, negotiations and deals. It is difficult for outsiders to understand how serious the distribution of political power and division of power is within a superpower.

The political structure of the United States implements the separation of powers, that is, the judicial power, legislative power and executive power are independent of each other. Therefore, the country is integrated in the form of a

coalition of interests, that is, the federal government.

Under the premise of maintaining national sovereignty and national security, the country was divided into countless small interest groups and factions. Washington led the War of Independence to create the United States, but the United States did not achieve true unity. The laws and interests of each state were different. The federal government at that time was just an unstable interest alliance.

It was not until the Civil War led by Lincoln that the domestic interest groups were completely unified through war. Only then did the basic framework of the modern American government and power distribution take shape.

So far, each state in the United States has its own specific laws, as long as these laws do not violate the national constitution and can reflect the interests of each state. This is almost unimaginable for a unitary state. For example, a gun that is legally used in a state becomes illegal when brought to a neighboring state. The police will arrest you and may even lead to imprisonment.

Legal disputes like this are common in the United States. Certain vehicles are legal here but not there. Some medicines can only be purchased in certain states because they are not available in other states. Even the specific implementation of marriage laws varies from state to state.

For example, the director of the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) does not always give face to the White House. In Hoover's era, the FBI could arbitrarily and illegally arrest and interrogate suspects. Such behavior was not new. Even the use of illegal means to interrogate certain officials happened from time to time. Due to the dispersion of power and the lack of effective supervision, the FBI at that time could be said to be almost lawless.

Even President Roosevelt, who was a famous president in American history, could not raise much objection when facing FBI boss Hoover.

It was precisely because of this situation that Roosevelt set up an agency to compete with it - the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA).

In addition to providing the government with additional sources of information, the CIA also took away power from the FBI. In the past, the FBI was responsible for both domestic and foreign intelligence affairs, which was why Hoover was

feared. However, the emergence of the CIA directly took away half of its power.

In other words, the government has created a character that plays against the FBI, allowing them to check and balance each other. Since the establishment of the CIA, friction between the FBI and the CIA has occurred countless times.

In short, in the political field, the most important thing is balance. Balancing the forces of all parties, various rights and interests, and diverse interests. Although it may sound like a lie, maintaining stability is the primary pursuit of the United States. Only under the premise of stability can the US government handle other affairs.

For example, Congress and the White House are in conflict, so it is only a matter of time before Nick Fury is fired by the government. Once he makes a slight mistake, he will be caught and made a big fuss. After all, maintaining a balance is crucial for the government.

The Captain America case in New York has attracted widespread attention. However, in Washington, a quiet trial is taking place.

This is exactly what the United Nations Security Council is doing to Nick Fury, accusing him of dereliction of duty. Nick must take responsibility for the collapse of S.H.I.E.L.D., and this is the conclusion they have already reached internally.

The case was heard by three members of the Security Council, who were more likely to announce the verdict than to conduct an interrogation.

"Nick Fury, due to your dereliction of duty which led to the fall of S.H.I.E.L.D., and your repeated acts of exceeding your authority without the approval of the Security Council, this Council has decided to strip you of all your positions again. In view of the fall of the S.H.I.E.L.D. headquarters, you must bear the unshirkable responsibility!" The committee member who read out the verdict held the manuscript in his hand and read it out one by one.

"Here, this court sentences Nick Fury to ten years in prison. Do you have any objection to this verdict?"

Nick Fury stood in the middle of the room, saying nothing, but staring at the commissioner with murderous eyes that made people feel uneasy.

Nick must step down and be imprisoned. This is the unanimous opinion within the Security Council. Under Nick's leadership, SHIELD has almost become his one-man show. The Security Council cannot intervene except for the budget, not to mention other areas that can restrict SHIELD, which makes many internal members dissatisfied.

Especially when Nick was arrested, there were agents who tried to obstruct the arrest. This incident clearly showed that Nick's existence seriously challenged the authority of the Security Council.

Nick was sentenced to prison, and those agents who tried to prevent his arrest were cleared from the SHIELD organization.

Faced with Nick's uncomfortable look, the commissioner had to wave his hand to signal the guard to take him away. At this point, the matter was settled and he didn't want to see Nick again.

Before leaving, Nick left a meaningful message: "The threats never stop!"

……

Li Jie is not very concerned about the development of Captain Rogers' case. He knows that this matter will not end so easily. When the time comes, he will speak out in comics and media to support Rogers and help increase the attention of this matter.

He had just helped Rogers find a new colleague. Thinking of this, Li Jie shook his head and smiled.

He picked up the phone and called Katie. The disbandment of the mutant school must have been a heavy blow to her. As a friend, Li Jie felt it necessary to comfort her.

"Katie, how are you doing recently? I heard that Xavier's School for Gifted Children has closed down?" Li Jie asked with concern after the call was connected.

"It's okay, at least I met a lot of friends there. Although the school is closed, I found many new goals!" Katie's voice did not sound depressed, which made Li Jie relieved.

"You sound like a good person. Are you free to have dinner with me tonight?" Li Jie invited her. But Katie on the other end of the line seemed a little hesitant.

"Oh, that... I'm not in New York right now, actually."

"Ok?"

"My classmates and I went out to travel and relax. Because the school was disbanded." Li Jie felt that Katie seemed to be hiding something.

"Are you going out to travel now? Will it be dangerous?" Li Jie remembered that he had reminded Katie in the identity of Nightwalker that the current situation of mutants was very dangerous.

How dare this girl go out at a time like this?

"Don't worry, we have plenty of companions." Katie replied hastily.

It is precisely because there are so many companions that it is more dangerous. Li Jie wanted to say something else, but Katie interrupted him hastily:

"We are going to start preparing for the barbecue party at noon, Jason. I will call you later. Bye!"

Katie hung up the phone in a hurry after she finished speaking. Li Jie always felt that there was something wrong with Katie, and she was hiding something.

In fact, Katie did hide some things. For example, she did go on a trip with her classmates, but it was not for relaxation, and their destinations were far apart.

At the moment she is in Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, the famous "City of God." She and Iceman Bob are on their way to meet a very important person.

This person is a senior who graduated from Xavier's School for Gifted People and is also one of the richest people in Brazil and even in South America - Roberto Squeta. People call him Sunspot.

Roberto Sciuta, an Alpha-class mutant, is nicknamed "Sunspot" because of his special ability to transform his body into a highly magnetic state similar to the motion of a sunspot.

By using the movement of his ultra-high magnetic field to heat the surrounding environment, he can easily raise the temperature of the area around him to the level of the surface of the sun, and can cause the hydrogen and oxygen elements in the air to fuse and burn. In other words, he can create fire out of thin air.

Unlike burning ordinary combustibles, the combustion that Roberto caused was actually a direct fusion reaction of atoms, just like what the sun itself does all the time. The flames he created could reach temperatures above 6,000 degrees Celsius on the surface of the sun, which is high enough to instantly vaporize most metals on Earth.

However, Roberto is not obsessed with his own power. There is also a relationship of checks and balances between the palaces.

As for the military, as the country's most important organ of violence, especially the US military, which consumes the highest military expenditure in the world, there is no force that can check and balance it.

Any politician knows that in a power struggle, he can lose to other political parties, but he must never let the military take power. Once the military takes power, it means that politicians must hand over all power and are powerless to resist. So when Howard Stark proposed the establishment of S.H.I.E.L.D. in 1955, Congress and the president agreed to the plan.

SHIELD is a large piece of "fat meat" cut from the US military, which is used as nourishment for its own development. For this, the military has suffered for more than 20 years and still feels the pain today.

The existence of SHIELD ensures that the US government has a trump card to restrain the military when necessary. However, the previous SHIELD director Nick Fury was too strong and even had a tendency to suppress the military.

To be honest, Congress and the White House don't really want to hear his remarks about external threats. After all, they are already busy dealing with things on the ground, so how can they have the time and energy to pay attention to things outside space?

Chapter 23 Ordinary Mutants

Professor Charles and Dr. Hank have pointed out many times that if Roberto could work harder, he would be able to do more than just study the fusion combustion of hydrogen and oxygen. He might even be able to master more fusion methods, including the fusion of various inert elements.

If Roberto can continue training and is willing to cooperate with Dr. Hank's experiments, then humans may become more proficient in controlling element fusion reactions.

However, Roberto responded to Professor Charles' question at the time by saying: "But why should I do this? How will developing new nuclear fusion benefit me?"

His words were a little mundane, but they came from the heart: "My family is the largest supplier of raw materials in South America and even the world. We supply 17% of the world's copper and 15% of the world's tin. I don't think the development of new nuclear fusion technology can bring any benefits to my family business."

Whether this was his excuse to avoid working hard or his true feelings, once Roberto made it clear, Charles and Hank had no reason to force him to work harder to improve his abilities.

Sometimes the world is so unfair. Some people are born powerful, their status is determined at birth, and they are the ones that billions of people can only look up to.

Roberto is such a person. He is not only a top-level Alpha mutant with outstanding abilities, but also the heir to the world's largest raw materials company, Skota Materials Group.

Skekta Huicai Group not only has the largest mineral output in the world, but

also has remarkable achievements in agriculture. They own a piece of high-quality farmland close to the Amazon rainforest in the fertile land of South America, which is enviable.

Their company exports 10% of the world's corn and 7% of its soybeans, making it the world's largest food supplier.

In other words, Roberto was born rich and can live a life that most people in the world cannot achieve without any effort.

Although he is a mutant, there is no discrimination against mutants in his life. His mother died early, his father doted on him very much, and he is the only legal heir to the huge company.

His wealthy life made his life trajectory very different from that of most mutants. When his mutant ability got out of control, it brought surprise to his father instead of panic.

Mr. Sketa always proudly said: "My son is really different!"

Roberto went to the mutant school not to find a sense of belonging, because he already had a family. His only goal in going to school was to learn to control his abilities.

Unable to harness his mutant powers, especially those that are extremely destructive, Roberto becomes a potential danger to himself and his family.

Therefore, Roberto stayed in Xavier's School for Gifted Students for three years, but he did not get along well with other mutant students. His innate sense of superiority, although not intentional, but the arrogance that was inadvertently revealed in the conversation always made people feel uncomfortable.

This alienation made Roberto feel like he didn’t belong in school. Two years ago, his father died of angina pectoris, and he hurried back to Brazil from the United States to take over the company, and he never went back to school since then.

Iceman Bob was one of Roberto's best friends during his time at school. Despite the age difference between them, they became true friends. Even after Roberto graduated, the two kept in touch through emails.

"Bob, welcome, my good friend!" A rather exaggerated voice was heard outside a luxurious villa in Rio de Janeiro. Roberto walked out of his mansion wearing a floral shirt and loose cropped trousers full of South American style.

He is a young man with dark skin and three-dimensional features. When Bob brought Katie and another mutant student named Cameron to visit Roberto, Cameron had the ability to move at super fast speeds and was nicknamed "Rush". It was he who brought Katie and Bob from the United States to Brazil in a few minutes.

"I heard that the mutant school was destroyed. I'm really sorry for you." Roberto didn't pay much attention to Katie and Cameron who came with Bob, but walked straight to Bob and patted him on the shoulder.

"I know you must be in a bad mood right now, so just treat this place as your home. You can stay as long as you want! If you need any other services, I will send someone to prepare them for you!"

From Roberto's words, we can feel that this mansion with an area of more than 1,000 square meters and a huge swimming pool is not his residence, but just a place for Bob to stay temporarily in Brazil.

Katie's first impression of Roberto was very bad. She couldn't understand how a rich and dissolute man like Roberto could help. How could Bob think that such a man could help them? Katie was confused.

"Let me introduce you, Roberto. These are our new classmates, Katie and Cameron." Bob introduced Katie to Roberto as he followed Roberto into the house.

In response, Roberto just smiled and nodded without making any further response.

After sitting down on the large and comfortable sofa in the living room, Roberto and Bob talked about the past and some recent events. The price of raw materials in the international market has fluctuated violently recently. It is said that once Tony Stark gets the helium-3 back, the world will probably change dramatically. The market predicts that the next two years will be the last period of crazy price increases for raw materials. When humans are able to develop the moon and even Mars, the value of these raw materials will be greatly reduced.

Roberto had a teasing smile on his face, but his eyes revealed a hint of worry: "Oh! These people are really thinking long-term about developing Mars!"

Bob smiled and didn't comment on this question. He came to Roberto not just to chat and reminisce about the past. Ever since Katie said that day, a certain belief has been burning in everyone's heart.

Young people are always easily ignited by passion. In order to pursue those lofty goals, they are always fearless, which is also the most valuable thing about young people. However, after becoming adults, many people lose that pure and fearless mentality.

"Roberto, it hasn't been easy for us since the mutant school was forced to close." Bob decided to get straight to the point.

"I understand, so I welcome you to visit Brazil. I can even provide job opportunities for you and your two friends. You can live in this house as long as you want." Roberto waved his hand nonchalantly.

However, Bob said seriously: "It's not just us mutants, Roberto. I mentioned earlier that this is a conspiracy planned by Magneto. He is trying to create a split between mutants and ordinary people and then provoke a war."

"Hey, brother, don't say that. This matter is very complicated. I can't take care of the entire mutant group. It is estimated that there are millions or even tens of millions of mutants in the world! This matter is too complicated. I really have no interest in getting involved." Roberto shook his head.

"But what we want to do is exactly what you find troublesome." Bob looked Roberto in the eye and spoke slowly and firmly. He told Roberto in detail what Katie had said that day, even including the plan to establish a country.

After hearing all this, Roberto looked at Katie's face for a long time, and finally asked in an incredulous tone: "Are you serious? A 17-year-old girl told you that we should establish a country, and you foolishly believed it. Are you really going to do it?"

Roberto glanced at Bob, with a look in his eyes that looked like he was looking at an idiot: "I always thought you had a clear mind."

"We're serious!" Bob answered firmly.

Roberto looked at Katie first, then at Bob, and then began to tremble all over. At first he tried to hold it back, but then it was obvious that he could not bear it anymore, and he fell on the sofa and laughed out loud.

"Hahahaha! This is the funniest joke I've heard this year! A group of minors actually dream of establishing a country of mutants! This is ridiculous! Do you think you are the high school saviors in those Japanese anime?"

"Wake up! This is the real world. Since the end of World War II, the global geopolitical structure has been basically determined. It is simply wishful thinking to want to establish an independent country, especially a mutant country!"

Roberto laughed and accused Katie of daydreaming.

Facing Roberto's ridicule, Katie stood up from the sofa, stood still, and looked at Roberto with a serious expression. Her pretty face was full of determination.

"Mr. Roberto, I know you are different from other mutants! You have never experienced the living conditions of most ordinary mutants. Among mutants, there are very few people as rich and powerful as you. Whether you are a mutant or an ordinary person, as a big boss who controls a large amount of material resources, you will be respected and treated with courtesy wherever you go. You have no idea how many difficulties ordinary mutants will encounter in life!"

Katie stared at Roberto. She knew very well that this rich kid was not the same kind of person as her group and their demands were completely different.

As long as Roberto remains wealthy, the plight of the average mutant will never befall him, but as a fellow mutant, it's clear that he doesn't particularly care about the lives of others.

In fact, this is the daily life of many mutants in high positions, who completely isolate themselves from the lower-level mutants. They belong to the same race, but live completely different lives.

The upper-level mutants don't care about the life and death of the lower-level mutants. It is precisely because of this scattered state that Magneto wants to

unite the power of all mutants to fight against discrimination and injustice.

Katie looked at Roberto coldly and said in a stern tone: "I know you don't care about the life and death of ordinary mutants, nor do you care about the discrimination they suffer, because all this has nothing to do with you."

"But as you just said, when Tony Stark's helium-3 reaches Earth, the world will undergo earth-shaking changes! For humans, developing the moon and Mars is no longer an unattainable dream. Maybe in ten or twenty years, that day will not be too far away. The decline of the traditional materials industry has become a foreseeable trend."

Katie glanced at the gorgeous house and said, "Roberto, you should cherish the life you have now, because there may be fewer and fewer days like this in the future. Imagine if you become penniless one day, or your children become poor, if the world remains the same, or even gets worse, what kind of situation will you and your family face."

Chapter 24 Stop

Now that it is clear that recruiting Roberto is almost impossible, Katie expresses her opinion directly: "You are not from the same camp as us. Maybe you didn't hear the fable in school. Professor Charles has repeatedly warned us why mutants must unite."

“At first, they were after the communists, and I wasn’t a communist, so I kept silent;

Then, they came after the Jews, and I remained silent even though I was not a Jew;

Then, they went after the union members, and I was not a union member, so I remained silent;

After that, they went after the Catholics, and even though I was a Protestant, I chose to remain silent;

Finally, when they turned to me, they realized that no one was standing up for me anymore.” Katie recited the well-known poem softly.

"Roberto, you are different from us. We don't want to be silent. If one day our plan can be realized and you need help, we will still open our doors to welcome you. Just like we treated you today, we welcome you back warmly, because you are also one of us." After Katie said this, she was about to turn around and leave. Bob glanced at Roberto and then followed Katie's footsteps.

"Cameron, you said that Shanshan has gone to the West Coast?" Katie asked Cameron as she walked out of the villa.

"That's right. Winky's guardian is the leader of the West Coast Thieves Guild and the League of Assassins, named Remi Loeb, also known as Gambit, who is very famous in the West Coast mutant circle. Winky hopes to get Gambit's support for

our plan." Cameron responded to Katie. It seemed that they had completely given up on Roberto.

Roberto stood up from the sofa and stared at the three people with complicated eyes. When they were about to leave the villa, he suddenly shouted, "Have you ever thought about how complicated it is to build a country?"

The three of them stopped and turned to look at him. Roberto continued, "We need to make laws and establish a sound system. The biggest challenge is how to gain recognition from other countries!"

"So, you're still trying to convince us to give up this seemingly childish idea?" Katie asked, shaking her head.

"Before you start doing these things, you must consider one question - whether the mutant country can be recognized by other countries. A country that is not recognized has no sovereignty!" Roberto walked to the door of the villa and stood in front of the three people.

"So..." Katie felt like Roberto seemed to have something else to say.

"So I think your plans need to be modified." Bob, who knew Roberto's personality, smiled slightly. He realized that his friend might have been touched by Katie's words just now.

Bob smiled and asked, "What suggestions do you have?"

Roberto raised his eyebrows. "Why do we have to build a whole new country, and start from scratch? Shouldn't we recognize the fact that human power is limited?"

"Are you saying that the plan of creating a country itself is wrong?" Katie did not intend to ask Roberto back, but fell into deep thought. Is there a problem here?

“No, it’s not that there’s something wrong with creating a country.” Roberto waved his hand seriously, “What I mean is that sometimes we don’t have to take so many twists and turns. Building a country from scratch may take decades or even hundreds of years.”

"So what do you think?" Katie asked curiously.

Roberto pointed to the luxurious house. "Money in this world cannot solve all problems, but it can solve many problems. Having a large amount of money can help people achieve their goals in various aspects, whether it is academic research or the pursuit of love."

He winked at Bob and Katie and said in a very serious but shocking tone: "For example, buy a country!"

As Li Jie expected, Captain Rogers' case did not reach any substantial conclusion on May 5, and the lawsuit was finally determined to be heard for the second time on June 15 after much debate and dispute. In the first trial, the military sent a team of lawyers with an astonishing number of people, but they were defeated by the defense of Matt, Captain Rogers' only defense lawyer.

The reason is that Matt is not only Captain Rogers' attorney, but also Marvel's legal advisor. He is responsible for handling half of Li Jie Comics' legal affairs.

It can be said that it was Marvel that gave Matt the powerful weapon, because Marvel was originally established to prevent those superheroes who do good things and get reasonable rewards from suffering the fate of good people not getting good rewards.

The company's internal copyright fees for superhero comics are settled every three months, and it just so happens that the copyright fees for all previous superhero works have already been settled.

This income happened to become Matt's powerful weapon to fight back against the military. "Even an ordinary private enterprise can understand the importance of respecting the copyright of others. As American officials, you actually ignore the laws you have made!" Matt said righteously, holding the financial statements in his hand.

On this day, the originally planned online public opinion offensive in support of Captain America was officially launched. Under Li Jie's organization and communication, all the superheroes who received royalties posted their royalty income on their own self-media platforms.

For example, Baihu, due to her low popularity, her royalty income in the past

three months was less than 78 US dollars; however, Spider-Man, a new internet celebrity who opened a Weibo and Twitter account, showed his royalty income of up to US dollars after deducting taxes in three months.

Spider-Man is the first superhero under Marvel to sign a licensing agreement for the production of peripheral products, and Japanese toy manufacturer Bandai was the first to obtain the production license for the Spider-Man series of toy products.

Spider-Man's income will increase further after receiving this royalty. The comic company run by Li Jie released a special issue on May 15, clearly expressing its support for Captain Rogers' decision and titled the issue "Good people should be rewarded!"

This issue tells the story of how the superheroes plan to use the money after receiving their first royalties in their lives. For example, Blade rushed to the bank with a credit card to pay off his mortgage, while Iron Fist was busy paying salaries to his personal trainer and lawyer.

White Tiger needed to pay off his student loans, while Spider-Man and Nightcrawler needed to set aside their own college tuition in addition to donating to an orphanage.

The entire comic records the daily lives of these superheroes from a very realistic perspective. They also need to eat, drink, solve daily chores, and pay when shopping, such as when they buy hot dogs at convenience stores.

This combination of online marketing and comic book supplements has been highly appreciated by fans. People worship gods, but they tend to pay more attention to the side of ordinary people. When seeing Blade calculating monthly wages, mortgage payments, property taxes, car loan payments, and medical insurance expenses, most people are deeply touched because this is their daily life.

Because of this marketing strategy and the dual effect of the supplement, Marvel's comics quickly broke away from the geographical restrictions of the New York area and attracted readers from all over the country and even overseas. In a short period of time, the company received a large number of calls from comic bookstores and distributors from all over the country, asking about cooperation in distribution. After using the Captain America incident as a

breakthrough, this comic company, which was established only half a year ago, quickly increased its global visibility.

Subsequently, the CEO of Marvel announced that the copyrights of three heavyweight superheroes had been successfully signed. One of them was the mercenary Deadpool who caused heated discussions due to the salary arrears of SHIELD. Rumor has it that he might join SHIELD and become a member of the Avengers. Although the outside world is skeptical about this, after all, the two sides have had an unpleasant history, and the specific situation still needs to wait for the final result to be revealed.

Another superhero who signed the contract was the world-renowned billionaire and superhero, Iron Man Tony Stark. After Li Jie's unremitting efforts, he finally persuaded Tony to license his comic image to Marvel. Tony didn't care about the copyright income. What he cared most about was whether his image in the comic was handsome and cool enough. Because Li Jie firmly supported Captain Rogers and won Tony's favor, and Marvel has always respected and maintained the image of superheroes, Tony finally signed the contract and made the only request: "Just two words: handsome enough! If my image in the comic is not handsome enough, your small company will soon go bankrupt, even with the Osborn Group as the backing!"

Finally, an unexpected super hero joined Marvel: Captain Steve Rogers personally granted the copyright of his comic image to Marvel. At that time, Captain Rogers was still suing the military for the copyright of his personal image. Why did he grant the copyright to someone else at this time?

The answer to this question was revealed in the first issue of the new comic. Instead of using the title "Captain America" that had been used for 70 years, the new publication directly used "Steve Rogers" as the image name. For many years, the military has used "Captain America" as a marketing hotspot to closely link Rogers with the country. At Matt's suggestion, in order to avoid possible future disputes, Li Jie signed a new copyright agreement with Rogers, avoiding the name "Captain America" and using Captain Rogers' real name instead.

This move may seem redundant to outsiders, but from a legal perspective, "Captain America" has been registered as a trademark by the military, and they will never give it up easily. However, Matt's move reminded Li Jie of the story between China's famous herbal tea brand Jiaduobao and Wanglaoji. Although

this incident is different from the herbal tea dispute, the military and the government can arbitrarily give the title of "Captain America" to any American soldier. However, there is only one Captain Rogers in the world, and it was Steve Rogers who saved World War II, not anyone wearing this title.

Now, as long as Captain Rogers is on his side, Lee is confident that he can establish a personal comic series with Captain Rogers as the protagonist in a short period of time and make it a signature work of the company. In this lawsuit about Captain America, Lee has seized the perfect opportunity from beginning to end. Today, Marvel has become a world-renowned comic company, and many Hollywood studios have extended olive branches, hoping to establish a cooperative relationship and strive to obtain the film adaptation rights of Lee's superheroes.

However, Li Jie has not agreed easily at this time, because he knows very well that Marvel is still small in scale and its overall strength is not enough to negotiate with major Hollywood film producers.

Chapter 25 Far-reaching Impact

There is a high possibility that the copyrights of those heroic characters will be sold at a low price, which is not what Li Jie wants to see. Therefore, it is urgent for Marvel to raise a second round of financing and use it to expand the entire company.

Li Jie recalled the powerful Marvel Entertainment Empire in his previous life. Although it was eventually acquired by the Walt Disney Company, it also had an extremely glorious era. Marvel Studios was once an extremely influential brand in the industry.

The Marvel company founded by Li Jie today has the same name as the company in his previous life, but its fate and strategy are completely different. The heroes under Li Jie are all real people, not fictional characters in comics, and they are also supported by strong financial forces such as the Osborn Group.

When Li Jie discussed the expansion of the comic company with Harry, Harry agreed to the plan without hesitation. Because from the overall industry planning and future development prospects, Marvel will no longer be just a single superhero comic company. The company will build a huge entertainment empire around superheroes, which can not only realize the concept of "good people get good rewards" advocated by Li Jie, but also become a super profitable giant in the future.

Since ancient times, everything has the potential to become obsolete, but entertainment is the only thing that never goes out of style. An excellent fairy tale can be passed down for a hundred years, a good book can be passed down for hundreds of years, and a good song can even be passed down for a thousand years.

So Harry has instructed his staff to start calculating the amount of funds needed for the second round of financing, and Li Jie's plan is also expanding, requiring more and more resources. For Marvel, the goal of becoming a world-class

company is only a matter of time.

Day after day, the busyness of life quietly fades away, like quicksand slipping through fingers. In the blink of an eye, the last days of high school also slip away. After the SAT exam, Li Jie and Peter's high school career will also come to an end.

Li Jie decided to move out of his home after graduation because he had many things that he couldn't let his family know, so it was very inconvenient to live at home. His parents didn't object to this, after all, he was already an adult, and he was exactly 18 years old this year.

While Li Jie was looking for a suitable property, two unexpected visitors came to him. They were Wolverine Logan and his son Daken. They were looking for Nightcrawler and seeking help.

Compared to the United States, Canada is a country with a vast territory and a sparse population. Its territory is not inferior to that of the United States, but its total population is only about 40 million, and these few citizens live scattered across this vast land.

Apart from a few cities like Ottawa and Vancouver that can accommodate millions of people, most Canadian cities have a population of only around 100,000 people, and some even have only tens of thousands or even thousands of people. This is very common in Canada.

Since Charles decided to temporarily close the School for Gifted Mutants, he and the X-Men have been living in Canada. As Charles had expected, Stryker did lead the team to try to retaliate against the School for Gifted Mutants.

Although this action was not approved by Congress and was illegal, Stryker did not care about that at the time and prepared to attack with the remaining men, but ended up with nothing. This incident had a profound impact on Stryker's military career.

For the military and the government, the act of a general disobeying orders and sending troops without authorization is extremely serious. Any regime in history hates such behavior. Therefore, Stryker is very likely to be sent to a military court for his rash behavior.

Today, the X-Men are temporarily living near a small town at the foot of the Canadian Rockies, in a secluded forest villa at the foot of the mountain. It takes about two hours to drive from the nearest small city with a population of 20,000, so it can be said to be a relatively safe and secluded place.

Charles had sent all the students home. Of course, he didn't know that some of the students were not obedient, young people who were preparing to establish their own country.

Apart from these people, the only underage who has been following the X-Men is Daken, because he is Logan's son and he has nowhere to go except to follow his father.

At this moment, Deacon is deeply guilty. He believes that it was his behavior that triggered a series of chain reactions. He was deceived and acted as a pawn of others without knowing it, killing a city councilman, which triggered a series of subsequent events.

Although Professor Charles and the X-Men knew that Daken was innocently involved in the incident, even if Magneto did not use Paul to induce Daken to kill, he would have found other alternatives. All this happened just by chance. As long as Magneto's plan at the time did not change, the final result would still be the same.

The X-Men in this situation are not stupid, so there is no sensational and bloody plot like in ordinary TV shows or movies. For example, ridiculous things like everyone blaming and besieging Daken, or even driving away Wolverine did not happen.

On the contrary, everyone was comforting Daken, telling him that the disbanding of the school was not his fault, and he was just accidentally involved in it. Everyone hoped that he could let go of this past, because the psychological trauma left in adolescence may accompany a person for a lifetime.

However, Daken did not seem to be successfully comforted by anyone, and he became more and more depressed. He missed the mutant school and his companions who were similar to him. But now, everything is gone.

He hated Magneto and Paul, but what he hated most was himself. Now he sat by the lake in front of his villa every day and stared blankly. From here, he could

see the majestic Rocky Mountains from afar, with the snow-capped mountain tops reflecting the deep blue sky. However, Daken had no intention of appreciating all these beautiful views at the moment.

The pain and torment made him want nothing more than to find Magneto and Paul, and dig out their hearts with his sharp claws!

"He's in very bad condition." Charles whispered this while standing at the window on the second floor of the villa, looking out at Daken by the lake.

Next to him was Wolverine Logan. Logan felt a little regretful at the moment. He guessed why Paul the Fireman only lured Daken to kill people instead of other mutant students. It was probably because he dragged Daken out of the classroom like a dead dog that time, making him lose face in front of everyone. Daken was taking revenge on him in this way.

For the first time, Logan felt regret for his reckless behavior.

"Logan, you have to understand that some psychological traumas can accompany a person for a lifetime." Charles turned to Logan and said seriously, "I have educated many mutant children, and Daken is undoubtedly the most worried one. This is related to his childhood experiences."

"This incident has placed a heavy psychological burden on him. If he can't get rid of it, I dare not predict what his future will be like." Charles' words made Logan's heart sink.

"Professor, can't you use your thinking ability to help him?" Logan asked pleadingly.

"That's only a temporary solution, Logan. I can use my abilities to build a mental cage in Daken's mind to stop him from thinking about those things, but that doesn't mean those things never happened. You should know that the greater the pressure, the stronger the backlash!" Charles answered seriously.

"I can erase Deacon's memory, but what about others? Do I have to erase the memory of everyone in the world and make them forget about this?" Logan was silent about this question. He knew that the professor's moral bottom line would not allow him to do so. But as a father, Logan did not want his son to fall into darkness.

"Is there no other way?" Logan asked helplessly.

Charles sat in a wheelchair and looked deeply at Logan. "This child is too much like you, Logan. When he loses control and lets his inner violent tendencies burst out, he becomes a crazy and bloodthirsty beast. But Deacon's ability exceeds even yours. When his potential is fully realized, he will become even more terrifying."

"He inherited your violent gene and is more capable than you, but lacks your self-control. To be honest, this is a very dangerous situation," Charles said seriously.

And this is exactly what Logan doesn't want to see Daken become.

"That's why I came to you for a solution, Professor." Logan admitted that he could no longer think of any good way to solve Daken's problem.

Charles looked at Logan and said, "You are Daken's father and also his role model. Sometimes the power of role models can give people deep support in their hearts. Therefore, Logan, I think what we need to solve now is not only Daken's problem, but also your own problem."

"What do you mean?" Logan was a little confused about the deeper meaning of the professor's words.

"Your anger and violence are the sources of your power, but you are not yet good enough to control it well. You and your son are different from other mutants, I can feel it." Charles looked towards the lake reflecting the Rocky Mountains.

"I think you need to learn another power."

"What kind of power?" Logan asked intently.

"A power to control one's own spirit. I have seen this power in both Iron Fist and Nightcrawler. Perhaps you and Daken should practice spiritual cultivation like the Buddhist monks in the East."

A stone was thrown into the middle of a lake, creating ripples, and the reflection of the Rocky Mountains loomed on the lake surface...

Ever since Thor became addicted to cola fried chicken and became extremely obese due to his gluttony, Li Jie felt that everything had changed.

Because Thor plays an important role in Li Jie's life plan. Without Thor, many things will be in turmoil. Li Jie does not expect Thor to be as smart as his brother Loki, but he does not want to see Thor become a fat otaku who only knows how to watch TV and eat fried chicken. This is undoubtedly a disaster for Li Jie.

So before Thor regained his divine power, Li Jie had to turn this fat Thor back to normal. If Thor's body didn't recover when he regained his divine power, it would be a big show. You have to know that the body of a god is very different from that of a human. Once a god's body is fixed, it is difficult to change its appearance. If Thor had learned to be humble and regained his divine power before he successfully lost weight, the scene would be very embarrassing.

At that time, Odin might see a chubby Thor wandering around in his heavenly palace. I think Odin would be very happy to send Li Jie a destructive thunder to let him have a taste of it.

So now Li Jie decided to put aside the troublesome matter of making Thor learn humility for the time being. The first priority is to make Thor lose fat as soon as possible!

In terms of density, the density of muscle is about 1.5 times that of fat. That is to say, at the same weight, the volume of fat is 1.5 times that of muscle.

Therefore, under the same height and weight, people with higher body fat percentage will look more bloated. This explains why some people look fat, but in fact their weight may be similar to those who exercise regularly and have strong muscles.

Those who exercise regularly and have strong muscles, as long as they maintain a low body fat percentage, their actual weight is not light at all.

Chapter 26 The Most Harsh

In normal adults, the body fat percentage of adult men is usually around 15%, and athletes like wrestlers strictly control their body fat percentage to around 8%. However, most people's physical condition is not ideal nowadays, and many adult men have a body fat percentage of more than 20%, and some even as high as 30%.

Thor is facing such a problem at the moment. He used to have eight abdominal muscles and a perfect mermaid line figure, and his body fat rate never exceeded 7%. But now, he has become a fat man with a body fat rate of up to 35%.

Although he only gained more than 30 kilograms in the past month, he felt like a blown-up balloon, with his volume expanding several times.

In order to help Thor lose weight, Li Jie specially developed a comprehensive plan. Whether it was diet or fitness training, he consulted professionals and got the best method. Of course, this best method was also the most stringent.

This is a plan to ensure that Thor loses weight and regains his figure in the shortest possible time while ensuring that nothing unexpected happens to him. Li Jie takes on the role of implementing and supervising this plan.

Sitting at the dining table, Thor could not help but complain: "Can't I have some meat?" In front of him were boiled carrots, celery and asparagus, with only a little soy sauce added as seasoning. Since Thor still needs to exercise a lot every day, protein supplementation is essential, so there is also a portion of boiled egg white on his plate. As for the egg yolk, Thor cannot eat it because it contains high cholesterol and calories, so Li Jie only let him eat the egg white.

"Nonsense!" Li Jie glanced at Thor and retorted, "How could a rabbit eat eggs!" and pointed to the egg whites in Thor's plate.

"You said this is an egg laid by a chicken?" Thor looked at the egg white that

was as white as the white porcelain plate and asked angrily, "Which chicken lays an egg without even a yolk?"

Li Jie never liked to argue with Thor on these issues, and he always kept a pistol loaded with rubber bullets next to his seat.

He picked up the pistol at random, loaded it with a click, then released the safety and slammed the pistol on the table with a thump.

"The eggs I bought are like this, is there a problem?" Li Jie looked at Thor with a smile. However, Thor couldn't help but feel terrified.

"Well, I just want to know where I can buy this kind of eggs. Maybe the goddesses of Asgard will like this healthy food very much." Thor glanced at the pistol on the table with fear, then lowered his head and began to eat his lunch resignedly, like a rabbit.

Thor swore to himself: Just wait and see! When I regain my power, I will definitely make you suffer! I will punish you with the power of thunder! I will let you experience the wrath of thunder!

By the way, Li Jie's lunch was a simple and unpretentious meal of braised lamb chops cooked by himself, served with stir-fried seasonal vegetables, clam seafood soup and rice. As for enjoying lunch with Thor, Li Jie thought that doing so would enhance the relationship between the two. Well, maybe?

"Take a break for an hour after lunch. You will exercise on the spinning bike in the afternoon." Li Jie finished the last bite of braised lamb chops and pointed at Thor with the lamb chops.

The spinning bike training that Thor is going to do is not as simple as just riding a bike. In order to ensure the exercise time and exercise effect, Li Jie specially purchased a special spinning bike. The biggest feature of this bike is that it can convert kinetic energy into electrical energy.

In this way, Li Jie can connect a wire to the bicycle, connect it to a custom base, and then install a 100-watt incandescent lamp on the base. To keep this 100-watt incandescent lamp on, the rider must maintain a speed of more than 23 kilometers per hour; once the speed slows down, the brightness of the bulb will immediately decrease, and may even flicker.

In this way, Li Jie can easily detect whether Thor is lazy while riding. Li Jie silently gave himself thirty-two thumbs up for this idea.

Thor looked at Li Jie's sumptuous lunch, glanced at his own plate, then looked at the pistol on the table, and finally lowered his head and whispered, "Okay."

Well, Thor is becoming more and more cooperative now, which is undoubtedly a good sign for them. Li Jie thought happily. At this moment, he received a message from Professor Charles: "Logan needs help!"

When Li Jie found Logan, his old friend looked more haggard than the last time they met. Li Jie suspected that he might have seen it wrongly, because he had never heard that Wolverine would age.

However, Logan's eyelids did seem a little heavy, as if he hadn't had a good rest for a long time. He sat under a fir tree in a park in the Bronx, quietly waiting for Li Jie to arrive.

He had already drunk about half of the bottle of gin in his hand. As soon as Li Jie approached, he could already smell the strong smell of alcohol.

"The professor said you need help. Do you want me to help you quit drinking?" Li Jie asked with a frown. He was not against drinking, but he was disgusted by the uncontrolled drinking. Whether it was Thor before or Logan now, once people drink too much alcohol, they often do some absurd things, especially those with extraordinary powers. They often make irreparable mistakes when they are not sober.

Logan glanced at Li Jie and gulped down the remaining half bottle of gin. "Don't laugh at my drinking habits, just like I never laugh at how stupid your hood is."

Logan touched his face and said, "This is because of Daken. You should also know that Magneto instructed Paul to induce Daken to go to Sharen, which then caused a series of problems."

Li Jie nodded in understanding, he had no intention of blaming Deacon for being stupid, although in his opinion, Deacon was indeed quite stupid, whether it was Deacon killing his mother in Japan or later attempting to attack Li Jie at school.

In short, Li Jie doesn't have much good feelings towards Daken, especially the

time when he was easily fooled by Magneto, which triggered a chain reaction. In the end, Li Jie, Tony, the professor and others had to work together to settle it.

"I hope you can help me, Nightwalker. The professor said you have a method to train mind control." Logan stared at Li Jie and spoke very seriously.

However, Li Jie looked confused: "Huh? Charles told you that?"

"Yes, that's what the professor said. He believes that both Deacon and I need to use our mental strength to guide the power in our bodies." Logan's face showed a trace of confusion, and it was obvious that he had not fully understood this point of view.

Li Jie glanced at Logan and roughly understood what he meant. "Essence, Qi, and Spirit are a trinity. Cultivate the mind, nourish the spirit, and practice Qi. Mystical schools in the East and the West, such as Taoism and Buddhism, have similar cultivation methods. Take the spirit as the guide, the inner strength as the skeleton, and the strength as the muscle. Let your spirit control the strength, rather than being controlled by the strength."

These views were derived from Li Jie's exchanges with Tie Quan, as well as the interpretation of some metaphysical books brought back from Kamartai. In addition, after returning from hell last time, Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva gave him a small Ksitigarbha statue, and Li Jie began to think about how to comprehend the meaning of the Ksitigarbha Sutra behind the statue, so he also bought a related commentary to study.

Li Jie tried to train his spiritual strength in this way, but the time is still short and no significant results have been achieved so far.

"Well, that's roughly what happened. Charles should have meant this." Logan scratched the back of his head. He himself didn't understand the matter very well. But he was sure that this was what the professor meant.

"Why don't you go find Iron Fist? Actually, I'm a novice in spiritual practice, and I learned a lot from Iron Fist." Li Jie answered honestly.

After all, his power comes from system exchange, unlike Iron Fist who has a solid foundation after twenty years of hard training. Li Jie's biggest problem is that his foundation is not solid enough.

Iron Fist had warned him that not even understanding the basic principles of how power is generated before using it could easily lead to problems. From an Eastern perspective, this could lead to obsession; from a Buddhist perspective, this could lead to demons in the heart.

Therefore, Li Jie is not in a hurry to improve his own strength. Even though he has gained hundreds of thousands of fans in a short period of time with his comics and previous online short videos, he did not plan to find a job immediately after graduating from high school. Instead, he decided to practice with full concentration to prepare for the future. Whether it is Kunlun Mountain or Kamar-Taiki, he plans to visit and practice one by one.

Without profound knowledge, relying on strength alone is very dangerous. Li Jie decided to first truly understand the ways of practicing strength, and then consider strengthening his own strength. Especially when he exchanged the first volume of the God of War Atlas and found that it did not record kung fu and moves, but a record about the origin of strength, he became more determined to understand the essence of strength.

"I don't quite understand what Charles said." Logan shook his head and said to Li Jie, "He said that Iron Fist and you have different spiritual paths. Dr. Hank saw the relationship between you and Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva in hell, which seems to be related to Buddhism."

Logan's words lack logic, making it difficult to guess what he wants to express. After all, for someone who has never been involved in Eastern Buddhism and metaphysics, these two disciplines are too profound and difficult to understand and relay.

Li Jie tried to help Logan explain things more clearly: "Charles hopes to use the spiritual power of Buddhism to dissolve the evil spirit in you and Deacon?" Li Jie tried to simplify the words as much as possible, and also explained to Logan the meaning of the word "evil spirit".

"Yes, that's about what I mean. So Charles asked me to come to you, hoping that you can help me and Daken." Logan nodded in confirmation.

Li Jie looked at Logan and felt that his values were impacted. Let's not talk about Daken for now. Just Logan, he started killing people more than 200 years ago. He experienced the War of Independence, the Civil War, World War I, World

War II, and even worked as a mercenary assassin. His hands were stained with countless blood. It can be said that the violent factor has penetrated into his bones. Now he wants to rely on the power of Buddhism to purify his sins? Li Jie thought, Professor Charles, I am not a big man like Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva.

"I refuse." Li Jie rejected this matter almost without hesitation: "To be honest, Logan, I'm afraid I can't help with this matter. My strength is not strong enough to teach you and Daken."

Li Jie had a clear understanding of himself. The sins of Logan were not something that a novice like him could solve. He was firm in his words. This was not an excuse, but a fact.

Logan understood clearly, so he looked at Li Jie, lowered his head helplessly and sighed: "Okay, I'll think of another way. No matter what, I can't let Deacon follow my old path again."

Chapter 27 Real Objects

At this moment, Logan is like a father who is worried about his child, not like the superhero in our minds. His helplessness and fatigue make people sigh.

Li Jie felt helpless about the situation, and he said to Logan: "I will ask Iron Fist, and also ask around to see if I can find any friends who can help you." Li Jie wanted to help Logan collect some useful information, even though he himself could not help him solve the problem directly.

After hearing this, Logan smiled and waved to Li Jie, expressing his deep gratitude for his kindness.

Looking at Logan's receding back, Li Jie couldn't help but frown. Perhaps he should really go to Kamar-Taki. Perhaps Master Ancient One would know some powerful monks. After all, Ancient One even knew Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. If he said he also knew Buddha, Li Jie wouldn't be surprised now.

Moreover, the SAT exam was over, and Li Jie was about to leave his family and live independently. Now that he had a lot of free time, the matter of going to Kamartaki for training could finally be put on the agenda. Just when Li Jie was planning for his future.

Far across the ocean in London, England, in the Greenwich Temple, Ancient One was having a fierce argument with Mordo.

Located in the Greenwich area of London, England, it is one of the oldest districts in London, with many buildings with a history of more than 100 years. Large tracts of granite and marble represented the solidity and luxury of the construction industry a hundred years ago.

After a hundred years of wind and rain, many buildings still retain their original design style, showing the unique beauty of that period when the great industrial era and the Enlightenment were intertwined.

Similar to the Temple in New York, the Mage's Temple in London also adopts the design concept of being hidden in the downtown area.

From the outside, apart from finding a pattern similar to the logo of the State Grid Corporation of China on the glass window on the roof (in fact, that is the symbol of the Supreme Sorcerer), you can't see any connection with the Sorcerer at all.

The building's public identity is a private museum, which is only open to a small number of VIP members. Ordinary people are not qualified to enter.

If you happen to pass by this building, you will be deeply attracted by the exhibits in the windows. Weapons, clothing, torture instruments and even armor from the Age of Exploration can be clearly seen through the glass windows.

However, these exhibits are not conjured up by wizards, but real objects. They appear to be just ordinary artifacts, but if you despise them and let your guard down, you will be in trouble.

Because these are real magic items, some of them are even cursed. The wizards sealed them here in a special way, and built a real museum with these real and imaginary magic items.

When it is difficult to distinguish between truth and falsehood, the truth and falsehood become confusing.

The London Temple holds a special place among the three supreme temples. In addition to being a holy place for mages, its underground is also the burial place of Merlin, another supreme magistrate.

The medieval wizard Merlin was born and died here. Before his death, he cast a powerful spell on this land, giving the London Temple an advantage over the other two temples from the very beginning.

In addition, the Greenwich Temple is located on the Prime Meridian, and is also the place where the global Greenwich Mean Time is established!

Under the temple is a huge underground palace, which is not only the resting place of Master Merlin, but also his final museum.

Merlin left all the magic he had learned and mastered in his life here, as well as all his experience. Due to the spell cast by Merlin, even the Ancient One could not easily take away the books and classics here.

Unless he intends to completely destroy the entire Tomb of Merlin, it is obvious that Ancient One would not do such an immoral thing.

Therefore, there are actually two different factions within the Supreme Sorcerer: one is the Kamartaki faction that is based on the doctrines of the modern and contemporary Supreme Sorcerer; the other is the Greenwich faction that adheres to the doctrines of the medieval Supreme Sorcerer Merlin.

The doctrine taught by the Ancient One to his disciples pointed out that it was the responsibility of the wizards to protect the Earth from invasion by demons and maintain the Earth's super stability. The three major temples on Earth were built only after the Ancient One became the Supreme Wizard 500 years ago.

The three holy temples control three crucial nodes on the earth. The Ancient One, holding the Eye of Agamotto, weaves the past time chains into three giant blue chains and hangs them above the earth to protect the fragile and changeable future.

People often say "grasp the present moment" or "live in the present moment". But in actual definition, whether in the field of science or in the world of mysticism, the exact meaning of the word "present moment" has never existed.

In the long river of time, there is only the past and the future, but no concept of "the present". Because no matter how agile a person's thinking is, it cannot catch up with the pace of time.

The moment you try to capture the "present", even if you just have this thought, the "present" you are talking about has become the past. And this fleeting past determines the direction of the future in the next moment.

The future is shaped by the past. Without the past, there is no future. However, the future is extremely fragile and changeable. Once the laws of the past are tampered with, where will the entire future go? Is each historical turning point accidental, inevitable, or deliberate?

As the custodian of the Time Stone and a powerful being that sweeps across the

universe, Ancient One is a respected existence among all the Supreme Sorcerers of the past and present. But the responsibility he shoulders is also unprecedentedly heavy.

He firmly believes that with great power comes great responsibility, and he alone takes on the threat of the mysterious unknown.

However, not all wizards agree with his principles. For example, some wizards of the Greenwich faction, who are deeply influenced by the ideas of the wizard Merlin, hold different philosophies.

Merlin's philosophy is more open and free. He believes that wizards can make friends with ordinary people, and if wizards are willing, they can also help their friends fight against enemies with mysterious powers.

But the most important thing is that Master Merlin always advocates that mages should not be confined to Earth. He advocates that mages should explore more different dimensional worlds, places that no one knows about. Freedom and unrestrainedness are the essence of mages.

Whether pursuing power or refining potions, mages should not be restricted by the constraints of simple mortals, otherwise it will affect the performance of their abilities.

It's clear that Merlin is a liberal figure, as reflected in his magical heritage. His behavior is full of freedom and unrestrainedness. But this doesn't mean his path is suitable for everyone.

Merlin dealt with and traded with countless demons throughout his life, and even exchanged for the power of darkness, but he always stayed true to his heart. The way of learning magic he advocated was probably something only he could truly understand.

As the ancient Chinese monk Dao Ji said: "Wine and meat pass through the intestines, but the Buddha sits in the heart. If people in the world try to imitate me, they will be like crazy."

Merlin's magic has a similar flavor. Ancient One is tolerant of the Greenwich faction, but she keeps a tight control on it. Because in her opinion, there is no talent among the current Greenwich faction wizards that can be compared with

Merlin.

Among them, Baron Mordo, one of the most talented of all Ancient One's disciples, was specially sent by Ancient One to the Greenwich Temple to serve as a caretaker and supervisor, responsible for supervising the mages of the Greenwich faction.

However, this usually obedient disciple recently had a quarrel with Ancient One, which was the first time in history. In order to prevent the content of the quarrel from being leaked, Ancient One even had to set up a mirror wall to cut off the connection between the inside and outside of Mordo's residence.

Mordo's residence is on the top floor of the temple, spacious and comfortable. Persian wool carpets cover the mirrored floor made of natural marble. The chair backs are all made of hand-sewn velvet from the southeast coast of China. The solid and precious black walnut furniture is decorated with high-foot glasses carved from natural crystal and crucibles made of gold and silver alloys.

Ancient One floated in the air, not choosing to sit on the luxurious and comfortable furniture. At this moment, Mordo was pacing back and forth on the marble floor, his voice sounded anxious, even with a hint of anger: "Master, something must have happened, has something major happened! My teacher!"

"What do you want to say, Mordo?" Ancient One asked calmly, as if he didn't understand what Mordo was talking about.

"What happened in hell, isn't that a sign?" Mordo said in a firm tone rather than questioning: "The Earth Dragon is dead, you should know about this, my teacher. Bart, the demon from hell, told me this."

“Even powerful gods and demons will eventually fall, not to mention that the Earth Dragon is not a powerful demon god in Hell. Although he is the lord of Hell, he is almost the weakest one. There is nothing special about his fall.” Gu Yi acted very calmly about the fall of a demon god.

"This is not normal, teacher! Bart said that on the day when the Earth Dragon fell, the sky above Hell was covered with dark clouds, an unprecedented situation. Then the Earth Dragon suddenly fell from the dark clouds, as if the sky and the earth collapsed! Within his territory, it even rained blood all over the sky. That was the blood of the devil!"

Mordo narrated loudly, his fists clenched until his knuckles turned white. "This is not the fall of an ordinary demon. There was no fierce battle, and the earth dragon has not yet entered the twilight of his life. I know that something unusual is happening."

He looked at Ancient One firmly, shook his head and said, "Something very, very unusual, teacher. I know you can see things that we can't see. Dormammu's invasion of Hell is a clue! He knew what he was doing and knew he couldn't repay the karma of Hell, but he still broke into Hell. He must have noticed something. I just want an answer now."

Mordo looked at Ancient One expectantly. Ancient One glanced at him and slowly closed his eyes: "Nothing happened, Mordo."

Ancient One's answer disappointed Mordo: "Teacher, you are the greatest wizard in history. I don't expect to have the same powerful power as you one day, but I just want to understand some things that I should know."

Mordo's voice revealed urgency. Ancient One said: "Is this why you sent Rooney to Hell? You mobilized the magic power of the London Temple to send a wizard to Hell! Do you know why I don't allow them to explore other dimensions at will? They are different from Merlin the Wizard. Not everyone can become Merlin."

"You have to give it a try, teacher. If you don't try, how do you know if a new Merlin will appear?"

"Using the precious lives of mages to conduct experiments?"

"In the pursuit of truth, paying the price of life is acceptable. Every mage here is ready to pay such a price."

To this, Ancient One shook his head and expressed his objection: "I do not agree with this view. Blind exploration without a plan is tantamount to self-destruction. Mages should act with wisdom as the principle, rather than acting rashly."

Chapter 28: Scripture Study

Mordo suddenly raised his voice and explained: "This is because the earth is currently in a super stable space state. Merlin the wizard's summoning and alien space spells are useless. Otherwise, we wouldn't let everyone take the risk to explore the alien plane directly!"

After hearing this, Ancient One's eyes instantly became sharp and he looked directly at Mordo. Mordo immediately realized that he had said something wrong and quickly apologized: "Sorry, teacher, I said something wrong."

It turns out that the establishment of a super-stable space was something that Ancient One personally proposed and put a lot of effort into. Ancient One did successfully isolate many invasions from other planes, but at the same time, it also abolished more than half of the Greenwich faction's spells, because some of Merlin's spells were indeed related to other planes.

As for whether the mages of the Greenwich faction have any complaints in their hearts, it is hard to say.

At this moment, there was an awkward silence between Ancient One and Mordo. Finally, Mordo broke the deadlock: "Teacher, if there is nothing else, I will go out to work first."

Ancient One nodded, acquiescing to his departure. Mordo left his residence and went to the underground palace of the temple to attend the memorial service for the late Master Rune.

Ancient One looked at the direction where Mordo left and sighed softly. Although she was extremely powerful as the Sorcerer Supreme, it did not mean that she could stay young forever. Ancient One clearly felt that she was beginning to age.

She has lived for more than 500 years and needs to find a successor. Neither Lan

nor Mordo seem to be qualified to be the next Supreme Sorcerer. She needs someone who can stick to her will and move forward.

"Maybe I should go find my last disciple?" Gu Yi whispered to himself.

Li Jie has been to Kamataki many times. As an ordinary person, it is extremely rare to come to this mysterious land so smoothly and frequently. You know, this place is usually only open to mages.

With the token given by Ancient One - a magic ring, Li Jie once again came to Kamar-Taki through the New York Temple. This time his mission was quite heavy.

The first thing was about the Illuminati. Tony suggested that if possible, it would be best to let Ancient One join the organization. Although Li Jie did not hold out much hope for this, because he felt that Ancient One was unlikely to join such an organization. The gap between them and Ancient One was obviously large, but since Tony proposed it, Li Jie decided to give it a try.

Secondly, Tony plans to build a base on Venus, which also requires the assistance of the mages. Without the help of the Ancient One, it is impossible to open a space channel between the Earth and Venus, and the possibility of the Illuminati secretly setting up a base on Venus will be greatly reduced, and the process will become very complicated.

Furthermore, regarding the great power of Buddhism that Logan mentioned, since he had already asked, Li Jie felt that he should also find out on his behalf. In this world today, what other great powers of Buddhism can help Logan resolve his karma?

The last thing is that Li Jie decided to practice in Kamar-Taiji and needed to inform Ancient One to observe his attitude. Now Li Jie finally has time to concentrate on studying.

In Kamartaki, which is full of Tibetan architectural style, Li Jie saw wizards practicing spells or studying scriptures in the square. He strolled leisurely among them and walked towards the residence of Master Gu Yi.

"Huh? Master Ancient One went to London?" Li Jie was a little surprised after hearing from Lan that Ancient One was away for the time being.

"That's right. What do you want to see the mage about?" Lan was sitting on a step, holding a book full of Sanskrit in his hands and reading it attentively. These words seemed very unfamiliar to Li Jie.

In the past, Lan gave Li Jie some metaphysical books, which were written in official script and ancient English. Li Jie could understand them roughly, but he knew nothing about profound languages such as Sanskrit.

"Do you know any other powerful people who practice Buddhism in modern society? Lan." Li Jie and Lan have become much closer now, so he omitted the title of "Master" after her name. Since Ancient One is not here, he decided to consult Lan about Logan first.

As a disciple of Ancient One, Lan should know many masters in the mysterious field. Lan obviously recognized the Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva they met in hell last time.

Lan looked at Li Jie in confusion, and after looking him up and down for a long time, she suddenly burst into laughter, and her large wizard robe trembled slightly. It seemed that her whole body was shaking from laughing.

Li Jie looked at Lan's beautiful face and asked awkwardly, "What did I say wrong? Or is there something dirty on my face? It's not that funny, is it?"

In front of beautiful women, Li Jie cares a lot about his image.

Lan touched his smooth cheek with one hand, his eyes curved into crescent shapes and stared at Li Jie: "The Buddha's power? Could it be that you are a Buddha's power?"

"Huh?" Li Jie looked around to make sure there was no one around, so Lan must be referring to him. "Don't be ridiculous, Lan, when did I become a great Buddhist?" He was sure that he had no affinity with Buddha: "I kill people, drink alcohol and eat meat, I can't even recite the Diamond Sutra, and I don't even know what the Ksitigarbha Sutra is about. So stop joking, I'm asking about serious matters."

Lan tidied up her hair which was a little messy from laughing too hard. Her slender white fingers lifted up the silky black hair, and the corners of her mouth slightly curled up, forming a very beautiful arc.

"I'm serious too, Master Night Walker." Li Jie felt that there seemed to be a hint of joking in Lan's words.

When I first met you, I noticed your uniqueness. Lan stretched out her hand and pointed her left index finger at Li Jie, then at herself.

"Do you remember where we first met?" Lan raised his eyebrows slightly, asking.

"It was at the Shouhe Club. I was beaten like a dead dog by Kamibe Yu." When Li Jie talked about that experience, he felt that he was really embarrassed at the time. The Ghost Rider, who he could not defeat no matter how hard he tried, was easily subdued by Lan with one move. Thinking back to that scene, he still feels embarrassed.

"Huh? Were you there?" Lan fell into deep thought, and seemed to have no memory of the incident. It might be because Li Jie did not leave a deep impression on her at that time. I guess she felt that seeing Li Jie at that time was just like seeing a random passerby on the street.

Li Jie was stunned.

Lan held his chin with one hand and gently scratched his chin with the end of his hair, recalling: "I remember the first time I saw you, it was you who used the Buddhist palm seal to destroy a monster from hell, right?"

Li Jie was sure that before he used the Mahavairocana Seal to destroy the monster, in Lan's eyes, he was probably just an ordinary person. He waved his hand to indicate that there was no need to dwell on those details.

"Well, those are not important." Lan said cheerfully, no longer thinking about those trivial things. "But your palm print did leave a deep impression on me. The power was as strong as the scorching sun. Although it seemed insignificant, I am sure that it was the true power of Buddhism."

Li Jie had no objection to Lan's statement. He reviewed the martial arts he had practiced: "Eight Wind-Breaking Swords", "Eight Steps to Chase the Cicada", "Vajra Indestructible Body Divine Art", "Ten Dwelling Mahayana Art", "Great Sun Tathagata Seal" and "Nine Purple Thunder Strikes".

Among them, except for the most basic "Eight Wind-Breaking Swords" and "Eight Steps to Chase the Cicada", among the other four martial arts, except "Nine Strikes of Purple Thunder", the other three are related to Buddhism.

Li Jie had not paid much attention to this fact before, but with Lan's reminder, he noticed this problem.

"As for whether to kill or not, it's actually not important." Lan shook his head and said, "Killing is to protect life, and to kill karma is not to kill people. What you did before might not be true killing. If you don't have any thoughts, you won't have any calamities. I'm not a Buddhist, so it's hard for me to explain this to you in detail."

"Actually, do you know why Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva appeared in hell last time to help us mediate?" Lan suddenly asked a question.

"I don't know. Isn't it for the purpose of maintaining the peace and tranquility of hell? Doom and I are planning to blow up hell!" Li Jie didn't quite understand the meaning behind Lan's words.

"Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva is a Bodhisattva, not a demon!" Lan said meaningfully, "Do you know what Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva's great aspiration is?"

Li Jie thought for a moment and replied, "I will not become a Buddha until hell is empty."

Lan applauded Li Jie's answer: "Congratulations, you got it right, Master!"

Lan looked at Li Jie with a smile and continued, "So, does the existence of hell really have a lot to do with Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva?"

If what Lan said was true, and Ksitigarbha's wish was to clean up hell, then why should he intervene? Just pretend not to see it. He was not a demon, and hell was not his home.

"So, Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva is for you, Master Night Walker!" Lan emphasized the word "Master". The conversation between the two was conducted in Chinese. It is important to know that in Chinese, "Master" has many different meanings.

"Huh?" Li Jie became more and more confused.

Lan looked at Li Jie's appearance at the moment and couldn't help wondering how a clever young man could become so stupid. This man could come up with so many crazy ideas and plans, and even the prince of Asgard was plotted by him, but why was he so clumsy at this moment? So Lan couldn't help but say, "Because you are the last Buddhist practitioner!"

"Puff!" Li Jie felt that he was greatly shocked. Yes, Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva did say last time that Buddhist practitioners were very rare, but did he mean that he was the last one left?

"Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva may not care about what hell is like, but he must see with his own eyes whether you are safe and sound!" Lan said in a low voice, completely ignoring the huge shock Li Jie felt at the moment.

"There are fewer and fewer Buddhist practitioners. This is no joke. Wang has been following the Master for hundreds of years. He once told me that hundreds of years ago, countless Buddhist practitioners fought together with Master Gu Yi."

Hearing this, Li Jie couldn't help but admire Gu Yi's extensive network of contacts. However, Lan's next words brought him more confusion.

"Gradually, there were fewer and fewer Buddhist practitioners, and the Buddhas from the West who came to Kamar-Taki became increasingly rare. Until the three major holy temples were completed, the Buddhas from the West never set foot in Kamar-Taki again." Lan is only twenty-one years old this year. She did not experience that era personally. These are the stories she heard from the king.

"The king said that this is because the construction of the super-stable space has made it inconvenient to travel back and forth, and the Buddhas all like peace and quiet, so the number of trips has decreased. After I came to Kamartaki, I only saw Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. But I always feel that something is wrong."

"Because there are fewer and fewer Buddhist practitioners, the last one I've seen, except for you, died ten years ago. His soul was supposed to go to the Lingshan Divine Kingdom in the West Heaven, but it lingered in front of his corpse for forty-nine days and eventually turned into a handful of energy between heaven and earth."

Chapter 29 Trustworthy

Lan shook her head. She seemed to realize that she had said too much just now. She didn't want to continue this topic, so she changed the topic and said, "It's just that the affinity between the people of today and Buddha may be too shallow, just like the practice of Buddhists and Dharma masters, both follow the theory of destiny. Fate or no fate can clearly divide people into two camps. Master Night Walker, I think maybe you are a person with a deep affinity with Buddha."

Lan said, standing up from the steps, gently lifted the hood on Li Jie's head, and touched Li Jie's hair with his hand: "Who knows, one day in the future Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva will help you to shave your head."

Feeling the warmth from Lan's hand touching his head, Li Jie shook his head and said, "Forget it, there's no way I'm going to be a monk. Even if I'm forced to become a monk, I'll probably end up breaking my vows in the future."

"Are you planning to set up an organization and set up its headquarters on Venus?" When Gu Yi came back from London, Li Jie started discussing the affairs of the Illuminati with Gu Yi without much pause.

"That's right, Master. We sincerely invite you to join this organization." Li Jie nodded seriously. "To be honest, there are many threats in this world, and the government is not necessarily trustworthy."

Li Jie stated directly. In response, Gu Yi did not refute, but asked in an inquiring tone: "Why do you think so?"

"Humans are actually very smart creatures." Li Jie did not immediately talk about the government issue, but first commented on humans, "When a person is in trouble, he can always show unexpected potential and wisdom."

"Individuals are indeed very smart!" Li Jie stretched out a finger, Gu Yi nodded, and then Li Jie said: "However, a group of people are often very stupid!" After

he said that, he retracted his finger and clenched it into a fist.

"As animals that live in groups, humans always have something to rely on. In many cases, they expect others to help them complete things that they should handle themselves." Li Jie revealed a lot about the essence of human nature.

"History is replete with examples of when a visionary person puts forward a point of view, he is often influenced or even controlled by others."

Ancient One smiled and asked back: "Then can you guarantee that your ideas are correct? Your organization has genius scientists, wealthy businessmen, outstanding orators like you, leaders of mutants, and even the most influential heroes in today's society!"

"Do you know how great an impact such a group would have on the world?" Ancient One asked calmly.

"Yes, Master, we are aware of our responsibilities. That's why we invite you. The original intention of establishing the Illuminati was that Tony Stark hoped that someone would stop him when he got too excited. In order to achieve this goal, he decided to create the Illuminati." Li Jie nodded and explained the true meaning of the organization.

"I remember the first time I met you, you took me to see the rise and fall of civilizations on other planets in the universe. In comparison, the Earth is too young. Facing those civilizations that can easily destroy the entire star system, we hope to unite. You must be aware of this situation."

Li Jie told this to Master Ancient One, who did not respond immediately. Li Jie continued, "I wonder if you have heard of the existence of the Brotherhood of the Shield. There was such an organization, and Tony's father was one of them. Their slogan was 'Our world should not perish like this', and I agree with this concept very much."

Hearing Li Jie mention the Holy Shield Brotherhood, Gu Yi frowned slightly, but soon relaxed his brows. He said to Li Jie: "Holy Shield Brotherhood? It seems that you have forgotten that this is Kamartaki. Last time when you comprehended your inner strength in the library, I think Lan should have mentioned something to you. Isaac Newton left a note here."

When Li Jie heard what Gu Yi said, he suddenly remembered that this had happened. In the depths of his memory, many trivial details began to emerge. That time, he saw countless scenes in the library of Kamataki and saw many things in the illusion of the birth of the universe.

Among them was a vision that he had witnessed not long ago in the Eternal City of Rome - the immortal symbol of the Holy Shield Brotherhood, a spear and a solid shield!

Li Jie was not sure if there was a connection. If many sages left their knowledge in Kamar-Taki, did Newton also leave his research on the Holy Shield Brotherhood to Kamar-Taki? After all, the Eternal City had been destroyed and only ruins remained.

As for what the Holy Shield and the Spear represent, Li Jie and Tony are very interested. Unfortunately, the Holy Shield has disappeared, and it is unknown whether the Spear stored in the Eastern Branch is safe.

Just as Li Jie was thinking, Ancient One had no intention of letting him think about these questions quietly here: "Newton first came to Kamartaki around 1800. At that time, he was the greatest scientist in the world. Many of his ideas were amazing. He came to Kamartaki to seek the power of magic to explain some things that science had not been able to answer at that time."

He lived in Kamar-Taki for twenty years, during which time he learned a lot and left many traces. Li Jie noticed that Ancient One emphasized "part", which meant that Ancient One did not fully accept the ideas of the Holy Shield Brotherhood.

Despite their differences, the Ancient One was still saddened when he learned that the Aegis Brotherhood was gone, and he shook his head.

At this time, Li Jie suddenly asked curiously: "Master, do you know how the Holy Shield Brotherhood disappeared?"

Ancient One said he didn't know, because the Brotherhood of the Shield strictly adhered to the principle of confidentiality, and he respected and had no intention of violating their rules. They had always been self-disciplined, and Ancient One never interfered with them. In fact, it was not until the Brotherhood of the Shield completely disappeared that Ancient One knew that the secret organization no

longer existed.

Li Jie could only shake his head and sigh. After all, that happened sixty or seventy years ago, and there was no point in asking about it again. The most important thing now was to deal with his own affairs.

So he asked Ancient One: "So Master, about the Illuminati..."

After hearing this, Gu Yi narrowed his eyes and thought for a while, then slowly replied: "I will assist you in building a channel connecting Venus and Earth, but I don't have time to attend your meeting."

Gu Yi was a busy man, and Li Jie had expected this. His refusal was not surprising, as Gu Yi's willingness to help build the space channel was the best answer.

"And about the Buddhist practitioners, what Lan told you before is basically correct." Gu Yi mentioned the previous conversation between Lan and Li Jie: "It is better to be self-reliant than to seek help from others. If you really want to help your friend, you might as well improve your own Buddhist practice."

Upon hearing this, Li Jie couldn't help but ask, "Are you suggesting that I become a monk?"

In response, Gu Yi smiled but did not answer, and continued, "I can give you all the books about Buddhist practitioners. In the past, I had some interactions with various major Buddhist schools, and after they failed to find suitable disciples, these books were given to me for safekeeping."

This is good news for Li Jie. There is a lot of basic knowledge in Buddhism that is interoperable with metaphysics. This way, his own practice will have a direction.

However, for some reason, Li Jie always felt that Gu Yi seemed to be persuading him to become a monk.

When Li Jie was about to leave after finishing all the topics, Gu Yi called him and said, "Wait a moment, I need your help with something."

Gu Yi did not hesitate to ask Li Jie for help. Li Jie had no choice but to refuse

Gu Yi's request. Moreover, Gu Yi had never asked him to do anything bad for a long time, except for taking in a fat Thor.

"It's a small matter, don't worry." Ancient One waved his hand to indicate that the matter was simple: "I hope Lan can enter the secular society. She needs to leave Kamar-Taki."

"What?" Li Jie didn't understand what Gu Yi meant.

It turned out that this was the result of Ancient One's thinking from the conversation with Mordo in London: "Among all my disciples, Lan is the most special one. She was abandoned at birth, and I brought her back and raised her. She is a wizard who has never experienced worldly life."

"I think it's okay, Master. I don't think Master Lan is any different from other mages." Li Jie believes that it is of no benefit to let Lan live in the secular society, especially in modern society where pollution is serious. It is better for him to stay in the quiet and peaceful Kamar-Taki.

"It's a big difference, Night Walker." Ancient One retorted: "Almost all wizards have experienced the joys and sorrows and sufferings of the secular life. Almost every wizard was an ordinary person before mastering magic. But Lan was born isolated from all this, which is not good."

Just as Mordo said in London, maybe something really happened. Ancient One continued: "Like all Buddhist practitioners in the past, the master also needs to go through the trials of the secular world. It's just that Lan's experience is reversed."

Unfortunately, Li Jie has not seen the movie "Doctor Strange". In this movie, which was released after he traveled through time, Doctor Strange is exactly the kind of typical growth of a mage that Ancient One said - without setbacks and pain, there is no growth. In fact, Lan's ability has reached a bottleneck, and Ancient One knows this very well, so he made such a request.

In addition, Gu Yi also said bluntly: "I still need to find a successor."

"I always thought Lan was your successor." Li Jie was confused.

"No, she is not. She is my disciple, but she is not the heir to the position of

Supreme Sorcerer." Gu Yi explained seriously: "So I still need Lan to go to the mortal world to help me find a suitable successor."

As it was a question of Kamar-Taiji and the inheritance of the Supreme Sorcerer, Li Jie could not say much and could only ask: "So how do you want me to help you with this matter?"

"I heard that you have been taking care of Thor recently. Well, I should say you have been taking good care of him." Ancient One accidentally made a slip of the tongue and exposed his true thoughts.

"Ah, probably. I guess Odin probably hasn't seen Thor's current appearance recently." Li Jie was doubtful. Ancient One already knew that he had raised Thor into a fat otaku, so did Odin know about it?

Chapter 30 Spider-Man Edition

After the SAT exam, Li Jie started looking for a new house. He found that it was becoming more and more inconvenient to continue living at home, and he needed an independent space to do many things. Peter and Harry also supported Li Jie to move out. For these two best friends, once Li Jie had a new house to live in, they would have an extra place to stay.

"You know, every time I come home, especially after playing Spider-Man, when Aunt May sees me with bruises on my face, how many excuses do I have to make? Saying that I fell off my skateboard, fell while playing basketball, or was hit by the school football players." As he said this, Peter couldn't help but smile bitterly.

"These lame excuses make me look like a super sports loser, which is really embarrassing." Li Jie and Harry have different views: "You were already a sports loser before you became Spider-Man. If you can make five out of ten free throws, it's good. There's nothing to argue about."

"That was in the past! That was in the past!" Peter said confidently, "It's different now. So, brother!" Peter put his arm around Li Jie's shoulder and said seriously, "Can you rent a bigger house and leave a room for me, in case I need to stay the night sometimes?"

Li Jie slapped Peter's hand on his shoulder in disgust and said, "Come on, you're going to be a freshman at NYU soon. Don't you want to rent an apartment with Gwen? Why are you coming to my place to join in the fun?"

After hearing what Li Jie said, Harry raised his eyebrows, looked at Peter meaningfully and said, "Could it be that Gwen actually did that to you..." He said with a sly smile.

"Please, brothers! Keep your thoughts pure! Gwen comes from a strict family! Think about her father, the serious old policeman. And how do I explain to

Gwen where the money comes from to rent a house near New York University?" Peter slapped his forehead in frustration. Obviously, this question was the key.

"The rent for a slightly better apartment near NYU is more than two thousand dollars. I can't reasonably explain the real source of this money. After all, Uncle Ben can't give me so much pocket money. And Gwen is too smart. I think she seems to have noticed something. I don't know if she has guessed my true identity."

Li Jie and Harry looked at each other and shook their heads at the same time: "Regarding the issue of money, you can find a part-time job when you go to college. The laboratory of the Osborn Group can provide you with a position. You are very strong in the field of biology. In this way, your Spider-Man copyright income can also be transferred to your account through the Osborn Group."

"So, don't worry about money." Li Jie patted Peter's arm. In this world, Peter Parker's life was much better than what Li Jie had seen in movies and cartoons. Uncle Ben was still alive, and the family's financial pillar was still there; Aunt May was not forced to sell her house because she couldn't afford Peter's high tuition; Peter didn't have to work as a temporary photographer at the Daily Bugle, using his Spider-Man photos for a meager reward; not to mention that Peter had accumulated a considerable amount of savings because of the establishment of the comic company.

"I didn't become Spider-Man for the money, you know that!" Peter waved his hands to express his stance, "Aren't we here to change the world?"

"Yes, it is indeed for the purpose of solving the world's problems, but I think you should first deal with your relationship with Gwen. College is different from high school, and Gwen may encounter many handsome boys pursuing her. I think Peter Parker has to work harder." Li Jie pointed at Peter and said half-jokingly.

"But Jason, I think you should also consider renting a bigger house." At this time, Harry suddenly interrupted.

"Don't tell me you occasionally want to sleep in my bed?" Li Jie glared at Harry. "There are more than fifty rooms in your manor for you to choose from!"

"That's exactly the problem!" Harry answered frankly, "Osborne Manor is just too big. I didn't feel uncomfortable when I lived with my father before, but after my father passed away, this mansion seems too empty for me. Although there are many servants, you know, the feeling is still different."

"What about Mary? Shouldn't she move in with you?" Peter was referring to Harry's girlfriend Mary Jane.

She is an actress active on Broadway, often performing in stage plays and touring from time to time. Therefore, it is impossible for her to stay in New York all the time, let alone live in Osborne Manor for a long time. Harry said helplessly.

"Mary is an independent and strong woman with her own ideas. I can't ask her to sacrifice her career for me. If she did that, I think our relationship would probably come to an end," Harry said frankly.

What he said was indeed reasonable. Mary Jane was dating Harry, but she was not the kind of woman who depended on him for her living. Although Harry was now one of the richest men in the world, as long as Mary asked, he was fully capable of providing her with a good material life.

However, Mary is not impressed by this. She has a higher need for self-pursuit and self-realization, and she is determined not to let Harry intervene in the decision-making in this regard. For her, this is her life, independent and strong, which is also the truest portrayal of Mary Jane.

She loves to shine on stage and is eager to touch the hearts of the audience through her performances, making them cry or laugh. This stems from her persistent pursuit in the field of art.

In her spare time, she is happy to go on vacation with Harry. The two support each other but also maintain their independence. Mary Jane never asks about Harry's private affairs and always supports him silently. In return, Harry gives her the same silent support.

Since Norman's death, Mary has become one of Harry's most important pillars of life.

Mary Jane and Gwen Stacy represent the image of independent women in the

new era, who have cleverly found a balance between love, career, family and personal life. They are not completely dependent on men and have independent lives, but when their partners need support, they will not hesitate to devote their strength and tenderness.

These women are indeed outstanding, and both Harry and Peter cherish their girlfriends very much. At the same time, they also understand that they have no right to interfere with each other's life goals.

"So what you mean is that you want to find a place where you can come to have parties and play games, or have a place to stay when you have an argument with your girlfriend and get kicked out, or even find a place to vomit when you get drunk? This is equivalent to a free hotel, or a gathering place for losers?" Before Li Jie finished speaking, Peter and Harry had already nodded repeatedly.

"Yes, that's right! That's it!" Peter admitted shamelessly.

"Get lost!" Li Jie kicked Peter and Harry unceremoniously, sending them flying...

After some negotiation and bargaining, Li Jie finally decided to rent a bigger house. Regardless of whether it would become a "refuge" for these bad friends in the future, at least a more spacious house would make living more convenient.

Gwen helped find a two-story single-family villa located at the intersection of Queens and Long Island, with a loft and basement, and a total of five rooms available for living. Living facilities such as the kitchen, living room, and dining room are all on the first floor.

The usable area of the first floor of the entire house is about 220 square meters, plus a garage and a 50-square-meter back garden.

"This place is pretty good, Jason. It will definitely meet your needs." Gwen commented after accompanying Li Jie to visit the house.

"Peter will definitely come to play games with you more often in the future, but I still hope you can keep an eye on him and don't let him play too late."

"Huh?" Li Jie looked at Gwen with embarrassment.

Gwen raised her eyebrows and asked, "What's so surprising? The reason you looked for a big house is because you three friends sometimes do shady things here."

"Please don't be so blunt, Gwen. We're just playing games together at most." Li Jie really felt that Gwen was too smart. Whether it was the movies they had seen in his previous life or their current interactions, he could see that Gwen had a very high IQ. It seemed that it was not easy for Peter to remain silent until now.

"Ah~ Game~" Gwen smiled and patted Li Jie's back gently.

After looking at the whole house, Li Jie was very satisfied. Although the monthly rent was over 7,000 US dollars, which was indeed not cheap, he could still afford the expense for now.

After all, he has an income from the comics company, plus his part-time consultant at the Osborn Group with an annual salary of five million US dollars. Considering all aspects, in the United States, Li Jie can be considered a high-income person among the middle class.

Now that the house was confirmed, the moving matters had to be handled as soon as possible. Peter, Harry and their respective girlfriends, Gwen and Mary, all came to help, adding a bit of liveliness to Li Jie's move into his new home.

Li Jie put all the furniture left by the previous landlord in the basement. He didn't like to use old furniture that had been used by others. Therefore, all the furniture in the house was newly purchased by him.

Peter and Harry were busy moving furniture and doing the heavy work, while Gwen and Mary were cleaning.

Chapter 31 Supreme Mage

Should the TV cabinet be placed here? I think it can be moved outward. In the future, we can buy a PS4 game console and an XBOX, and then choose a -inch color TV in the living room! Then we can play games in the living room! "Peter planned on his own initiative without thinking about whether to ask for the consent of the owner of the house.

"Good idea. If Mary goes on tour, I don't think I will come back to the manor most of the time. So, Jason, you'd better arrange a bigger wardrobe in my room. I have too many clothes." Harry made his own arrangements without hesitation.

Li Jie stroked his forehead and felt that he needed to calm down. It was obvious that he did not move out just to give these two guys a place to stay!

The doorbell rang. "I'll go open the door." Seeing that the men who were arranging the furniture were not available, Gwen offered to open the door.

As the door opened, a woman with a delicate oriental face appeared in front of Gwen. Her long black hair, as black as lake water, was braided and hung behind her head.

"Excuse me, who are you?" Gwen guessed that this might be a social worker in the community. She looked really beautiful, which made her feel amazing.

"My name is Lan, and I want to ask if Jason lives here." The woman who came was Lan. It seemed that Ancient One had already told her to come to the human world to gain experience and help find the successor of the Supreme Sorcerer.

"Oh, yes, please come in." Gwen immediately welcomed Lan into the house and shouted towards the living room, "Jason, there is a beautiful lady looking for you."

Hearing Gwen's voice, Peter and Harry were quite curious and followed Li Jie

out to see who was looking for him. They knew very well that there were not many girls that Li Jie could call "beautiful".

"Hello, Jie." When Lan saw Li Jie coming out, she called him by his Chinese name instead of his English name. Perhaps it was because she was more used to calling him that.

"Hi, Lan, welcome." Li Jie stretched out his hand and shook hands with Lan.

Both Harry and Peter knew Lan, but this was the first time that he came to see Li Jie not as a wizard. The two looked at each other with surprise in their eyes.

At the same time, Gwen and Mary gathered together, their gossipy hearts instantly burning, and began to speculate about the relationship between the man and woman.

"Who do you think this girl is?"

"Could it be Jason's girlfriend?"

"I'm not sure, but she could be his relative. Look, she calls Jason 'Jie', like a family member."

As they were whispering, Lan broke their guess by saying, "I think you already know."

Although Lan's words seemed like a riddle, Li Jie knew exactly what she was talking about, so he replied, "Yeah, I know."

"Then I'll trouble you from now on. I'll live here from now on." Lan looked at Li Jie with a smile, and the latter nodded in agreement.

Peter and Harry seemed a little surprised, and they exchanged questions through eye contact.

"When did they meet and get together?"

"I don't know!"

"Oh my god! Jason actually caught up with a wizard! This is amazing!"

"Wait, could this be the real reason why he moved out in the first place?"

“It may not be impossible!”

"Can we still come and live here more often in the future?"

"Let's talk about it based on the situation!"

Li Jie glanced at the two people who were communicating with their eyes, and couldn't help thinking that his life would be lively after he moved out.

Chapter 097 Cohabitation and Trap

Li Jie had not informed Harry and Peter of Lan's arrival, so they were very surprised by her sudden appearance. Moreover, Lan's outfit today was completely different from the past.

Lan, a Kamar-Taki mage, usually wears a loose moon-white mage robe. This robe has no special cut, and apart from being fitted, it has no aesthetic design. When you put it on, it feels like a pocket. The only advantage is that it is more comfortable to move around.

However, today Lan took off her wizard robe and changed into the outfit of an ordinary city girl: a fitted short-sleeved plaid shirt with stretch jeans and a pair of sneakers. It exuded a youthful atmosphere and looked much better than the wizard robe that left a steady impression.

At dinner time, Li Jie carefully prepared a table of delicious dishes to entertain everyone who helped. Coincidentally, Lan was also there, and they had dinner together.

"Jason, are you saying that Lan is going to move in with you?" At the dining table, Mary glanced at Lan who was sitting next to her, then turned to Li Jie and asked.

"Yes, for some reasons, she will live here from now on." Li Jie nodded and picked up a piece of roast beef and put it on his plate.

"Wow!" Gwen and Mary exclaimed, which seemed to contain multiple meanings.

"I want to ask, can we still live here in the future? I mean, ah--" Peter was about to ask Li Jie a question, but Gwen secretly stepped on him under the table, preventing him from finishing his words.

Li Jie looked at Gwen and Peter in confusion, shrugged and said to Harry and Peter: "Of course, you can come anytime, there is a spare room upstairs."

Li Jie pointed upstairs. It was obvious that he had considered the decision of choosing a house with five empty rooms.

"I don't think so. Peter and I might rent a house near New York University next month." Gwen smiled and declined Li Jie's offer, then added: "What do you think, Peter?"

"Rent a house? Didn't George say that he doesn't allow you to move out? Ah ——!" This time Gwen pinched Peter's waist hard under the table, and Peter's facial expression was distorted with pain.

Gwen looked at Peter with a smile: "What's wrong, Peter?" Peter Parker, you are so ignorant! Gwen used her eyes to convey the meaning of blame to him.

"No, it's okay. I just encountered static electricity. It's really strange. It's not winter now and the air is not that dry. How can there be static electricity? Haha!" Peter forced out a dry smile, which seemed very far-fetched and bitter.

Seeing the subtle interaction between the couple, Li Jie could only pretend not to see it.

Li Jie noticed that Lan ate very little at dinner, almost only some fruits and desserts, and the grilled steak which was the staple food was hardly touched.

The dinner ended in a slightly awkward atmosphere. Gwen, Peter, Harry and Mary said it was getting late, and they went home after dinner.

Lan decided to stay. Fortunately, the whole house had been decorated and cleaned today, including the bedding. So Li Jie gave the largest master bedroom to Lan.

"This is the master bedroom, which is equipped with a separate dressing room and a separate bathroom. If you don't mind, you can live here." Li Jie readily

gave this most spacious and comfortable master bedroom to Lan.

This is done because she is a girl, and the master bedroom has an independent toilet and bathroom, so she does not have to share bathroom facilities with other roommates when washing, which is more convenient for girls. In addition, there is an independent cloakroom, which is very popular for most girls.

Although Lan didn't seem to have brought many clothes, Li Jie still made sufficient consideration for her.

"Thank you, this room is great, much more comfortable than the one I had before at Kamartai Station." Lan looked around the room and nodded in gratitude.

"Here's the password for the room's Wi-Fi, if you need to use the internet." Li Jie handed Lan a note: "Did you buy a cell phone?"

"No." Lan shook her head. She really didn't need to use this kind of thing before.

"Okay, then you'd better buy one. After all, living in modern society, especially in public places, you can't always use magic at will." Lan expressed his understanding of Li Jie's statement.

"Don't you have any other luggage?" Li Jie noticed that Lan came over with empty hands.

"I can't bring all my robes with me, right? That would definitely look weird." Lan shook his head, indicating that he did not bring any other luggage and came alone.

"Okay, so when you go buy a cell phone tomorrow, you also need to buy some other clothes." Li Jie touched his forehead, realizing that there was still a lot to do.

"You ate very little for dinner. Don't you like the food?" This made Li Jie quite frustrated because he always thought he was a good cook.

"Well, okay, that's true." Lan looked a little embarrassed, but she felt that some things were better explained in advance.

"I don't like mixed raw and cooked food." Li Jie understood that the grilled steak

was not well-done, but medium-rare, with the meat still having a little pink color. People who are averse to raw food would not eat it.

Gu Yi is a Chinese from the Ming Dynasty. His taste preference is probably very traditional Chinese cuisine. He probably doesn't like half-cooked food. Similarly, Lan, who was raised by Gu Yi, is probably the same. Therefore, Li Jie thinks it is better to ask Lan what he likes to eat first: "So, what do you like to eat? I can make appropriate adjustments."

"Really?" Lan raised his eyebrows, but shook his head and said, "Forget it. It might be troublesome in the United States."

"What's wrong?" Li Jie asked in confusion.

"It's okay." Lan waved his hand, indicating that this was not a problem: "Just boil the beef in water with some salt and vegetables. Rice is fine as the staple food."

Lan's requirements are not high, and can even be said to be quite low, which is much better than that of Thor who complains all day long. Interpersonal relationships are divided into close and distant. Compared with Thor and Odin, Lan and Gu Yi's relationship with Li Jie is obviously closer.

So Li Jie was not afraid of trouble, as long as he could do anything within his ability. However, since Lan was unwilling to elaborate, Li Jie did not ask any more questions. When the time comes, just go to Kamataki and ask the king and you will know.

"Oh, by the way. This is for you." Lan seemed to suddenly remember something. She gently grabbed the air, and an old book with a tattered cover appeared out of thin air in her hand.

Li Jie took the book and asked, "What is this?"

"This is a catalog of classics left behind by Buddhist practitioners, compiled by Master Gu Yi. It contains various keyword indexes, the names of various books, and the general uses of the books. The master asked me to pass it to you, saying that it will be helpful for your practice." Lan answered Li Jie's question and added.

"For example, if you want to use the power of Buddhism to resolve your friend's

karma, then you need to study the knowledge in the catalog carefully. There are too many books to move from Kamataki to you. If you want to read a book, tell me and I can get it for you directly."

Lan made a gesture while speaking. It seemed that the "bring it here" she said meant to take the book out directly from the void. Was this considered a Kamar-Taki library administrator that she had personally ordered?

Li Jie thought so and turned the pages of the catalog in his hand. There were many kinds of books in it with complete content.

It seems that to resolve the karma of Laolang's family, he really has to rely on his own efforts. But is this another trap set up by Gu Yi and Dizang? Are they trying to make him become a monk?

"Aren't you really trying to make me become a monk?" Li Jie asked Lan cautiously, holding the book in his hand.

Chapter 32 Captain Rogers

Lan smiled at Li Jie and said, "Didn't you say before that you would be a monk who breaks the precepts after you become a monk? Then you should just do your best to be a monk who breaks the precepts! After all, there are so few people who practice Buddhism. Maybe Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva will be more magnanimous." With that, Lan sent Li Jie out of her room because she needed to rest.

Li Jie muttered to himself, "I'm afraid Captain Rogers Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva will not set a trap for me again for the future of Buddhism?" This thought made him feel uneasy, "If he really sets a trap for me, what should I do?" While thinking about this question, Li Jie walked back, touching his head, and prayed in his heart, "I don't want to become a bald head."

At this moment, at the foot of the Canadian Rockies, a father and son shuddered at the same time without noticing.

The Pentagon in Washington has recently caused a lot of headaches for American generals, especially senior generals. The reason is simple, that is, it is about the legal dispute that has been making a lot of noise around the world.

Almost all the media in the world are reporting this, especially the overseas media, which are unanimous in their criticism of the US military. For the world's largest country, this is understandable. The US military expenditure is equivalent to half of the world's total military expenditure, which is an astonishing astronomical figure. Whether they are allies of the United States or not, other countries are deeply afraid of the high military expenditure and strong military power of the United States.

Countries that have tense relations with the United States have made a big fuss about this. The competition among China, the United States and Russia and the intrigue behind them have long been no secret to the world. It can be said to be an open secret.

China's Xinhua News Agency published an article titled "The hero who saved the world is used as a tool for the military to make money", criticizing the US military and government. Russia's official media Pravda published an article titled "Steve Rogers: Another political victim". In the editorial, Russia strongly suspected that this was not the first time the military had done such a shameful thing.

They even brought up an old incident, the Iwo Jima photo incident. That world-famous battlefield photo, the American flag raised on Iwo Jima, was also a staged battlefield photo.

There was a complete plan behind the shooting of this photo. It turned out that at the time of the Battle of Iwo Jima, the US finances were close to bankruptcy. South American suppliers of raw materials clearly stated that they would no longer accept US dollars as a payment method and required the US to exchange raw materials with real gold and silver. At that time, the remaining gold in the US Treasury was almost exhausted and could not be used for other purposes.

Therefore, the United States could only call on the public to donate money and materials to support the war until the final victory. However, the Battle of Iwo Jima took place in 1945, when Captain Steve Rogers had lost contact with his plane in the Arctic Circle, and the US military could not find a charismatic soldier to persuade the public to donate.

Thus, the most notorious military photo fraud scandal in history was born, concocted by the military’s political propaganda department. This was the famous Iwo Jima flag-staging incident, which the U.S. military carefully planned in order to set an example and promoted the five soldiers who participated in the flag-staging as the spiritual successors of Captain America.

Under the massive propaganda, many people believed the authenticity of the photo and the story in it, and many were moved by these so-called heroic deeds. Afterwards, the military propaganda department used its usual tactics again, letting these soldiers under their control give speeches around the country, calling on the public to donate money and materials.

These soldiers completed the task with all their efforts, and their speeches and publicity activities raised a lot of funds for the military, helping the military to get through that most difficult period.

However, there is no impenetrable wall in the world, and the incident was eventually exposed, causing an uproar in global public opinion. The soldiers and photographers were pushed out as scapegoats by the military propaganda department, claiming that they were not aware of the incident and that everything was privately planned by the war photographer and several soldiers who were eager to become famous.

As a result, these soldiers and photographers were forced to shoulder enormous responsibilities. It is hard to imagine how much trouble ordinary people would encounter in their lives after bearing such heavy pressure. Can they survive under the pressure, or will they choose to die?

The Russian newspaper Pravda dug up this old story and questioned that these soldiers and photographers were just scapegoats of the military. When the incident was projected onto Captain Rogers, the angle of Pravda was particularly sharp.

In fact, Xinhua News Agency and Pravda are just one of many media outlets that have questioned the actions of the U.S. military. Even many media outlets in the United States are skeptical of the military.

"This year's recruiting is not going very smoothly." Inside the Pentagon, the general in charge of U.S. military recruiting affairs complained to his colleagues.

"Due to the impact of Captain Rogers' case, the U.S. military has become a negative symbol in the minds of young people. They feel that it is full of deception and unreliability." Another senior military official in the Pentagon frowned and said bluntly: "Then tell us how big the impact is."

"It is the graduation season in June and July. College students who have received higher education and high school students from excellent high schools have always been our key recruitment targets. Everyone knows that we must not allow idle hooligans to fill our army! If this really happens, it will mean the end of the US military!"

General Zheng Bing's remarks were unanimously agreed by other generals. Because in modern warfare, the requirements for soldiers' personal qualities are increasing day by day, so everyone is more concerned about this year's conscription situation.

"The conscription situation this year is very severe. The number of college graduates who are willing to sign up to join the army is less than 7% of the total, which is the lowest point since records began!" And this is just a willingness statistic, equivalent to a questionnaire survey. In the end, the number of people who can actually report to the military camp may be even lower.

"We estimate that we will need to recruit more than 30,000 new recruits this year, but there are less than 5,000 people who meet the requirements and are willing to join the army. We can't just find 25,000 gangsters or criminals to make up the numbers, everyone!"

Hearing this number, the other Pentagon generals present were all lost in thought. Although the US military sometimes has to lower its recruitment standards due to a shortage of soldiers, the consequences of a large number of problematic soldiers flooding the army would be disastrous.

The bad news goes beyond the draft. New news from Congress and the White House has added to the worries.

"Congress and the White House can't stand the pressure anymore. Since the case broke out, Captain Rogers' online public opinion offensive has put them in a difficult situation. Congress's approval rating and the president's approval rating are both declining. They are asking the military to resolve this issue as soon as possible." The secretary in charge of the report conveyed the opinions of Congress and the White House.

Pentagon generals were troubled by these opinions.

"What do you think?" General Ross, who participated in the meeting, asked his colleagues.

"The second round of trials has not started yet!" said a general. But someone immediately refuted his point of view.

"This is not just a case, it's a political incident, completely planned by Captain Rogers. As for the purpose, I think you all know it." said the objector.

"S.H.I.E.L.D.? That's enough. I think we should stop. We are not in the same system as S.H.I.E.L.D., and our relationship is not as close as that between the FBI and the CIA." One of the generals expressed his opinion, and it was obvious

that he did not support the confrontation with S.H.I.E.L.D.

"It's not wise to go against SHIELD. Now is not the time for us to save face. If there is no way to turn the situation around, I think we should have a good talk with Director Hill." General Ross looked around at his colleagues and suggested.

"At least we need to find a reasonable solution, otherwise I think Congress and the President may force some of us to leave!"

Ross's words made the generals present fall silent again. The original plan against SHIELD was executed very smoothly, but Captain Rogers suddenly appeared and used such a far-sighted method, making the US military unable to defend against it.

Although everyone knew it tacitly, they all knew that they had already lost the battle with SHIELD this time, but no one was willing to admit it publicly due to face.

General Ross observed the crowd and knew what they were thinking, so he couldn't help but sigh. Soldiers were sometimes stubborn, but it seemed that some compromises had to be made on this issue. He just hoped that Hill and Rogers would not embarrass the military too much.

.....

Hill in New York was unaware of the dynamics of the military leaders, nor did he know that they had begun to waver. As long as Hill made a request, the bigwigs would immediately seek reconciliation.

At this moment, Hill has an important matter to deal with - the Avengers under SHIELD is about to welcome a new member. Hill is worried that he will touch the sensitive nerves of some people, so he decides to introduce him in person.

After summoning all the Avengers, Hill solemnly announced to them: "Today we will welcome a new companion, and I hope we can all live in harmony with him."

After saying this, Hill fell into a brief silence because she really didn't know how to introduce this newcomer.

At this time, Hawkeye Barton noticed Hill's embarrassment and stepped forward to defuse the atmosphere: "Oh~ a newcomer, I like newcomers. If necessary, I can train him personally and help him quickly integrate into the team."

It must be mentioned that Patton is a very good colleague, both warm-hearted and responsible.

"Ahem..." Hill looked at Barton and laughed awkwardly twice, then shook her head, realizing that some things had to be faced after all. So, she mustered up her courage and said in one breath: "Well, welcome our new member, Deadpool - Wade Wilson!"

When Hill said the name, there was a moment of silence.

"Bang!" This was the sound of the bow and arrow in Patton's hand falling to the ground.

Chapter 33 Excellent Archer

The new employee introduced by Hill surprised everyone. It turned out to be a guy named Deadpool - Wade Wilson. This guy really made SHIELD notorious in the past. Even Hawkeye Barton was unable to return home because of him and was burdened with a lot of debt.

In order to repay this huge debt, Patton was forced to sell his copyright to Li Jie at a low price, at a price of one million US dollars for ten years, which was not a good deal. However, Patton had no choice at the time.

At that time, Barton was almost the target of public criticism, and for a while he dared not go out. Many people went to the headquarters of S.H.I.E.L.D. to protest against their treatment of a hero who had saved New York - although, if Deadpool is also considered a hero.

When Hill said the name Deadpool, the scene was silent, and even Barton could hardly hold the bow and arrow in his hand. As a professional warrior, he couldn't even hold the weapon, which shows how great the psychological impact he suffered.

"Impossible! Absolutely impossible!" Barton questioned Hill hysterically: "Even if you can bring a dachshund into the Avengers now, I will agree! But Deadpool, no! No way!"

Barton was so out of control that he didn't even pick up the bow and arrow that had fallen on the ground. He walked straight toward Hill, waving his arms. Hill couldn't tell whether his actions were threatening.

"Agent Hawkeye, I remember you were on the list of people who first proposed to recruit Deadpool." Hill pretended to know nothing about the matter and did not know about the entanglement between Deadpool and Hawkeye. She said innocently.

"This is a different time, Chief Hill!" Barton emphasized the word "chief". The Avengers around him all stood by and watched.

Iron Fist, Blade, White Tiger, and Luke Cage gathered together and whispered. White Tiger asked in a low voice, "I don't know much about the internal personnel of SHIELD, but did Barton have any feud with Hill before?"

"As far as I know, no. Hill and Hawkeye should have a good relationship, although they have some minor disputes occasionally." Iron Fist has been in S.H.I.E.L.D. longer, so he naturally knows more information.

"But how can you tell that their relationship is good? If you call that a good relationship." Wonder Man Luke Cage frowned and whispered.

"It seems we have to be more vigilant. Hill might be a smiling man with a dagger hidden behind his face." The ever-vigilant vampire hunter Blade finally expressed his opinion, and everyone agreed.

As a result, Hill left the impression of being petty and treacherous in the minds of the Avengers.

Natasha and Captain Rogers also came together to discuss. "Captain, do you think Hill is serious? Deadpool hurt Barton so badly!" Natasha obviously stood on Barton's side. After all, they were true comrades.

Sharing life and death, the kind of relationship where you can trust each other with confidence and trust your back and life, has long surpassed ordinary friendship.

"I'm not sure. Hill didn't mention this to me before. But I think she may have her own considerations." Rogers also frowned slightly.

"I still stick to my position, Hill, Deadpool cannot join the Avengers. If you really think we are in need of help, I think the Husky raised by Agent Coulson can be more useful than Deadpool." Barton insisted on his opinion without compromise.

"Before Deadpool arrives, I think you'd better change your mind, Hill!"

Hill was also troubled to see Barton so determined, even though she tried to act

stupid. But this does not mean that the grudge between Deadpool and Hawkeye can be written off.

Hill stretched out his left hand to cover half of his face and said in a helpless tone: "Actually, Deadpool is already here. He was standing behind me just now."

"What?!" Hawkeye Barton immediately turned his head to look behind Hill, but he didn't see anyone. Suddenly, a voice that deserved a beating sounded on his right: "Just now I heard you say that I am not as good as a dachshund?"

Deadpool was resting his chin on Barton's right shoulder and said in a mocking tone: "Or is a husky more useful than me?"

"Yes, that's what I thought!" Patton was not scared by the sudden voice. In fact, he had been thinking about seeking revenge on Deadpool for a long time.

As for why they seek revenge on Deadpool? Of course they want to kill him! As long-range attackers, archers usually hide a short knife on their waist or calf. This is a long-standing tradition that has been passed down for thousands of years. This is the archer's last fighting weapon.

A good archer should also be proficient with a short sword and dagger.

Hawkeye himself is an excellent archer, and naturally inherited this fine tradition.

As he spoke, he drew out a hidden dagger from his waist at lightning speed. His movements were as graceful as a ballerina. The dagger in his left hand was like a lively note in a waltz, easily and beautifully cutting a wonderful angle.

Patton quickly distanced himself from Deadpool, and the dagger drew a half circle in a graceful arc. With a "swish", the sharp blade cut Deadpool's throat, and the gushing hot blood instantly splashed more than three meters away.

Barton successfully cut Deadpool's aorta, and Wade's blood gushed out instantly. Because his trachea and vocal cords were cut, Deadpool could not make any sound.

He could only helplessly cover his throat with his hands, making a hoarse sound like an old bellows. His other hand pointed at Barton and trembled. Finally, due

to heavy blood loss, Deadpool seemed unable to hold on any longer and fell to the ground.

Before he died, he laboriously wrote down the name of the man who killed him with his own bloodstained hands - that man was Hawkeye Barton, a Level 7 agent of S.H.I.E.L.D. and a member of the Avengers. The incident was caused by Barton's huge debt of one million dollars to Deadpool Wade Wilson, so he hated him deeply. In anger, he finally fell in a pool of blood and died.

To add a note: Barton lives in Room 1302, Building B, the SHIELD staff dormitory in New York, and this is where the murderer is!

After writing down these extremely detailed information, Wade finally died due to exhaustion. As for his age, it was too late to know...

At this time, Baihu stood behind Deadpool and sighed: "I am about to die, and this person has written so much. If I had so much time to spell these complicated words before I died, I would definitely struggle to ask for help."

There was one word that was particularly difficult to spell, which was the full name of S.H.I.E.L.D. - the Department of National Strategic Defense and Logistics Support. Deadpool tried several times to spell it correctly. Every time he made a mistake, he had to erase it and write it again. In the end, even the blood he sprayed was not enough. In the end, he had to use his mobile phone to verify the correct spelling of the word.

Until the last letter was written, Deadpool finally collapsed to the ground. Before he died, he pointed his finger at Hawkeye, revealing that he was the murderer.

"Come on, Wade, can't you just be quiet?" Hill felt his head splitting. Was there no normal person in the Avengers? Someone showed up to kill people, and this person actually cooperated with him to be killed.

Hawkeye, who knew Deadpool's temper well, showed no mercy and simply used his foot to erase all the information written by Deadpool. He kicked him again and yelled, "Don't play dead, I know you're not dead yet!"

But even so, Deadpool still lay on the ground pretending to be dead. Hawkeye pulled out a dagger, sneered and said: "If you are really dead, you probably won't mind if I stab you a few more times!"

Upon hearing this, Deadpool, who should have been dead, instantly turned over, as if the damage Hawkeye had just done to him had not had any effect. "Do you know how much you hurt me just now?" Deadpool's voice was a little hoarse, and it was obvious that his vocal cords had not yet fully recovered.

It turns out that Deadpool has powerful self-healing abilities similar to Wolverine. Although Hawkeye cut his throat, he failed to take his life.

"Patton, I think we should put aside the grudge between you for now. After all, Deadpool did some inappropriate things before." Hill tried to mediate.

"Not appropriate?" Barton raised his eyebrows and stared at Hill with wide eyes. Hill was defeated under his gaze and reluctantly admitted: "Okay, it is indeed quite excessive. I understand, I understand everything."

Captain America Steve Rogers curiously asked Hill and Deadpool: "Deadpool, why do you want to join the Avengers? Hill, what do you think? Are you willing to accept him?"

Captain Rogers has the final say in this team, and whether someone can become a member of the Avengers still needs his approval. If he objects, Hill's forced introduction of new members will make the relationship awkward. Obviously, Hill and Deadpool are aware of this.

Deadpool spoke first. He would not honestly admit that it was just to make his comics sell well, sell peripheral products, star in movies and endorsements to make money. Instead, he coughed a few times and cleared his throat: "Of course it's for justice."

"Haha?" Captain America looked skeptical and didn't buy into Deadpool's argument. However, Hill spoke next.

"Captain, this is to maintain the image of S.H.I.E.L.D. You also know about the previous problems between Deadpool and Hawkeye. I don't want to judge who is right or wrong. In short, the reputation of S.H.I.E.L.D. has suffered the most. Our reputation has been tarnished, so we have to take various measures to restore our image." Hill's reason was recognized by Captain Rogers.

"So you plan to let Deadpool join SHIELD as a delaying tactic to solve this problem?" Rogers nodded, thinking that this was a solution.

Hill continued: "Although Wade is mean, greedy, has no bottom line, and has many other problems..."

Rogers glanced at Wade. Are so many questions really appropriate? "Although Wade has many problems, he is still acceptable in principle. That's why Director Nick considered recruiting him back then." Hill continued to explain.

"There is another important reason." Hill looked at Rogers seriously and said slowly, "The military and Congress may not be able to hold on any longer. They will probably compromise with us and start negotiations soon. So at this critical moment, we found Deadpool who had conflicts with S.H.I.E.L.D."

Rogers understood Hill's main intention: "Is this a signal and hint to the army?"

Hill nodded and said, "Right! That's it!"

"But I don't agree!" Barton suddenly protested loudly, "I don't agree! Natasha, Iron Fist, what do you think?"

It seems that Barton is looking for allies to oppose Hill's decision. Natasha, Iron Fist and others shrugged helplessly and stood behind Barton. At this moment, Hawkeye felt the support from his teammates.

"Hey! Do you know how important this is?" Hill looked at the Avengers standing behind Barton and shouted, "This way we can get a sufficient budget immediately! The supply of free coffee, donuts and buffet can be restored!"

Hearing what Hill said, White Tiger and Luke Cage silently took a step back.

"Employees will no longer be charged for using washing machines, and the air conditioner will no longer be set to energy-saving and environmentally friendly mode! You can be as warm as you want in the winter and as cool as you want in the summer!" The Blade Warrior also silently took a step back.

Chapter 34 Venus

"The staff dormitory will no longer charge for water and electricity! I will switch to Subway sandwiches for midnight snacks instead of Donald's dollar burgers!" Hill announced loudly. "All our agent benefits will be restored, and we can do better."

However, Barton did not compromise: "You can't buy us by doing this! We are a united Avengers team. My partners will..." Will they support me?

Oh my god! Why are you all so far away from me! Barton looked back and found that the Avengers kept their distance from him. Natasha and White Tiger were discussing cosmetics; Iron Fist Blade and Cage were talking about martial arts moves. The scene just now seemed to be an illusion of Hawkeye.

Captain Rogers came over and patted Patton on the shoulder, saying meaningfully: "Thank you for your hard work, Patton."

Wait, what does this mean? What do you mean by hard work? What do you want to say, Captain? I have always regarded you as my idol! What do you want to do? In an instant, Patton felt abandoned by the whole world.

Deadpool lay on the ground, one leg raised, and stretched out a hand to him to make a V sign. Hill glanced at the scene, and it seemed that everything was resolved. Although she seemed to have overlooked a key person.

Hill clapped his hands, smiled and left. It seemed that all the problems could be solved happily!

When everyone left, Barton was left alone, disheveled in the wind. Wait, he suddenly realized something!

Hill, if you had given me a million dollars in funding, why would I end up like this? You are now playing the good guy, but you are letting me take all the

blame!

At this moment, Patton deeply felt the pain as if he was pierced by thousands of arrows, especially the mean look in Deadpool's eyes before he left. This made Patton understand that the matter between him and Deadpool was not over in the days to come!

In the 1960s, when humans first set foot on the moon, they left their footprints and civilization on another planet far away from the earth. At that moment, countless people were full of expectations and looked forward to the arrival of a new era of great navigation. However, this time, humans no longer faced turbulent waves and ocean currents, but endless darkness and the vast universe.

In the vast and dark universe, we have no navigation marks, no air to breathe, and even the light from the stars seems precious in this silent and dark space.

The first Age of Exploration ushered in the true globalization process. Spanish galleons loaded with silk and porcelain purchased from China sailed to Europe, and then returned to China with exquisite glassware, clocks and Central Asian spices from Europe. The time for a round trip was counted in years.

But it was those brave explorers who, with their ambition, sense of honor and ideals, braved the waves again and again. They brought not only simple trade exchanges, but also connected the ideological culture, market economy and science and technology, and even eating habits and lifestyles between the East and the West.

Since then, the pace of human globalization has officially begun, and we have gradually realized that the planet we live on is far from as vast as we imagined. The land has boundaries and the ocean has an end.

When benefits are unevenly distributed, ideas diverge, and wars rage, people begin to turn their attention to the dark and mysterious space in the sky—a place that is still beyond the reach of mankind. That is the stars, that is the sea!

The moment Armstrong left his footprints on the moon, the whole world was shocked. A new era of exploration has arrived! Some people shouted. This time, we are no longer going to conquer the vast ocean, but the stars in the sky!

How dangerous is the universe? The answer is far more dangerous than you

think! Just to send an astronaut away from the earth and into orbit requires the power of half of a superpower, and success is not guaranteed.

Even so, the world is still obsessed with exploring the universe, and even if we try our best, we can only do some theoretical research, because everyone has seen the profound impact and major changes that the Age of Exploration has brought to human society.

If we give up space exploration, it means giving up the new era of navigation. No one with lofty ideals will give up easily. Will humans be afraid of the sacrifices they will make on this long journey?

Look at the relics of the Silk Road that have turned into bones and the camels that have fallen in the desert; look at the civilizations and cities that have disappeared in the historical records; look at the ships sleeping under the vast blue waves and the machines eroded by the sea water; and look at the pirate treasures in the legendary stories.

Human civilization has never stopped exploring the unknown, even if it means paying the price of life! Sometimes, some things cannot be done just by fearless courage, such as exploring the universe. Since Armstrong, humans have not set foot on the moon again for sixty years.

It was not until Tony Stark proposed the lunar development plan and sent Dr. Richards and his four companions to the moon that humans saw the dawn of interstellar navigation for the first time. The era of the great star sea is really coming, and people living in this era are undoubtedly lucky, because they are fortunate to be witnesses before the advent of the great new era.

However, living in such an era is also full of misfortunes. They will inevitably bear the various impacts brought about by this earth-shaking new era. The natural selection, survival of the fittest, is extremely cruel.

When all scientists, astronomers, even politicians and military strategists focused their attention on the moon, the first stepping stone for mankind into the universe.

However, Tony Stark secretly reached out his hand to a planet that almost no one paid attention to, or would not attract people's attention at all - Venus.

"This is a unique magic ring carefully crafted by Master Ancient One." Li Jie handed Tony a magic prop that Ancient One had spent a long time making.

This was the second gathering of the Illuminati, and the purpose of this gathering was extremely simple, it was for the magic ring that Li Jie took out.

"Wearing it can directly open the space portal between the Earth and Venus. Master Ancient One has confirmed that there will be no strange things on the other side of the portal." Li Jie explained the function of the ring. It turned out that this is a tool for opening a space channel.

"Then how do I use this thing?" Tony took the ring curiously and observed it carefully.

"It's powered by energy. Master Ancient One drew an extremely complex magic array inside it. This prop was specially customized based on the energy source you can provide - the Ark Reactor." Li Jie replied. Although Ancient One would not participate in the actions of the Illuminati, he still helped this group of people create such a space-time portal so that they could establish a base on Venus.

"What an amazing magic." Dr. Hank pushed his black-framed glasses, took the special magic ring from Tony and praised it highly.

"Are we going to Venus now?" Captain Rogers was a little curious. He himself had never had any experience in interstellar travel. In fact, no one present had any experience either.

They were all very curious about exploring other planets. However, Tony poured cold water on them: "The surface temperature of Venus is as high as 450 degrees Celsius. I don't think it's safe to go to Venus before I build a base." Tony was indeed thoughtful.

"Since Master Ancient One will not participate in our plan, we are missing a guardian. If this ring malfunctions during use and we are trapped on Venus, it will be a big trouble! We don't have any way to return to Earth directly from Venus. You know, it is much farther away than the moon."

Everyone generally agreed with Tony's point of view, so the construction of the space portal fell on the shoulders of three outstanding scientists: Hank, Tony and Charles.

Their goal is to build a fixed, secure space portal. Once it is successfully built, Tony will create armor suitable for activities on Venus for everyone to use.

As for the huge amount of money needed to build a base on Venus, it was entirely borne by the Illuminati's big moneymaker, Tony Stark. After all, the wealth owned by others pales in comparison and is only enough to make up for the loss. This is enough to show how important it is to have a rich man within the team.

"Why do we have to go so far? To Venus!" Captain Rogers was quite confused and didn't understand why Tony set up the headquarters in such a remote place.

"It's all down to someone's crazy plan." Tony glanced at Li Jie and said, "I need a lot of mineral resources, and if I do this on Earth, it will be easy to be discovered."

In response to Tony's statement, Li Jie shrugged: "You should be aware of what happened to the Brotherhood of the Shield later. You finally understand what an alien invasion is. Master Ancient One has taken me to see the rise and fall of countless cosmic civilizations. We are just preparing for a rainy day."

Charles, Rogers and others were not aware of the tacit understanding between Li Jie and Tony in private. But since they had formed the Illuminati, the organization strictly followed the principle of confidentiality, and some things had to be shared with other members.

"It's actually not that complicated. You all know the Brotherhood of the Shield, and you should also know that alien civilizations have visited the Earth many years ago, and not all of them are friendly. Not all alien creatures are as friendly as in the movies." Li Jie explained to Captain Rogers and Charles.

"So from the beginning, Tony and I planned to form an armed force. Humans have begun to move into space, and it is only a matter of time before they encounter alien civilizations. To some extent, some wars are almost inevitable. So we decided to build a space fleet ourselves."

This is part of Li Jie's follow-up plan for the Battle of New York. The technology product map sold within the system happens to contain real interstellar battleship design drawings! Of course, if Tony is to be responsible for production and manufacturing, he must find a suitable excuse for him.

The production of super weapons of this level cannot be completely concealed no matter where on Earth. Therefore, it is most appropriate to set up the base and production line on Venus. Moreover, mining minerals on Venus does not require too much consideration of ecological and environmental issues. Although the initial construction cost is high, once the production line is started, the actual production cost may be lower than on Earth.

After all, no one would ask you for taxes or other fees there. Li Jie had accumulated a large amount of reputation points just to redeem these things.

"In this case, wouldn't it be better to leave it to the governments of various countries to deal with? Weapons like star battleships." Although Rogers asked this question, from his expression, it can be seen that he did not want to pursue anything, but wanted to understand Li Jie and Tony's opinions.

"This issue is very complicated, Captain. I think you should understand politics very well." Li Jie said as he looked at Rogers. The other members could see from Rogers' revelations about the US military that this captain was no ordinary person.

"Weapons like interstellar battleships, no matter which country they fall into, are likely to foster their expansionist ambitions. I'm worried that we'll start a large-scale civil war before we even see aliens."

It should be clear that the saying "to resist foreign aggression, one must first stabilize the internal situation" is really popular in the market. Maybe in the future, some ambitious person will use this public opinion to provoke the Third World War. Those who are extremely obsessed with power have never been our kind. Li Jie's words clearly expressed his position.

As for power, we are not interested in it at all. What we really want to do is to build the ideal world in our minds. This is fundamentally different from those politicians who are scheming for power.

Hearing this, everyone agreed. Thus, the construction of Venus officially kicked off today. The Illuminati, as a major organization that can influence the world, also took its historic first step!

Although this is indeed the case, when everyone was excited, Tony suddenly poured cold water on them and said something that was not appropriate: "We

still have one thing to solve."

"What's the matter?" Li Jie couldn't understand what problem needed to be dealt with at this time.

"It's just a funding issue." Unexpectedly, Tony brought up something that no one had expected: "Hey, why are you all looking at me like that? Please, stop looking at me like that."

"Do you expect me to shoulder all the expenses of the Illuminati alone, including all the plans of that crazy guy? Please, that's billions or even tens of billions of dollars, and it may continue to increase! If Pepper finds out that I embezzled so much money, she will definitely resign!"

Oh! What you said is not right! Isn't Iron Man the one who takes the blame and pays the bill in the team? When did he become so smart and start to consider economic issues?

Li Jie was worried that the person he met this time was a fake - a fake Iron Man!

Chapter 35 Stealth Position Technology

Tony Stark's words are quite surprising because it is generally believed that he is the funder behind this organization. After all, the Illuminati was established at his initiative!

"Hey, hey, don't look at me like that! The Venus base project alone will cost me billions of dollars, not to mention the various subsequent expenses. Before, Pepper and I were already unhappy because of the new energy issue." Tony said as he patted his forehead.

"If I spent that much money without her consent and without giving her a clear explanation of where it was going, she would definitely quit. She is very important in my life!"

Does it sound like Tony is confessing his love to Pepper? Unfortunately, the heroine is not present at this time. However, Tony does think highly of Pepper.

Captain Rogers patted Tony on the shoulder after hearing what he said and said seriously, "You are right. This money should not be borne by you alone. My annual salary at SHIELD is about $400,000. After deducting daily expenses, I can donate it all. In addition, I recently signed a copyright income with a comic company. If there is any royalties, I can also take it out."

However, Captain Rogers's words raised his image. But obviously, this amount of money was far from enough to support the expenses of this plan. So Tony shook his head and said, "Captain, unless you can settle the lawsuit with the military and make them compensate you for your losses over the years, you can probably get more than 30 billion US dollars. With this money, we will have enough."

"But I have made my position clear. Regardless of the outcome of the lawsuit,

the compensation will be used for charity." It seems that Captain Rogers really did not intend to use the military compensation.

"If the Venus base is launched, the mineral resources should be able to meet its own needs, and even have a surplus, which can make up for the funding gap here in the later stage. Even if we really need it, we can extract gold from the core of Venus." Li Jie put forward his suggestion, and Tony agreed.

"Yes, that is true when the Venus base is fully operational. But that is a matter for the future. Moreover, a large amount of Venusian minerals flowing into the Earth market will cause the Earth's resource industry to collapse and may make millions of people unemployed. This is not the result we want to see. Therefore, the minerals of Venus can only meet our own needs to a large extent and are not suitable for resource trading on Earth."

"Although the Venus base can indeed achieve self-sufficiency in the later stage, before that, we need a huge initial investment. This amount of money is an astronomical figure, I think you are all aware of it."

Li Jie looked at Tony and wondered where the generous Iron Man had gone. Now he was haggling over a "small" few hundred billion dollars.

He called hundreds of billions of dollars "small". It seems that this friend is not very sensitive to money.

"Have you considered finding some other wealthy superheroes to join us, just like the rich guys like Nite Owl in the comics joining the Illuminati?" Li Jie had to bring up this idea because he really couldn't find any other solution.

He glanced at Charles and it seemed that the professor was also a rich man, as could be seen from the fact that Xavier's School for Gifted People was actually built by renovating his ancestral home.

"Of course not." Tony waved his hand, denying Li Jie's idea: "I haven't found the right person yet who can directly invest to help us solve our current predicament. You know, what we are going to do is top secret. Before confirming a person's true character, I can't easily bring someone in."

Li Jie once considered letting Harry participate, but after listening to Tony's words, he gave up the idea. Thinking about it carefully, it was not appropriate for

Harry to join. After all, the Osborne Group was not controlled by Harry alone, and large-scale fund transfers would likely cause him trouble.

So, the matter was dropped. Captain Rogers, who was watching quietly, couldn't help but sigh. Why did the current scene look so familiar? The dispute between Hawkeye and Deadpool over the $1 million debt was exactly the same: everyone was having a headache over a small sum of money.

Now that he has joined the Illuminati and has a world-class rich man by his side, he still cannot escape the trouble of financial problems. At this moment, Captain Rogers understood what "a penny can make a hero fail."

Charles and Hank were the only two people left who had not expressed their opinions, and everyone was waiting for their insights.

Hank pushed up his black-framed glasses and said, "In fact, Charles was very wealthy before. His family has accumulated wealth for him for a hundred years!"

When everyone heard this, they all became excited, thinking that this low-key bald guy might be the real invisible rich man?

"But..." Hank pushed his glasses again and changed the subject. "In recent years, Charles has almost exhausted his savings to maintain the operation of the mutant school. This mutant school is almost a charity. Even if students cannot afford the tuition, Charles will accept them."

So that's it! Charles is also a guy with a short of money now? The others present couldn't help but feel disappointed, because they originally thought that Charles could come up with a huge fortune.

"Yes, this school has almost cost me all my savings over the years. The operating funds in recent years have been mainly obtained from the sale of patents by Hank and I." Charles told the truth helplessly.

"Patent? What patent?" Tony immediately became interested when he heard the word patent. He knew that Hank and Charles should not be underestimated in scientific research. After all, they were able to create the first generation of invisible position technology in the 1960s. The patents in the hands of such technology giants might really help everyone get out of the current predicament.

"They are mainly patents for civilian technology, such as some additive liquids that can make internal combustion engines burn more completely, and some new structural designs for microcircuit boards." After Hank said this, Tony's interest instantly faded a lot.

These patents can indeed make money, but they are also easy to circumvent. If they are licensed at a low price, the actual profit will not be much. If you think about it carefully, the reason is obvious.

Charles' mutant school has always been the focus of the US government. If there were any weapons of mass destruction or similar black technology, the US government would have taken action long ago.

Hank, who didn't notice the subtle change on Tony's face, continued, "When the Osborn Group announced their limb regeneration medical plan, I had some ideas because Wolverine has a very strong self-recovery ability. I tried to extract the X gene from his body, hoping to develop a drug that can heal wounds quickly. Although it is unlikely to achieve limb regeneration, it has the effect of instant recovery for a large number of external injuries!"

Hank's words immediately captured everyone's heart. If his experiment was really successful, then the drug that could quickly heal trauma would be a remarkable invention.

Imagine those fatal traumatic incidents where patients often die from heavy bleeding on the way to the hospital. If such a drug exists, it will undoubtedly completely change the status quo of trauma treatment!

"What was the final result, Doctor?" Li Jie asked curiously about the final progress of Hank's research. In fact, everyone wanted to know.

"Well, it's only half successful." Hank shook his head and said, "Rapid wound healing agents have side effects. The principle is similar to the Osborn Group's limb regeneration plan, which relies on dividing cells to repair wounds. We know that there is an upper limit to the number of times human cells can divide. A large number of cell divisions will shorten lifespan."

"Also, the limb regeneration program requires an injection that can repair cells. My medicine cannot combine all of its functions into a single emergency medical kit." Hank said and shook his head again.

"So unless you are someone with super physical fitness like Captain Rogers, it is very dangerous for ordinary people to use this fast-healing potion, and they may die directly." It is really difficult to tell whether this is a matter of saving people or harming people.

"I tried to reduce the proportion of some of the ingredients in the drug to make it milder, and when I eliminated the terrible side effect, the effectiveness of the entire drug almost disappeared."

"So how much active ingredient is left in the drug now, Doctor? If the efficacy exceeds that of Yunnan Baiyao, then it actually still has certain practical value and commercial potential." Li Jie thought, as long as this drug still has some medicinal properties, even if the potency is not that strong, it can still bring benefits and make some money for the organization.

"Uh..." Hank looked a little embarrassed. "In fact, after eliminating all the side effects, the efficacy of this drug has been very poor. It has basically lost its ability to heal wounds."

Li Jie and the others were a little disappointed to hear Hank say this. Perhaps Hank didn't want everyone to think that he had accomplished nothing, so he quickly added: "In fact, there are still some uses left, such as promoting the rapid regeneration of damaged hair. I believe that if we continue to study it, there should be a breakthrough."

Although Tony was disappointed with Hank's words, he did not show it: "Okay, Doctor. Maybe we can collaborate on research in this area. Although I am not very proficient in the field of biology, but..." At this moment, Li Jie interrupted Tony's unfinished words.

"Wait!" Li Jie touched his chin and suddenly asked, "Doctor, what effect do you say your medicine has left?"

"The only thing left is to make the hair grow faster. What's wrong?" Dr. Hank looked at Li Jie puzzledly.

Li Jie clapped his hands vigorously several times, appearing extremely excited. Others looked at him puzzledly, not understanding why he was so happy.

After a while, Li Jie came back to his senses and saw the puzzled looks of the

other four people. He immediately understood: it turned out that these four people were standing at such a high position that they ignored many trivial matters in the lives of ordinary people. Perhaps they just ignored the point he was thinking of.

So, Li Jie couldn't help but smile and cleared his throat: "Everyone, please listen to me!" Li Jie successfully attracted everyone's attention.

"Do you know approximately how much US dollars the total amount of food aid provided to Africa by the United Nations and countries around the world each year is worth?" Li Jie seemed to suddenly throw out a seemingly irrelevant question.

"It's about 15 billion US dollars, if you mean pure food aid, not including other material support." Tony Stark raised his eyebrows and answered Li Jie's question, but he didn't understand why Li Jie suddenly mentioned this.

"Do you know how much the world spends on hair loss treatment each year?" Li Jie asked with a smile: "More than 20 billion US dollars!"

"In this world, people's pursuit of beauty is endless! During the Age of Discovery, Parisian noble women invented body-shaping garments that were like torture instruments in order to have slim waists!" Li Jie said with high spirits.

Chapter 36 Common Title

Chinese plastic surgery hospitals, Japanese skin care products! A bottle of SK2 skin cream can be sold for hundreds or even thousands of dollars, but how much does it actually cost? These high-profit products bring billions of dollars in revenue to their countries every year! Li Jie raised a finger and spoke seriously. The others around him had roughly understood what he meant.

However, hair loss, especially the baldness of middle-aged men, is a global problem! So far, apart from wigs and hair transplants, there seems to be no better solution. You have to know how desperate those middle-aged bald people are!

"Imagine, Tony Stark, if you start losing your hair and going bald in five years, can you imagine what you will look like then?" Tony heard Li Jie's description and immediately felt that if this really happened, it would be the end of the world! He was willing to spend billions of dollars to get his hair back.

"Captain Rogers! Suppose you suddenly start to become bald, can you still stand in front of the whole world with a smile, showing your beautiful blue eyes and smooth head?" Rogers touched his head reflexively. If such a day really came, he would probably have to wear a hood or baseball cap all the time.

"For some people, losing their hair means losing the whole world!" Li Jie said, but he suddenly noticed Professor X in front of him, and the atmosphere suddenly became a little awkward. "Ah, sorry, Professor, I'm not talking about you."

Professor Charles winked at Li Jie and said frankly: "Actually, you are right. When my last hair left me, I really felt that the whole world had given up on me! Believe me, I have also tried wearing wigs, but I just can't find one that suits my face shape."

Charles's humor defuses the awkward atmosphere just now. Li Jie smiled, turned to Dr. Hank and said, "So, Dr. Hank, your research is not actually failed! Instead,

you have found a new correct direction!"

"Continue to conduct in-depth research in this area! Find drugs that can truly control hair regeneration! You know, for many people in the world, saving baldness is even more important than saving the world!" Li Jie patted Dr. Hank on the shoulder.

Well, now the funding source is secured!

Well, the Illuminati is not only trying to save the earth, but also saving the image of countless middle-aged men. Li Jie suddenly felt that he and others were really doing a great deed.

Saving the world and saving hair loss are equally important!

Mindy McCready is a cute little girl who just turned twelve and is about to turn thirteen. She has long golden hair, a pair of big green eyes, and plump, moist lips that reveal charming dimples when they are slightly raised.

No matter from which angle you look at her, Mindy is an impeccable little angel. Her facial features are particularly delicate, especially her charming dimples, which add a lot of points to her.

Mindy shines like a star in Class 3, Grade 6, at Benjamin Private Elementary School on the Upper East Side of Manhattan, New York City.

"Mindy, can you explain to us the correct solution to this problem?" In the math class, Ms. Emma, who is both the class teacher and the math teacher, kindly asked Mindy to stand up and answer the question.

Mindy transferred here last year, and teacher Emma fell in love with this very likable girl. Although Mindy's grades were not good when she first came, she later caught up and became the top student in the class. (This was due to Peter Parker and Li Jie taking turns to tutor her, and Mindy herself was also very smart.)

Mindy raised her lips, squinted her eyes, and quickly wrote down the answer and steps to this simple math problem on the blackboard. "Well done, let's applaud Mindy." Seeing Mindy's answer, Teacher Emma was the first to applaud.

Following her lead, the whole class applauded towards the stage. Mindy smiled and squinted her eyes at everyone, seemingly enjoying the moment, but in her heart she silently said, "Idiot."

In the physical education class, the physical education teacher arranged today's event to be vaulting horse, which aims to train students' jumping ability and flexibility.

"Before vaulting, everyone must warm up thoroughly, and it's best to stretch your muscles and bones. I hope a student can show everyone the correct vaulting horse demonstration in a while." The physical education teacher glanced at the students around him.

"Mindy, please show us the correct vaulting horse movements." The physical education teacher called Mindy's name. Mindy smiled and squinted her eyes again. She adjusted the height of the vaulting horse to the limit that children of this age can jump over.

Mindy started running and flew like a gust of wind. She jumped up and used her arms to support herself on the pommel horse. She jumped over the pommel horse with great grace. Even the PE teacher couldn't help but praise her: "Perfect, Mindy. After systematic training, you will be able to compete in the Olympics!"

The PE teacher led the applause as he spoke, and the whole class followed suit. Mindy smiled with dimples, squinting her eyes at everyone, looking very happy. Once again, she whispered in her heart: "Idiot."

In the craft class, Mindy used simple PVC sheets and added some electronic components to make a simple information exchange processing card, while other students' works were mostly origami or models.

Compared with the work done by Mindy, it was completely on two levels. Mindy once again won the teacher's praise. She smiled and squinted her eyes again, but no one knew that she repeated in her heart: "Stupid!"

Whether it is history, English, or any other subject, there is no subject that Mindy is not good at. She always gets various praises from teachers.

Although Mindy is well-liked by the teacher, it does not mean that she can win

the love of the whole class. Next to the locker in the corridor, Mindy's classmates, two little girls, are whispering about her.

"I really hate her! Why does she have to steal other people's limelight?" A little girl with long chestnut hair complained unhappily. Before Mindy came, she was the top student in the class.

After Mindy came, everyone was attracted by her. Not only was she good at studying, but she was also good at sports, as if she was an all-round player.

"Why do all the teachers only have eyes for her?" The chestnut-haired girl seemed a little indignant, and this emotion was completely understandable.

The short-haired girl next to her also agreed: "That's right, why is she here? Since she is so smart, why doesn't she go to those schools or classes set up for young geniuses?" The short-haired girl was also full of complaints.

"She's here to show off? Showing off from head to toe? And I heard she's dating an adult outside!"

It is said that women, regardless of age, love gossip. Upon hearing this, the blonde girl immediately became interested in the topic.

The two little girls huddled together and whispered about Mindy's various shortcomings, while also gossiping about whether she was actually dating an adult outside of school.

While they were chatting, they didn't notice that the person they were talking about - Mindy had already come to the locker and was about to pack up and go home. Mindy secretly heard their discussion and couldn't help but roll her eyes and secretly spit in her heart: "Idiot!"

Mindy deliberately slammed the locker door shut, and the loud noise startled the two little girls who were concentrating on gossiping. Mindy glared at them fiercely.

You know, Mindy used to be a violent lolita "Hit-Girl" who killed people and had seen blood. Once she got really angry, she was full of murderous intent. Just by glaring at them, the two little girls were frightened and stunned.

Mindy wanted to threaten them with a few more harsh words, but when she saw that they were about to cry, she just said silently in her heart: "Idiot!"

Perhaps in Mindy's opinion, "idiot" is the most appropriate understanding of this school. Frank helped to find this school. Frank, Spider-Man and Nightcrawler all agreed that Mindy needed a normal childhood and prohibited her from participating in any form of violent activities. Mindy's father Damon finally agreed to this plan.

Strictly speaking, Mindy now has two dads. Frank treats Mindy as his own daughter, while Nightcrawler and Spider-Man are more like her brothers.

Although Mindy was happy that so many people cared about her, she had no interest in going to school. Come on, I'm Hit-Girl! The famous Hit-Girl! And now I have to sit in a classroom and study with a bunch of other kids?

At school, Mindy simply couldn't find common ground with those real 12- or 13-year-olds. This was closely related to her upbringing. In addition, she now spent most of her time with the Night Watch team.

The world she saw and heard was far beyond the understanding of those children. While other children were still obsessed with "My Little Pony" and "The Powerpuff Girls", Mindy saw real vampire wars, the raging war in Eastern Europe, the strange scenes in hell, and the manipulation behind the New York mayoral election.

The information she was exposed to revealed another side of the world, which made it difficult for Mindy to communicate with those children.

Walking out of the school, Mindy glanced back and cursed under her breath: "Idiot!"

Usually Damon or Frank is responsible for taking Mindy to and from school, but if they are busy, Mindy can go to and from school alone.

Other parents might not feel comfortable letting a pretty girl of twelve or thirteen go home alone. After all, the United States is a region with a high incidence of juvenile crime in the world.

But for Mindy, if an ignorant criminal crosses her path, she can only wish for the

best. Hit-Girl has killed perverts more than once.

Mindy was particularly angry today and decided to go for a stroll and find someone who was blind to vent her anger on. It was obviously inappropriate to teach two twelve-year-old girls a lesson in school.

So Mindy decided to go to a less safe place and find some guys to teach them a lesson. She planned to go to a comic book store in Brooklyn first. Since Marvel's comics were published, Mindy has been buying and collecting them, especially those limited edition cover comics released by different sales channels.

Many comic book lovers have the habit of collecting different cover versions, and Mindy is no exception. She plans to go to the comic book store in Brooklyn to look for comics with limited cover versions.

She got off the bus and walked through many dark and narrow alleys around Brooklyn, deliberately choosing those dangerous areas to walk.

As she was walking through the alleys, the back of a little girl of her age caught her attention. Due to the distance, Mindy couldn't see the girl's face clearly, but from the outline, she should be a beauty.

Mindy saw her talking to an adult, who seemed to agree to something, and then the two of them walked into a dark box together.

For some reason, this incident seemed to arouse Mindy's curiosity, and almost involuntarily, she followed the two people into the dark alley.

Chapter 37 Talent

Mingdy followed the girl, who was about 12 or 13 years old, and a man in his 35s or 36s into a dark and narrow alley. The girl had long chestnut hair, a delicate face dotted with a few freckles and a faint blush, and a high nose bridge and upturned eyes that revealed a stubbornness.

The man following closely behind him looked to be about 35 or 36 years old, with tattoos all over his neck and exposed arms, giving him a fierce aura. There was also a broken corner at the corner of his eyebrow, which was obviously an old scar, probably caused by a fight. At first glance, this man was obviously a common gangster in Brooklyn.

As the pair went deeper and deeper into the alley, Mindy began to feel uneasy. She probably guessed what the girl was up to - having lived in the underworld for a long time and dealing with all kinds of bad people, Mindy knew that a girl in this situation would probably be forced to do some shady work.

Mentioning the word "child prostitute" always makes people feel very heavy. Because of various life pressures or being controlled by gangs, these girls who have lost their ability to resist are forced to participate in such business. In the United States, especially in places like New York, the problem of child prostitution is particularly serious. The market demand is huge, and it can even be said that supply exceeds demand. Mindy naturally hates this kind of bad behavior. She has personally dealt with many perverts who have had improper thoughts about her.

However, regardless of personal wishes, the phenomenon of child prostitution still exists in reality. The reason behind this is the huge market demand and the higher fees charged by child prostitutes compared to ordinary prostitutes, which makes many underground snakeheads and gangster pimps take risks to control young girls.

At this moment, Mindy has pulled out a butterfly knife hidden in her boots. "It

seems I need to get rid of him." She thought to herself. Don't get me wrong, this Hit-Girl is definitely brave enough to kill people. For her, killing is as easy and natural as breathing.

From the moment she understood the meaning of killing, her hands were already stained with blood. If she hadn't met Li Jie, she might still be fighting gangs and eliminating scum with Big Daddy in the underground world of New York. In Mindy's eyes, some people's lives have no meaning and value.

In terms of ruthlessness and decisiveness, this 13-year-old girl is almost as good as Frank, or even better. Frank always carries a grenade that is linked to his life and death, ready to use it to commit suicide when everything comes to an end. He believes that the guilty should die, and he always sticks to this belief and never wavers in his actions. He himself is also on his death list.

However, Mindy never thought about such things. For her, killing is as common as eating and sleeping, it just depends on whether she is willing to do it. In the past year, under the protection of Li Jie, Peter and Frank, Mindy has lived the life of an ordinary girl. But this does not mean that Mindy has completely degenerated from the role of Hit-Girl to an ordinary little girl. On the contrary, this year is the time when she grows the fastest, and she has made more rapid progress than ever before.

Mike, a former member of the SWAT team, is her firearms instructor. Mike is proficient in everything from firearms assembly, disassembly, and maintenance to various usage methods and precision shooting skills, including various urban combat and command techniques.

Big Daddy Damon is not only Mindy's father, but also her investigation and criminal investigation teacher. He taught her tracking and counter-detection skills, as well as various professional knowledge such as complex clues, traces, and reasoning. Mindy finds it easy to learn.

Frank serves as Mindy's fighting coach and heavy weapons instructor. He teaches her everything he knows, from individual bombs to integrated fire control systems, and even the driving techniques of armed helicopters and tanks, as well as various war experiences gained from actual battlefields.

Li Jie taught Mindy martial arts, replacing Damon in teaching her basic grappling techniques. Li Jie taught Mindy all his sword techniques, footwork,

hidden weapons, and palm techniques, although he himself had not figured out some of the moves and was not suitable to teach Mindy, as martial arts training requires a long period of accumulation, but Mindy showed extraordinary talent.

Peter Parker is responsible for training Mindy's reaction speed and agility. Guided by her spider sense, he ensures that Mindy's training is of moderate intensity while ensuring that she will not be harmed during the training.

In addition, Mindy also learned hacking techniques and electronic device making skills from Zeng Chu; and learned applied knowledge of biochemistry from Barbara.

In addition to the above visible skills, Mingdy also learned a lot of things invisibly, including the various issues discussed by Li Jie and other team members, their perspectives on things and their methods of solving problems. All of this quietly influenced Mingdy, allowing her to gradually form a more grand and solid world view, outlook on life and values.

Mindy, who is at the best stage of absorbing knowledge, absorbs these nutrients like a sponge. In her mind, the superheroes in the Night Watch are her role models, and she longs to become a member of this team one day.

In order to achieve this goal, she must equip herself better and stay in fighting shape at all times. Today, Mindy has unknowingly grown into a more ferocious and terrifying little loli killer.

She is now just restrained by people like Li Jie and Frank, and has no space to show her abilities. Once Hit-Girl really matures and becomes powerful, the whole world will probably be amazed at her abilities and her terror. Maybe by that time, people will no longer use "Hit-Girl" to describe her, and the name "Grim Reaper" may be more suitable for her.

...

The adult man in the alley didn't realize that he had become the target of a terrifying lolita. He was just a gangster in Brooklyn who made a living by selling drugs. Although he himself didn't take drugs, he had a more twisted habit.

He is a crazy pedophile. He has no interest in adult women, but only in little girls. Therefore, he has done many illegal things. It is not easy to find children.

Sometimes, in order to satisfy his twisted desires, he will act without any bottom line. As for the specific details of those things, it seems unnecessary to elaborate.

One day, he had just completed a big deal when he met this little girl on the street. She was so beautiful, so beautiful! She was much more beautiful than any he had ever met before! Almost instantly, he had an impulse, even a desire to commit a crime.

However, surprisingly, the little girl actually took the initiative to approach him and said, "Are you saying we can make a deal?" The drug dealer immediately understood the identity of the little girl in front of him.

However, this is better. A problem that can be solved with money is always better than causing a loss of life, especially when he has just earned a large sum of money from drugs.

The girl suggested that he go to the alley behind to make the deal. If it was an adult woman, the drug dealer would probably not agree. In Brooklyn, alleys mean danger and should be avoided as much as possible even during the day. But because the other party was a little girl, the drug dealer lowered his guard. He followed the girl to the alley in the back street.

He said impatiently: "Right here! Right here! Look, how much money do you need, kid! Here, I have $1000, all yours!" As he said that, the drug dealer took out a stack of $1000 in cash from his shirt pocket, stuffed it into the little girl's shirt pocket, and touched her smooth little face.

The little girl glanced at the drug dealer's bulging shirt pocket, which obviously contained much more than $1000. Her eyes flashed with an imperceptible light.

She smiled and replied in English with a Mexican accent, "Of course we can do it here." As she spoke, she seemed to be about to take off her clothes. At this time, the drug dealer had already hurriedly started to unbutton his coat.

At this critical moment, a very light "swoosh" sound came from a distance. It was the sound of a flying knife cutting through the air. Mindy took action!

As mentioned before, she never minded getting rid of a few villains for the world, and she used to do so often. Li Jie taught her the flying knife technique, and after a year of practice, Mindy had mastered a fairly high level of skills.

Everyone in the team knew that Mindy carried a weapon, but no one asked about it, as long as she didn't cause trouble at school. After all, no one was conservative, and today's society is not an ideal society where people leave their doors unlocked at night. Girls do need some self-defense weapons.

Mindy's flying knife went straight to the man's throat. If it was Li Jie who was there, he would probably choose to knock the drug dealer unconscious first, then take the little girl away and deal with the drug dealer. However, Mindy didn't care about that. If she had to worry about such a small matter, she wouldn't be Hit-Girl! Although the sound of the flying knife was weak, it was really deadly and fierce!

The drug dealer didn't notice anything unusual at the moment, he was completely dizzy. The girl with chestnut hair suddenly contracted her pupils, she heard the sound of the flying knife!

Could this be a trap? The girl had this ominous premonition in her heart. Without hesitation, she punched the drug dealer in the chest.

How strong can a little girl's fist be? Many people may underestimate it, but at certain moments, it can be fatal! Just like the drug dealer who was attacked at this moment had almost no chance to resist, and was hit directly in the heart by the little girl's fist. What followed was a piercing pain, as if a sharp knife pierced through the heart.

The girl's face was grim, and she ignored the drug dealer's final screams as he was dying. Two steel claws grew from the inside of her palm on her left fist. If Li Jie was here, he would definitely recognize what it was quickly.

This is a pair of adamantium claws that are exactly the same as Wolverine's. The girl killed the drug dealer before the knife reached him, and took all the remaining US dollars from his chest.

This money was her goal. She had been following this guy for days and knew that he would have about $3 in cash today. She needed money and knew what these perverts loved.

So she set up this trap, luring the drug dealer into the deep alley, intending to subdue him quietly and take away the money. At first, she did not intend to kill anyone, because she was not interested in killing people, and even felt disgusted.

However, when threatened, the girl did not mind showing her steel claws.

Chapter 38 Very Skilled

The girl's movements were smooth and natural, and she finished them in one go. Mindy had just thrown the dart when the girl finished all the movements. This surprised Mindy, who muttered to herself, "What on earth is going on?"

When the dart pierced deeply into the drug dealer's body, he had actually been dead for a long time. At this time, the girl had already rushed towards Mindy along the trajectory of the dart.

The girl's face looked angry: "These nasty guys are following us again!" She thought angrily in her heart, and at the same time, steel claws made of adamantium appeared on her hands.

The structure of her steel claws is different from Logan's. Logan has three steel claws located at the base of his fingers. However, this girl only has two steel claws, one on each side of the base of her fingers, and there is no claw at the base of the middle finger.

"Oh my god! What the hell is this girl doing?" Seeing the girl rushing towards her with steel claws, Mindy couldn't help but curse in a low voice. But Mindy didn't just stand there and wait for someone to chop her. She wore a mechanical arm armor designed for her by Spider-Man on her wrist. When it was put away on weekdays, it looked like a decorative bracelet worn by a little girl. However, once Mindy needed to use it, the entire mechanical arm armor could be quickly opened.

This was such an emergency moment! Mindy's mechanical arm armor instantly popped open, and just as the girl was about to rush to her hiding place, Mindy immediately launched two spider webs from the mechanical arm armor, intending to bind the girl with the spider webs.

However, the girl wielded her sharp steel claws and easily tore the spider web apart. Her movements were like a wolf hunting its prey. In an instant, she leaped

out and pounced on Mindy.

It was not until then that she saw clearly the Mindy hiding behind the trash can - a little girl with a school backpack, sneakers, and pigtails, about her age.

The girl was confused for a moment, as if she had made a mistake. Mindy seized the opportunity of her hesitation and, not wanting to hurt the girl, she fired another spider web to trap her.

Because she was distracted for a moment, the girl failed to avoid the spider web attack and was tied up tightly and fell from the air.

"You're not one of them?" the girl asked doubtfully.

"What? What about their people?" Mindy didn't understand what the girl was saying at all. However, the girl was relieved to hear Mindy's answer.

"I just tried to save you, even though it didn't look like you needed my help. Then why did you attack me?" Mindy glanced at the drug dealer's body not far away.

The girl was surprised at Mindy's calmness. A thirteen-year-old girl was not panicked at all when facing the corpse. Instead, she was calm. Even though she was only thirteen years old and she was the one who killed the man. She apologized and said, "I'm sorry, I'm running away from some people. They are chasing me."

Mindy saw the steel claws that the girl had just extended and immediately understood something.

"Can I stand up first?" The girl pointed to the spider silk that bound her.

Mindy nodded, took out the butterfly knife she carried with her and cut the spider silk. The girl stood up and said gratefully, "Thank you, thank you for wanting to help me anyway."

"It's nothing. I don't have any good feelings towards bad guys. Even if it wasn't you today, I would definitely find a way to deal with that kind of bad guy if I met him." Mindy shrugged, not hiding her attitude towards scum.

Because at that moment, when she and the girl's eyes met, she understood: they were the same kind of people. Mindy and the girl looked at each other, and then they both burst out laughing.

Now, Mindy feels like she might just be able to make a real friend instead of those stupid classmates at school!

"My name is Mindy, what's yours?" Mindy extended her hand first.

"Hello, Mindy, you can call me Laura!" The girl named Laura also responded with a smile and stretched out her hand.

The two beautiful and lovely girls established their friendship at this moment, and the witness of this friendship was the drug dealer who died with a horrified face. Perhaps this also implies that this friendship is destined to be extraordinary.

When the two little hands were tightly clasped together, the two equally fierce little lolis stood side by side for the first time.

Laura and Mindy, two equally beautiful and lovely little girls met unexpectedly. Their first acquaintance was like a reunion of old friends, and they became friends through martial arts.

When the two looked at each other, they could feel the similarities in each other, as if they had a telepathic connection. The two little girls felt close to each other with just one eye contact.

"What are you going to do with this guy?" Mindy pointed at the body of the drug dealer. He died miserably, killed by Laura with one claw, and he had no chance to resist at all.

Laura frowned, initially she had no intention of killing anyone, because killing people would often bring a lot of trouble, and might even attract the attention of those who were tracking her.

Mindy looked at Laura's expression and knew that the girl might not know how to deal with the situation. Although Laura seemed to be very experienced in killing people, she was obviously not good at dealing with the aftermath.

"It seems that you don't know how to deal with this problem, right?" Mindy put

her hands on Laura's shoulders and advised her earnestly: "Before taking action, the first thing to consider is how to deal with the troubles that may arise later, otherwise don't act rashly. Do you understand, little girl? Come on, help me. We have to get rid of this guy. It's not uncommon for Brooklyn to suddenly lose a drug dealer. As long as his body is not found, no one will care about this matter. Even the police are reluctant to deal with such matters."

Laura looked at Mindy in confusion, as the latter seemed to be handling the situation very expertly.

Mindy was indeed adept at this sort of thing, and she asked Laura to help her lift the man's body and began walking deeper into the alley.

"This is a fungus that speeds up the decay of corpses." Mindy said as she took out a dangerous-looking object from her backpack. This was actually a byproduct of Barbara's research on the Venom symbiote.

Since it only decomposes meat naturally after it has lost its vital energy, it has little practical use. However, Mindy requested some, and she would secretly sprinkle some of it on the meat whenever she couldn't swallow the disgusting hamburger lunch provided by school.

Fungi can help her "eat" those things quickly and quietly, so that she won't be forced to eat disgusting food. Now her taste has been cultivated by Li Jie to be very picky.

Laura watched as Mindy deftly stripped the man of his clothes and made more cuts on his body. Then, she easily sprinkled the fungus on the wounds, and as if by magic, the parts that came into contact with the fungus quickly rotted away, visible to the naked eye.

After finishing, Mindy clapped her hands and said, "Okay, it will only take about twenty minutes for this body to be nothing but a pile of bones." Laura looked at Mindy in shock. It seemed that this was not the first time she had dealt with such a thing.

"Oh, and we have to burn this guy's clothes." Mindy said to herself, gathering all the drug dealer's clothes together, and then activated the laser built into her robotic arm armor. She adjusted the laser power and used the heat generated to ignite all the clothes. After finishing, Mindy seemed to have completed a trivial

task: "Okay, now all we have to do is wait."

"Do you do this often?" Laura looked at Mindy in disbelief. She had never seen any girl treat the life and death of others so calmly and handle the aftermath so orderly.

"Occasionally." Mindy answered nonchalantly. She closed the lid of the trash can and even sat on it without fear of getting dirty. "What? Do you regret participating in this now? Or do you think I handled it wrong?"

“No, that’s not the case.” Laura smiled and jumped onto the trash can and sat next to Mindy. “It’s just that you are the most different girl I have ever met. Aren’t you afraid of death?”

"Why should you be afraid?" Mindy shrugged nonchalantly. "Everyone's final destination is death, no one can escape it. Do you feel guilty for killing a drug dealer, Laura?"

"I..." Laura seemed to be hesitant to speak, not knowing how to respond to this matter. The suffering and training she had endured in the past made her particularly resistant to killing, and she was unwilling to show her edge easily unless it was necessary.

"Come on, this guy is a damn bastard. People like him will die sooner or later, and they will only bring disaster to the world if they live! There is nothing to feel guilty about! Sometimes, necessary death is to maintain world peace." Mindy stretched out her index finger and shook it in front of Laura, quoting her family: "This is what my family always said."

The family that Mindy mentioned refers to the members of the Night Watch, among whom there are far more crazy people than normal people. Their thoughts are often very dangerous, including Li Jie. Except for Peter Parker, who can be barely called harmless, it is hard to say about others.

"Ah?" Laura was a little confused. Although she had no family, she intuitively felt that what Mindy mentioned did not seem to be the outlook on life that ordinary people would teach her.

"You are a mutant, right?" Mindy pointed at Laura's hand. When she stretched out her claws just now, she pierced the skin at the base of her finger and bled a

lot, but now the wound has healed, only the blood is still there.

Laura's pupils shrank slightly when she heard Mindy say this. Mindy looked at the blood on Laura's hand and continued, "Are you from Xavier's School for Gifted People?"

"What?" Laura didn't quite understand what Mindy was talking about. She had just fled to the United States from Mexico, and the doctor who saved her told her that she could find asylum in New York. But Laura didn't know where in New York she could be protected.

"You don't have to hide anything. I have no prejudice against mutants. I know that Xavier's School for Gifted People has been disbanded, and all mutant students should go home." Mindy thought Laura was surprised because her mutant identity was exposed, so she explained, "But why are you here?"

Could it be that the asylum the doctor was talking about was the mutant school in New York? But it sounded like the school no longer existed. Laura was a little disappointed and said, "I never had a home."

Mindy glanced at Laura and suddenly didn't know how to respond. The atmosphere became quite awkward. The only thing left was the drug dealer's body, which was about to be completely devoured by the fungus.

Chapter 39 Alley

The two little girls watched the drug dealer's body gradually disappear, leaving only a pile of bones. Mindy jumped down from the trash can and said to Laura, "Your nails seem very sharp. Can you help me chop these bones into pieces?" Laura nodded and stretched out her adamantium claws again, cutting all the remaining bones into powder as easily as cutting tofu. Mindy threw the remaining bones into the sewer, and in this way, all traces of the drug dealer in the world were completely cleaned up. They did it quietly and thoroughly. Who would have thought that it was done by two girls who were only thirteen years old?

"You need this money to support your life now, right?" Mindy asked Laura after she finished the process, remembering the cash Laura had just taken from the drug dealer.

"Yes." Laura nodded in agreement.

"But you're only thirteen years old. Holding a large amount of cash will attract other people's attention, especially if you don't have any family." Mindy looked at Laura worriedly, and her concern seemed sincere and deep.

Sometimes interpersonal relationships are so wonderful that sometimes you can have a strong liking for each other when you first meet. Especially when two people keep a secret together, this liking will deepen. Although the secret that Mindy and Laura kept was quite horrifying - they teamed up to kill a drug dealer and destroyed his body, in any case, it was a shared secret between them. At a certain moment, Mindy had already regarded Laura as a friend, otherwise she would not help her destroy the body; similarly, Laura also regarded Mindy as a friend, otherwise she would not accept Mindy's help. The two little girls stood face to face.

"Where do you live now?" Mindy put on her backpack and took Laura's hand and left the alley.

"An abandoned factory warehouse." Laura did not hide it. She instinctively felt that Mindy was trustworthy.

"That's not good, wait a minute." Mindy muttered, leaving the alley and entering a convenience store on the side of the road. After a while, she came out with a bottle of mineral water.

"Come here, give me your hand." Mindy unscrewed the cap of the mineral water bottle, and Laura handed over her blood-stained little hand. Mindy carefully washed the blood off Laura's hand with water from the bottle.

"It's not safe to live here, and it's not safe with so much cash. You need to find a new shelter and can't always live this way. Tempting drug dealers and getting involved in criminal activities will sooner or later bring you trouble, especially when you are alone." Mindy muttered to herself as she helped Laura wash her hands.

Laura stared at Mindy with wide eyes. The girl in front of her with twin ponytails and blonde hair was smiling. Although they had only known each other for an hour, they felt as close as close friends who grew up together.

"Don't giggle." Mindy finished the mineral water, threw the empty bottle into the trash can, then lowered her head and said to Laura: "I think I can help you find a place to live. It's much better than living in that shabby place. If you trust me."

"Of course I trust you," Laura replied with a smile, while squeezing Mindy's hand.

Mindy squeezed Laura's hand and said, "Well, although no one has lived there for a while, I think it should be okay. Let's go! I'll take you there now."

Mindy held Laura's hand and walked forward, and their figures gradually disappeared at the end of the street.

There is a special military court in the Pentagon in Washington, but it is not used very often. Although it is indeed a military court, the US military does not usually use this court in the Pentagon to try cases because it mainly targets senior generals within the military.

The United States has not tried officers above the rank of brigadier general for a

long time. After all, this is not wartime. During wartime, generals sometimes stood trial in court for arbitrary decisions or some misconduct. However, in peacetime, many things are more relaxed. Unless there is an irreparable major mistake, senior generals are usually not sent to military courts. After all, it is really not a good look for the military.

Admiral Ross, who presided over the military trial, remembered that it had been nearly ten years since he had seen a brigadier general-level officer being brought to a military court.

However, this time, the US government and military convened several prestigious generals in the military to form a review team and activated the military court in the Pentagon because some of them had committed a serious mistake that neither the government nor the military could tolerate.

It can even be said that in any era, the mistake he made would have been enough to send him to the guillotine, because he mobilized a troop without the authorization of Congress and the military high command.

Nearly 300 fully armed soldiers carrying weapons of mass destruction were sent to New York by a major general named Stryker to carry out a mission: destroy the mutant school. And it was Stryker himself who ordered the deployment of the troops.

Fortunately for everyone, Charles disbanded Xavier School for Gifted People ahead of schedule, which left Stryker empty-handed. When he arrived, he was greeted by an empty campus, where everything inside had been cleared out and all the information had been destroyed.

Stryker was furious that he couldn't even find any information about the students on campus.

However, others were relieved. If the mutant school was still operating normally at the time, it is foreseeable that Stryker would have a fierce conflict with the X-Men.

No one can predict what kind of results and aftershocks this conflict will bring. Imagine that three hundred elite soldiers armed with heavy weapons encounter equally well-trained X-Men.

It is almost needless to think that there will be a fierce confrontation between the two sides. The scene is comparable to a small war!

If such a small-scale war happened in New York, it would be terrifying to think about it. The common people didn't care about the cause and effect of the matter. They only knew that a general led a group of soldiers to raid a mutant school.

What kind of political storm will this stir up? How will Congress and the White House explain all this to the public? Should they just say that this was caused by a soldier acting on his own initiative?

Haha! If you really say that, the whole United States will be in a panic. People will think that Congress and the White House can no longer control the military. Once such a thing is exposed, it will be enough to force the entire Congress to reorganize and may even shake the presidency.

Moreover, the reason why the general attacked the mutant school cannot be made public, because he came to retaliate because his own mutant experimental base was destroyed. How can such a reason be given? If the truth is exposed, the situation faced by the military and the government may become more serious.

Therefore, assuming that the mutant school had not been disbanded, Charles and others were still in the school, and a war eventually broke out between the two sides, then the US government and military, who were left to clean up the mess, had only one way to go.

That is to do everything possible to cover up everything Stryker did and keep him! This has nothing to do with right or wrong, nor does it matter whether you like it or not. Maybe the government will settle accounts in the future, but there is no choice at the moment. This is the complexity of politics. It is precisely because Stryker knows this that he will mobilize the army without scruples.

Unfortunately, he did not expect Charles' determination. Professor X's thinking was more far-reaching than his. He hoped to avoid further escalation of the conflict between mutants and ordinary people. Once Magneto's plan was launched, the mutant school would become a sitting duck.

If Charles did not join Magneto's camp, he actually had only one choice - to give up all his previous efforts and let his years of hard work go to waste.

All of this is within the plan of Magneto Eric. If he wants to weaken Professor X's influence in the mutant community, his first priority is to eradicate the school.

It can be said that the whole incident is like a tightly linked chain. In this complicated game of power, although Stryker, as a US military general, is outstanding, he is ultimately not as good as Magneto and Professor X.

Therefore, all his plans failed, whether it was pushing the bill or later attempting to attack the mutant school. He was defeated and now he has to stand trial in this military court.

"The defendant, Major General Stryker, is charged with arbitrarily mobilizing troops on the evening of May 10th. Does the defendant plead guilty?" General Ross read out the charges concisely.

Unauthorized mobilization of troops is a serious crime, and Congress, the White House, and the Pentagon are determined to severely punish Stryker, even if someone pleads for mercy. This is related to the fundamental power and ruling power of the country.

So this trial was more like a formality, to warn other generals what should and should not be done.

Stryker lowered his head and said nothing, neither denying nor refuting. He knew that his defense was meaningless, and he must have already reached a conclusion internally.

As expected, General Ross did not pay attention to Stryker's silence and continued: "In view of the defendant's tacit admission of guilt, this court, on behalf of the Pentagon and Congress, rules as follows."

"The defendant Stryker is guilty of treason, terrorism, incitement and inhumane experiments..." General Ross read out the documents one by one. Stryker didn't care about it at all because he knew that all this was no longer important.

"This court declares that former U.S. Army Major General Stryker has been found guilty. You will be executed by injection at 3:00 pm today at the Pentagon Military Court!"

After General Ross finished speaking, he glanced at his watch. It was 2:45 p.m., leaving only 15 minutes to prepare for the execution. Congress, the White House, and the military were determined to deal with Stryker's mistake quickly, severely, and strictly.

He waved his hand to signal the personnel who had been on standby to begin preparations.

"Is that really the case?" Stryker thought to himself. This was the worst possible outcome he had anticipated. As a soldier, Stryker was not afraid of death, but he did not want to die like a prisoner.

When Stryker was tied to the injection bed, his former colleagues watched quietly not far away. They saw the executioner take out the injection needle from the briefcase and prepare it until the liquid medicine was injected into Stryker's vein. Then, they watched Stryker's heart stop beating. Everything went smoothly. Until the body carrier took Stryker's body away, General Ross watched Stryker's body leave, and then sighed softly, and I don't know what he was sighing about.

……

Death by injection is not actually painful, it is just like a shot of sedative. You will quickly fall into a coma, and then your heart and breathing will stop. During this process, you will not feel any pain.

Chapter 40 New Friends

Similar to Stryker, he did not feel the pain of death at all. He just felt like he had slept for a while and then woke up! Stryker suddenly opened his eyes and stood in front of him was a man in a white coat, who looked like a professor or a doctor.

The doctor smiled and said to him, "You woke up faster than I expected." As he spoke, he stretched out his hand, as if he wanted to shake hands with Stryker.

Stryker frowned and looked at the doctor, and asked, "Who are you? Where is this place? I remember I was dead!"

The doctor suddenly realized something, as if he had not yet introduced himself. He still smiled and said, "General Stryker, please don't panic. My father and you are old acquaintances. If you still remember your old boss, Professor Trask, who shares the same interests as you."

For Stryker, the name Trask couldn't be more familiar. This man was his former boss and the guy who first promoted the X-weapon program.

As early as when Stryker had just graduated from the military academy and was a major, he was transferred to serve under this gentleman. That was decades ago, and the number of mutants at that time was far less than it is today. Perhaps it is also possible that the detection equipment at that time was not advanced enough, so not so many mutants were found.

Tresco was originally a Nazi scientist. After the end of World War II, many scientific and technological achievements of the Nazi period were divided up by the Allies, including many scientists with outstanding scientific talents.

These scientists were very lucky. Their brains were valuable assets to any country. Therefore, almost no scientist was brought to the International War Crimes Tribunal after the war. They all escaped this fate, even though they may

have conducted many inhumane experiments before.

Trasko is one of them. He once worked for the Nazis and participated in the Nazi's X-weapon program. He is also one of the founders of the current US X-weapon program. The US military saw the feasibility of the X-weapon program and its original purpose was to use mutant genes to strengthen ordinary soldiers.

Later, the plan was adjusted to consider designing weapons that could control mutants. Trasco once proposed a rather radical idea - [Sentinel Project]. He wanted to collect various mutant gene samples and try to fuse these mutant genes together. Then he would create a machine that could fight mutants comprehensively. This machine would not only be useful against mutants, but also against the enemies of the US military.

Tresco's plan was backed by the U.S. military, received a large amount of funding, and even got to observe up close how powerful mutants fought.

Because in the 1955s, when SHIELD was just established, it formed a team with the tacit approval of the US military - the X-Men. It was not until that SHIELD officially became independent. In the s, the military still had a profound influence on SHIELD. At that time, SHIELD was not a completely autonomous organization like it is now.

The X-Men formed by SHIELD provided Trisco with a large amount of experimental data and materials, and the Sentinel Project was close to success. However, at some point, the young Magneto discovered and recognized Trisco.

Magneto Eric will never forget what Trisko looked like, because Trisko was one of his enemies back then. He can't forget the days and nights he spent in the concentration camp, and the days when he was used as a guinea pig on the experimental table!

Eric, who was still an X-Man at the time, wanted to seek revenge on Trisco, but Charles stopped him. After learning the full picture of the matter, Charles suggested that Eric expose Trisco by exposing him.

Because Trisko is not just a Nazi scientist, he is also a high-ranking member of Hydra. The government may tolerate a Nazi scientist turning to work for the government, but it cannot tolerate the high-ranking members of Hydra lurking within the government, which is an extremely dangerous situation.

Trasco may have found a way to circumvent the government's initial screening efforts, disguising himself as an ordinary scientist rather than a Hydra member.

However, when he was recognized by Eric, Trisco sensed a sense of danger. Just before Eric was about to report Trisco, Trisco took control of Eric's wife and newborn child.

Trisco intended to coerce Eric, but his threat was intercepted by the top brass of SHIELD, which still had military personnel at the top, such as Nick Fury and Frank, who were caught in the dilemma of the Vietnam War.

After the top brass of SHIELD learned that Trisko was a member of Hydra, they believed that he must be controlled. To control and arrest Trisko, Eric would need to provide testimony. SHIELD did not want the young Magneto to be influenced by his personal "private affairs".

That was a critical time point. Since SHIELD became independent in 1955, the military has been exerting a strong influence on SHIELD. SHIELD's top management hopes to completely get rid of the military's control. And the fact that Trasco is a former Hydra member will become an important opportunity to break the deadlock.

As a special intelligence agency, SHIELD needs a clean and controllable internal structure, rather than being commanded by the military, which still includes Hydra members. In the first conflict between the two systems, Magneto was sacrificed.

Magneto did not receive the threat from Trasco, and he attended the hearing held by Congress as agreed. At the meeting, he directly exposed the fact that Trasco was a member of Hydra and provided a lot of solid evidence. This included the artificial mutant terrorists active in the late war and the 1950s and 1960s, all of which were planned by Trasco.

So Trasco was arrested in court and quickly executed. Taking this opportunity, SHIELD also completely broke with the military internally, cleared out all the personnel implanted by the military, and thus gained real administrative independence.

The Sentinel Project that Trasco had previously promoted was also urgently stopped by Congress. Because no one was sure what the real purpose of Trasco's

establishment of the project was. If it was to revive Hydra, this possibility could not be completely ruled out. After all, this organization has many extremely loyal members who can do anything. Since then, the Sentinel Project has been terminated.

This incident was a mixed bag of people, with the only one who suffered the most was Eric Magneto. When he returned from a congressional hearing, he found that his home had been completely destroyed, his wife had been brutally murdered, and his children were missing. All of this was caused by high-level political struggles.

Magneto finally realized that the government could not be trusted. Therefore, he cut off his relationship with the X-Men and decided to make those behind the scenes pay the price for their actions in his own way!

Charles was deeply disappointed when he learned the truth. He chose to quit the X-Men and returned to his hometown to establish Xavier's School for Gifted Youngsters.

Over the past few decades, countless events have occurred around mutants, X-Men, and Magneto, and many of the complexities are difficult to describe in a few words. However, some issues can be simply summarized:

It was the self-inflicted faults within the U.S. government that pushed Magneto onto the path of confrontation with the government, making him the rebel leader of the Brotherhood of Mutants!

"Triceco's son?" Stryker looked at the man in front of him, somewhat doubtful.

The man dressed as a scientific researcher smiled and said, "You can call me Dr. Rice. I inherited my father's legacy and am committed to eliminating the 'pests' among humans - mutants. It seems that our goals are the same, General Stryker."

"I should have been dead, and I don't know what information you can get from a dead person. Don't call me comrade casually. I don't know you, and I don't even know if you belong to Hydra!" Stryker frowned.

"Of course, I'm not Hydra. You can rest assured, General. I'm a scientist funded by a formal company." Dr. Rice pointed to his work ID on his chest.

Stryker noticed a line of small print on the certificate: AIM Science and Technology Investment and Development Co., Ltd. - Genetic Engineering Department.

"So what exactly do you want from me? I don't think you saved me from the military's execution list just because I had a friendship with your father." Stryker remained vigilant.

"Then I'll get straight to the point, General. I need to obtain all the information about my father's [Sentinel Project], and this information has been sealed by the military at the time. I know that you sealed these with your own hands! I hope to restart the [Sentinel] project. This world needs to be purified. I need your help, General." Dr. Rice looked at Stryker firmly.

During a day off at the Night Watch base, Li Jie and Peter had significantly more free time, especially Li Jie, who could now arrange his own time freely.

Originally, Li Jie was supposed to stay home today to take care of some matters, because a new female resident named Lan had recently moved into the house, and there were many trivial matters waiting for him to deal with.

Despite this, Li Jie was still dragged by Mindy to help cook lunch today. There were not many people in the base at the moment. Frank and Damon were out on business and would not be back until the evening; Zeng Chu and Barbara were also missing.

Only Peter, Li Jie, Mike and Mindy were left in the base. It was Mindy who insisted on asking Li Jie to make lunch. Although this little girl sometimes behaved out of line, she was generally well-behaved and sensible. In addition, she was cute and was regarded as a mascot within the team. So when Mindy made such a small request, it was really hard for Li Jie to refuse.

"Is it too early to have lunch now, Mindy?" Li Jie glanced at his watch. It was only ten o'clock in the morning. He had already finished preparing lunch. If he started cooking now, he would probably have to have lunch at eleven o'clock.

This time does seem a bit early, after all, people usually have breakfast around eight in the morning.

"No, hurry up and do it! I'm starving." Mindy urged Li Jie while fiddling with

her schoolbag.

"Where are you going? Why do you put so many comics in your backpack?" Peter stopped to maintain his spider web shooter and glanced in Mindy's direction. He saw that her backpack was stuffed full. The things in it were not textbooks, but various comics she collected.

"I'm going to visit a friend soon, and I promised to lend her some comics." Mindy answered casually, but this sentence attracted the attention of the other three adults in the base.

"Mindy? Wait! Are you kidding me?" Li Jie heard Mindy's words in the kitchen and ran out, saying in surprise, "You actually made a new friend?"

"Mike, please touch my forehead. Could it be that I am hallucinating because of the fever?" Peter asked Mike who was sitting next to him.

Mike didn't touch Peter's forehead, but put his hands on his own and Peter's arteries to check: "The heartbeat is normal, and there is no sign of being affected by hallucinogenic drugs. It seems that we have not been attacked by psychotropic drugs."

"That's enough!" Mindy couldn't stand these guys anymore. She raised her voice and shouted, "What's so strange about me making friends?"

"No, no! Of course it's not strange! This is good, very good! I mean, this is perfectly normal! What do you think, Spider-Man?" Li Jie quickly replied.

"That's right, that's right. Everyone needs friends, that's good!" Peter's words made Mike nod repeatedly in agreement.

Mindy, the youngest member of the team, is well cared for and loved by everyone. Everyone treats her as their own little sister. Everyone has a sense of responsibility for Mindy's growth and education.

Although Mindy has been in school for almost a year, no one has ever heard that she has made friends with anyone. She doesn't talk about school matters, and when she occasionally mentions it, it's with a cold smile.

Everyone knows that Mindy is very smart. Her outstanding wisdom and insights

have created a huge gap between her and other children of the same age, so that she has always been friendless and alone.

Frank and Damon have argued about this situation more than once.

It should be noted that if a person has no friends, then his life will be incomplete, especially when he still has some abilities.

Mindy is clearly a very capable girl, but her abnormal growth is extremely disadvantageous to her. The missing link in life may be the key to causing the breakdown of life.

Don't forget that many super villains are born out of the incompleteness of their lives. Li Jie firmly believes that it is difficult for people who grow up in a long-term painful or even inhuman environment to become normal people, let alone become heroes.

It is essential for almost all superheroes to have a relatively complete life or to have experienced a complete life during their growth process.

Only when you have experienced a complete life can you arouse the desire to protect this life. People who are too withdrawn and self-centered will not understand this emotional state.

Even if they have extraordinary abilities, in Li Jie's opinion, those who only consider their own interests are not worthy of being called heroes.

Therefore, everyone was very happy to learn that Mindy had made a new friend and began to ask questions about this new friend.

Li Jie asked: "Is your friend a girl? How old is she?"

Mindy replied: "Girl, thirteen years old." This is the real fact.

Peter then asked, "Is he your classmate?"

Mindy shook her head and said, "Not classmates." Her answer was still true.

Mike asked again: "When and where did you meet?"

Mindy responded, "I was on my way to the bookstore to buy comic books that day." This is still true.

Mindy knew how shrewd these adults were, so she didn't plan to lie to them or make up a story because she knew that would be exposed quickly. So Mindy took a compromise approach, which was to tell only part of the truth.

There was no need to spell out everything, including the exact details of how she and Laura met. Mindy only needed to briefly touch on it and let others build a picture in their minds.

For example, Mindy, with blonde hair, often went to a comic book store after school. On the way, she met an equally cute girl, and the two became friends because of their common love for comics.

In this way, the two comic-loving children became good friends. In the minds of the three adults, a complete storyline has been formed.

"Okay! You are going too far. These are my friends, can you please stop caring so much, gentlemen?" Mingdy couldn't help but complain to Li Jie and the other two.

Hearing this, Li Jie and the other two looked at each other and realized that they should let Mindy handle this matter on her own. After all, this was her first friend of the same age, and if they were too strict, it might have the opposite effect.

Chapter 41 The Proportion of Making Friends

At lunch, Mindy ate quickly but not much. She opened the refrigerator, found several lunch boxes, and began filling them with food.

"What are you doing, Mindy?" Li Jie watched her stuff a large roast lamb chop into her lunch box, and then took another lunch box to prepare the Italian seafood soup.

“I told her I know someone who’s an incredible cook. I promised to bring her something to try. You don’t mind, do you?” Mindy said as she packed another serving of cheddar hummus and tortillas.

"Okay, as long as you're happy." Li Jie understood why Mindy asked him to cook lunch early in the morning and asked him to cook various dishes. It turned out that she wanted to show off to her new friends. Li Jie felt that he seemed to be used by this little girl.

But forget it, as long as she is happy. It's no big deal. Mindy found a big bag to pack her lunch box, put on her backpack full of comics, and prepared to go out.

But before leaving, she emphasized: "I've already told you that I have a new friend. She's just a little girl. You are not allowed to follow me or monitor me! If I lose this friend because of you, I will settle the score with you!"

Mindy waved her fist and spoke threateningly. Li Jie and his friends expressed their understanding, after all, Mindy's friend was just a 13-year-old girl. They believed that Mindy would know how to make friends properly.

"Should we tell Frank and Damon?" Peter asked as he watched Mindy leave the base.

"No rush, let's wait until they come back." Mike scooped a bowl of seafood soup.

"Yes, that's a good thing. Don't interfere with Mindy too much. She is different from ordinary little girls." Li Jie took a bite of the tortilla and said in agreement.

Look! The highest level of lying is actually honesty! You don't have to make up complicated lies, because lies always have loopholes.

In order to cover up the flaws, you will get deeper and deeper into the trap, telling more and more lies. Eventually, everything will be exposed.

Good liars never tell lies, they only tell part of the truth. Because they tell the truth, there are no flaws in what they tell. But they only tell part of the story.

This part may lead the listener away from the truth of the matter. This is the cunning of true liars!

These are what Mindy learned from Li Jie, and what Li Jie realized after dealing with Loki. Loki, who holds the sword of truth, never lies, but he can confuse people and weave illusions.

I have to say that Mindy is a good student. She fully absorbed the knowledge taught by Li Jie and immediately used it on this group of teachers.

……

There are many abandoned small docks along the Hudson River in New York. In the early years, they were used to transfer goods between the Port of New York and inland rivers. However, in the mid-to-late 20th century, as the functions of the Port of New York were improved, these small docks lost their function.

Mindy settled Laura in a community near a small dock. It was a sparsely populated and slightly desolate place that originally served the dock. After the dock was abandoned, the place also lost its vitality.

Now, except for a few elderly people, most people have moved out. Before joining the Night Watch, Mindy and Big Daddy were based in an apartment in an old building.

The base has perfect security facilities, and Mindy thinks it is much better for Laura to live here than in an abandoned factory warehouse. Anyway, after joining the Night Watch, the base will be useless.

Mindy entered the room through fingerprint and pupil recognition. Laura was cleaning the room, which was covered with thick dust because no one had lived in it for nearly a year.

When Mindy brought Laura in that day, the two little girls spent a long time clearing out a bedroom, the one Mindy used to live in.

But the whole house was too big for them to clean quickly, so Laura planned to do a thorough cleaning over several days.

Now, the spring cleaning is nearing completion and the whole house has been cleaned spotlessly by Laura.

"Hey! Laura!" Mindy's voice was full of joy. Laura, who was tidying the table in the living room, was also very happy to see Mindy. "Good afternoon, Mindy!"

"How is living here? Are you used to it?" Mindy put down the things and backpack in her hands, walked behind Laura, and put her hand on her shoulder.

"Very good, really comfortable." Laura said seriously. Compared with her days in Mexico and the wanderings she went through later, this place was undoubtedly a warm haven.

Mindy's face lit up with a smile when she heard Laura's words.

"Oh, by the way, have you had lunch?" Mindy remembered the lunch she brought.

"I bought a sandwich." Laura pouted, and Mindy saw a mixed sandwich on the table. She pouted: "Forget that dry and ugly sandwich, I brought you something delicious."

As she spoke, Mindy opened the lunch box she brought one by one, which contained rosemary roasted lamb chops, Italian seafood soup, cheddar cheese baked hummus, and the staple food - corn biscuits.

"Look, I brought you delicious food. I don't know if you like it, but you said you are Mexican, so I think you will definitely like this tortilla!" Corn tortilla is a traditional Mexican food, and it is also what Mindy specifically asked Li Jie to prepare.

"Come, let's have lunch first!" Mindy arrived at exactly 12:20 noon, which was lunch time. She had calculated this in advance. Therefore, she asked Li Jie to prepare lunch in advance.

"These are made by a friend of mine who is a good cook. I thought you would like them." Mindy pulled Laura to the chair in front of the table, helped her set the lunch box, and even prepared disposable spoons and cutlery.

"You don't want to eat?" Laura looked at Mindy.

"I've already eaten, so just enjoy your meal." Mindy said as she urged Laura to eat faster.

Mingdi didn't know much about food, and she didn't know that lamb chops and seafood soup would smell fishy when they got cold. She always ate the hot dishes that Li Jie had just prepared, and she thought they tasted very good.

So she asked Li Jie to cook these two dishes. However, more than an hour had passed, and the lamb chops and seafood soup had already gone cold, and the smell of mutton had also emerged.

Laura didn't like the mutton smell or the seafood soup smell, but she didn't say anything and ate it in small bites.

Although the lamb smelled strong, the seafood soup was a bit fishy, the cold hummus had lost its aroma when it was hot, and the cold corn tortillas were no longer soft, Laura still ate seriously. Whether she liked it or not, she finished all the food.

Because this was specially prepared by Mindy for her, and she took a lot of effort to bring it. Although it was not to Laura's taste, she still smiled and said after eating it: "It tastes really good."

Mindy said happily: "Right! I told you our family's cooking is great!" Li Jie, who was cleaning up the dishes at the base, suddenly sneezed.

"By the way, I brought you a lot of comics. You can read them when you are bored." Mindy poured out a bag of comics, put them on the sofa, and introduced them to Laura: "These are my favorite superhero comics. Marvel's comics are much better than Hyperion."

"Really?" Laura had never read a comic before and had no chance to come into contact with entertainment products. All of this was new to her.

"Yes, I can lend you the comics I've read." Mindy nodded seriously and tilted her head to look at Laura for a while, which made Laura feel a little strange.

"What's wrong, Mindy?" Laura was not used to Mindy staring at her.

"Laura, you should change your clothes." Mindy found that Laura seemed to have only two sets of clothes, which were clean but looked a little old.

"Really?" Laura never paid attention to these things.

Mindy took Laura's hand and said, "Come on, girl, let's go buy some beautiful clothes! At school, I heard the girls mention some stores that specialize in selling girls' clothes. They all bought clothes there, so let's go and have a look."

Mindy was a little excited because she had wanted to go to a store like this for a long time. But other girls went shopping with a partner, so she felt weird going alone. And it would be weird to go to a store that sells little girls' clothes and accessories with her big daddy.

Laura had never really been shopping. She only had enough money to live on. She had seen the beautiful clothes in the windows and wanted to wear them, but she had never really stepped into the doors of those stores.

"Come on, girls! After looking at clothes, we can go to the movies in the afternoon. I know a cinema is re-screening Harry Potter. Do you like it?" Mindy took Laura's hand and was about to go out.

To Laura, everything Mindy brought her was new, whether it was food, the house she was living in, the comics she brought, the clothing store she was going to visit, or the movie she was going to watch.

For Laura, these were things she had never experienced before, just like the

world-famous movie series "Harry Potter", which she had never even heard of before.

"Thank you, Mindy." Laura said softly, a voice only she could hear. She looked at Mindy holding her little hand, and at this moment, Laura was sure that the girl in front of her would become her lifelong friend.

After Li Jie moved to his new home, his home did become lively as he expected. Because of Lan's arrival, there was another girl in Li Jie's home.

As for the salty fish Thor, Li Jie also let him move in. Anyway, there was still room available, and Li Jie needed to supervise the salty fish closely, hoping that this guy could lose weight from a fat Alaskan dog to a Shiba Inu.

However, when Li Jie first brought Thor home, Lan's first reaction when he saw Thor was surprise: "This guy looks so familiar, who is he?"

Lan asked Li Jie in confusion. Li Jie touched his forehead helplessly: "I think you should have seen him, Odin's son, Thor, the god of thunder."

Chapter 42: Indescribable

"What?!" Lan stared at Li Jie with eyes wide open in disbelief. "Are you saying this is Thor? Wait, I seem to remember he wasn't like this before!"

"That's the problem, Lan. Due to some irresistible reasons, he has become like this now." Li Jie patted Thor's fat belly gently.

The fat on Thor's belly trembled as Li Jie slapped him, like the ripples caused by a stone thrown into a lake, and the layers of fat showed amazing elasticity.

"Oh my god." It was the first time that Li Jie saw Lan lose her composure like this. This usually calm girl showed complex and indescribable emotions for the first time.

"I remember that Thor was banished to the mortal world by Odin because he wanted to learn humility. But now he looks like this..." Lan stopped talking halfway.

"Yes, that's what you saw. I think the first priority is to help him get back in shape." Li Jie sighed helplessly. Now people who have seen Thor's original appearance can't believe that the fat man in front of them is the once mighty Thor.

This is the result of Li Jie's strict control of Thor's diet and urging him to exercise these days. In fact, he has lost several pounds.

Li Jie has not returned the house he rented for Thor because he doesn't know when Valkyrie will come back. If the Valkyrie of Asgard returns, he must prepare a place for her to live.

However, Li Jie had already moved all the fitness equipment prepared for Thor from that house, including spinning bikes, treadmills, and various dumbbells and barbells. For this purpose, he had to rent a large pickup truck to transport these

things.

"Why can I only eat these at noon? Didn't you say there would be meat today?" At lunch, Thor stared at his plate with resentment on his face. There were only a few slices of grapefruit, boiled green beans, diced apples and a small amount of egg white.

To be honest, such food is really hard to look at. Even Lan, who is not very picky about food, can't help but frown. She looked at the black and sticky dish in front of her, and a strong sense of discomfort surged in her heart. These foods look unappetizing and even a little nauseating. Lan couldn't help but doubt whether this can really be called food? She felt that she could not treat it as a full meal anyway.

But Li Jie ignored Thor's complaints, served Lan the lunch he prepared, and said, "Shut up, because you stole food yesterday! Don't think I don't know that you got money from somewhere yesterday and bought fried chicken legs! Now you are more capable and can steal money! Five dollars were missing from my wallet yesterday, you didn't take it, did you?"

"I didn't steal it! Absolutely not! I picked it up from the ground! I am the God of Thunder! How could I possibly do such a despicable thing as stealing? This is simply an insult and slander to my reputation!" Thor argued loudly and righteously, his voice as loud as a thunderstorm echoing throughout the space, as if to deafen everyone's ears. His face was full of anger and grievance, his eyes were wide open, staring at the person in front of him, as if he wanted to see through the other person with his eyes. His body was also trembling slightly because of excitement, and he held the thing that was suspected to be stolen goods tightly in his hand, as if he was afraid that someone else would snatch it away.

"If you find something that doesn't belong to you, you should look for the owner or hand it over to the police. This is something even a six-year-old child understands. You are just quibbling!" Li Jie said to Thor mercilessly.

Lan's mouth dropped open because of what she saw. She couldn't believe what she saw. This scene was just like a father scolding his child! You know, Thor was not like this in the past! He was always so rude, reckless, and always thought highly of himself, as if the world should revolve around him. However,

now, this scene completely overturned Lan's perception of Thor.

Of course, as the most noble prince of Asgard and the god of thunder who has never tasted defeat in his life, Thor naturally has his own pride and self-esteem! This is a fact that no one can deny or accuse! After all, how could such a powerful and majestic existence as him not have the slightest arrogance? You know, he is the hero who once defeated countless powerful enemies and defended the glory of Asgard by his own strength! So, no matter who it is, no one should have any doubts or accusations against this great god of thunder! On the contrary, we should give him enough respect and admiration! Because only in this way can we be worthy of his extremely brilliant record and supreme status!

But Li Jie scolded Thor like this and trained him in a way that was almost abusive, but the prince of Asgard did not resist? This was incredible! You know, when Thor got crazy, he was not afraid of death.

Lan was full of curiosity and doubts. She couldn't understand how Li Jie could subdue the extremely powerful Thor. Thor is the god of thunder in Norse mythology! He has endless strength and courage, and he also controls the power of thunder and lightning. It can be said that no one can defeat him. However, such a seemingly invincible existence was easily subdued by Li Jie, which made Lan feel incredible.

Lan couldn't help but recall every little bit of her time with Li Jie, trying to find some clues or hints. But no matter how hard she thought, she had no clue, because in her impression, Li Jie had always been a very ordinary person, and he didn't show anything special. Could it be that Li Jie had hidden his true strength? Or did he have some secret weapons or special skills? The more Lan thought about it, the more confused she felt, and at the same time, she developed a strong interest in Li Jie. She decided to ask Li Jie when she had the chance to see if she could get an answer from him. After all, for a person with a strong curiosity, unknown things are always full of attraction and challenges.

"Don't worry about the fat guy, Lan, let's eat first." Li Jie had already prepared Lan's lunch. After the last dinner, he found that Lan didn't like those dishes, so he guessed that her taste might have been formed when she was in Kamar-Taj.

So when he went to Gu Yi to get the space ring he made, he specifically asked

Wang what Lan liked to eat. Because Wang played a role similar to a butler in Kamar-Taj and knew these things very well.

When saffron is soaked in water and cooked, the rice turns golden yellow, which is Lan's favorite staple food. There is also fresh yak meat stewed in clear water, which can be eaten directly with soy sauce and vinegar.

In New York City, yak meat is out of the question, and even freshly slaughtered, unfrozen beef is hard to find. Li Jie went to several restaurant suppliers before he found one that sold fresh beef.

Because fresh meat is required for beef stew, the taste of frozen meat is much worse. Lan is not picky about food, and these two are her favorites.

Li Jie felt that it was not difficult to meet this need, so for today's lunch, he prepared Lan's favorite food and added some simple vegetables.

Lan glanced at the food prepared for her, raised an eyebrow, smiled and said to Li Jie: "Thank you."

Li Jie waved his hand and said, "You're welcome, it's just a small matter."

In the afternoon, when Thor started his weight loss training, Lan understood why Thor, who originally had a hot temper, would listen to Li Jie so much.

Thor pedaled the spinning bike frantically, and if he relaxed, Li Jie would shoot him directly with a gun loaded with rubber bullets.

"Hurry up, you idiot! Didn't you have lunch? Why are you so slow?" Li Jie quickly packed his things while constantly urging Thor. His tone was very sharp and aggressive, which made people feel uncomfortable. Thor stood silently aside, lowering his head and saying nothing. His face was a little pale, and he seemed a little scared and nervous.

"I really didn't have lunch! If you call that lunch!" Thor yelled back while riding his bike.

"Oh, so what? Thor? Don't think you are still Thor now! Thor!" Li Jie didn't give Thor any face.

"You are just a useless fat guy now! All you do all day is drink Coke, eat fried chicken, and watch boring entertainment programs! If you are too lazy to move, just say so!"

"I can make you a useless person in comfort! I can supply you with enough Coke and fried chicken every day. I can also teach you how to play online games! Do you know how to play online games? Oh, I guess you don't, but I can guarantee that you will find it very fun once you learn it!"

"Then you can become a happier fat otaku! I will install a lot of food delivery apps, and you can sit in front of the computer all day long, playing games and eating fried chicken! You don't have to do anything until your brain bursts one day! I promise you will live a happy life! You are just a useless waste anyway!" Li Jie spoke without mercy.

Lan's heart almost jumped out of his throat when he heard what Li Jie said. Was Li Jie deliberately looking for trouble? No matter if Thor was the god of thunder or the son of Odin, even an ordinary person couldn't stand such sarcasm and insult, right?

As expected, Thor was furious. He stopped his spinning bike and rushed towards Li Jie aggressively. At this moment, he no longer cared whether he would be beaten or not.

"Say it again if you dare!" Thor was fat, but his strength was undiminished. He grabbed Li Jie by the collar, pulled him in front of him, and stared at him with murderous eyes.

"Am I wrong?" Li Jie raised his mouth corners, revealing a mocking smile, his eyes narrowed slightly, staring at Thor closely, as if trying to see through his innermost thoughts. Then, he said in a contemptuous tone: "Don't forget your current situation, you poor guy! Trapped on this small earth, far away from your hometown and the source of your power, do you really think you are so great, Thor?" His voice was full of disdain and contempt, as if Thor was just an insignificant existence, not worth mentioning at all.

"No! You are not important! Not at all! Never important!" Li Jie did not give in, as if he wanted to completely erase Thor's value: "Look at Asgard without you. Look at Asgard. What's the difference between Asgard and Thor?"

"No, nothing has changed. Apart from your parents, I don't think anyone will miss you much except the tavern owner. I heard that you used to go to the tavern every day and spend a lot of money on honey ale."

"I think the patrols in Asgard should be thankful now. There is no more crazy drunk prince. Every time you drank, you would fight with others and make the streets a mess. You must have caused a lot of trouble for the patrols. Because you are the son of Odin, they must not know how to punish you."

"Oh, and there are those goddesses of Asgard!" Li Jie's tone was filled with a hint of surprise and dissatisfaction, he continued: "Valkyrie once told me that you don't seem to be welcomed by them. I heard that you have serious discrimination against women, and this discrimination is reflected in all aspects. What's more outrageous is that you don't allow Valkyries to step onto the battlefield, just because they are women! This is simply ridiculous!" Li Jie said, shrugged helplessly, expressing his incomprehension and disgust with such behavior.

"Of course, when talking about the battlefield, we have to mention your record of winning hundreds of battles. Thor, the God of Thunder, is so majestic! You have never been defeated in your life, and your reputation is known throughout the universe." Lan felt that Li Jie was not complimenting him, but more like sarcasm.

"But I heard from Valkyrie that your fighting style is always charging ahead. Hmm? I find it hard to believe that a general commanding tens of thousands of troops would give up commanding the entire army and charge forward like an angry wild boar. To be honest, I really doubt the authenticity of your record. Of course, maybe you specifically pick tribes that are easy to deal with? By the way, are there any [strong men] taller than 1.4 meters among your opponents?"

Lan looked at Li Jie in surprise. She didn't expect Li Jie to be so venomous. Thor had been pushed to the edge of collapse by Li Jie's sarcasm, but he didn't do anything yet, because every word Li Jie said was heart-piercing.

Li Jie ignored their reactions and continued, "By the way, I just came back from Master Ancient One. Guess what, Loki won another battle. He suppressed the Frost Giants and Dark Elves at the border. Well, Loki used to be your deputy, right?"

"To be honest, I doubt it. Who is the deputy to whom? I always thought that Loki was helping you clean up the mess. All you did was charge mindlessly, right? Yes, even if you had divine power before, it didn't really do much. I think you could probably find a group of wild boars to give you divine power and put on armor to do your job."

Li Jie said so many sarcastic words in one breath, and each one hit the heart. Lan watched Thor go from being furious to gradually weakening his momentum, and then to his current dejection. She finally understood why Li Jie could make Thor so obedient. This guy is also scary even if he doesn't use violence!

"So, fat guy, what else do you want to say? As a waste, you have lost even your only capital. What qualifications do you have to lose your temper with me, the person who helps you?" Li Jie pushed Thor away and straightened his collar that was messed up by him.

"Are you not convinced? Do you want to be a useful person? Let me tell you, if you still think this way, even if you get Thor's hammer, you are still a useless Thor. I am serious."

"What should I do? What should I do?" Thor's face was filled with despair and helplessness. His body was shaking slightly, as if he might collapse at any time. Li Jie's verbal violence was like a powerful shock wave, hitting his heart hard, making him unable to bear this huge pressure.

Thor's eyes became empty and he stared blankly ahead, seemingly losing the ability to perceive the world around him. His mind was completely confused, and Li Jie's evil words kept echoing in his mind. These words were like sharp swords, piercing his heart again and again.

At this moment, Thor felt as if he was in an endless dark abyss. No matter how hard he struggled, he could not escape this terrible predicament. His confidence and courage had been completely crushed, and his original strong will was gradually disintegrating. Faced with such a cruel reality, he didn't know how long he could hold on, nor did he know how to go on in the future.

Chapter 43 Dream of Becoming a God

Let me give you a bicycle first, and then go train! Don't always think about how to return to Asgard when you become Thor in the future, think about what you can do on Earth! To be honest, one more Thor in Asgard won't make much difference, and one less Thor won't make much difference either! " Li Jie said slowly, and Thor didn't realize that there was another meaning in Li Jie's words.

"Instead of dreaming about becoming a god, you might as well think about how to be a valuable person! Maybe Earth needs you more than Asgard!" Li Jie thought to himself: Well, think about this more, and stay on Earth. When you become Thor, you will be of great use.

Li Jie's enlightening education for Thor naturally has his own plans, just like what he considered when he founded the Illuminati. Li Jie and Tony wanted to establish a secret organization, but this organization should be above the governments of various countries.

Because the Illuminati wants to do many things that will have a profound impact on the world, but they cannot ask the government for permission, so this organization will change the world in an underground way, without anyone noticing.

In this complex and sophisticated plan, whether it is political reform on Earth or resistance to alien civilizations, Li Jie thought from the beginning that he needed an outsider as a public spokesperson.

When Thor appeared in front of Li Jie, he instinctively realized that he might have found a suitable spokesperson.

In any case, Thor is a man with a strong sense of justice. No matter how smart he is, or how many shortcomings and habits he has, Li Jie thinks that these can

be corrected. The key is whether Thor can develop a love for the earth.

In the original movie, Thor was drawn to Earth because of a beautiful doctor, which Li Jie thought was pretty stupid. Well, it was actually pretty stupid.

In Li Jie's memory, many of the logics in the movie Thor were completely unsound, and it was inexplicable that Thor got the hammer in the end. Li Jie never felt that Thor had learned to be humble, and he was still arrogant.

Now, Li Jie doesn’t know where to find a beautiful doctor to attract Thor, but he has his own way, which is simple and crude - that is to inspire him!

The most important thing for a person to do in life, whether as a human or as a god, is to always pursue the feeling of being needed. This is the value of most people.

Whether a person is a madman or a hero, an ordinary person or an extraordinary person, being noticed, affirmed, or even hated all stems from basic physiological and psychological needs.

That is: your existence has meaning. For ordinary people, the greatest meaning of life may be family and friends. For ambitious people, the meaning of life may be to achieve goals, whether the goals are good or bad.

Simply put, if a person, or a god, loses the goal or meaning of life, then this person basically loses the motivation to live.

For Thor, most of his life is about living for Asgard. He lives his life in this way, spreading the name of the god of thunder, promoting the glory of Asgard, and fighting bloody battles for Asgard and the king of the gods.

All his values are reflected in the struggle and prosperity of Asgard. Li Jie deeply understands this, and because of this, he wants to completely destroy it all. Li Jie looks calm and has no special characteristics on the surface, but from his actions and plans, it can be seen that he is actually a crazy person.

In his personality, there may be a little bit of the crazy clown in Gotham City, but compared to the chaotic madness of the clown, Li Jie tends to be kind mad. From introducing aliens to set up enemies for the earth, promoting political reforms on the earth, joining the Illuminati without hesitation, and various

affairs, it can be seen that Li Jie is a real madman. It's just that his madness is hidden deep in his soul, and it is not easy for ordinary people to detect.

However, no matter how deeply it is hidden, it does not mean that the madness does not exist. On the contrary, because of his ordinary character, no one has ever really discovered how crazy Li Jie's ideas are.

Just like what he did now, he madly shattered the values that Thor had built over the years. He madly told Thor: "Wake up, fat boy! Asgard doesn't need you! You are a waste!"

After Li Jie's constant emphasis, coupled with Loki's successive victories on the front line, Thor really began to waver. He began to doubt whether his life was just a farce.

He always thought that Loki couldn't live without him, but now looking back, maybe he couldn't live without Loki? Those past wars, the battles with various gods, if he thought carefully, maybe he was the one who was really useless!

In fact, it was Loki who had been helping him. As the eldest prince of Asgard, the son of the king of the gods, and the heir to the title of Thor, did he really do well? Perhaps anyone else, with his identity, could do the same as him, or even better!

Thor really began to doubt the meaning of his existence. Whether it is human or God, once their beliefs are shaken, once they feel that living in this world is unnecessary and worthless, their hearts will be twisted.

Just like many criminals in the world, do they commit crimes because of objective conditions? Not entirely, some people just pursue self-satisfaction, and even being hated is a manifestation of value, at least better than being completely ignored, as if this person does not exist in the world!

Li Jie understood this well, he destroyed Thor's past pride and values, trampled them to pieces, and then gave Thor new honor and meaning.

"Perhaps Earth needs you more than Asgard." When a person loses his self-worth and goals, this faint ray of hope and dawn is what Li Jie constantly instills in Thor. Unconsciously, Thor has actually begun to accept this setting.

Maybe Earth is really more suitable for me than Asgard? After all, Asgard already has Loki, so it doesn't matter whether I'm there or not! This is Thor's true inner thought.

Destroy the existence value of a life (god), and then create a new value for him. In a way, Li Jie seems like the final villain in some stories. Although he himself does not think so.

Just as Li Jie was guiding Thor and reshaping his values, the Asgardian Valkyrie returned to Earth and brought a message: "Go to Asgard to discuss the matter of the dark elves entering the Earth!"

Li Jie was surprised by the sudden appearance of Valkyrie. He thought that Odin had noticed Thor's abnormality and sent Valkyrie to embarrass him.

However, the first words Valkyrie said made Li Jie feel at ease: "How is Thor recently?" It seems that Valkyrie has not noticed Thor's situation yet, which is good news for Li Jie.

Valkyrie went directly to the comic company to find Li Jie, and did not even go to the house that they had rented before. It can be seen that she did not see Thor, nor did she notice anything abnormal about Thor.

"Of course, very good. Recently, I have finished the things at hand and am busy helping Thor adapt to the life of an ordinary person. Only in this way can he learn excellent qualities and correct his shortcomings." Li Jie said calmly.

Maybe he really thinks he is helping Thor. Well, Li Jie may think so, he doesn't think he is bullying Thor.

"That's good. Are you free now?" Valkyrie didn't seem to delve into Thor's current situation, probably because she and Thor had a mediocre relationship. After hearing what Li Jie said, she didn't check on Thor's condition, but directly suggested: "If you are free, come with me to the God's Domain to talk about the dark elves."

"Now?" Li Jie's heart tightened. Could it be that Odin had discovered that Thor had turned into an Alaskan dog, and was planning to trick him back to Asgard and then use chain lightning to deal with him?

"Going to Asgard to see Odin?" Li Jie asked with confusion.

"No." Valkyrie's words eased Li Jie's nervousness: "In fact, Odin doesn't want you to appear in Asgard now."

"Why?" Li Jie became nervous again. Was Odin worried that if he killed him in Asgard, Ancient One would blame him?

Li Jie felt that his heart was under a lot of pressure today. Although he had a clear conscience, if Odin wanted to deal with him, he probably didn't need a special reason. To be honest, it was not his fault that he raised Thor into an Alaskan dog. That was Thor's own choice!

"Because Odin is afraid that the Mother of the Gods, the goddess Frigga, will come to you to ask about Thor's situation. She is Thor's mother and has always cared about him. Odin is worried that after Frigga learns about the situation, she will be soft-hearted and ask him to let Thor come back. So Odin doesn't want you to appear in Asgard now." Valkyrie explained.

Li Jie was a little confused. In that case, did Odin know about Thor's current condition?

"So we're not going to Asgard, and we're not going to see Odin. Who are we going to see?" Since they're not going to see Odin, where is Valkyrie going to take him? Who is he going to see? Who is he going to talk to about the Dark Elves?

"Odin has handed over the matter to Asgard's supreme military commander, Loki, who is fighting on the front line against the dark elves! He is the leader of the entire battle and the head of Asgard's elven army." Valkyrie smiled.

"So, Odin handed over the power of negotiation to Loki, because letting the dark elves enter the earth requires Loki's cooperation. Whether you can convince Loki to help you is the key to this matter."

Odin directly handed over the power of negotiation to Loki, which had both advantages and disadvantages for Li Jie. The advantage was that he didn't have to face Odin directly. He was very afraid to meet Odin now. If he accidentally revealed a flaw in Thor's matter, he didn't know what the consequences would be.

Chapter 44 Loki

The downside is that the person being negotiated is Loki, the god of mischief and deception, who is not someone who can be easily persuaded. He is a difficult person to figure out, and it might be a little tricky to get him to help.

However, Li Jie remembered the Thunder Blade that Loki had given him through Valkyrie. It was a weapon close to the divine level, although he had only used it once. Was Loki's previous friendly behavior towards him the same as he had originally imagined? If it was really as he had speculated, he would be more confident in convincing him.

Li Jie thought about this and found that Valkyrie was standing in front of him waiting for him to make a decision. He thought that some things would be better dealt with as soon as possible. So he called Lan directly and told her that he might not be at home in the next few days. At the same time, he also told Tony, Peter and others that he was going to the Divine Realm, so that they would not be able to find him when the time comes. In addition, he also called home and said that he wanted to go out for a trip recently. If no one answered the phone, it might be because the signal was not good.

After arranging everything, Li Jie nodded to Valkyrie: "Let's go now!"

Valkyrie smiled and took Li Jie directly to the suburbs of New York. "When the Rainbow Bridge is opened, there will be a lot of noise. We don't want to alert the human government now." Valkyrie said to Li Jie with a smile, and then she inserted a crystal made by the elves on the grass, which can greatly conceal the energy and strong light emitted by the Rainbow Bridge.

"Heimdall! Open the Rainbow Bridge and take us to the Elven Kingdom!" Valkyrie shouted towards the empty sky. This action seemed a bit silly, but it actually established a connection with Heimdall who was far away in the God's Realm.

Under the cover of the elf crystal, the rainbow bridge opened. Valkyrie and Li Jie were directly teleported away from the earth, and the next second, they arrived at the elf kingdom among the nine kingdoms.

Before Li Jie had time to carefully observe the differences between this world and Earth, Valkyrie urged him to leave: "Hurry up, Loki is very busy now. He is the commander of the entire army and doesn't have much time to see you. He has been seriously lacking rest recently."

"Hmm?" Li Jie was surprised by Valkyrie's words. You know, the last time he saw Valkyrie, although she didn't say she hated Loki, her tone didn't show much respect. She used honorifics only because Loki was Odin's son.

And now, Li Jie felt a hint of respect from her urging. How long had it been? One and a half months or two months, and Loki had already won the respect of the Valkyrie?

Following Valkyrie's steps, they came to a military camp. There were Asgardian warriors wearing golden armor everywhere, and in the distance, there were some people wearing silver armor, carrying longbows, with long and smooth hair and pointed ears. Li Jie guessed that they were elves.

But Li Jie didn't have much time to stop and admire these, because Valkyrie kept urging him to move faster. In the center of the camp, there was a magnificent building. It was a small palace with a white opal base and decorated with gold crystals and moonstones. Decorations woven with evening primrose were hung at the entrance of the palace, and golden wool from Mount Olympus was luxuriously laid as a carpet at the entrance of the palace.

The core materials of cherry and rosewood were carved into gorgeous logos and pasted on the palace gate. Before he actually entered the palace, Li Jie was shocked by this extremely luxurious palace.

"Is Loki really fighting? Isn't he here for vacation?" Li Jie was a little confused. Is it really okay to build such a luxurious palace in the military camp? He is not the king of Asgard. Isn't he afraid that the soldiers under him will have opinions?

"A good commander is one who can lead us to victory. Compared to the huge compensation that Thor had to pay after leading everyone to war, Loki's cost as a commander is much less. An excellent ruler naturally has the right to enjoy the

treatment he deserves." Valkyrie seemed to be very protective of Loki.

Loki seemed to have known that Li Jie was coming. Less than half a minute after Li Jie arrived at the reception room of the palace, Loki appeared directly in the reception room.

He glanced at Li Jie, without any greetings or politeness, and asked directly as if he didn't know Li Jie at all: "Why should I help you?"

The tone was straightforward and not polite at all. Li Jie had expected that Loki would be difficult to deal with, so he was prepared. He glanced at the guards in the reception room and winked at Loki.

Loki was a smart man, he understood what Li Jie meant, he needed some private space, he waved his hand to let everyone out, including Valkyrie.

"Okay, you can say it now. What is said here will not be heard by any outsider." Loki found a sofa made of dragon skin and sat down. This sofa was made of the softest skin from the dragon's belly. After removing the scales, it needs to be nitrated for more than 20 years before it can be used as leather. It is very rare and expensive.

Li Jie looked at Loki and said bluntly, "I say, what if I can help you ascend the throne of Asgard?"

Li Jie stood in front of Loki and said seriously: "Compared to Thor, I think you are more suitable to be the king of Asgard." Li Jie was serious.

Although Thor is powerful, he lacks meticulous thinking. As a leader, he lacks a lot and is prone to irrational behavior when his blood boils. Li Jie has a deep understanding of this during his interactions with Thor.

Of course, Li Jie wanted Loki to be the ruler not only for the lofty ideals of Asgard's future prosperity and the welfare of the people, but also for more practical considerations. For Li Jie, Loki's rise has more practical reasons. If I remember correctly, the famous battle of the Avengers, the Battle of New York, was largely triggered by Loki. Unable to get the throne and unable to accept the fact that he was just "given away by recharging his phone bill", Loki turned to Thanos and tried to use Thanos' power to realize his plan to usurp the throne of Asgard. This was very crazy and violent, and the earth became a victim of Loki's

plan.

From all aspects, Loki is more suitable to be the king of the gods than Thor. He is smarter, more courageous, and more rational. The only thing that prevents him from succeeding to the throne is his origin. He is not Odin's biological son, but the descendant of the frost giant Laufey, and was only adopted and raised by Odin.

How could Odin allow a descendant of a frost giant to inherit his throne? You know, the war between Asgard and the frost giants has lasted for thousands of years. Except for a short period of peace, the two tribes have hardly stopped fighting.

Li Jie does not want to be an enemy of Loki in the future. Because the Loki in this world is more shrewd than the one in the movie, and he will not do things that will bring about his own destruction and cause dislike. From the fact that he gained the support and respect of the Asgard army in a short period of time, it can be seen that he is much better than the trouble-making and annoying Loki in the movie.

This Loki knows how to win people's hearts and knows how to go with the flow. Unlike the Loki in the movie, who only relies on the tricks of mind magic. This Loki is more like a real god of lies. He is good at lying skillfully, and the most clever lie is the truth. Loki would never be naive to think that he can rule Asgard with just a few illusions and mind magic. If he really thinks so, unless the gods of Asgard are much stupider than Thor, it would be impossible for Loki to control everyone easily.

This is the first reason why Li Jie thinks he can help Loki ascend the throne, because he does not take risks, but takes every step carefully. The second reason is that Loki in this world is treated completely differently from the one in the movie. Li Jie noticed this from the first time he saw Loki. In Kamar-Taj, the Ancient One's attitude towards Loki was obviously closer than towards Thor. The Ancient One even bought Loki many electronic products for him to play with, and allowed him to take away the magic book of Kamar-Taj. This is impossible for others.

Some people may think that this is just caring for the child of an old friend, just like an elder caring for the younger generation. Maybe Ancient One didn't know

that Loki was not Odin's biological son? Well, assuming that Ancient One really didn't know, but Li Jie still found something different about Loki, all of which was based on the premise that he knew Loki was not Odin's biological son.

I remember when I first met Loki, the weapon he was wearing was not the scepter of mind, but a real sword. Odin explained that he gave him the real sword to prevent Loki from abusing mind magic and deception on Earth, because with the real sword, Loki could not lie or deceive others. This reason seems reasonable, but don't forget, this is a real sword! It is the sword of the god of glory of Asgard and one of the most powerful artifacts of Asgard.

Li Jie learned the origin of the real sword from Thor. This artifact was made by the elves and was a gift to the elves who helped them destroy the greedy dragon. Although it may not be as destructive as Thor's thunder hammer, the real sword has more magical features.

Before Thor got the hammer of thunder, Loki already had this artifact that was equivalent to the hammer of thunder. Doesn't Odin have other ways to limit Loki's mental magic? Li Jie believes that Odin must have a way, but he just didn't use it. After all, he can completely seal all of Thor's power, so dealing with Loki should be a piece of cake. He gave Loki a real sword, a real artifact, saying that he could control Loki, but maybe this was actually a reward for Loki?

In the original Thor series, Li Jie remembers that Loki's status was very low, almost like a gift for recharging phone bills. Odin always thought of Thor first when it came to good things, and Loki's treatment was not even as good as that of Odin's trusted generals. This old man Odin is very partial!

In addition, the real sword is not Loki's first artifact. Through conversations with Thor and Valkyrie, Li Jie knew that Loki still had the mind scepter that caused trouble in the original story.

That was the first powerful weapon he got after he became an adult. It was a reward from Odin and Frigga. The Mind Scepter is also a true artifact. The gift Thor got when he became an adult was a huge axe called Garmjol.

This axe is not even close to being a divine weapon. It can only be regarded as a super awesome weapon that the dwarves have spent a lot of effort to create.

Loki has more than just these two artifacts. His boots were given by the Elf

Queen, called the Rainbow Boots. Wearing them, Loki can travel through space at will and fly at high speed. It is not the kind of space gate opened by the wizard, but silent and instant movement. Li Jie had seen this ability earlier when he was fighting Venom in the orphanage.

Loki's cloak comes from the Vanir, from Vanaheim, and allows him to become invisible, transform, and perform various complex transformations.

And his helmet, not only is it a powerful mental protection device, it also gives Loki the ability to communicate with other creatures. Wearing the helmet, Loki can talk to any animal.

These things are either divine weapons, or at least close to divine weapons. Their power is not reflected in direct destructive power, but they are extremely practical and have infinite variations.

In comparison, Thor seems too shabby. The only artifact that can be confirmed is Thor's hammer, but the hammer does not belong to him now. Compared with Loki, Thor is like the difference between a beggar and a prince.

In addition, the luxurious little palace in front of Li Jie, opal, gold crystal, moonstone are all gem-grade building materials, but Loki used them casually for construction. The golden wool that the goddesses of Asgard regarded as a treasure and it was difficult to ask for a coat, but Loki used it to make a carpet. And the sofa in front of Li Jie, although it was not clear at first what leather it was made of.

But if you look closely, you will find that the craftsmen who made the sofa deliberately retained the dragon features in the leather in the details, such as the armrests made of dragon horns.

In legends and stories, dragons are powerful and ferocious creatures, and their leather and dragon horns are precious materials. But in Loki's case, they are made into sofas for people to rest on.

All this clearly shows that Odin and Frigga favor and are partial to Loki. The allocation of resources is extremely unfair to Thor and Loki, and this time it is Thor who suffers.

Assuming that Loki is really Odin's child, then everything makes sense. After

all, favoring the youngest son is a common problem for almost all parents.

Li Jie could conclude that the Loki in this world must be different from the one he knew. It was these differences that made Li Jie believe that Loki really had a chance to become the king of Asgard!

Chapter 45: Making a Covenant

"What right do you have to discuss the throne of Asgard with me? You are just a mortal, not even a voter of Asgard. Don't you think your words are ridiculous?" Loki sat on the sofa with a disdainful smile on his lips.

It seemed that he didn't think Li Jie could help him. However, after hearing what Loki said, Li Jie smiled because he heard some hidden meanings, which were accidentally revealed by Loki even though he tried to conceal them carefully.

"So, you still want to be the king of Asgard, right?" Li Jie said firmly: "You just doubted whether I could help you ascend the throne, but you didn't directly refuse. This shows that you still have great ambitions for the throne, right, Loki!"

Loki clenched his fist quickly, but soon released it: "I am just laughing at your arrogance, please don't take it too seriously."

"Really? When you gave the Thunder Saber to me through Valkyrie, was it really just to thank me for taking care of you for a short period of time on Earth, and for my later care for Thor?" If Li Jie was only 50% sure of convincing Loki before, then the test just now gave him the answer he wanted.

Now, he was more than 80% confident in persuading Loki. Li Jie sat opposite Loki with ease and said slowly: "I don't think a quasi-artifact-level weapon would be worthless, otherwise Thor would not rush in with only a big axe. Of course, it may also be that Odin wanted to train him."

"This is just a gift from Asgard, please don't make random guesses." Loki responded to Li Jie as if nothing had happened.

"Really? I thought this was a trap you set for Thor, and it was your first move to negotiate terms with me. I don't know how you will find me in the future if I don't mention this. But I really don't believe there is a free lunch." Li Jie shrugged while sitting on the dragon leather sofa.

"You have repeatedly emphasized the importance of equal exchange. This is the rule of transactions between gods. It is no exception for believers. Only piety can obtain God's grace and forgiveness." Li Jie looked directly at Loki and said.

Loki was twiddling his thumbs on the sofa in boredom, seemingly uninterested in Li Jie's words. But Li Jie knew that his words might have touched Loki.

After all, Valkyrie also said that Loki was very busy now and didn't have much time to chat with him.

"Like the silver you collected after your first visit to Earth. You told me many stories about the Midgard Serpent. I don't know much about these, and neither does Thor. But I believe you know those things. Thor once praised you as the smartest in Asgard."

Hearing his brother's praise, Loki smiled indifferently, making it hard to guess what he was thinking.

"Maybe we were all confused by the information of the Midgard Serpent. You even made Thor believe that only he could kill the monster. You helped him escape from the prison in Asgard at the risk of your life. It was really clever!" Li Jie praised.

"You didn't do anything unnecessary. You just did it out of concern for your elder brother and to achieve his glory. In the entire Asgard, even Odin can't find any flaws in you in this matter."

"Therefore, Thor's impulsiveness will make Odin dislike him even more, while your brotherly love has won the admiration of Odin and others. Perfect! For you, Thor may be the biggest obstacle to your ascension to the throne!"

"Over the years, he has been the main force of the army, leading Asgard to victory after victory. He has a high prestige, superior military strength, and is the eldest son of Asgard. It seems reasonable for him to inherit the throne. You can hardly see any chance."

"But the world is so coincidental. After you tricked Thor into coming down to the human world, the dark elves and frost giants attacked the elven kingdom. So Loki had the opportunity to show his abilities. You can prove that you are better than Thor. You can even say that without you, Loki, Thor is just a useless

waste!"

Li Jie's words are logically clear.

But this is all based on the fact that Loki really wants to be the king of Asgard and is a man who is good at forbearance and wisdom. Li Jie is not sure whether Loki is as he inferred. If Loki in this world is a good boy, then his assumptions will not hold true.

What made Li Jie feel relieved was that Loki had not shown any dissatisfaction so far. This meant that there was still room for negotiation. It could even be said that he was still the ambitious Loki!

Papapapa! After listening to Li Jie's words, Loki clapped his hands: "Excellent reasoning. If Thor is half as smart as you, I'll be relieved. However, as you said, if I'm so good, does Thor still have a chance to become king?"

"Moreover, by making such speculations, you are destroying the relationship between Thor and me. Aren't you afraid that I will kill you now? Believe me, even if I kill you with this reason, Ancient One will not blame me!" Loki said, gently patting the Sword of Truth he carried with him.

"To be honest, Loki, I don't want to beat around the bush with you. Brothers fighting each other is not a good plot. I have no objection to your pursuit of power and ambition." Li Jie felt that he had said everything he needed to say, so now he should get straight to the point.

"Asgard needs you! You can lead Asgard to prosperity. Earth needs Thor! The mortal world needs a true god. I don't want to see you and Thor become enemies, nor do I want to be your enemy. It would be foolish to go against you, and that's not what I want."

"You are indeed very smart now, but who says that a salted fish can't turn over a new leaf? What if Thor can really let go of his past arrogance and humbly learn the things he used to disdain. When he becomes the God of Thunder and understands the way of the king, do you still have a chance to become king?"

Li Jie watched the smile on Loki's face gradually disappear. Regardless of his embarrassed expression, he continued, "The only way is to make Thor give up the throne of Asgard and set new goals for him. Let the earth become his home.

Only when he stops competing with you, you will have a chance to realize your ambition and desire for power!"

Loki stood up suddenly when he heard this, walked to the living room window, looked out at the neatly-organized army, and suddenly he drew out his real sword.

The sword flashed with cold light, and a mighty pressure emanated from the sword. There was no place for falsehood to hide, and in front of this real sword, no deception could be hidden.

Li Jie was a little nervous because this world was very different from what he knew and he couldn't accurately guess Loki's thoughts. What he did and said now was quite risky.

Only a small part of these ideas were influenced by the previous movies, and more were based on the information I had about Loki in this world and my speculation as a bystander.

Loki drew out the Sword of Truth, and pointed the tip of the sword at Li Jie, as if ready to end his life at any time: "You are wrong! Everything I do is not for power and ambition!"

"Huh?" Li Jie was a little surprised. At this moment, Loki was holding the Sword of Truth in his hand and couldn't lie. In other words, this Loki really had no ambition? Li Jie felt that he had made a big mistake!

"Everything I do is to prove that I, the God of Lies and Trickery, have never lost to anyone! My value should not be ignored for boring reasons! I think and act for myself and for Asgard!" Loki swore solemnly.

"Huh?" This Loki is really different from what he knew. But despite the different motives, Li Jie doesn't care now, because the result is the same. This Loki still covets the throne.

"Do you dare to swear and ally with me for everything you said!" Loki pointed his real sword at Li Jie, looking very serious. He asked Li Jie to ally with him and make Thor give up the throne sincerely and dedicate the rest of his life to the earth.

As long as Thor is still under control and Li Jie does not violate the agreement, Loki will become Li Jie's ally and assist him in completing this plan.

Due to the influence of the Sword of Truth, an equal contract was proposed, and Li Jie agreed without hesitation.

"Hold the sword of truth and make a covenant with me!" Loki held the sword and motioned Li Jie to hold the end of the hilt.

Li Jie looked at Loki and nodded, then held the Sword of Truth. However, before Li Jie was about to follow Loki in reading the covenant, he finally discovered what was different about Loki in this world.

Many inexplicable things, such as why Odin, Frigga and others loved Loki so much instead of their own son Thor, were now explained.

Because at the moment of grasping the Sword of Truth, the power of the Sword of Truth revealed the truth, and Li Jie saw a different Loki, not a slightly weak and feminine male Loki.

She was a noble goddess with peerless beauty and heroic spirit! Li Jie understood everything at this moment. Loki was a goddess!

The smell of blood and frost was as thick as the thick, lingering fermentation smell in a closed cellar, rushing straight into the nose, irritating the lungs in the most pungent, irritating, and unbearable way. If you don't like or are not used to this strong sexual smell, your first reaction when you smell it is probably to vomit.

Like many people who are not used to drinking, as long as they step into the underground wine cellar used for fermentation and smell the alcohol molecules floating in the air, they will feel intoxicated.

Frigga was used to this smell. As Odin's wife, she was used to the strong sexual smell of her husband every time he returned from battle.

The one sleeping peacefully in the cradle was her son, Thor, who was less than three years old. He was much stronger and more active than other children. It was rare to see him sleeping so peacefully and lovingly.

Every mother wants her child to grow up healthy and strong. Frigga was somewhat dissatisfied with Odin's swaggering appearance in Asgard.

Because the strong sexual aura on his body and the frosty smell left by the battle with the Frost Giants just now might hurt the young Thor.

Chapter 46: Prince of the Frost Giants

Frigga stood up from the cradle and saw her husband Odin walking slowly towards her. She knew this war was unusual.

In the years of fighting with the Frost Giants, the God Realm has endured a lot of suffering. Although the Frost Giants are not well educated, they are born with the powerful frost magic, and almost every giant born is a strong one.

Therefore, although the number of frost giants is small, it is extremely difficult to deal with them. This war is the largest conflict in many years.

Odin once said that as long as they won this war, Asgard would have at least several decades, or even hundreds of years of peace.

Odin did not look like a triumphant king. A corner of his helmet was missing, and his armor was covered with traces of battle. There was still unwashed blue blood on his lightning scepter, which was from the frost giant.

Frigga frowned and said, "Odin, don't wake Thor." She gently drew a line in front of Odin's feet, and a golden line appeared, reminding him to be careful not to disturb the child.

Odin stopped helplessly: "Our child is not that fragile, Frigga. He won't be scared by the smell of blood."

"Growing up smelling blood, I don't think it's good for a child's growth. He will become very violent." Frigga did not give in. She walked in front of Odin and motioned him to stay away from Thor's cradle.

At the same time, Frigga casually set up a magic circle for Thor's sleeping area to prevent disturbing him. She looked at Odin, who was in a mess, but was fine

after magic testing, and she smiled slightly.

"Yes, we won." Odin did not look happy, which puzzled Frigga. She asked, "What's wrong, my majesty?"

"It's just a small problem, but I have to face it. I don't know whether I should kill her, but when I saw her, I really couldn't do it." Odin's voice was hesitant, and he stretched out his left hand, which had been covered by his cloak.

In the strong and powerful arms, a quiet baby is sleeping. She lies quietly in Odin's arms, sleeping peacefully, very cute.

"Oh my God, what is this?" Frigga felt a familiar feeling from the child.

"The prince of the Frost Giants, and also my niece." A look of reminiscence flashed across Odin's face. "This is the child of my sister and the Frost Giant."

"I don't know whether I should kill her. Because of that damn political marriage, my sister married Laofei. Her birth was a mistake! But I don't know what to do." There was hesitation in Odin's eyes and lightning flashed in his hands, as if he was ready to destroy this young life at any time.

Frigga quickly took the baby from Odin's arms and glared at him sternly: "Don't touch her! Look, what a cute little angel!"

The baby girl woke up due to Frigga's action and opened her big eyes, which were clearly black and white, revealing the innocence and cuteness unique to babies. She was not afraid of strangers at all. Frigga gently teased the baby girl's cheeks with her fingers, and she giggled and grabbed Frigga's fingers and tried to put them in her mouth to suck.

Frigga immediately fell in love with the baby girl: "You can't touch her, Odin. Since Asgard has made a mistake, it shouldn't do it again! Do you really want to kill your niece?"

"But she is the descendant of the Frost Giants after all. If..." Odin was still a little hesitant.

"No ifs, Odin! From today on, she is our daughter." Frigga kissed the baby girl, obviously loving her very much, even more than her naughty son.

"But how do you explain the sudden appearance of a daughter?" Odin looked at Frigga's determination and knew that he could not change her decision. Moreover, Odin could not kill a baby, not to mention that she was the only blood of his sister, who had passed away. Was he going to kill her daughter as well? Odin was not that cruel.

Frigga kissed Odin's cheek and said, "Odin, you must be tired after so many years of fighting. Come live with me in the summer palace for a few years. Even gods will get tired if they stay away from all this trouble. You are tired, and Asgard is tired too. After the war, everyone needs a rest."

"When we come back from the summer palace, we can tell the people of Asgard that we have a second child!" Frigga whispered her plan.

Odin glanced at Frigga, then looked at the sleeping Thor and the laughing baby girl. Finally, he nodded: "Okay, I'll listen to you, Frigga."

Frigga hugged Odin and rested her head on his broad shoulders: "Have you decided on a name for this child?"

Odin nodded: "She will become the most dazzling goddess in Asgard. I will name her Loki!"

Note 1: In the Norse story, Odin and Loki's biological mother had an old relationship. I have adapted it here and changed Loki's biological mother to Odin's sister.

Note 2: In the Norse story, Laufey is the name of Loki's mother, and his father is called Farbti. But in the well-known Thor movie, Loki's father is set to be Laufey. Here, I follow the Marvel setting so that everyone can get used to it.

Asgard's summer palace is a place for the king and queen to relax, just like the emperors in the human world have more than one palace.

Odin and his ancestors did not always live in the fairy palace of Asgard. This palace is not only Odin's residence, but also the core of Asgard's power.

In the palace, Odin needs to handle government affairs, deal with various trivial matters, receive messengers from other gods, and maintain the balance between the gods. These are his responsibilities. Therefore, living in the fairy palace,

Odin must always maintain a highly tense mental state. Even for a person who can live for 5,000 years, such a busy and fast pace would be unbearable.

Therefore, the gods have their own ways to relax, such as drinking and moderate fighting. But these are mostly male activities, or more accurately, the pastimes of those rough and aggressive people.

Odin's wife, the Phantom Queen Frigga, did not like this. Drinking a lot or watching gladiatorial fights were both extremely boring to her. Frigga was a goddess who was proficient in magic, and knowledge was the foundation of becoming a magician. Her rational thinking made her instinctively dislike drinking, and even more dislike watching violent gladiatorial fights.

She would rather take care of the magic herbs she planted in the garden and read various books that can increase her knowledge. This is the life she enjoys. After the Frost Giant War, Asgard ushered in a long period of peace, and the tense nerves were relieved. As Frigga said, Odin needs rest, and Asgard also needs rest.

At this time, Asgard needed to be governed by inaction. So, Odin followed Frigga to the Summer Palace, a smaller and more exquisite palace, to start his rest time.

Except for the puppet servants made by Frigga, no outsiders are allowed to enter the Summer Palace. Compared with the Fairyland Palace, it is more private for the family and more like a real home.

At the age of eight, Loki has grown into a lovely little girl, with long black hair as quiet and charming as the night sky, and a pair of gem-like blue eyes, which makes her unique.

"Mother, how do I read this passage?" Loki sat quietly in Frigga's arms, holding a thick book, pointing at the words she couldn't understand and asked.

This is a book about phantom magic. For a child of Loki's age, such a boring book should not be welcomed. However, Loki is deeply immersed in this ocean of knowledge. For her, wasting time on meaningless play is far less interesting than swimming in the world of knowledge.

Frigga stroked Loki's long, smooth hair and asked lovingly, "Loki, you've been

reading for a long time. Do you want to take a break?"

"I'm still very energetic!" Loki rejected Frigga's suggestion and continued to pester her mother with questions.

Just as the mother and daughter were talking in a low voice, Frigga's eldest son, Thor, the eldest prince of Asgard, walked in. He was much stronger than the average eleven-year-old child, and even in Asgard, he seemed stronger than the little gods of the same age.

From a distance, Loki could smell the strong odor of sweat and the disgusting stench of mud. As expected, Thor strode into the palace with the appearance of someone who had rolled out of a mud puddle, and the wet mud dripped onto the floor, making a clattering sound.

"Thor! Where have you been?" Frigga was surprised to see Thor's appearance. He now looked more like a beggar than a prince.

"I made a bet with Sif and the others that I can defeat the giant salamander in the mud puddle! Look, I won, and this is my trophy!" Thor showed off by pulling out an exquisite little sword from behind him. The sword did not look like the weapons made by the dwarves commonly seen in Asgard, but more like a product of the elves, small and exquisite.

However, because Thor was covered in mud, this supposedly exquisite little sword was also covered in mud and water, completely losing its original appearance.

"Loki, this sword is for you!" Thor walked towards his sister generously and handed the sword covered with smelly mud to Loki.

Loki's jewel-like blue eyes examined the mud on the sword and said with disgust, "How disgusting." She waved her hand gently, and the weak magic lifted the sword in Thor's hand and pushed it away, but she did not throw it away directly. Instead, she used magic to place the sword on a table far away, making sure that at this distance, she could not smell the smell.

Then she glanced at Thor again and whispered to Frigga, "Thor stinks! Can you give him a bath?"

"What?" Frigga looked at Loki, a little confused. Then Loki quickly explained what she meant by taking a bath.

She flicked her fingers lightly, and a ball of water element appeared out of thin air, then quickly wrapped around Thor and began to spin him, the whole process as if he was thrown into a washing machine.

Loki quickly used the water element to wash Thor clean, and the dirty mud was washed out of the window and fell into the river outside the palace. Thor experienced a baptism like being stirred by a washing machine, and at this moment he couldn't help coughing. However, his whole body, from head to toe, from clothes to hair, was brand new. Because Loki used the water element to bathe, there were no water stains on Thor's body, but his skin turned red due to the intense friction.

Loki finally breathed a sigh of relief. It turned out that she had not dared to breathe since Thor came in. Frigga touched Loki's head with a mixture of anger and amusement: "He is your brother, you shouldn't treat him like this."

"But he stinks!" Loki said seriously, taking a closer look at Thor and the elven sword on the table in the distance. She whispered in Frigga's ear to make sure Thor couldn't hear: "And Thor is too stupid! The evil giant salamander is a difficult monster to deal with, as written in the book. Even Asgard's elite soldiers need to form a team and develop a strategy to deal with it."

"An elven hidden blade is not worth the risk, he is so stupid!" Loki complained to Frigga quietly. She looked at Thor who was still coughing.

Frigga stroked Loki's little face: "Thor wanted to give you a gift to make you happy." Despite this, Loki still insisted: "But he is really too stupid."

……

"It's about time we return to Asgard, Frigga." Under the cover of night, Odin sat in a chair beside the fireplace, looking at the blazing fire.

"I'm a little worried, Odin." Frigga walked up to Odin with a worried look on her face.

"What are you worried about?" Odin embraced her gently.

"Loki is so outstanding. Her magical attainments are far beyond her peers. Her gem-like eyes are as deep as blue magic stones. You know why I have never let her leave the summer palace." Frigga hugged her husband and expressed her concerns.

"She has the blood of Asgard and Frost Giants. She has the advantages of both races but no obvious disadvantages. The more outstanding she is, the more attention she will attract. You know what this means." Frigga patted Odin's shoulder.

Odin nodded slightly. Loki's control over power was not enough at the moment, and she could not control it at will. It would be troublesome if the power of the frost giants was accidentally leaked. I'm afraid she would have to wait until she reached adulthood before she could truly control it.

Odin nodded and said, "I will find a way. The Phantom Cloak given by the Vanir is still in the treasury. It is a divine weapon and may be able to help Loki."

"Why did I become like this?" Loki was not satisfied with her new look, so she put on the phantom cloak given by Odin. This artifact made her original appearance invisible.

Originally a beautiful girl, but now she has become an ordinary boy. Loki doesn't like this and asks her mother Frigga about it.

"Because you are amazing, baby." Frigga kissed little Loki. "You are much better than ordinary children, even if they are gods."

"Isn't this good?" Luo Ji was confused.

"Of course not, my little Loki. But this will cause a lot of trouble, especially for your brother Thor." Frigga explained patiently. Because she couldn't reveal the truth, she couldn't tell Loki in order to hide the aura of the Frost Giant in her.

"For Thor's what?" Loki still didn't understand.

Frigga smiled. She and Odin had discussed how to find a suitable excuse to tell Loki. They regarded Loki as a child, perhaps because of her cute appearance and angelic temperament, which made people unconsciously relax their vigilance. They did not expect that today's poor excuse would have such a great impact on

the future.

"Because you are so outstanding, even smarter than Thor. Do you know what this means to a girl?" Frigga asked Loki.

Loki shook her head, not understanding what was wrong. Frigga continued, "Because of Thor's identity, he is the prince of Asgard and the future king of the gods."

"He must be better than other children of his age, otherwise he won't be able to convince others." Frigga thought Loki might not understand, so she changed her words in a way she thought Loki could understand.

"As a younger sister, you are too good. Thor will appear to be useless. Just like the magic you performed that day, your magic control level is close to that of many adult gods. No one has ever been able to do this at your age."

"So, am I going to be the foil for that big fool? He is so stupid, why doesn't he let me be the king of Asgard in the future!" Loki pouted in dissatisfaction.

"Silly child." Frigga smiled and said, "There has never been a female king in Asgard. Considering that Thor fought with the giant salamander to win the elven hidden blade in order to please you, you should give in to him occasionally!"

Chapter 47 Value

Frigga knew very well that although Loki was disgusted by the muddy dagger, she still put it in her own collection after cleaning it.

Although Loki has a sharp tongue, she actually has a soft heart. Frigga thought so and couldn't help but kiss little Loki again.

Compared to her own son, Frigga favored Loki even more. There is no doubt that even Odin, who initially considered killing Loki, became more and more fond of her during these eight years.

Because Loki is a girl, Odin has almost no defense against her. If it were a boy, Odin might take all kinds of precautions, even favoring Thor.

However, just because Loki was a girl, Odin naturally eliminated his vigilance. In particular, Loki was smart and well-behaved, and she was more loved by Odin and his wife than her brother Thor, who always got into trouble and made people worry.

Therefore, Odin gave Loki the artifact-level Phantom Cloak without hesitation as a birthday gift for her eighth birthday.

As for why he disguised Loki as a boy, Odin had a more far-reaching plan. He was not sure that his sister Laofei had given birth to a daughter without being known to outsiders.

Odin wanted to completely cut off Loki's connection with the Frost Giants and treat her as his own daughter and a member of Asgard. Loki's appearance, if calculated based on the time when Odin returned to Asgard after conquering the Frost Giants, was too coincidental. Odin did not want too many accidents to happen.

He had already planned that letting Loki hide her identity as a boy was only a

temporary measure. When Thor could stand on his own, he would step down as the king of the gods and pass the throne to Thor.

That was the day when Loki would reveal her true identity. Odin made various preparations for this. However, as the saying goes: plans cannot keep up with changes.

Both Odin and Frigga are extremely powerful as gods, but as parents, they are still somewhat inadequate. Odin's education of Thor was a failure.

He wanted to train Thor to become an outstanding ruler, but various problems arose in the process.

Thor's rebelliousness was the most difficult problem. But Odin didn't realize that a bigger hidden danger had already been lurking.

Neither he nor Frigga are good at lying, and they are far inferior to Loki in this regard. As mentioned many times in the text, as long as it is a lie, there will always be flaws.

Once a flaw is discovered, more lies are needed to cover it up, thus creating a vicious cycle.

……

Today is an ordinary day for Asgard, and the people of God's Domain live their lives as usual. Loki, disguised as Loki, tastes mead at the famous tavern "Harvest Festival" in God's Domain.

It has been more than ten years since she returned from the Summer Palace. More than ten years ago, she returned to Asgard as the second prince of Asgard. Odin claimed that this was the second son he and Frigga had in the Summer Palace.

The divine realm held a grand celebration to welcome the birth of the second prince.

More than a decade later, Loki is no longer the ignorant girl she was back then. She understands the deep meaning of Frigga's words back then.

Women in Asgard cannot be kings. If she, as the second princess, shows excellence far beyond her foolish brother, where will Thor's prestige be?

I'm afraid other gods will laugh at Thor's incompetence, he is the only heir to Asgard!

Even worse, if Thor suffers a blow and loses confidence, can he still successfully take over Asgard? These are questions to be answered.

Loki matured much earlier than most people, and she understood this deeply. After understanding this, Loki, as Thor's "younger brother", now acts very low-key.

"Loki! Are you drinking to drown your sorrows again?" The one who came to greet him was Thor's childhood playmate, Sif, one of the Valkyries.

Loki glanced at Sif, tasted the mead, and asked with a smile: "You didn't go to see Thor today?"

Loki knew that Sif liked Thor and had liked him since she was a child. She didn't understand why that silly boy liked her, so she felt very sympathetic towards Sif.

"No, Thor is going to catch a flying goat today!" The flying goat that Sif mentioned is not just a flying goat, but a real mythical beast that is more difficult to deal with than a dragon. In the historical records of Asgard, there are only a few gods who can capture a flying goat as a mount.

Capturing the Flying Goat is a symbol of force, but also extremely dangerous.

"Heh!" Luo Ji smiled with a hint of contempt, "Is my brother showing off his military prowess again?"

Sif knew that Loki and Thor had very different personalities. Loki was quieter, while Thor was more lively and keen on showing off his martial arts skills.

"It's not just a show of force, Loki. Thor is preparing for war," Sif explained simply.

"And maybe you'll have to take part in this war too!"

"Hmm?" Loki replied nonchalantly. However, no one expected that this war would profoundly affect some of Loki's inner thoughts.

War. This word is familiar to any nation or civilization. Any race or civilization that has survived on the world stage has experienced the baptism of blood and fire.

Without bloodshed and sacrifice, there would be no peace and rights. This is what many civilizations regard as the truth, even gods are no exception. The legendary war of gods, the battle between good and evil in the story...

No matter how it is packaged and beautified, the essence is cruel and evil. Although Asgard defeated the Frost Giants, it does not mean that Asgard will no longer have enemies.

The universe is vast, so vast that no one knows where its boundaries are. The universe is also pitifully small, too small to accommodate several civilizations coexisting in the same starry sky.

Asgard has enemies to eliminate, because there will always be people who call on the gods for protection. Those believers who are enslaved by evil gods live in the dark abyss.

They prayed to the gods they believed in for relief. Odin no longer put on his armor to go into battle. Since he had completely defeated the Frost Giants last time, no enemy was worthy of his personal attack.

Now, the military power of Asgard has been handed over to his son, Thor! He needs to accumulate experience and prestige to inherit the throne in the future. Otherwise, how can he convince other gods?

Asgard is a powerful tribe of gods, and this power comes from Odin's many years of wars. The evil gods he defeated are piled up enough to fill an asteroid.

Thor also needs to use the same method to prove himself, just like he is doing now, leading two thousand elite Asgard warriors to attack an evil god who occupies the Death Star - Asmodeus, the god of desire.

As the god of desire, Asmodeus is affected by his ministry far more than ordinary people are affected by desire. When he himself is deeply trapped in the

sea of desire, he becomes a terrible evil god. The greater his desire, the greater his power. This Death Star was once the planet where he was the master, but now it has become a desert with no trace of life.

Asmodeus destroyed more than one planet. Under the guidance of his followers, Odin sent Thor to lead his army to attack Asmodeus.

On the Sun Boat, Thor proudly walked up to Loki with the newly captured flying goat: "Loki... Loki! Look, my newly captured flying goat. Do you want to try riding it? I finally tamed it these few days. Now you don't have to worry about getting hurt when riding it!" He had an expression of anticipation for praise.

Thor was praised by other Asgardian gods for catching the flying goat. Because the flying goat has a violent temper and agility, few gods can really tame them as mounts.

Loki glanced at Thor and said lazily, "I'm so happy for you, brother." She sat on the deck of the sun boat, looking at the magic book casually.

"Hmm." Thor felt hurt by Loki's cold attitude, and he didn't know how to continue the conversation. Fortunately, his messenger came to rescue him: "We are almost at our destination."

After hearing the messenger's words, Thor and Loki both stood up. They sailed in the universe on the solar boat for nearly three months (the speed of the solar boat was close to the speed of light) and finally arrived at the destination of this trip.

A yellow-brown planet appeared in everyone's sight. The broken atmosphere and light refraction made the surface of the planet look extremely strange in space. It was hard to imagine that it was a green planet full of vitality a few years ago.

Thor had come to this planet with Odin at that time, but now it is lifeless.

"Asmodeus, the god of desire, is proficient in mental magic and has a strong ability to confuse people. He can arouse the most primitive desires, including greed, lust, killing and other negative emotions." Loki closed the magic book and said seriously.

"That's why my father asked me to help you, right, Thor." Loki glanced at Thor. Thor nodded: "Yes, because in Asgard, besides my mother, you are the best at using mind magic."

"Okay, I understand. Thor, help me set up a defensive formation so I can quickly deal with Asmodeus. The evil god controlled by desire is not difficult to deal with. We just need to..."

Thor interrupted Loki before she could finish her words: "No, you are not allowed to join the battle."

"What?" Loki was a little confused. "If I'm not going to join the war, then you brought me so far to Asgard just to cheer you up? That's ridiculous."

"I need you to build a mental magic barrier for everyone to avoid being affected by the God of Desire." Thor looked at the silent planet and answered Loki.

"Just for this?" Loki said in disbelief: "I can deal with Asmodeus in a simple way, just once..."

"No! You are not allowed to join the battle!" Thor interrupted Loki rudely.

"Why?" Loki stared at Thor and asked without giving in.

"You know why!" Thor did not back down from Loki's question. The messenger next to him did not understand what the two brothers were talking about.

The commander-in-chief of this battle is Thor, and whatever he says goes. Moreover, Thor has won many battles and accumulated considerable prestige in Asgard.

He firmly stated that Loki did not need to participate in the battle, but only needed to help everyone maintain the mental defense line on the solar boat. Loki finally compromised with Thor, although she believed that she had a better way to resolve the battle.

But in order to maintain Thor's authority, she did not object, but pulled Thor aside and quietly made some suggestions.

"Impossible, your method is too shameful. That kind of awful way to win is not

what I want." Loki's method was to let Thor trap Asmodeus.

Chapter 48 True Colors

The power of the God of Desire comes from people's desires, and his strength depends on how much desire his enemies have. Loki asked Thor to restrain him first, and then she sealed everyone's hearts so that they could not have desires. They fought a protracted war until the God of Desire was exhausted.

This battle was not spectacular, and it was not a test of courage, but of caution. Thor instinctively did not like this approach, because he was Odin's son and should fight like Odin, which was what he had been taught since he was a child.

Odin would not win in such a cowardly way. Even if he won, he would be looked down upon. Such a battle would not become a hymn and would not be sung by the gods!

Young Thor is eager to prove himself and prove that he is a qualified king of Asgard. Defeating a real god is the best way for him to show himself.

He didn't listen to Loki's advice. He firmly believed that he could defeat the God of Desire in his own way! He wanted to win an epic victory and let Thor's name resound throughout the universe!

When leading two thousand soldiers away, Loki could only rely on the magic circle to provide mental protection for everyone on the solar boat. The battle was extremely fierce, and even in space, Loki could feel the heat.

The planet was shaking, and the air was filled with the smell of killing and despair. Loki realized that Thor did not act according to her plan, and he fought in the way he was most accustomed to.

The eye of the storm in the center of the planet is proof of this. When Thor, the god of storms and thunder, unleashes all his divine power to create a lightning storm, the huge eye of the storm covers one-third of the planet.

Thor tried his best, and the eye of the storm lasted for nearly two rotations of the earth before slowly dissipating.

Loki breathed a sigh of relief when Thor carried the head of the god of desire and led the warriors back to the sun boat.

"Is this the price of your victory, Thor? Three hundred and eighty-one lives, three hundred and thirty-five seriously injured, and seven hundred and twenty slightly injured." The solar boat then set off back to Asgard.

However, Loki did not attend the warriors' celebration banquet. She took Thor to a deserted place and questioned him coldly.

This tone displeased Thor. This was a victory, not a defeat! They had defeated an ancient god. What did Loki mean by this tone? Was it an accountability?

Thor was a little unhappy, but tried to remain calm and said, "Sacrifices are inevitable in war. Our opponent is a senior god, so this loss is not that big, Loki." In private, Thor called Loki by her name.

"I told you long ago, if I had participated, or used my method, we wouldn't have won so miserably!" Loki was blunt. She thought Thor was extremely stupid. He had better choices but chose the worst one.

Just like the elven sword that year, he could have bought it from the elven shop at a reasonable price, but he chose the stupidest way - killing the evil beast giant salamander to exchange it. In Luo Ji's opinion, both of these things were incomprehensible.

But Thor doesn't think so, or his way of thinking is completely different from Loki's. For him, some things are necessary, even necessary, such as the way of victory. Thor doesn't think his way of victory is ugly.

"Embarrassed?" Thor's mouth twitched. "Do you know how powerful the God of Desire is? When we were fighting bloody battles, you were just maintaining the magic on the solar boat! What qualifications do you have to blame me?!"

"I said, I can join the battle, I have a way to deal with the God of Desire! Just one mind purification and he will lose his resistance!" Loki revealed his strategy, but this angered Thor.

"Enough! I know you are outstanding, you have always been outstanding, and you have been smarter than me since you were a child! But you shouldn't order me around in everything. You are not allowed to participate in the war!" Thor said firmly.

"Why?" Loki almost lost control. If Thor couldn't give a reasonable explanation, she would make Thor pay the price.

"Because you are a girl!" Thor said as a matter of course, but it completely angered Loki.

Her eyes were filled with magic power, and a huge hand appeared in the void. Bang! The huge hand clenched into a fist and smashed towards Thor fiercely. Thor had exhausted all his strength due to the fierce battle with the God of Desire and was unable to avoid this attack.

He was hit and flew dozens of meters away, breaking through several walls.

"Thor! You are the most heartless bastard I have ever seen!" Loki left a curse and walked away. She decided to report the matter to Odin after returning to the Asgard.

……

In the God's Domain, Odin and his wife are waiting for Thor and Loki to come back. Thor proudly parades around the God's Domain with the head of the God of Desire, and countless gods and people cheer for him.

Luo Ji had no interest in this, she thought this behavior was stupid. The way of fighting was stupid, the way of celebrating was stupid, and the people celebrating were even stupider!

Odin and Frigga did not participate in the parade either, because that was Thor's stage, and they let him perform on his own. The couple waited for her return at Loki's palace early in the morning.

"Do you think she will like this gift?" Odin asked his wife Frigga as he carried a small bamboo basket with a kitten in it.

"She will like it. Since Thor has a flying goat, she should also have a pet. This

black cat sent by the Ancient Taiqiu is just right. It is the best companion for the wise wizard." Frigga patted her husband's hand.

For Loki, Odin and Frigga's love is beyond compare. What Thor has, Loki must have, and it will only be better, not inferior. And what Thor doesn't have, Loki can also have. In the whole Asgard, only Odin and his wife and Thor know Loki's true gender. So although everyone can feel that Loki is particularly favored, Thor never feels jealous, because in Thor's view, taking care of his sister is a matter of course.

When Loki returned to Asgard and met Odin and Frigga, she couldn't help but tell them everything that happened on the way: "Thor's decision is too stupid. It's a waste of the lives of Asgard warriors!"

Loki's words made Odin and his wife fall into silence. After a while, Odin asked: "Do you think Thor did something wrong?"

"He is too arrogant and always thinks that bravery can solve everything. But he is gambling with the lives of Asgard's outstanding warriors, and everyone has to take risks with him. Father, he can't go on like this!" Loki said seriously.

"I know Thor is the future king of Asgard, but he can't act so rashly. I ask to be allowed to command an army alone. I don't ask for more power than Thor, but I hope he understands that there is always an appropriate way to fight. He can't joke about the future of Asgard!" Loki said firmly.

"Do you know what you are saying, Loki?!" Odin looked at her in surprise. "Do you know what this means? If you really do this, others will think I want to make you king!"

"Why not?" Loki thought there was nothing wrong with that. "Would I do worse than Thor? At least I won't sacrifice the lives of my warriors for my personal glory! This is absurd and wrong!"

Odin and Frigga were silent at this moment. If Loki was really their biological son instead of their niece, Odin would definitely train Loki instead of Thor. Loki was more outstanding and smarter. In comparison, Thor was more suitable to be a war god instead of a king of gods.

However, there is no if. Putting aside Loki's identity, the fact that she is a woman

alone makes it impossible for her to inherit the throne of Asgard. After all, although Asgard is controlled by Odin, the ancient gods have stipulated that women cannot be kings.

They set the initial rule that women were not allowed to inherit the throne, which was engraved in the laws of Asgard like an iron law. And Odin did not think that women were suitable to be the king of the gods, so he answered without hesitation: "Asgard women cannot be kings!"

"Shouldn't the throne be based on ability? If Thor is really capable, why should you worry, my father!" Loki seemed very persistent about this matter.

"Rules are rules." Odin doted on Loki in other matters, but he would not give in on this matter because it involved too many complicated issues.

In fact, the seeds were planted long before he lied to Luo Ji. Cause and effect cycle, unchanged for thousands of years.

The conversation between Loki and Odin ended unpleasantly, and only Frigga was left to accompany Loki. She hugged Loki, patted her back gently and said, "Your brother just needs time to prove himself."

Loki lowered her head and almost murmured to herself: "He has time to prove himself, but what about me? Am I going to follow Thor forever like a waste?"

Frigga didn't know how to comfort Loki. She was smart and outstanding, but she had no stage to display her talents. This might be the saddest thing for her.

Odin left, but the bamboo basket he left behind was still there. A pure black kitten jumped out of the basket, as if it had known Loki for a long time and recognized her as its owner.

It jumped onto Loki's shoulder and licked her earlobe with its little tongue. Loki took a look at the pure black kitten and held it in her arms. Loki removed her disguise and revealed her true female appearance.

Her long black hair and jewel-like blue eyes were her trademarks. Frigga gently stroked her daughter's long hair, and she was helpless to see Loki depressed. Suddenly, Loki's long hair broke at shoulder length.

"Loki!" Frigga knew that Loki did it herself. She used magic to cut her long hair short. But Frigga didn't understand why Loki did it.

"Mom, they are all wrong." Loki hugged the kitten and whispered, "Asgard cannot be destroyed by Thor in this way. Give me some time, I will prove myself!"

Loki's eyes were full of determination, and Frigga could only hug her beloved daughter tightly to support her.

……

Li Jie held the Sword of Truth and looked at Loki's face, a little absent-minded. He felt that he must be being played a joke on someone. Wait, could this be Loki's new magic? In fact, he had been confused by Loki from the beginning?

The more Li Jie thought about it, the more he thought it was possible. He wanted to loosen his hand holding the Sword of Truth, but the contract was being established and he couldn't give up halfway.

Only after the contract was signed did Li Jie let go of the sword of truth.

Since Li Jie had seen it, Loki took off her mask without hesitation: "I think we need to introduce ourselves again. I am the princess of Asgard, Loki."

"Uh, ha, uh." Li Jie could only squeeze out a string of incomprehensible mumblings. He felt that his worldview was about to collapse.

! ! ! ! !

Chapter 49 Luo Ji is a girl

If you tell me to believe Loki's transformation into Loki, I will try to believe it. Just pick up a random girl, dress her up, and put on makeup. Then use magic to create some special effects, and then use mind magic to quietly influence her a few times. Then act according to the script, and use magic to enhance the parts that are not enough, just like Duang did.

Wherever it is not enough, just Duang it to strengthen it, and then rely on magic to Duang here and there at will. This is too fake and unrealistic. Readers can tell at a glance that this is done by magic special effects.

If you want me to believe that Loki became Loki, from a man to a woman, I have to verify whether she is a real girl first. If I think she is, I will recommend her to other members of the Night's Watch. Only when everyone agrees can we confirm that she is...

Li Jie felt like he was possessed by Jackie Chan these days, and kept thinking back to the anti-hair loss shampoo commercial endorsed by Jackie Chan. He was not sure if Jackie Chan in this world was the same, as whatever product he endorsed would be a failure.

Anyway, Li Jie knew that this anti-hair loss shampoo would be doomed sooner or later. Once the Illuminati's hair growth water was on the market, all anti-hair loss products in the world would be out of business.

Hmm? Why did I think of anti-hair loss shampoo and hair toner? That's right, because Loki is a girl. But you can't make me believe it just because Loki turned into Loki, I have to...

The above roughly describes Li Jie's state of mind these days. He feels that his three perspectives are shattered to pieces, so shattered that even super glue and talcum powder can't put them back together.

Ever since he found out that Loki, no, Loki was actually a girl, Li Jie felt that everything was out of control and had gone too far. All the previous statements, including the plan, instantly became meaningless.

"So, do you really want to be the king of Asgard?" Li Jie asked cautiously. This was the 20th time he had secretly talked to Loki in the past few days.

He had only one purpose, to prove that he was not dreaming that day. Luo Ji had indeed signed an agreement with him, and he had really agreed to help Luo Ji ascend the throne.

Just now, Loki arranged five mixed forces of two hundred elves and Asgards to go to the front line for reconnaissance. This is her daily routine.

As a commander, she shouldn't do everything herself, but she had to do it because Odin and Thor left a deep mark on the Asgard army.

This style of play seemed foolish to Loki, who was looking for the enemy's main force and then charging headfirst. Indeed, finding the main force for a decisive battle was the most satisfying way to win, but this was based on the premise that the opponent was obviously weaker than Asgard.

When encountering an opponent of equal strength, it is hard to say whether the final battle will be won. It was OK when Odin led the army, because he was extremely powerful and not many other gods dared to challenge him one-on-one.

So Odin can fight with overwhelming force, because he is strong and can lead the whole army. But compared with Odin, the gap is not a little bit.

However, Thor was more determined to fight the decisive battle than Odin, which made Loki disdainful. Fortunately, she led the battle, not Thor.

The opponent is not a soft persimmon that can be easily bullied, but the coalition of frost giants and dark elves, the eternal enemy of Asgard. In the past, the elves and Asgard had joined forces to defeat the dark elves.

For the Dark Elves, Asgard is equally annoying. Neither of these two opponents is easy to mess with. The only good thing is that the opponent's main general is not the Frost Giant leader Laufey or the Dark Elves King Malekith.

If any of them showed up, the lead in the battle would not fall into the hands of Loki or Thor, but Odin and the Elf Queen would fight together.

Because the opponent was not yet strong enough for the younger generation to deal with, Odin and the Elf Queen organized this war as a training for the young people.

In fact, war is like playing in the NBA. Even if you are the No. 1 pick in the draft and are invincible in the college league, you are still a novice in the NBA and have to start from scratch.

It takes time to train new players, and war is more cruel than the NBA. If you don’t play well, you may lose your job at most, but if you don’t fight well, you may lose your life.

Although the conflict between the Dark Elves and the Elves did not reach the level of a full-scale war, it was already a high-intensity confrontation. They were testing whether the long-term peace would weaken the fighting power of Asgard and the Elves.

Once the two kingdoms show any sign of weakness, Malekith or Laufey will personally lead their armies to attack, and all-out war is inevitable.

However, since the beginning of the war, Loki's performance has satisfied everyone. She used skillful tactics to lure the enemy deep into the territory and then cut them off. This is a strategy that Asgard has never used before...

A few thousand men can completely wipe out tens of thousands of enemy troops. A thousand men can break through the siege, cut off the connection of ten thousand enemies, and make them focus on the front and not the rear. Using the tactic of concentrating forces, three thousand Asgardian soldiers plus one thousand elves are enough to defeat the coalition of ten thousand dark elves and frost giants.

Loki completely changed Asgard's traditional way of fighting. The main force decisive battle is the most formal way of fighting, but it must be done when it is worth it. Loki feels that the current war is not worth investing so much.

This is not a total war, she does not need to rely on Asgard and the Elven soldiers to achieve her own reputation. Her tactics are not gorgeous, not glorious,

and do not meet the standards of epic praise. No poet will praise her. But Loki does not care about these superficial things. She pursues substance, not empty reputation.

The essence is to become the king of Asgard. She believes that the soldiers will understand who is the better leader. Is it the general who died in battle and left a false reputation, or the general who won the war and lived to enjoy the glory?

So when Li Jie asked her again if she really wanted to be the king of Asgard, Loki was a little annoyed: "Li! If you want to keep talking nonsense, can you wait until bedtime and close your eyes before talking!"

How can you talk nonsense with your mouth shut? Li Jie grinned: "I just can't figure out some things suddenly, Luo...Luo Ji." He still couldn't adapt to the fact that Loki became Loki.

"You don't have to think too clearly about some things. Just let Thor stay on Earth. When he recovers his divine power, let him become the patron saint of the Earth. A branch of the Asgard pantheon, this will benefit both Asgard and him." Loki said quickly. She still had a lot of things to do: "Anything else? If not, please get out!"

"Okay, okay." Li Jie said quickly: "There is only one thing. Because you gave me that thunder knife before, I don't understand why you gave it to me now."

The previous assumptions were all based on the male Loki's ambition, but after Loki became Loki, many assumptions were no longer valid. He tossed and turned because he couldn't figure out the things that happened, and it was difficult for him to fall asleep.

"I originally thought that the Thunder Blade was a foreshadowing for me to deal with Thor in the future. But now it seems that is not the case. Your relationship with Thor is not that bad. So..." Before Li Jie finished speaking, Loki took over.

"So you are guessing, because you won my favor the first time I saw you, and made a beautiful and intelligent goddess fall in love with you, so you asked the dwarves to put all their efforts into creating a magic weapon to give to your sweetheart." Loki had a smile on his lips and a strange look in his eyes.

Li Jie didn't know how to describe Luo Ji's expression at the moment, so he

could only nod silently: "Yeah!" Li Jie seemed very stupid at the moment. Luo Ji's gender change had a huge impact on him. Recently, his IQ plummeted and reached the lowest point in his life.

Now Li Jie has no clue, the matter is too bizarre, and he knows too little about the female Loki. She is completely different from the male Loki, so he can't make an accurate judgment.

Luo Ji looked at Li Jie and nodded shamelessly, and said sneerfully: "You are the most shameless and narcissistic man I have ever met."

"Then why did you give me the Thunder Blade?" Li Jie didn't care about Luo Ji's ridicule. Being ridiculed by a beauty, no, a goddess, wouldn't hurt him. He was more concerned about Luo Ji's motives.

However, Luo Ji obviously would not tell Li Jie her true intention. The corners of her mouth rose slightly: "Guess!" Then she drove Li Jie out of the room.

"Oh, by the way! Aren't you going to collect the combat data of the dark elves? I will arrange a patrol team tomorrow and you can go with them. But the prerequisite is that you restore your normal IQ." Loki suddenly opened the door, said this to Li Jie, and then closed the door again.

"Okay, let's put aside Loki and Loki for now. Let's go back to Earth and ask Thor. He's much easier to deal with than his sister." Li Jie patted his cheeks, cheered up, and prepared to hunt the dark elves tomorrow! To introduce such strange creatures, you must first understand their weaknesses!

Chapter 50 Eternal City

Some people believe that the elves may be related to an ancient race called the Eternals, one of whose more famous members is called the Titans. The Titans are considered one of the earliest civilizations in the world, and even the establishment of the Eternal City is considered to be their legacy. Although they did not leave detailed written records, astronomers have learned through bits of information and reasoning that these Eternal Titans were the founders of world civilization.

They are the seed sowers of civilization. Almost all known civilizations, especially those recorded in the Eternal City, are related to the Titans. No matter how subtle or inconspicuous this connection is. Some scholars firmly believe that the Titan civilization is the ancestor of existing civilizations. Only in this way can it explain why most known civilizations have similar biological forms, such as walking upright and having similar brains. It is surprising that many creatures have human-like characteristics. A possible explanation is that most known civilizations were actually created by more advanced civilizations, just like the Titans, according to their own templates.

There is a group of scholars who hold this view. They generally believe that the Titans are closely related to the ancient extinct gods in legends, and that the Titans may be the direct descendants of these gods.

Regarding the origin of elves and dark elves, many people do not believe that they were created by the Titan civilization. Some even speculate that elves may have been directly bred by some kind of power of the Titans, and are the product of power rather than simple life. However, this speculation has been questioned because no one has ever seen the true face of the Titans. The differences between elves and dark elves originate from their differences in self-beliefs and the origins of their birth.

The elves claimed that they were transformed from the World Tree and were

born to protect the World Tree. However, the dark elves disagreed. They tended to believe that they were derived from the power of the Titans. Due to different understandings of self-worth and beliefs, the two sides gradually became estranged.

The dark elves intend to look for the Titans, their former masters, but the elves disagree, because there are signs that the Titan civilization has disappeared in the universe, and the Eternals may have perished. According to limited information, the Titans love peace and do not even understand the meaning of killing. They have the power of creation and destruction, but prefer to live in peace. If the Titans do not want to be found, then no one can find them.

Therefore, the elves thought the dark elves' ideas were stupid. When the differences in beliefs and values could not be bridged and became larger and larger, the elves split. The dark elves left the elven kingdom and embarked on a journey to find the Titans. They were convinced that they could find the answer. The hidden dangers of this split eventually led to a war between the two tribes... The above content is excerpted from "The Past of the Elves - Origins and Differences".

Li Jie's eyes almost dazzled when he read this text. This was the little book that Luo Ji gave him before he left. It was worn out, many pages were missing, and there were traces of fire. Luo Ji said that there were many stories about dark elves in it. So, Li Jie took the time to read this book in the intervals between patrols to track down dark elf spies.

The content of the book was too profound, and many of the things mentioned were unfamiliar to Li Jie. He had to read other documents mentioned in the book to understand. The only part he could understand was the reason for the division of the elves, which involved differences in beliefs and values, and issues of self-identity. This kind of disagreement was the most difficult to reconcile, because the difference in values led to the elves and the dark elves dealing with affairs in completely opposite ways.

Compared to the inexplicable and illogical actions of the dark elves in the movie Thor in my previous life, many things now have reasonable explanations, and the war between the dark elves and the elves also has an understandable background. Is this what humans call a "battle for survival"?

With the outbreak of the war and the continued absence of any trace of the Titans, the dark elves' view of self-worth and faith has become increasingly dim, so have they become increasingly distorted, until now they have only the idea of destruction? Li Jie did not dare to jump to conclusions because he had too little information.

However, he only needed to know the general situation of the dispute between the dark elves and the elves, and did not need to know it in depth. After all, he was not an elf, and he had to solve the problems of humans and the earth! As the patrol team of Asgard and the dark elves moved forward for about two days, they finally found a place where the dark elf scouts stayed...

Li Jie held a long sword made by the dwarves, and the thunder sword was also ready at any time. He had to understand the capabilities of ordinary dark elf warriors before deciding how to lead them to the earth.

For Li Jie, fighting or accumulating reputation in exchange for skills or technology blueprints are essentially external tools. He never thought about sweeping the Marvel Universe or pursuing invincible power. He intuitively knew that this might bring serious consequences.

For example, in Past Lives and Present Lives, there is a well-known online novel website in China across the ocean, where the protagonists always go against the will of heaven, as if heaven owes them something. Li Jie never understood what heaven owed them.

Characters in novels often practice for decades or even hundreds of years to become extremely powerful beings who live as long as the heavens and the earth. But Li Jie didn't understand what the meaning of such pursuit was? Well, you became stronger, very strong, invincible in the world! Then what? What did you gain?

You are invincible, so what have you contributed to the world? After careful consideration, it seems that you have contributed nothing. In the process of pursuing supreme power, what is lost, no one can clearly say.

When a person gives up emotions for power, is he still a person? A so-called strong man lives for a thousand years but has no friends. Is such a life valuable?

In this world, even gods like Odin have friends and family. The strongest human

on earth, the Ancient One, also has a social circle. They are never isolated groups, and they will not practice for hundreds of years without caring about the world.

Their lives are completely dedicated to the great cause of cultivation, but such cultivation has no purpose, and they become stronger for some unknown reason. Is it to bully the weak in the future? Or when fighting for treasure, if someone looks at you, you will kill the whole family? Li Jie scoffed at this concept.

Odin's strength comes from his belief in Asgard. It is his responsibility to protect Asgard, so he becomes stronger for this goal. And the Ancient One becomes stronger because he wants to protect his hometown Earth, which he has been protecting for more than 500 years.

For them, power is just power, and strength is only a means to achieve their goals, a prerequisite. They become stronger to change the world, not to change the world in order to become stronger. Many people cannot understand this cause and effect relationship. Why can Li Jie unite various forces and influence others?

Because he embodies this spirit, many bigwigs subconsciously agree with Li Jie's core philosophy. No one, whether Li Jie or the people he knows, has ever become stronger simply for the sake of becoming stronger.

Tony Stark's Iron Armor has been constantly improving. Long before Li Jie came to Asgard, he heard that Tony's nano-metal transformation armor was close to success. Tony did not do this to show off his strength. For people like him, leaving something for the world is far more important than taking something from the world.

Ancient One never thought about immortality, nor did Odin, nor did Jizo. At present, Li Jie only knew that Dormammu longed for immortality, but was he still a human? Dormammu constantly plundered from various worlds, just to live for the sake of living. It was difficult for Li Jie to understand the meaning of such a long life.

Is this the ultimate life form that the strong pursue in the novel? If so, Li Jie would rather live only to 60 years old. The quality of life is far more valuable and meaningful than its length. Would you rather live a year like 365 identical days, or repeat a day 365 times? In Li Jie's opinion, most of those who practice

and fight all day are the latter.

What these people have experienced in their 6,000 years may not be as much as what Li Jie has experienced in his 60 years. Li Jie is a person with clear goals and self-planning. For him, strength is a ladder, and being invincible or not is not important. He has no intention of competing for the first place in the universe. As long as he is strong enough to accomplish what he wants to do, it is enough.

Do you control power, or does power control you? Li Jie gave his answer. He accumulated a lot of reputation points, but did not immediately improve himself, because in Li Jie's view, this was not the most important thing.

What he has to do is more important than improving his personal abilities, such as bringing in the Dark Elves and preparing for the future battle against the Chitauri.

Li Jie has his plan. Once he holds the Thunder Blade tightly, his strength will be able to leap to B+ level, and then he will be able to unlock many items in the system mall. Especially in the field of technology, he has seen many amazing and even terrifying things, such as the unupgraded [Yamato-class space battleship], the primary technology [Viking multi-purpose interceptor], etc., and the reputation required to unlock them is astronomical.

He had hinted to Tony that he wanted to form the first real space fleet in human history! He wanted to launch an interstellar war in the sea of stars, instead of making the Earth a bet for tens of millions or even hundreds of millions of lives. As he often said, he wanted to strike the Chitauri hard once and for all, to make them understand that even if they could destroy human civilization, the price would be something they could not afford. Only in this way could the Earth attract the attention of other cosmic civilizations. At present, this huge plan has just taken the first step.

Loki and Thor are crucial to this plan. Now that Loki has signed an agreement with him, Li Jie can say that the hardest part has been completed. As for Thor, it is the next step of the plan. Although Li Jie is reluctant to admit that some of his actions towards Thor may be too harsh, he knows how important Thor is to the plan. It is indeed unethical to let Thor leave Asgard.

Li Jie didn't think of any excuses to explain. Even if he was beaten up by Thor who knew about it, he was ready. As long as Thor didn't try to kill him again,

everything would be solved.

Because Li Jie will create an era for Thor, let the name of Thor resound throughout the universe, and achieve Thor's eternal glory. This is not compensation or a transaction, it's just what Li Jie wants to do.

Just like the results in front of Li Jie at this moment, the encirclement and suppression of the dark elf scouts went smoothly, and he also roughly understood the strength of the dark elf soldiers. In terms of physical fitness alone, a dark elf is equivalent to Captain America, and an elite soldier is equivalent to two or three captains.

The elite soldiers at the top, the Doom Slayer, were too powerful if measured by the captain. Li Jie made appropriate adjustments on his notebook, which depicted the image of the dark elves. Each dark elf head was marked with an equal sign and a shield behind it, representing Captain America. The stronger dark elves were marked with two shields. Li Jie had fought with the captain many times and knew his physical limits.

The captain ran at full speed at about 60 kilometers per hour, and his maximum strength was slightly less than one ton, but this was only a physical comparison. If the captain really fought against the dark elves, the result would be unpredictable, as there were too many factors to consider in the battle.

Li Jie, the Doom Slayer, did not encounter him this time, but only heard about him from the patrol members. He estimated for the time being and marked the Doom Slayer as six shields with a question mark at the end. He did not intend to introduce the Doom Slayer to the Earth, that would be too stupid, and he had no intention of destroying the Earth.

"The war has become much easier since Loki became the leader." After the battle, the Asgardian warriors in the patrol chatted with the elf warriors.

Li Jie recorded the battle situation while listening to their conversation. (Loki cast a translation magic so that he could understand Asgardian and Elvish.)

"That's right, every action has its rewards. Especially in large-scale battles, Loki's command is excellent. After receiving the battle report, the Queen believes that Loki will become the most outstanding commander in the history of Asgard." The elf archer agreed with the Asgard warrior's point of view.

"Yeah, he is different from Thor. It's hard to say who is better, but if I were to choose, I would probably follow Loki." Li Jie smiled silently when he heard this.

Loki is gradually gaining control of the hearts of Asgard's grassroots soldiers.

At this moment, Luo Ji, who was in the central army tent, didn't know what was happening with Li Jie. She had more important things to do. Just like she had done many times before, she quietly left the palace wearing the Feihong boots given by the Elf Queen and disappeared without a trace.

The Elven Kingdom is not adjacent to the current residence of the Dark Elves. On the contrary, the Dark Elves who rebelled against the Elven Kingdom live far away from the Elven Kingdom. Similarly, the Frost Giants live several cosmic dimensions away from Asgard. But for these two races, distance is not a big problem...

Chapter 51 Clever means

As an advanced magical civilization, they have various means to teleport to any place. For example, Asgard has the Rainbow Bridge for long-distance transmission and the Sun Boat for short distances.

Dark elves and frost giants can also travel between the dimensions of most of the nine worlds. For example, when they invaded the Elven Kingdom, they used the small gap between Vanaheim and the Elven World as a springboard.

They found a point in the narrow crack between the two dimensions that they could cross. The nine worlds were moving, usually keeping a considerable distance between different dimensions.

But sometimes two large dimensions will be close to each other, and the tiny gap between the dimensions becomes the best time to enter the dimension. Otherwise, these dimensions are not without protection. Especially the dark elves and frost giants, these two races are hated.

Even if they use the dimensional gap to enter the Elven Kingdom, maintaining the space gate consumes a lot of energy. This is not just about transporting a few or a few hundred people, but a hundred and fifty thousand troops including the vassal army. The energy consumed is immeasurable, and even the gods cannot do it alone.

In order to maintain this space gate, the dark elves and frost giants have to pay huge expenses every day. For any race or civilization, war is a war of material consumption.

So Loki is not in a hurry to find the enemy for a decisive battle. What she needs to do is to defend with all her strength and use time to wear down the enemy. This approach and concept may be difficult for Thor to understand. But Loki is a real rational person, and has been like this since he was a child.

She is more rational between gains and losses, not as emotional as Thor. Odin sometimes thinks that it would be nice if the personalities of the brother and sister could be swapped. But there is no perfect thing in the world that can satisfy everyone. Just like the lies told by Odin and Frigga, their deception methods are not very sophisticated, but they want to deceive Loki, the god of mischief and lies, which is absurd in itself.

Because they are parents and Loki is their favorite youngest daughter, Odin and Frigga did not realize that many things have changed quietly, beyond their expectations and control.

No one can tell whether this change is good or bad.

Just like what Loki was doing now, she put on her Rainbow Boots and disappeared from the palace silently. Usually she was resting at this time and no one would disturb her.

She disappeared in the Elf Kingdom, and no one knew about it. As a divine weapon, the Rainbow Boots are characterized by their ability to appear and disappear without a trace.

There is a temporary space at the angle between the dimensions of Vanaheim and the Elf Kingdom. It is created by the interweaving of dimensions and is unstable. It may be shattered at any time due to the movement of the nine worlds.

Dark elves and frost giants never venture through this space, and only enter and exit through their own space gates. Loki, wearing a mind scepter, a phantom cloak, and flying rainbow boots, came to this space silently.

This space is dark and magnificent. Due to the angle formed by the operation of the dimension, there is essentially no life. However, in the gap of this dimension, one can get a glimpse of the whole picture of Vanaheim and the Elf World. These two worlds are like galaxies in the universe hanging in the air.

There is no land here, Loki walked slowly in the air. She knew someone was waiting for her here. If it weren't for this person using his power to temporarily stabilize this space, this place might have suddenly appeared and disappeared like bubbles on the lake.

He was a giant with a blue body, and a strong frost aura could be felt from a distance. He looked fierce, and his spiked armor intensified this impression. He sat quietly in the void, waiting for Loki. He was the leader of the Frost Giants, Loki's biological father, Laofei!

"You are later than I expected, Loki." As soon as Loki arrived, Lao Fei, who had been sitting in meditation with his eyes closed, opened his eyes.

Ice blue eyes, the symbol of the Frost Giants, were like the purest sapphires. Every time Loki saw these eyes, his heart would be shaken.

"It's just that you came earlier, Laofei." Loki looked at him calmly: "I thought Odin killed you last time, but I didn't expect you to be alive and so healthy."

"Not so healthy, Loki. Odin's destructive thunder is running rampant in my body, and I need a lot of effort to control it." Laofei spoke to Loki as gently as possible. The giants' voices are always rough, and you can't tell whether they are talking to you in a friendly way or threatening you.

"You still don't believe what I said?" Lao Fei looked into Loki's eyes seriously.

"What do you believe? I am your father? This is ridiculous! I am the prince of Asgard!" Loki refuted Lao Fei's words without thinking twice.

"I know very well that you are a girl, Loki. I saw you born with my own eyes. You and your mother are exactly the same, no matter what means you use to disguise yourself. But there are some things you can't hide from me!" Lao Fei gently raised his left hand, and deep blue frost energy began to condense in his palm.

At the same time, Loki's body also changed and was no longer under Loki's control. The frost power in her body seemed to have found a partner, and it became excited and agitated, eager to burst out. Loki concentrated on controlling the phantom cloak and suppressing the power in her body. She stared at Lao Fei with a stern look.

Lao Fei had achieved his goal. He did not want to embarrass Loki by making her lose control, so he stopped calling on the power in Loki's body. As the leader of the frost giants and Loki's biological father, they were connected by blood, and Lao Fei could clearly sense the frost power in Loki's body.

"So, now you believe it, right? My daughter, Loki." Lao Fei looked at Loki quietly with a smile on his face.

Loki responded expressionlessly. Lies now met the truth, and the daughter met the father.

"Ridiculous!" Loki was not impressed by Laofei's gentle tone. "Why should I believe anything you say? You are the leader of the Frost Giants, the mortal enemy of Asgard!"

"Perhaps you have learned the truth about my female identity from somewhere. After all, you are very strong, so strong that no one in Asgard dares to claim that they can defeat you except Odin."

"You may have many ways and abilities to understand me, or even deal with me. What is your purpose? Do you want to win this vanguard battle and then launch a full-scale war?"

Loki finished his words in one breath, without stopping, firmly refuting Lao Fei. However, Lao Fei just smiled and said nothing.

"You are lying, right, Loki? I do know you well, Loki. Your priesthood is lying, but I know you don't often actually lie. The God of Lies who doesn't lie is amazing. Because you used to be able to weave illusions and mislead others without lies." Lao Fei did not lose his composure because of Loki's rebuttal. He talked to Loki like an old friend who had not seen him for a long time.

"I noticed that you didn't bring the Sword of Truth today. Is it because it prevents you from lying? To be honest, you are more suitable to deceive people with the truth rather than such a clumsy lie. This shows that you have very bad taste. Your mother and I gave you a good name when you were born, called Eda, which means noble."

"But your performance today does not deserve this name." Lao Fei smiled slightly. Although his face was ferocious, there was an inexplicable hint of affection in his smile.

"I think you have probably guessed some of the truth before, or you have been shaken in your heart, Loki? You know the whole story, and this is a self-consistent and flawless logic. There is no point to refute it, so you didn't wear the

sword of truth because you were afraid of exposing your true intentions, right?"

"Your words are very touching, Laofei." Loki still had no expression on his face: "I now doubt whether you are the real frost giant Laofei, or you are Malekith, the leader of the dark elves?"

"Generally speaking, the frost giants, or the entire giant race, are not very smart, including the fire giants and hill giants." Lao Fei said calmly, "But every race will occasionally have an outlier."

"Your magical talent is inherited from your mother, but the ability to lie and manipulate minds is inherited from myself. I am an outlier among the Frost Giants, and I don't want to be as stupid as my compatriots. So I proposed to Asgard, offering peace in exchange for your mother's marriage. The days with your mother were the happiest times of my life. She was a good woman." Lao Fei's eyes were filled with nostalgia.

"Enough! You are not allowed to talk about my aunt!" Luo Ji suddenly became furious. This was the first time in a long time that she lost control of her emotions. As a leader in mental magic, this was extremely rare in Luo Ji's career.

"Okay, you are angry. I guess the reason you are angry is the same as I thought." Lao Fei glanced at Loki and no longer mentioned her mother.

"In fact, you don't have to be so wary of me, Loki. You should have guessed who delivered the message to you in those days and who told you that the Frost Giants and the Dark Elves were going to join forces to attack Asgard." Lao Fei looked at Loki calmly and began to narrate.

"Who allowed you to obtain intelligence at the critical moment, become the leader of the army, and become the leader of the coalition forces before the war started. Who told you that it was just a tentative attack, not a prelude to a full-scale war. These all set the premise for the combat plan. And your plan was executed very successfully, and you were invincible." Loki's little finger trembled slightly.

"Is all this just a coincidence? Not necessarily." Lao Fei looked at Luo Ji seriously...

Chapter 52 Frost Giant

"What do you want, Lao Fei! Are you so eager to admit that I am your daughter?" Loki seemed not to care on the surface, but her true thoughts were hard to tell.

"Don't pretend that you don't care, Loki. You can fool anyone because you are good at lying, but you can't fool your own heart." Lao Fei said, looking directly into Loki's eyes.

"In fact, there's nothing wrong with being a half-Frost Giant and Asgard, right, Loki? As a woman, you will get double the love. Maybe you are a little dissatisfied with Thor's stupidity, but you have to understand that you should be grateful for being a girl. If you were a boy, Odin might have killed you long ago."

"I know you have great ambitions and you are much better than other kids of your age. That's great, really great. I'm very proud of it!" Lao Fei talked to himself, but Loki didn't want to listen to his empty talk anymore.

"Lao Fei! What is your intention? You keep asking me out just to tell me that ridiculous life story? I won't believe your words easily." Luo Ji remained stubborn.

"Because I am about to die, Loki. So I want to see you, as a father and as the leader of the Frost Giants." Loki wanted to refute, but Lao Fei didn't give her a chance.

"Since being attacked by Odin many years ago, my physical condition has deteriorated. Frost Giants are strong, but that doesn't mean we can escape death. One day I will die. It is inevitable. I am not afraid of death. I have personally ended the lives of countless enemies, both mortals and gods."

"But as a father and a leader, I have many concerns. For example, you and the

Frost Giants. You are too smart. From the day you wanted to seize power, you should have known how big the obstacles you would face were."

"Especially since you carry the blood of the Frost Giants." Loki frowned when she heard this, but said nothing.

"Your ambition may very likely destroy you. As a father, I cannot let my daughter die like this. And as a leader, I cannot watch the Frost Giants go to destruction." Lao Fei stroked the scars on his body, which were the marks left by countless wars.

"Frost Giants are not known for their wisdom, and the entire race of Giants is not very smart. But we are warlike, and we never look at who our opponents are. Just like the Hill Giants and Thunder Giants were eventually defeated at the foot of Mount Olympus, the Water Giants have been hard to find in ten thousand years. There is very little blood left of the Giants."

"It is the nature of the Frost Giants to be bloodthirsty and warlike, and I am no exception. Once I fight, I will lose my mind. This is our biggest weakness. I have no choice but to be the enemy of Asgard, because the two sides have had a deep hatred before I became the leader. The Frost Giants can still compete with Asgard now, but how long can they last?" Lao Fei said with some sadness.

"I was full of confidence in the last war, but was defeated by Odin, and the Frost Giants lost the opportunity to overthrow Asgard. Our reproduction capacity is too slow."

"When I discovered your existence, I knew that the last hope of the Frost Giants lies in you!" There was a gleam in Lao Fei's eyes.

"You want me to help the Frost Giants?" Loki said expressionlessly.

"No! That's too dangerous! Odin will suspect that you may know your life experience and the blood of the Frost Giant in you. As a father, I will not let you take this risk!" Lao Fei interrupted Loki's guess without hesitation.

"What exactly do you want to do, Laofei?" Loki couldn't guess the true intentions of this smart and even cunning frost giant leader.

"I want you to lead the army of Asgard and destroy all the frost giants!" Lao Fei

said the shocking words in a calm tone.

"What?! Are you crazy?!" Loki looked at Lao Fei in disbelief. Was this man really the leader of the Frost Giants? He actually wanted an outsider to slaughter his entire tribe?!

"I am clear-headed, Loki. Even if I try my best to hold on, how long can the Frost Giants last? After I die, Odin will surely launch an all-out war and completely destroy the Frost Giants. By then, not even a drop of blood will be left. And how long is left of this day? A hundred years? Two hundred years?" Lao Fei said in a very rational tone.

"But I am fortunate that I have an outstanding daughter, an excellent heir to my bloodline! She has the advantages of Asgard and the Frost Giants! As long as you, Loki, are still alive, the bloodline of the Frost Giants will continue. Your descendants will be as outstanding as you!"

"You need more protection. As both a father and a leader, I have a responsibility. Your greatest threat never comes from outside, but from Odin within! You need to prove your loyalty to Asgard with the blood of the Frost Giants!"

Loki looked at Lao Fei in disbelief. Everything he said to her was subversive.

"The more frost giants you kill, the more secure your position in Asgard will be. And when the time is right, I will offer my head as a trophy. It will become the most dazzling pearl on your crown when you ascend the throne as the King of Asgard!"

Lao Fei stared at Loki quietly: "And you will become a hero who destroys the Frost Giants. Kill the Frost Giant leader and become the Hero King of Asgard! Then, no one can stop you from becoming the King of Asgard!"

Li Jie didn't stay in the Elven Kingdom for long, because it was a time of war, so he naturally gave up the idea of traveling. Moreover, he had no friends there, the only people he knew were Loki and Valkyrie. Loki was busy all day, and Valkyrie, as a war god, had duties to fulfill, so she was also busy.

After collecting intelligence on the dark elves, Li Jie said goodbye to Luo Ji and planned to ask her to take him back. "Luo Ji, I think we can go now." Li Jie said in Luo Ji's palace, but Luo Ji seemed absent-minded and did not respond

immediately. Li Jie called her again: "Luo Ji?"

"Ah? Yes, you should go back now." Loki came back to his senses.

"Are you under a lot of pressure recently?" Li Jie looked at her and asked.

"It's okay, nothing. I think you really should leave now. I already understand your plan, but I think it can be slightly adjusted." Luo Ji brought this up when Li Jie was about to leave.

"How to adjust?" Li Jie was a little curious. Did Luo Ji have a new idea?

"You originally planned to have me deliberately mislead some dark elves in the battle, then lead them into the encirclement, and notify Ancient One to use the teleportation array to send hundreds of dark elves to Earth." Loki was talking about Li Jie's original plan.

"This is not safe. You can't be sure if there are any Doom Slayers or other powerful enemies among these dark elves. The risk is too great." Huh? Loki actually thinks this method is risky?

A strange doubt suddenly arose in Li Jie's heart. He felt that Luo Ji's way of thinking today was different from usual, but he couldn't tell exactly what was different. The feeling was very subtle.

"I will capture some prisoners, and then give them a chance to escape after screening, so that they will think they have escaped Asgard's surveillance, and then lead them to Earth. This will be safer." Li Jie frowned when he heard Loki's suggestion.

It's not that he thinks this plan is bad, in fact, it's the best plan. But how easy is it to capture the dark elves as prisoners? Li Jie knew it since the last time he encountered the dark elf scouts.

This race would not surrender easily, so he said: "It may be a little difficult for you. Dark elves are not easy to capture alive. Unless..."

"Unless I can achieve an overwhelming victory in the next war, this plan can only work if I win this battle completely, right?" Luo Ji understood Li Jie's thoughts and spoke first.

"You've said everything I was going to say." Li Jie shrugged, indicating that Loki had already taken away his lines.

"Don't worry about this. I will win the war absolutely, without any mistakes!" Loji's words were extremely firm.

Was Luo Ji too confident? Li Jie didn't know how to discuss this with her, so he chose to remain silent. After a while, he said, "If you can, do it your way. That's the best way."

Li Jie had no objection to Loki's plan, but he felt a little uneasy. Before leaving the Elven Kingdom, he said to Loki, "Don't worry about Thor's affairs. I will help you deal with it. In all aspects, you are indeed much better than Thor."

When Luo Ji heard Li Jie's praise, she wanted to smile, but she didn't. She summoned Adam with a blank expression and teleported Li Jie back to Earth.

.....

One of the Bermuda Islands in the Pacific Ocean.

This is another base built by Hydra after the defeat in World War II, which has been mentioned in the previous article. Although Hydra was defeated, it was still glorious. Before the defeat in World War II, the Red Skull had already reserved a retreat for himself.

The seeds of Hydra had spread across the globe before the end of the war, and the shadow of Hydra was hidden in every field and industry.

Even many companies or forces are unaware that there is a huge organization behind them, that is Hydra!

Since the last time Red Skull decided to abandon some members of S.H.I.E.L.D., his control over New Hydra has become even stronger.

Because within Hydra, especially within S.H.I.E.L.D., members do not completely obey Red Skull's orders. After all, this guy is an old guy who lived more than 70 years ago.

Do we have to listen to such an outdated old man? Red Skull did not express

much about this. For him, it is better to have no subordinates who do not obey. Especially those stupid guys may expose more targets of Hydra.

He would rather send these guys to their deaths. The ruler never cares about the gains and losses of a moment or a place. For the Red Skull, a smooth transition of power is far more important than retaining a group of rebels.

So even if he knew about SHIELD's actions, he deliberately did not tip them off and only let Crossbones Bullock create some chaos. His intention was to make SHIELD suffer a heavy blow in this operation. Losing some undercover agents in SHIELD would only be a minor loss for Hydra.

Hydra is now far more powerful than even the fools hiding in SHIELD can understand. There are many forces that only the Red Skull knows about and can mobilize.

It can be said that Red Skull's abandonment of S.H.I.E.L.D.'s internal undercover has achieved remarkable results. S.H.I.E.L.D. has not been able to catch many high-ranking members of Hydra. The explosion of the New York prison and the fall of S.H.I.E.L.D. headquarters gave many people the opportunity to escape.

Coupled with Nick Fury's departure and the fact that SHIELD's operation failed to achieve the expected losses, it's all good news.

In this way, the Red Skull severely beat those who were disobedient, making them understand that no matter how much time has passed, they only have one leader! That is the great Red Skull!

Everything should have been perfect. The Red Skull could have sung while eating hot pot and could have easily plotted a few conspiracies to push SHIELD and Captain America into the abyss.

But recently, Red Skull encountered a troublesome matter. On his desk, there was an encrypted document. It was written in a special codeword, and only a few high-ranking members of Hydra could decipher its meaning.

Red Skull looked at the contents of the file with an abnormal expression on his face, because an opponent who was not in his plan, at least not in his plan at the moment, came to him!

Seventy years ago, the Red Skull fought this man. At that time, the opponent was just an insignificant little character. But now, this little character has become a sophisticated and powerful opponent...

The little guy from the past is now destroying Hydra's hidden bases one by one. In recent days, the blow Hydra has suffered is more severe than the total of the past thirty years!

"Magneto! Brotherhood of Mutants!" Red Skull tore up the intelligence angrily. He gritted his teeth and pronounced the two names. It has always been Hydra that provokes others. When have you ever heard of anyone daring to provoke Hydra?

Especially the Brotherhood of Mutants, they are not an official group, and like Hydra, they are an illegal organization. Is Magneto Eric going to challenge Hydra's position as the world's number one villain?

Schmidt's version of Red Skull felt that he couldn't swallow this, and he had to let everyone know who is the real biggest villain in the world!

Chapter 53 Well-equipped

Singapore, a shining pearl in Asia, is sometimes called the Garden Kingdom, but it is actually more like a city like a big garden. The reason is simple. Singapore's territory is about the same size as a city. This country has an extraordinary position in Asia, with a highly developed economy, especially in the financial and technological fields.

Thanks to the strategies implemented by the first two Lee presidents, Singapore has a strong army that is not in line with its small territory, with more than 70,000 people and well-equipped. This army ensures Singapore's influence in the region and also guarantees the country's security, so that it will not be easily annexed by neighboring countries.

Normally, Singapore is peaceful and beautiful, but tonight is an exception. The raging fire lit up the night sky. A high-rise building in the city center suffered a series of explosions, which then caused a fire. Firefighting teams from all over the city came out in full force, and even firefighting helicopters were dispatched urgently. In the distance, a large number of onlookers watched the burning building from a distance.

Everyone was puzzled as to how a good building could suddenly explode and catch fire. Fortunately, the fire occurred at night and most people had gone home from get off work.

In the crowd, an old man was talking in a low voice with the middle-aged woman next to him. "Is it really appropriate for us to deal with Hydra like this, Eric?" the middle-aged woman with ordinary appearance asked softly.

"It's necessary, Raven." The two people who spoke were the most wanted criminal of SHIELD, Magneto Eric, and his old partner, Mystique Raven, who had caused headaches for the X-Men. "Do you believe what Charles told you about Hydra so unconditionally?" Raven glanced at the raging fire, suggesting that Magneto leave with her.

"We've made such a big fuss in Singapore. I'm afraid we'll attract more and more attention in the future." Raven and Magneto walked through the crowd. "This doesn't go against my plan, Raven. I've always expected mutants to fight against human society, but the means are slightly different." Magneto said expressionlessly.

"Shouldn't we revolt now? How do these little actions help our plan?" Raven, disguised as a middle-aged woman, frowned. "Because of Hydra, that's the key!" Magneto responded decisively: "I have mentioned my childhood in the concentration camp to you many times. You should know what Hydra did to me."

"So you want revenge? Charles told you through brainwave detection that Hydra has not yet perished, so you want to settle accounts with them?" Raven felt that this seemed unwise. "It's not that simple, Raven. This is just a side job. According to the intelligence Charles obtained, Hydra is reviving and a new leader has emerged, and his ideas are exactly the same as Red Skull's." In Charles' memory, those people have never really seen Red Skull, maybe they just saw Red Skull disguised as Schmidt. Red Skull never revealed his true identity to these peripheral members who were about to be abandoned, so almost all Hydra agents thought that this was a person who inherited Red Skull's will, maybe a clone, or something else, but no one would think it was Red Skull himself.

"And the Red Skull is a fanatical Nazi supremacist. If we revolt now, the mutants and the human government will be caught in a long war, and both sides will be exhausted. Who do you think will benefit in the end?" Magneto looked back at the burning building. "Hydra." Raven answered without hesitation, "They will take the opportunity to rise up."

"That's right. Ordinary governments always have many considerations when dealing with mutants. Factors such as elections and public opinion constrain their decision-making. But Hydra doesn't have these concerns. To them, Hydra is supreme, and all mutants deserve to die!" Magneto said firmly.

"If we become enemies with the human government before eradicating Hydra, Hydra will be the ultimate beneficiary. And once they come to power, they may hunt down mutants around the world. The Red Skull doesn't have a good impression of mutants, and if the new leader inherits his will, the result can be

imagined." Raven looked directly into Magneto's eyes. She has been a partner with Magneto for many years and knows Eric's heart well.

"You did this just for this reason? I'm afraid it's not that simple." Raven looked at Magneto, "Wanda (Scarlet Witch) and Pietro (Quicksilver) are your priorities."

Magneto did not respond to Raven's guess, as if he hadn't heard it. Raven sighed and continued, "Eric, fifty years have passed. The chances of Wanda and Pietro surviving are slim. You can't hold out too much hope."

Magneto moved his lips: "Do you want me to give up hope of finding my children? I have never heard them call me father. If they are really gone, at least I hope to find their remains and build a tomb for them, instead of being made into specimens by Hydra and soaked in formalin."

"Eric." Raven tried to speak weakly, but Magneto immediately glared at her sternly: "What else do you want to say?!"

"Hydra killed my father, tortured my mother, executed my wife, and took away my children! What do you think can stop me from taking revenge and torturing them?!" Magneto's face was full of anger, and his weathered face revealed deep hatred.

This is a hatred that is deeply rooted in the bones and cannot be eliminated. If you really want to resolve it, only the blood of the enemy can wash it away!

"I will destroy all Hydra! Just like they destroyed me! They will pay the price! No one can stop me this time." Eric roared in a deep voice, his voice was firm. Hydra destroyed his family and this hatred was irreconcilable.

Charles briefly told Magneto the intelligence he had gathered, saying that this was not a trick, but a blatant action.

"I got a lot of information from some Hydra members about the whereabouts of your children back then." Charles relayed these things through Raven.

"They were not executed by Trisko's people because their mutant abilities were very strong. They were sent to a genetic laboratory. So they are likely still alive. You should be familiar with that genetic laboratory, Eric. It belongs to Hydra. That's right, Hydra did not disappear, but became more powerful."

When mentioning Hydra's genetic laboratory, Eric clenched his fists. He was deeply impressed by the place.

"I don't want to lie to you, Max (Magneto's real name, known only to a few people)." Charles continued through Raven.

"The choice is yours, Eric. I just want to tell you that if you want to deal with Hydra, please let me know. Regardless of the position, as a friend, it is my duty to help you get revenge."

"No need." Magneto replied at the time.

The building in Singapore is still burning. This is the fourth underground base that the Brotherhood of Mutants has breached in its fight against Hydra, whose forces are always disguised in various official colors.

It is troublesome to deal with them through formal channels, and it is enough for them to escape from evidence collection and confirmation. Magneto is in no mood to play legal games with Hydra.

When he led the elite of the Brotherhood of Mutants to raid the building, no one was prepared. His ability to control magnetic fields did not weaken with age, but became stronger.

Charles' information was limited. After all, so many years had passed, and who knew what the genetic laboratory was called now.

So Magneto took the most direct approach, destroying any Hydra property he found, and throwing all the captured people back to the headquarters so that the Master of Illusion could read their memories.

Unlike Professor X, the illusion master Jason's memory reading and modification cannot be done with the help of mind seeds. Direct reading will cause brain damage to people because he has poor control over his own power.

But Magneto doesn't care about these trivial matters. To him, killing Hydra members is a great good thing for the world.

"Didn't Charles mention helping you get revenge?" Raven knew that Charles and Magneto loved and hated each other. They were each other's strongest opponents

and best friends.

Magneto Eric pursed his lips: "Some grudges must be avenged personally!"

During the days when Li Jie was away from the earth, Salty Fish Thor's fitness plan was handed over to Lan for supervision, hoping that she could keep an eye on this guy and prevent him from being lazy and going out to eat junk food.

Lan said that this kind of small matter was no problem. After all, it was just supervision and she didn't have to work as hard as Thor. She didn't think it was difficult.

However, when she started training Thor, she found that Thor was not easy to manipulate. He always had various excuses, maybe because Lan seemed easier to talk to, or easier to bully?

"Thor, please! It's already three o'clock in the afternoon and you're still taking a nap. It's too long." Lan knocked hard on the door of Thor's room.

"Let me sleep a little longer, just a little longer, okay? Lan." Thor lay on the bed and didn't want to move, like a dried salted fish hanging on a bamboo pole, unwilling to leave the soft quilt.

"Don't make me angry, Thor! I'm asking you to get up and exercise for your own good! You may have a stroke or a heart attack at any time like this!" Lan patiently persuaded outside.

"Just take a break occasionally. There's no need to make things so complicated and contradictory when Jason is away. Look, Master Ancient One has a good relationship with my father." Thor said this while lying on the bed pretending to be a salted fish.

"Asgard and Kamar-Taj are like brothers, so we should be like brothers and sisters. You see, you can't help outsiders against your brother."

While Thor was lying down and pretending to be bored, he didn't know that Li Jie had returned to Earth from Asgard and went home.

At this moment, he was standing outside Thor's room. Lan finally felt saved when she saw him. Li Jie signaled that she could leave quietly and he would

handle the situation.

Chapter 54: Off Topic

Lan was very grateful. She didn't come to the city to eat and drink for free. Master Gu Yi was still counting on her to help find a suitable apprentice. This kind of thing depends on fate, so Lan still has no idea.

The people of Kamar-Taki believe that many things are predestined. So Lan has to go out and try his luck to see if he can find the apprentice mentioned by Ancient One.

So when Li Jie came back, she gently told him that she was going out. Li Jie nodded to indicate that he understood.

After Lan left, Thor was still talking to himself in the room unconsciously: "Believe me, I am a good brother. You shouldn't help that kind of boy to torment me like this. When I return to Asgard, I will give you a suitable gift."

"For example?" Li Jie responded from outside.

"Like...?!" Thor didn't react at first, but when he realized that the voice answering him was a boy's and so familiar, he was so scared that he rolled over in bed.

"I said, do you like being someone's brother?" Li Jie is not Lan, so he doesn't need to worry about gender differences. He just pushed open Thor's door and walked in.

Thor's hellish training during this period of time had created a conditioned reflex in Li Jie. Thor, who was only wearing shorts, jumped up from the bed.

"Ah, ha! What a coincidence, I didn't expect you to come back so early. How was your trip to Asgard? I tried the Honey Malt Bar at the Harvest Festival Tavern, it was absolutely delicious." Thor tried to change the subject. God knows what this devil will do after knowing that he was lazy.

"It went smoothly and the negotiations went well. Your sister has agreed to my plan and she said she is willing to support me." Li Jie sat down on the chair in Thor's room, crossed his legs and said this.

"That's good. Haha." Thor smiled awkwardly, but he soon realized something was wrong: "No, don't talk nonsense. I don't have a sister. I only have a younger brother, the second prince of Asgard, Loki!"

Thor seemed a little nervous and quickly denied Li Jie's words. He firmly denied that he had a sister and insisted that Loki was a male.

"Oh? Really?" Li Jie raised his eyebrows and found Thor's nervous expression quite interesting: "So Loki doesn't exist at all?"

"……"Thor had a blank expression on his face and said nothing.

"Thor, tell the truth. I have met Loki, and she revealed her true identity. I know she is a woman." Hearing this, Thor lowered his head and cursed, and Li Jie pretended not to hear it.

"So after you know everything, you come and tell me all this, are you trying to laugh at me for being worse than my sister?" Thor looked up at Li Jie seriously.

"Well, although that's true, that's not why I wanted to talk to you." Li Jie ruthlessly admitted that he thought Thor was indeed inferior to his sister.

"So what exactly do you want to say?" Thor asked, sitting on the edge of the bed with his big belly.

"I'm just curious, why did Luo Ji become like this, huh? A girl like this." Li Jie chose his words carefully: "She is a little eager to show herself? This is a little strange."

Li Jie had a lot of things that he couldn't understand, because in this life, as a girl, Loki actually lived a much better life than Thor. It can be said that in terms of material things, Loki got the best things in Asgard.

But Thor did not receive such treatment. So Li Jie believed that Loki did not want to become the king of Asgard simply because she was jealous of her brother.

Loki also hinted that she did not want to hurt Thor. She expected Thor to create a new pantheon of Asgard after becoming the patron saint of the Earth. If possible, Thor would even establish his own kingdom of God.

So Li Jie was confused about their brother-sister relationship, and he needed more information so that he could prepare for how to deal with Thor and Loki.

"Eager to show off? No, not eager to show off, Jason. It's just that she never had the chance to show off." Thor took a deep breath.

"She has always been excellent and outstanding. If she were a boy, I would definitely be scared of such a brother because he might threaten my status."

Li Jie rolled his eyes. If you really had a brother like that, Odin would have killed him long ago. This female Loki is the one who really threatens your position.

Thor then whispered, "She has been very smart since she was a child, much smarter than other children her age. She probably reads more books in a year than I have read in my entire life."

So this is why you are not as smart as her, young man! Li Jie complained silently in his heart.

"Why does she dress up as a boy? This is so weird, Thor. Loki is a very, very beautiful goddess. I don't understand why she wants to hide herself." Li Jie felt something was wrong after he said this.

Because Thor stared at him with a tiger-like look, as if he was ready to devour him at any time. Li Jie felt that he had said nothing wrong.

Thor glared at Li Jie for a long time before he slowly said, "That's the key. She's so beautiful!"

"Huh?" Li Jie was a little confused...

"You should understand what a political marriage is. Asgard has made this mistake before. One of our goddesses was taken as the price of peace." Thor's tone sounded a little heavy when he spoke of this.

"So Odin decided to hide Loki's true appearance and gender. He will not reveal Loki's true identity until both of us grow up, can protect ourselves, and stand on our own among the gods." As he said this, Thor's eyes were still staring at Li Jie fiercely.

He said to Li Jie word by word: "Before this, she should not reveal her true appearance to anyone other than her family, especially men!"

"Huh?" Li Jie looked a little embarrassed, thinking that Thor might have misunderstood something: "Let's change the subject? I think you might have misunderstood. You look a little scary right now."

"Can you talk about Loki's childhood? Tell us some interesting stories from your childhood to ease the atmosphere." Li Jie felt a little dizzy from Thor's gaze.

Ever since Li Jie said that he had seen Loki's true face, Thor had been acting fierce. But he also cooperated with Li Jie very well. As long as it did not involve privacy and secrets, Thor would tell Li Jie anything he wanted to know about Loki without reservation.

But every time he finished speaking, he would stare at Li Jie with murderous eyes.

Thor began by telling the story of their childhood together, when Loki was in the summer palace, to the first time Loki went into battle, and then the argument that ensued.

After this incident, the relationship between the siblings began to crack. She did not agree with Thor's behavior, which made Thor a little sad.

"Sad? Wait, it's obviously Loki's approach that was better. Wouldn't it be better if you followed her advice and fought? What right do you have to be sad?" Li Jie felt that Thor was joking.

"Didn't you hear clearly, idiot! We are dealing with Asmodeus!" Thor looked at Li Jie as if he were a fool.

"Don't call me an idiot." Li Jie retorted, and then asked: "What about Asmodeus?"

"This brain is like being fucked by a male dog... Forget it, Loki actually dared to let him know the truth." Thor cursed in a low voice, and the sound was not small. Li Jie heard it clearly, so he reminded him: "Hey, talk seriously."

"Asmodeus, the god of desire, is bloodthirsty and greedy. But his strongest priesthood is not these two." Thor had an expression that said, "It's embarrassing to talk to you."

"What is that?" Li Jie pretended not to see Thor's expression.

After hearing this explanation, Li Jie suddenly felt enlightened: "So you don't agree with Loki's approach!"

"Nonsense! Loki wants to completely block everyone's inner desires and fight a protracted war against Asmodeus. As a man, can you agree to this?" Thor still looked at him like a fool.

Li Jie sniffed: "I'm afraid not. He should definitely disagree."

Thor showed a look of astonishment: "Do you think it's a good idea to let Loki join the battle and let her fight Asmodeus directly on the ground?"

"I suddenly feel that this idea is terrible." Li Jie suddenly felt very sympathetic towards Thor. It seemed that he was not simple-minded, but just a little slow to react.

"Yes, it's terrible. He is a senior god. Who can guarantee that Loki can withstand his psychological attack? You know, she is the only girl and my sister. If she is your sister, can you allow her to do this?"

Thor asked Li Jie in return, and Li Jie asked himself, I'm afraid that's not possible: "So you used such a lame excuse to tell Loki: Because you are a girl. Is that how you responded to her doubts?"

Thor seemed a little helpless: "How about you tell me how to respond to her doubts? I am a brother, not a sister. There are some things I can't say."

For the first time, Li Jie looked at Thor differently. He walked up to Thor and patted his chubby shoulders: "But some things, once spoken, cannot be undone. Some impressions, once left, will remain forever."

Thor nodded dejectedly. Li Jie pressed his shoulder and said, "Thor, I don't want to talk nonsense with you. No matter what happened in the past, Loki is indeed much better than you now." Li Jie told Thor about his experience with the patrol team and the mentality of those grassroots soldiers.

He did not delete or modify these words, which were the true thoughts of the grassroots soldiers. Most people would rather follow Loki than Thor.

Hearing this, Thor seemed a little frustrated, but he could do nothing about it: "I can't help it. If we only talk about fighting, Loki is not as good as me. But in terms of wisdom, I am not as good as her."

Li Jie patted Thor on the shoulder and said, "Don't say such discouraging words. I suddenly feel that I may have misunderstood you before. I will not pursue your recent laziness. Starting from tomorrow, I think I need to help you complete Odin's mission and restore your divine power."

"Since Asgard has someone as talented as Loki, why don't you just prove yourself on Earth! At least after proving yourself here, one day you can tell Loki that your brother is not as stupid as you think."

Thor was a little skeptical after hearing what Li Jie said: "Really?" "Really!" Li Jie said affirmatively: "When I was chatting with you just now, I have come up with a way to help you. Not only can it let you experience human humility, but it can also help you lose weight." Li Jie said, picked up his mobile phone and called Harry: "Well, I want to find a job for someone in the hospital. No, not a doctor or a nurse. Not a technical job, um, it's best if anyone can do it. Well, which doctor can recommend?" Thor didn't understand what Li Jie was going to do, he only heard him continue on the phone: "Okay, okay. It's a hospital in Manhattan, right? Got it. Who is the doctor responsible for the recommendation?" "Oh, is it the famous neurosurgeon who cooperates with our group? Okay, I see. I will take people there tomorrow." After Li Jie finished speaking, he said goodbye to Harry and hung up the phone. "From now on, Thor, you have to start working to earn money to support yourself. Your life is not just about fighting. I found a job for you." Li Jie looked at Thor and said. "I don't want to clean toilets in a hospital." Thor obviously still remembered the job that Li Jie assigned to him when he first started working in the company. "It's not that kind of job. It's much more meaningful than that. Come with me to Manhattan tomorrow. We're going to visit the person who recommended you for this job,

Dr. Stephen Strange."

Perfect Scumbags Since the launch of the limb regeneration plan of the Osborne Group more than half a year ago, the company has achieved initial results worldwide. The earliest participants in this plan, in addition to thousands of volunteers selected from around the world (their medical expenses are all borne by the Osborne Group), also include disabled or retired soldiers from various countries' armies. All countries, including the five major countries of China, the United States, Russia, France and the United Kingdom, are enthusiastic about the limb regeneration technology of the Osborne Group. Even Russia and China, which maintain a delicate relationship with China, have given the green light to the Osborne Group's plan. Especially in China, the Chinese government is usually cautious about the genetic engineering technology mastered by foreign companies. Unless the company is willing to disclose the technical indicators, the Chinese government will only allow one or two designated units to conduct experiments at most, and it is impossible to promote it widely across the country. However, after Harry went to Japan last time, he told the Chinese government truthfully that the weapons that flowed out of the Osborne Group fell into the hands of the terrorist organization Ten Rings Gang. The Osborne Group is willing to assist the Chinese government in tracking these weapons and firmly opposes the weapons falling into the hands of terrorists.

Chapter 55 Leader

Because of this stance and subsequent support for weapons tracking, the clues provided by Osborne helped the Chinese government eliminate several separatist strongholds in the country. After repeated weighing and systematic evaluation by Chinese scientists, it was considered a harmless medical technology, rather than the genetic engineering or human modification technology that the government was worried about. In early May, the Chinese government officially announced that it would open the domestic limb regeneration medical market to the Osborne Group.

The first batch of medical centers opened included 10 medical centers in three major cities, Beijing, Shanghai and Guangzhou. As soon as the news came out, the stock price of Osborne Group, which had plummeted due to the scandal of its Japanese branch, quickly rebounded. Harry, who had been questioned and accused in the company, finally breathed a sigh of relief. Losing in one corner but gaining in another, those weapons illegally flowing into Japan were not legal in the first place, and the company did not make much actual profit from them. Most of the profits were divided up by Japanese insiders and the Yashida Group.

Therefore, although Harry sacrificed some company profits for the principle of honesty, he gained the Chinese government's full opening of the medical market, improved his personal reputation, and shaped his image as a socially responsible entrepreneur. Overall, Harry's choice was a good deal.

After the Chinese medical sites were announced, all ten spots were booked the next morning, and some were even scheduled for three years later. In China, a super populous country, there are a huge number of patients who have lost limbs or body parts for various reasons. Although the overall incidence rate is lower than that of other countries, the total number is still alarming.

Representatives from the Osborne Group have traveled to China to add more medical sites and expand the reach of the limb regeneration program. Since the

program began, the company's in-house experts have been trying to optimize this medical technology. But for some reason, Harry did not directly use the Osborne Group team.

He set up a new private company, which was Li Jie's suggestion. Because the patent for limb regeneration belongs to Harry personally, not the Osborne Group. With the importance of this patent, Harry's status in the group has risen, and the older generation of company members dare not easily interfere.

But if the Osborne Group improves and upgrades this technology, then this technology will become the patent of the Osborne Group, and Harry will no longer have the patent for the new technology...

In the business world, it is necessary to keep some back-up plans. Therefore, at Li Jie's suggestion, Harry founded a personal technology research company. He invited many internationally renowned experts to join in improving this limb regeneration technology.

A generous salary and the opportunity to be remembered in history are two benefits that not everyone can encounter. Almost all the invited experts gladly accepted Harry's invitation.

As Harry's consultant, Li Jie naturally participated in the preparation and establishment of the company. The new company was named: Osborne Technology R&D Studio. However, this company had nothing to do with the Osborne Group and was entirely invested by Harry himself.

A small incident occurred during the establishment of the studio. Professor Otto was originally the leader of the Osborne Group's new energy research and development. He had great ambitions for new energy and dreamed of creating an "artificial sun" in the laboratory! This plan was halfway through. However, due to the sudden appearance of Tony's new energy technology, the Osborne Group directly stopped Otto's work.

Because Tony Stark's new energy technology has proven its value and has mature production capabilities, while Professor Otto's new energy plan has just started, and even if the experiment is successful, it will take 15 to 20 years to reach the level of commercial application.

In fifteen to twenty years, Tony's helium-3 energy will be able to meet global

demand. How can he compete with Stark Industries? Since there is no commercial prospect, it is a normal choice for commercial groups to suspend experiments. So, Professor Otto was fired by Osborn Group.

Coincidentally, when Li Jie and Harry were discussing the establishment of a new company, they saw Professor Otto's name. Li Jie discovered that in addition to new energy research, he was also good at mechanical prostheses and neural connection technology.

Almost instinctively, Li Jie invited Otto to join the preparations for the new company. Professor Otto, who was unemployed and lost his goal, accepted the invitation.

When Professor Otto came to the company to report and had an in-depth conversation with Li Jie, Li Jie felt fortunate. Li Jie could not remember the real name of Professor Otto, but he was familiar with his other nickname "Doctor Octopus", who was the famous villain in the second Spider-Man movie.

He had caused Peter a lot of trouble with his mechanical claws. Now, for various reasons, he stayed away from the failed experiment that could have led to a turning point in his life. Well, the artificial sun was too dangerous, so he should wait until the technology was mature before considering it.

Li Jie decided to let Dr. Octopus use his expertise to assist Harry in developing human auxiliary mechanical skeletons in the new company, so as to make suitable mechanical skeletons for the elderly or weak people who cannot regenerate bones.

Today, the doctor that Li Jie took Saul to visit, Dr. Stephen Strange, is also one of the experts of the new company. He participates in a part-time capacity, or more precisely, as a consultant.

In the process of limb regeneration, the reconstruction of flesh and bones is not the most difficult part. The real difficulty is the precise regeneration of those tiny nerves. Dr. Strange is a genius in neurosurgery. His achievements in this field are so extraordinary that he even invented a surgical technique named after him - "Strange Suture".

They met the doctor at a high-end hospital on Manhattan's Upper East Side. Strange's hospital had the highest cure rate in New York, but also the most

expensive.

Dr. Strange is very busy. His assistants have a pile of documents to review every day. These are all patients who want him to help treat them. Because Strange has been practicing medicine for many years, the success rate of the surgeries he has revised is close to 100%, which makes him a legend, especially in the field of neurosurgery, which is almost impossible to do.

Doctor Strange has a gentle face, looking more like a scholar than a famous doctor. He is slender and looks a bit like a model. The most eye-catching thing is his hands.

With ten slender and powerful fingers, if he had not become a doctor, he might have achieved success by playing the piano. With his elegant temperament, outstanding appearance, and successful career, Dr. Strange can be said to be a winner in life.

After Li Jie shook hands with him and exchanged greetings, he became more convinced of his opinion.

"Hello, Mr. Li. Would you like some tea or coffee? Here we have Ceylon black tea and Blue Mountain coffee." Strange's hospitality showed his taste.

He did not look down on Li Jie because of his youth, because he knew that the young man had a special relationship with Harry Osborn. Although he was only Harry's personal consultant, in fact, he had a great influence on Harry, making him more like a senior manager of the Osborn Group.

"Thank you, Red Tea. Doctor, it's nice to meet you. Thank you for joining our technology research laboratory. Speaking of which, I haven't really communicated with you except for meeting you at the first company meeting." Li Jie had a very good first impression of Dr. Strange.

Because he shows good manners in his dealings with others. You won't feel tired or uncomfortable talking to such a person...

Strange asked his personal assistant to bring two cups of black tea over the phone, then smiled at Li Jie, then turned his gaze to Thor and asked, "Who is this?"

"This is Thor, the one I mentioned on the phone just now. For some reason, I hope he can find a job in the hospital." Li Jie pointed at Thor and introduced him. Thor forced a smile as a response to Strange.

Doctor Strange looked Thor up and down, his lips pursed for a moment, but he quickly relaxed again without showing any disrespectful behavior.

"Does Mr. Thor have any knowledge or experience in medical care?" Strange raised his eyebrows and smiled.

"I know battlefield first aid bandaging and simple trauma treatment, such as first aid." As a soldier, injuries are common, and Thor has learned some basic first aid skills on the battlefield. However, he is not good at anything too complicated, after all, Asgard has professional therapists.

Thor's skills are only for emergency use when the therapist is not around.

"Battlefield?" Hearing this word, Strange was a little curious, "Mr. Thor was a soldier before?"

"To be precise, I am the commander." Thor was once the military leader of Asgard.

"?" Strange looked at Li Jie, confused. Li Jie had to help Thor explain: "His nickname in the army is Commander. After all, every soldier has the dream of becoming a general."

Strange gave a formulaic smile: "So Mr. Thor doesn't have relevant medical certificates, but he has learned basic battlefield first aid knowledge, right."

"That's right." Li Jie nodded and answered for Thor. "After all, he is not here to apply for a technical position. I have already said that on the phone."

"Okay, I understand." Strange smiled at Thor. Thor didn't like his smile because Strange's smile reminded him of the way Loki treated him perfunctorily, and Strange's smile was not as good-looking as Loki's.

"So is it okay for Mr. Thor to be a stretcher bearer on the ambulance? This position does not require much medical skills. You just need to be able to assist the doctor in fixing the injured and know basic wound dressing and CPR. The

main job is to carry the injured, and there is some physical work involved."

This is the kind of job Li Jie wants, and he thinks it is more meaningful for Thor. Thor can't be idle every day, he needs a formal job to let him know that life is not just about fighting, and it is equally important to support himself through his own efforts.

"Okay, I think it's okay." Li Jie glanced at Thor, and the two exchanged glances. Thor did not show any dissatisfaction. Being a paramedic? Thor thought this job was good, better than cleaning.

Moreover, after going to work, he would not have to face Li Jie's hellish training every day, so he had no objection to Li Jie's decision.

"That's settled then. I have some influence in this hospital. I'll say hello to the emergency department and you can report in tomorrow, Mr. Thor. They're short of staff right now." As Strange was speaking, his assistant came in with two cups of black tea.

The assistant did not leave after putting down the tea. He still had a few documents tucked under his arm. He glanced at Dr. Strange, indicating that he had something to say.

"Excuse me." Strange smiled at Li Jie and the others, pulled his assistant to a corner of the office, and lowered his voice to make sure Li Jie and the others couldn't hear him: "What's the matter?"

"These patients have been waiting for three months. They have been waiting for you to confirm the operation time, doctor." The assistant answered in a low voice and handed the documents under his arm to Strange.

"I've told you many times not to show me this kind of document." Strange quickly glanced through the document and said to his assistant in an unhappy tone.

"This man's spine is severely fractured. The bone spur has severed the entire spinal nerve. This is a fatal injury. Even if we use the latest limb regeneration technology of the Osborne Group, the entire spine must be pulled out for successful regeneration. How much risk do I have to take for this operation? What about my 100% success rate?! I have said long ago that I will not accept

this kind of patient unless he is the US Secretary of State!"

"And this one, a Mexican immigrant, with nerve necrosis in his left arm. The operation isn't difficult, but why doesn't he just ask the Osborn Group to regenerate a hand?" Strange asked, quickly flipping through the information.

"Because the Osborne Group's limb regeneration technology is too expensive." The assistant answered truthfully.

Strange looked at his assistant as if he was a fool. "Listen, Tom, I don't want to swear. But I have to confirm, did you bring your brain to work today? The information says that he was operating a hot dog stand and his hand was hit by a heavy object due to operational errors. He can't afford the limb regeneration plan. Do you think he can afford our surgery? I don't even know how much his medical insurance can cover!"

"Hospitals are open for business to make money," Dr. Strange said confidently. "Do you want the hospital to be burdened with bad debts? Hospitals need to make profits, and doctors need to have a reputation. You haven't considered these two points. Tom, this is the last time. If this happens again next time, I'm afraid I'll have to consider changing my assistant."

The young assistant named Tom blushed at Strange's words: "I'm sorry, sir."

Chapter 56 Invitation

"Don't apologize. Remember to bring your brain to work next time. Don't focus all your attention on mobile games. You won't achieve anything great by playing those things." Strange patted Tom's shoulder gently and asked him to go out with the information.

"Oh, by the way, sir. Ms. Maggie and Ms. Perry just called to ask what time you get off work. They wanted me to tell you that they would like to invite you to dinner and a movie tonight." The assistant suddenly remembered this before leaving and said softly.

"What did you tell them?" Strange frowned slightly when he heard the two women's invitation.

"I told them you've been busy with so many surgeries lately. I staggered their schedules. Ms. Maggie's lunch will be moved to Wednesday, and Ms. Perry's movie will be scheduled for Saturday night." Tom reported truthfully.

"Well done, Tom." Strange patted Tom on the back after hearing his response, and said in praise: "Go to the flower shop later and give them ninety-nine roses each."

Strange's office was actually quite large. He and Tom stood about seven or eight meters away from Li Jie and spoke in low voices. Most people couldn't hear their conversation clearly at this distance.

But since Li Jie started practicing, his facial features have become sharper. Although the two spoke in low voices, Li Jie could still hear the conversation clearly because there was no other noise in the room.

Now his good impression of Dr. Strange was gone and he even felt uncomfortable sitting in his office.

When Strange returned to Li Jie and Thor again, Li Jie asked to leave. Strange sent them out of the office with a smile on his face.

"Nice to meet you, Mr. Li. Oh, of course, and Mr. Thor." At the door of Strange's office, the famous doctor shook hands with the two of them one by one and said goodbye.

"Dr. Strange, you're so polite." Although he hated this guy very much, Li Jie still gave a formal smile.

Li Jie and Thor had just taken two steps when they heard Doctor Strange greeting another person from behind: "Christine, are you free to have dinner together tonight?"

Li Jie glanced back and saw that Strange was chatting up a beautiful female doctor in an emergency department uniform and inviting her to dinner.

It is common to pursue women, but after listening to the conversation between Strange and Tom, Li Jie felt that this guy was simply a devil. In comparison, Thor, the god of salted fish, was like an innocent and lovely little angel.

Li Jie quickened his pace and left the hospital. He was glad that Thor did not work under this guy, otherwise he would definitely have been ruined.

After Thor followed Li Jie out of the hospital, he said, "I don't like the doctor today. He gave me a hypocritical feeling. Just like some gods I met before."

"Those false gods who only use sweet words to deceive believers and promise things that cannot be fulfilled to deceive faith and loyalty. Strange makes me feel as disgusted as he does."

Li Jie did not refute Thor, but just looked back at the huge hospital. He remembered that Strange's office was located on the east side of the 15th floor. From his angle, he could just see: "Yes, there are such people in the world. Doctor Strange is one of them, a winner in life, a perfect devil!"

Chapter 126 New job, female doctor

In modern society, especially in densely populated megacities like New York, we face very real and serious problems.

That is the shortage of public health resources. This problem is more prominent in large megacities and densely populated areas.

Since the history of human civilization, the medical problem has never been truly solved. Regardless of civilization or country, almost all races face the problem of insufficient medical resources.

Because a doctor's job is to save lives and heal the wounded, doctors have enjoyed a high social status in any era, and this has never changed.

In modern society, although regional development differences have led to a serious imbalance in medical resources, a few large cities have most of the high-quality medical resources, which has been criticized.

However, even so, internal medical resources in megacities are still quite tight because everyone is likely to get sick or injured.

Especially when tens of millions of people are crowded in a small city, this high-density living condition is actually more likely to cause various urban diseases and injuries, and this is not an exaggeration.

Countless examples prove this point. Most people pursue the invisible benefits in big and developed cities, such as medical care and education. This is also the main reason why most people leave their hometowns and go to big cities like New York or Shanghai to make a living.

Due to the uneven distribution of resources, many people have no choice but to do so. However, many people do not know that the invisible benefits they seek, such as medical care, are actually already overwhelmed by the medical systems in big cities.

Take Shanghai for example. It is one of the most densely populated cities in the world, with an official population of 26 million, but the actual population is far higher than this number...

In this huge city, the number of emergency 120 ambulances shuttling through the streets and alleys every day is less than . Many people who need emergency help are actually unable to receive timely treatment.

The situation in Shanghai is not an isolated case. Even in New York, the

situation is not much better. In this internationally renowned metropolis, public emergency resources are also seriously in short supply.

Thor was able to become a member of the Strange Hospital rescue team and a stretcher bearer largely because of the shortage of manpower. Stretcher bearers do not need too much professional knowledge, the key is to be strong and able to carry the injured, especially in the United States, a country where people are generally overweight.

In addition, they must master basic trauma management skills to help emergency doctors deal with simple wounds. Thor met all the requirements in this regard, so it was not surprising that he was chosen as a stretcher bearer.

A standard ambulance consists of a driver, a doctor and a stretcher bearer. Sometimes, the driver also has to serve as a stretcher bearer to help carry the patient, especially when the doctor is exhausted.

The job of a stretcher bearer may not sound complicated, but why is it so difficult to recruit? The bottom line is that it is a stressful job with unpredictable hours.

Some people mistakenly believe that ambulances are usually idle in hospitals, with employees chatting and joking in the lounge, and are only dispatched when a call is received. However, the truth is not that simple.

Due to the shortage of emergency resources, once a regular ambulance is started, there is almost no rest time, and sometimes there is not even a fixed meal time.

Thor joined the group. He thought that life would be easier without Li Jie, but he soon found out that he was still too naive. In fact, the hardship and pressure of this job made him miss Li Jie's hellish training.

"Dr. Christine, will you be the on-board doctor today?" said Ross, the driver of Thor's ambulance team.

Ross is an American middle-aged man in his fifties with a solid physique. The doctor he mentioned, Christine, is a beautiful female doctor with black hair and a pretty face.

Christine had her black hair tied up in a ponytail, looking neat and tidy. She was

biting half a piece of bread, as if she hadn't had time to eat breakfast yet.

Thor had some impression of this female doctor. She seemed to be the one that Doctor Strange wanted to date yesterday.

"Yes, Ross. Since Almond resigned, we have fewer and fewer emergency doctors." Christine replied helplessly.

This is the dilemma of emergency doctors, who are on the front line for a long time and under great pressure. But they deal with the initial first aid and then refer the patient to a specialist.

Therefore, the reputation and income of emergency doctors are often not as good as those of specialists. As the effort is not proportional to the reward, many emergency doctors will eventually choose to change their careers.

Dr. Almond was like this. When a small hospital hired him as the attending physician, he immediately resigned from the position. Christine couldn't say much about this.

"By the way, Dr. Christine, this is our new stretcher bearer, his name is Thor." Ross introduced the two men.

"Hello." Christine greeted Thor briefly: "I may need you to take action in a while, so remember to be quick. Hmm? You should be quite strong." She looked at the fat Thor with a little confusion.

Thor responded by trying to look strong: "Leave the heavy lifting to me." Although he is fat, he still has a solid foundation, and his strength and speed are not slow. It can be said that he is a bit like Sammo Hung when he was young, agile, fast and powerful.

Christine nodded to Thor's words. She seemed to be a straightforward woman who didn't talk too much. After receiving the order to dispatch the ambulance, she got into the ambulance directly and finished the remaining breakfast, the half piece of bread, while driving.

Thor's first job was a car accident, where a taxi driver was hit by a truck that suddenly appeared, and the taxi was completely destroyed. After the firefighters rescued the driver, they found that his vital signs were rapidly weakening.

When Thor arrived at the scene with the ambulance, the driver was on the verge of life and death due to severe trauma and excessive blood loss...

Chapter 57 Her Battlefield

"Hurry up, everyone!" As soon as Christine arrived at the scene, she jumped out of the car first.

Thor and Ross followed closely behind with a first aid kit and a stretcher. However, Christine ran as fast as the wind and Thor could hardly catch up.

Christine quickly came to the injured person and found that his leg artery was pierced by the metal of the car door. The metal was still embedded in the flesh and could not be easily removed, otherwise it would cause heavy bleeding and endanger his life.

Christine reached behind her without looking back and said, "Tourniquet!" At this moment, Thor just caught up.

"Okay!" Thor quickly took out the tourniquet from the first aid kit and handed it to Christine. After all, Thor still recognized this first aid item.

Because the metal penetrated the wound, Christine could not bandage it directly and could only use a tourniquet to press the wound.

But the wounded man was in a bad condition. Christine took a glance at him and saw that his pupils were dilated. She said to Thor loudly, "You apply pressure to the wound."

Thor took over from Christine and began to press hard on the wound of the injured person. At this time, Christine began to perform cardiopulmonary resuscitation on the injured person.

"Breathe! Breathe!" Christine pressed the victim's chest methodically, but the victim could no longer breathe on his own.

Christine immediately performed artificial respiration and cardiopulmonary

resuscitation on the injured person. After 40 seconds, the injured person finally resumed spontaneous breathing.

"Oxygen!" Christine shouted to Ross who was driving the ambulance, and Ross immediately handed Christine a portable oxygen mask.

Under Christine's guidance, Thor and Ross carefully carried the injured onto a stretcher and sent him to the ambulance. During the entire process, Christine closely observed the injured's breathing, heartbeat and pulse to ensure that his vital signs were stable. Her focused expression reminded Thor of the fortitude of the soldiers before the war.

For Christine, this is her battlefield.

After sending the injured to the nearest hospital, Christine and the other two did not have time to rest before they received a new mission - a man suddenly had an epileptic seizure in the park. This disease is very dangerous, and the whole body convulses during the attack. The most feared thing is biting off the tongue.

The man had no previous medical history and the seizure may have occurred suddenly. Because of his tall and strong build, people around him were unable to control his convulsions.

"Thor, hold him down!" Christine looked at the twitching strong man, glanced at the equally strong Thor, and immediately gave the order.

"Okay." Although he was reluctant, Thor did as he was told and helped Christine subdue the patient.

This allowed Christine to successfully inject him with a special sedative, which relieved his muscle spasms and twitches.

In the ambulance, Thor felt nauseous when he saw the white foam on his clothes. It was caused by the foam at the mouth of the patient when he was ill.

"Don't touch these with your hands. There are disinfectant cotton in the box." Christine saw what Thor was thinking.

"Thank you." Thor found the disinfectant cotton. "Do you deal with these people every day? This job is really not easy." Thor felt the hardship of this job as soon

as he came into contact with two patients.

"Someone has to do it." Christine did not respond directly. She looked at Thor deeply, then took out a piece of chocolate from her shirt pocket and handed it to him.

"We might not have time for lunch."

Thor looked at the time. It had taken up the entire morning just to treat these two patients, and it was now almost 1:30 in the afternoon.

Christine took out the chocolate and took a small bite. Thor noticed that her hands were very slender, and some traces of blood vessels could be seen under her smooth skin.

Just as Christine said, they were so busy at work that they didn't even have time to rest at noon, and the final lunch they had to make do with a hot dog bought on the roadside.

In the afternoon, Thor and Christine rescued a girl who tried to commit suicide because of a broken heart. She cut her own veins and turned on the tap to make the blood less likely to coagulate. When her parents found her, she had fallen into a coma due to excessive blood loss. Christine gave her an emergency blood transfusion in the car.

Next is a middle-aged man who overate due to unemployment. He ate so much food in a restaurant that the food got stuck in his trachea and he couldn't breathe.

Christine tried every possible means to help him remove the foreign body. Following this small ambulance, Thor met all kinds of people.

Of course, not all rescue efforts can save lives. On the last trip of the day, they encountered a young man who was caught under the wheels of a bicycle. His legs were severely broken and bleeding. Although Christine tried her best to stop the bleeding, gave him an emergency blood transfusion, performed CPR, and even used a defibrillator after his heart stopped beating, she still couldn't save this young life. He was pale from blood loss and looked no more than 20 years old...

When the hospital declared the young man dead, Thor glanced at Christine. He

knew exactly how desperately the female doctor had tried, and he was afraid to see her disappointed expression.

However, Christine just sighed softly and turned away. In the ambulance, her hands were shaking slightly.

That was because she had just performed CPR on the young man continuously, causing her hands to become weak.

"Christine, are you okay?" Thor asked, looking at her trembling hands.

"It's okay, big guy," Christine responded.

"I'm sorry, Christine. That young man couldn't be saved." Thor had long been accustomed to death. After all, survival on the battlefield was victory. He said this just to comfort Christine. Because her performance today made him look at her with new eyes, and he temporarily put aside his gender prejudice.

"This is a war, and I am a warrior. There are always winners and losers in war." Christine's words surprised Thor a little.

"Huh?" He didn't quite understand why Christine felt like she was fighting a war and was a warrior. Thor was a real battlefield warrior, he had the experience of killing generals and capturing flags.

Christine smiled tiredly. "Since I swore an oath to the medical book, promising to devote my life to helping patients, regardless of their wealth or poverty, race or gender, age or creed."

"That is my battle oath. I will fight disease all my life and fight death with all my strength. I will use all my knowledge to improve the medical environment. This battle will not stop until I die."

"I won't be discouraged by one defeat because this battle is still long."

Compared to Dr. Strange whom he met yesterday, although the job was recommended by Thor, he did not have a good impression of Strange. But for Christine, Thor suddenly felt that she was a good person.

Thor looked at Christine and suddenly said on a whim: "Strange is not a good

person. You'd better not date him."

Christine was a little slow to react to these sudden words: "Huh? What?"

Thor has been acting a little bit abnormal lately, quite abnormal. Li Jie doesn't know why Thor has changed. It seems that he has started to change since he started working.

"Thor, there is fried chicken in the kitchen. Do you want some?" After Thor returned home, Li Jie invited him to enjoy his favorite fried chicken on Earth.

However, surprisingly, Thor replied, "No, I want to take a shower first. I already had a chicken breast sandwich on the way."

Well, that's not the weirdest thing. What's even weirder is that one day after get off work, Thor actually bought himself a laptop. Before, Li Jie deposited $5000 into Thor's bank card every month, so he still had about $3000 in his account.

A laptop computer only costs about 1000 US dollars, which is totally affordable for him. When he went to find Li Jie and Lan with his laptop, they were sitting on the sofa in the living room watching TV and chatting.

Li Jie fell on the sofa and watched the rerun of The Big Bang Theory on TV.

"Lan, how is the search for Master Ancient One's apprentice going?" Li Jie asked Lan, who was lying on the sofa watching TV boredly.

Recently, she rarely hides in her room to read books, but tries to relax by watching TV. However, for her, this method is a bit boring, and she purely regards it as a kind of practice.

"It's not easy to find. It depends on luck. If you are unlucky, it may take a long time to find it." Lan brushed her hair and said to Li Jie with her side face. Her head was leaning on the back of the sofa, and her long black hair was scattered on the back, making people want to touch it.

Chapter 58 Change

"Well, that's right." Hearing Lan's question, Thor walked directly between Li Jie and Lan, sat down on the sofa between them, and said, "I heard that people on Earth get all kinds of information through the Internet, which is faster than watching TV or reading."

"That's true. So what are you going to do?" Li Jie looked at the huge Thor and asked helplessly, "Are you going to play games online?"

Lan patted Li Jie's leg gently through Thor: "Don't say that, maybe he really has something important to do."

"Yes, I want to learn something online." Thor listened to Lan's words, nodded, and said seriously: "I want to learn more about medical care and first aid."

"Wow~!" Li Jie and Lan's views of Thor changed instantly. Li Jie looked Thor up and down, lifted his hair and put it down, patted his fat, and even smelled him. When he wanted to check Thor's teeth like checking an animal, Thor stopped him and said, "What are you doing!"

"I just want to confirm if you are the real Thor? This behavior seems a bit strange." Li Jie felt that the Thor in front of him was not the same as the one he knew.

Although it was Li Jie's idea to let Thor work in the hospital, especially emergency work, he did hope to correct Thor's attitude in this way. But now the progress is too fast!

He has fallen in love with his job so quickly? Li Jie couldn't believe it. From fighting to putting down his knife and saving lives, Thor's transformation was too fast?

"Okay, Jason, if you have nothing to do, you can go play your PS4. I still need

Lan to teach me how to use the computer to search for information." Thor pushed Li Jie away and asked Lan carefully about various questions, including basic operations and how to use search engines. Thor is not smart sometimes, but this is mainly reflected in his emotional intelligence rather than his IQ.

As long as he is willing to learn, he can learn quickly. Besides, he is studying emergency care, so he already has some basics. He has practiced most of the trauma treatment on the battlefield.

"I bought you some medical books on Amazon, mainly about first aid." Lan looked at Thor and smiled, "For this kind of professional knowledge, in addition to online tutorials, the most important thing is professional books. However, Amazon's delivery is relatively slow. If you use Taobao in China, it will be much faster. During this period, you can read it online first, and then study it carefully when the book arrives."

"Thank you." Thor thanked Lan for his help. Li Jie touched his chin and suddenly said, "Thor, do you have any female colleagues in the hospital where you work?"

"Our on-site doctor, Christine, is a female doctor. You should have seen her. When Strange left his office that day, it was that female doctor he wanted to ask out for dinner." Thor replied.

"I see." Li Jie clapped his hands and suddenly realized: "So spring is here."

"Do you have a fever? It's summer already." Lan looked at Li Jie and teased. It was already mid-June and almost July, and they were still talking about spring.

Li Jie looked at Lan and shook his head without explaining. He said to Thor, "By the way, I remember that female doctor was pretty. Strange wants to invite her to dinner? No way, he's a complete bastard."

Li Jie told Thor everything he heard in the office that day, and Thor was extremely angry: "Christine wholeheartedly saves the dying and the wounded, regardless of the rich or the poor, while Strange only practices medicine for money and reputation! He is the worst bastard I have ever seen!"

"Yes, he is two-timing." Li Jie fanned the flames: "To be precise, he wants to have three relationships at the same time. The last time I saw him, it seemed that

he wanted to include Dr. Christine in his harem."

"Christine can't be with this kind of man, and can't date him! He doesn't deserve her." Li Jie agreed with Thor's point of view: "That's right, that's right! Thor! I think you are in a good mental state today. Such a good woman shouldn't be with that kind of scumbag."

"I think you should help her. After all, you are a god! You can't watch such an excellent mortal get into trouble, right?" Li Jie patted Thor's shoulder: "Follow me."

Thor looked at Li Jie and was about to take him upstairs. He didn't know what he was going to do: "What are you going to do?"

Li Jie looked at Thor. He didn't pay much attention to this aspect before. Thor always looked a little unkempt, especially the God of War of Asgard who never cared about his beard and hair.

But on Earth, this is not possible. Strange can play with many women, and his handsome appearance helps a lot. So Li Jie said, "I just want you to be more energetic. You are a bit sloppy. I don't think this is good for Christine and may affect her condition."

"Really?" Thor touched his beard, which had grown very thick.

"That's right, believe me, brother! You have to find a way to save such a good woman. Come on, just come to me if you need help in the future." Li Jie's sudden enthusiasm made Thor a little uneasy. He always felt that Li Jie was planning something.

This was just like the feeling he had every time Loki played a trick on him. He always had this feeling, but usually only realized it after he was tricked...

“Hey, Lan!” Li Jie called to Lan after he came upstairs. “Can you buy Thor some nice clothes? Even from Amazon. I’ll pay for it!”

Lan watched Li Jie dragging Thor away and thought this guy was a little weird.

At a high-end beauty and image center in Queens.

This shop, called Justin's Personal Image Salon, is a popular men's beauty salon and image design shop in Queens. Its main business is beauty, hair design and personal image shaping for men.

Image designers not only help you choose the right hairstyle, but also match your perfume and recommend outfits based on your body shape and temperament. After becoming a member, they will pay attention to the seasons and trends to find the image style that best suits you at the moment.

Here you can get a fashion plan tailored by a professional image consultant. In short, this is a place that helps ordinary people turn into handsome men.

Of course, such stores charge a lot. After all, most people don’t have such professional needs, unless they are high-end people. For example, Harry has a dedicated image team of more than 16 people to ensure that he can show the best image every time he makes a public appearance.

Business tycoons and political elites usually pay great attention to their personal image. It is impossible for wealthy people to buy a set of clothes on the street and attend the APEC meeting or the G20 off-site business negotiations.

Every major public event is carefully designed by these top global figures. Even if someone wears a casual jacket to attend the meeting, there is actually a professional team behind the planning to show the affinity of business leaders.

If someone really appears in sloppy clothes or unkempt appearance, the impression given is definitely not that of being free and unrestrained, but rather that of being uncultured.

However, the store's service targets are not limited to high-end business people or political elites. Such image team design is not what Li Jie needs at the moment.

The store's goal now is to make ordinary people, those who are easily overlooked in life, more stylish. More and more people realize that a good image is crucial in daily life, and middle- and high-income groups are also beginning to have a demand for image design.

Li Jie originally planned to transform Thor's image himself, but found it too difficult and had to give up. This was because the Asgardian god seemed to have

never cared about his image in the first half of his life.

Messy long hair, fluffy beard, casually put on a round neck shirt and loose sweatpants. Well, the typical image of an American fat otaku.

Is such an image attractive to the opposite sex? No way! When Li Jie heard Thor mention Christine, he suddenly realized that this might be an opportunity and something he could take advantage of.

Li Jie hates Strange because he is a complete villain. Thor is far better than this villain in every aspect except being lazy!

Since Thor said Christine is a good woman, how about letting the great God of Thunder rescue her? Win-win!

Although Thor himself was unaware, Li Jie was keenly aware of the reasons for his recent changes. Such changes are positive and worth taking advantage of.

This is good for Li Jie, Thor and Christine. Therefore, Li Jie specially brought Thor here on his rest day.

"I think my hairstyle and beard are good. I don't go out naked, so why should I come here?" When Thor learned about the business of the store, he firmly opposed others touching his hair.

“On Asgard, only women have their hair done and their nails trimmed!”

"Asgard? Sir, I'm not quite sure what place you are talking about. But I think your ideas are outdated and need to be updated." The one who styled Thor's hair was the chief stylist Justin, the owner of the shop, a graceful middle-aged man.

Seeing this man's appearance, Li Jie gained more confidence in this store. He played the bubble dragon game on the iPad provided by the store and said to Thor: "Thor, listen to Justin. He is right. New York is different from your hometown. Men here also do hair styles and often go to clothing stores."

"A good image is also important if you want to achieve good results at work, especially to impress Christine. Well done!" Li Jiegang burst a string of bubbles with Red Bubble.

"Really?" Thor was a little confused. Li Jie's values were completely different from those he had met before. Asgard's god of war only needed to swing a giant axe to chop people. Most male warriors were quite sloppy, except for the wizard.

"Yes, sir. Your hair is actually very good, but it lacks care and cleaning. I won't make any major changes to it. The shawl hairstyle suits you very well. Just keep it tidy." said designer Justin...

Thor has long blond hair that falls to his shoulders. It is smooth and slightly curly, but not exaggerated, so it does not require special care. Justin only needs to help him trim the messy parts and comb the loose hair back neatly.

The beard was a headache for him, because Thor's beard was thick and strong, and he was often too lazy to trim it. He usually just shaved it casually when it grew very thick, and never shaved it clean.

Justin gave him a thorough shave, shaving his beard cleanly, leaving only tiny stubble on his skin, which did not feel prickly at all to the touch, but instead became extremely smooth.

"Well, that's great! You look more energetic!" Li Jie gave Justin a thumbs up. Thor looked in the mirror and was a little uncomfortable with his new look, feeling that he seemed to be less masculine.

Thor and Li Jie obviously have different views on masculinity. Li Jie doesn't think that having a full beard means being masculine. Now Thor looks much more energetic. In addition, he is tall and strong. Although he is a little fat, he at least looks more heroic.

"By the way, Justin, what do you think Thor should wear?" Li Jie looked at Thor's clothes - a brown round-neck sweatshirt, shorts of the same color, and a pair of slippers. Well, this image is really not very good.

"How about hip-hop style? Many people with body shapes like Thor like this style." Justin thinks Thor's body shape and hair are very suitable for hip-hop style.

However, Li Jie imagined Thor wearing hip-hop clothes, with the god of thunder wearing a bright red and green short-sleeved shirt, a baseball jacket, a tilted hat, and a big necklace. Uh, this doesn't seem to be coordinated.

"It's not a good idea. He works in a hospital and can't be too informal." Li Jie rejected the suggestion.

Justin, acting as an image consultant, thought for a moment, "Thor has a kind of rugged temperament. What do you think if we dress him in this direction?"

Li Jie thought this was a good suggestion: "You can try it. It's rough but also has a bit of stability. By the way, he's been losing weight recently, so he'll be down soon. You'll have to consider the subsequent matching then."

"No problem, let me think about it. The name Thor reminds me of the Vikings. Have you ever played a Viking-themed game?"

"Pirate game? The pirates in it are all dirty, that's not good."

"No, I'm talking about Japanese pirate games. Although those pirates are powerful, they are very delicately designed and have a sense of calmness. I think we can borrow a lot of elements from them!"

"Okay, let's follow this idea, Mr. Justin!"

Thor sat there, silent, his image already defined by the two men. Justin immediately told the clerk to prepare all kinds of clothes.

There are two types of clothing combinations. One is formal work wear, which is mainly composed of calm tones, with black, gray and white as the main colors.

The other is casual wear, which can show Thor's personality. As the god of thunder, he also has a wild side.

Silver, red, black and white contrast. These clothes are bold in color, but the overall combination is harmonious.

After Thor tried on these carefully matched clothes, Li Jie and Justin's eyes lit up. Although he was still fat, he looked like an elite after wearing the black and gray formal suit.

The casual silver and black color scheme also makes Thor dazzling.

"Well done, Justin! I think this is great." Li Jie patted Thor's shoulder. Thor now

looked a dozen years younger.

Before, he looked like a fat middle-aged otaku with stubble and casual clothes. Now after the transformation, Thor looks much younger, like a young man in his twenties.

After the change of his image, his mental state also became fuller and he looked much sharper. He showed an aggressiveness that modern urban men lacked, which was the temperament given to him by the war.

This extremely aggressive temperament and aggressive spirit began to emerge, and Thor's mental outlook changed dramatically.

On the way, when Li Jie took Thor home, he clearly saw several girls staring at Thor for a long time. Although Thor had gained weight, his basic condition was still there. He was not ugly originally, but just a bit rough.

The combination of a rugged appearance and a strong aggressive temperament creates an effect that goes beyond either of the two alone. Li Jie said to Thor, "Look, you are starting to attract girls' attention now."

"Why? This is a little hard to understand." Thor was a little confused. He didn't quite understand the aesthetic taste of the earthlings: "In Asgard, only warriors in war can win the favor of ladies."

"Let's put Asgard aside, this is Earth, brother! I think Christine will like your new look." Li Jie patted Thor on the back.

"I don't think she would be so superficial as to only look at appearance." Thor still had some doubts.

"How about we make a bet, one month of housework?" Li Jie confidently invited Thor. Thor readily agreed... ...

Chapter 59 Various Difficulties

When Thor showed up at the office on his first day with his new look, he immediately realized that he had lost the bet, because Christine looked at him, smiled and said, "New look, strong man. Not bad, much more handsome."

She patted Thor's shoulder gently and said with a smile, "I think you can keep it like this."

Okay, I lose this bet. But this new look is pretty good, right?

Tony Stark, once a playboy and now a superhero, has experienced so much in this year.

Whether it was being kidnapped, or the disagreement with his good friend Dr. Ethan over new energy, or the war that was later caused by new energy.

These experiences were lessons and growth for Tony. It can be said that in just one year, he suffered more setbacks, betrayals and blows than he had suffered in the previous thirty years combined.

Perhaps the only thing that could be compared to these things was the death of his parents more than ten years ago.

For Tony, those memories were not worth recalling. He was more concerned about the present.

So, he planned to establish an Illuminati like the Brotherhood of the Holy Shield. After experiencing various difficulties, he realized that he could not solve all the problems alone.

There are always some things in the world that he cannot handle alone, and they require the efforts of like-minded people.

Tony felt that he was lucky. He was not alone. There were people in this era who shared the same ideals as him.

They are all working to change the world and have the same ideas and goals.

At this moment, Tony was particularly grateful to one person, that was Nightcrawler.

This guy may seem insignificant, but he has extraordinary abilities. A superhero doesn't necessarily have to be extremely powerful.

For example, Captain America Rogers. If Tony wanted, he guaranteed that one laser cannon could end Rogers' life.

But Captain Rogers is unfathomable in his political strategy. He uses his position to accuse the military and government, putting pressure on the world to force them to let go of their suppression of S.H.I.E.L.D.

Rogers was loyal to the United States and to humanity, but he was not simply loyal to a particular political regime.

When the government's actions go against his beliefs, he will not hesitate to stand up and change things.

The Night Walker is just as radical, if not more so: He pledges no loyalty to any regime or government, and makes no compromises with any ideology.

Nightcrawler is loyal to only two things: his family and his identity as a human being.

Beyond that, he was disdainful of any form of government and never pledged allegiance to the U.S. government or any other government.

From the plan he revealed to Tony, it can be seen that he wants to use the appearance of the dark elves to tell governments around the world that humans are not alone.

The ultimate goal is to promote the reform of the Earth's political system. His ultimate ideal is to completely abandon the concept of the country, and in the future there will be only one unified government on Earth.

This idea is bold, but it is worth a try. Night Walker may not have the strength to defy the heavens,

But he is the core of the whole incident. He connects various forces and promotes the progress of the plan.

Tony is an adventurous man, but his complicated relationship with the US government constrains him. There are some things he wants to do, but he can't say or do it himself.

Including Captain America and Professor X, they carry too many responsibilities and are often not as relaxed as Nightcrawler. Because Nightcrawler does not have so many tangled relationships, he can analyze things from a more objective perspective.

In the Illuminati, Professor X and Beast are responsible for technology, Tony is the funder, and together with Captain America, he also plays the role of official communication.

The Night Walker is like a lobbyist, shuttling between various forces, acting as a liaison and lubricant.

In terms of role, Tony had to admit that Nightcrawler was the most important and critical person in the organization.

Just like now, Tony and the Illuminati are implementing and supporting Nightcrawler's plans. He always has an inexplicable way of convincing others to accept his ideas.

It can be said that Night Walker is a master of verbal attacks. He is not a chatterbox, but only speaks the key words at the key moments to make people believe.

Like Tony is doing now, starting a shampoo company, something he's never tried before.

"Pepper, I have no choice but to ask you for help with this. You know there are not many people I trust." Tony turned to his former personal assistant, now the CEO of Stark Group, for help.

"This is my private company. Stark Group cannot interfere."

"Selling shampoo? Tony, I have no objection to you expanding your product range and increasing your diversification, but shampoo is a bit too much. And you have already prepared the company, and suddenly you want me to be the president of this new company part-time?"

Pepper Potts looked at Tony's plan and found it a little ridiculous. A company that manufactures weapons, energy and heavy industry suddenly wants to make shampoo? This is ridiculous!

"No, that's not the case. Pepper, you have to understand how big the hair growth water market is. Global consumption in this area alone exceeds 20 billion US dollars per year! Imagine those people with hair loss. For them, losing hair is like losing the whole world! We have a responsibility to save them, just as it is important to save the earth." Tony used Li Jie's argument to convince Pepper.

"What?" Pepper looked at me with a look of "Are you kidding me?" "So, you want to tell me that your hair is starting to fall out?"

"No, my hair is healthy!" Tony quickly shook off his own wild thoughts.

"I just got hold of this patent and can use it to make more money!"

Pepper looked at Tony with suspicion: "Since when does Tony Stark care about money?"

"I've always cared, and of course I need money. For some cause. I can't use the funds of Stark Group, I know you would be unhappy. You've already left me once." Tony looked at Pepper sincerely.

"Is it for your superhero career?" Pepper roughly guessed where Tony needed the money.

But she didn't know that Tony's secret Venus base plan had already started and even took shape. The start-up funds came from his personal property. He also needed the profits of the new company to fill his wallet.

Looking at Pepper's playful face, Tony suddenly put his arms around her waist and slowly moved closer to her face. A subtle atmosphere filled the air.

Tony was an attractive man, and it would be a lie to say that Pepper had never been attracted to him. It was just that Tony's previous dissolute life made Pepper unhappy.

However, after going through so many things, Tony has restrained himself a lot in the past year and no longer flirts with other women. Therefore, Pepper's good impression of him has gradually recovered. Sometimes she would think about what the relationship between her and Tony is. Is it a superior and a subordinate, or just his nanny? These are not what she wants.

So Pepper didn't resist Tony's closeness, but her voice was a little nervous: "Tony, don't do this. It's not wise to fall in love with your boss. Tony, I can't..."

But Tony is a man who dares to act and take responsibility. Once he decides to do something, few people can stop him.

"I can't lose you, Pepper! Without you, I can't even remember my social security number. Being a superhero is not just my hobby, I know there are things on earth worth protecting. I can't lose these, I can't lose you!" Tony kissed her before Pepper finished speaking. Well, blocked her mouth with his mouth.

The kiss lasted for nearly thirty seconds, and Pepper was almost out of breath.

"Oh my god. Tony, is my face so red?" Pepper felt her face burning.

"Who cares?" Tony hugged Pepper and smiled. The more Tony experienced, the more he understood what was most important to him. Only when the things he cared about really existed, he became more and more stable from a playboy.

"Okay, Tony, if you insist. I can be the president of the new company." Pepper fanned her cheeks, trying to cool her face down.

“What is the name of the new company and when will the product be launched?”

Tony shrugged at the question: "The company's name is Shuguang Technology Co., Ltd."

Pepper frowned instinctively. For a company that sold hair tonic, the name seemed too high-sounding.

"As for the name of the product, it's called Shuguang 101 Hair Growth Liquid." This name was given by Li Jie. He insisted on using this name. Tony didn't know why, but it didn't matter. The name was not bad.

"As for the time of product launch, well." Tony was a little nervous when he said this: "Well, the first batch of products will be released in three days."

He was ready to accept Pepper's blame. After all, he didn't tell her in advance, and she didn't like to be asked to help at the last minute.

But this time, to Tony's surprise, Pepper just said softly, "Okay, I got it. Give me the information later."

"Ah!" Tony didn't expect Pepper to be so reasonable this time. Could this be a fake Pepper?

No matter what Tony thought, it was settled. Three days later, the world would usher in a revolution, not in new energy or advanced medical regeneration technology. It was a headache for countless middle-aged people. They finally didn't have to shout at the small advertisements on the telephone poles: "My disease can be cured!"

Because this time, baldness can finally be saved! And the funds raised from solving the baldness problem will be used to build a base on Venus and form an interstellar fleet!

This time the Illuminati will not only save hair loss, but will also save the world!

Dawn 101 Hair Growth Water, in fact, the medicine developed by Beast Hank has made considerable progress. After eliminating most of the side effects, the only effect of its medical medicine is to promote hair growth.

This kind of hair regeneration stimulates the hair follicles throughout the body, which can reactivate the originally necrotic hair follicles and restore the ability to grow hair.

For an emergency drug designed to heal severe trauma, the effect was only to stimulate a small amount of hair growth. This was an almost hopeless failure of the Beast's original expectations...

Chapter 60 Sudden realization

However, when Li Jie corrected everyone's thinking and looked at this thing from a different perspective, it immediately became a magical medicine. A magical medicine that can make people thirst for knowledge!

Don’t underestimate the middle-aged uncle’s complaints about hair loss, and don’t underestimate their financial strength. Just like playing games, if an uncle who is addicted to FGO or KanColle games is willing to spend money, those characters like elementary school students will have to bow their heads in front of the uncle.

Hank Beast and Tony Stark improved the Dawn 101 hair growth potion very quickly. Originally, this thing was a remedy for the disease. They just adjusted the properties of the medicine appropriately and changed the original injection to a smear type.

At a meeting of the Illuminati to discuss the launch of hair growth water, Li Jie once emphasized: "We are a high-tech product! It is not like hyaluronic acid and botulinum toxin, nor is it sheep placenta! Injectable things easily make people think of micro plastic surgery!"

"Before we sell our products, we have to understand our customer base first. Most middle-aged men, especially straight men, are very averse to micro-plastic surgery!" Li Jie waved his fist. His speaking style was very similar to that of China's famous billionaire Jack Ma.

"We can't sell them something that has potential implications. Even though they won't notice it right away, they'll become defensive over time."

Captain Rogers has a different view on this: "I think it's similar to plastic surgery. I see people who get hyaluronic acid and Botox in the news, and they're also pursuing beauty. Hair growth is a similar pursuit."

"What we have to do is very simple, that is, to save hair loss! This is not a difficult task, but to regain what they once had - hair! They used to have lush hair, but now they have lost it. So, this is actually a war to regain lost ground!" Li Jie became more and more excited, and finally he even slammed the table hard, making bursts of banging sounds.

His speech at this moment reminded people of a profession: MLM salesperson. Maybe he really has this talent.

"I think we should make the use of hair growth water simpler." Li Jie crossed his arms and looked at Dr. Hank.

"For example, make it into a normal potion, preferably the same as shampoo. Let the user clean the areas where hair growth is needed." Li Jie touched his chin and thought: "After all, it is a bit wasteful to stimulate the hair follicles all over the body. If they are healthy hair follicles, wouldn't that be a waste of resources?"

Dr. Hank nodded: "If we do this, we can greatly reduce the use of curative genes and reduce costs."

The healing factor that Dr. Hank mentioned is no longer extracted from Wolverine. Every bottle of hair growth water produced must take genes from the old wolf, and the old wolf will be drained sooner or later.

This self-healing factor was cultivated by Dr. Hank himself and can be reproduced in large quantities. However, the self-healing ability of this factor is very weak and it is of no use except for regenerating hair.

The other ingredients in the hair growth water are useless, the key is this self-healing factor. Dr. Hank began to calculate that according to Li Jie's idea, the amount of self-healing factor required will be greatly reduced, probably only about 5% of the original amount.

In this way, the cost can be reduced by a full 95%! This is really a surprising deal. However, Dr. Hank did not smile for this. Instead, he frowned and said, "But if we do this, the activity of the self-healing factors may not be guaranteed. They may not be able to activate the hair follicles for a long time, let alone completely repair the hair follicles. Once the self-healing factors lose their activity, the hair follicles will fall into a state of exhaustion again. Because of this, we must constantly replenish fresh self-healing factors to continuously

stimulate the hair follicles."

Bang! Li Jie clapped his hands fiercely: "This is the effect I want!" He said excitedly: "Doctor, according to your calculations, how long can this stimulation of hair follicles remain active?"

Dr. Hank used a microcomputer to list a bunch of data, and after doing a simulation experiment, he said to Li Jie: "Theoretically, it can last for 150 days, but I think it will take 90 days to replenish new self-healing factors."

"That's enough, Doctor!" Li Jie patted Hank on the shoulder with a sly smile on his face, as if a shrewd businessman was calculating his own gains and losses. His eyes flashed with greed, as if he had seen the future wealth rolling in.

"If you can cure hair loss in one go, who can we sell our products to in the future?" Li Jie continued, with a hint of pride in his tone. He knew the laws of the market and the psychology of consumers, and only by getting customers to keep buying their products could they make sustained profits.

"Replacement every 90 days, this time period is acceptable to most people. In this way, we can ensure a stable customer base and revenue. This is what we really need to pursue!" Li Jie's voice is full of temptation, which makes people moved.

He knows that the long-term approach to business is to catch big fish. In this way, they can gradually build brand loyalty and attract more customers to become loyal fans. All of this will bring them great business success and wealth accumulation.

Tony, Hank, Rogers, and Charles looked at Li Jie with dark faces. It was the first time they realized that this guy was so cunning.

"I suddenly feel like I chose the wrong partner." Tony said silently, "He's as ruthless as the arms dealer."

In fact, Tony was still wrong, or he underestimated Li Jie's ruthlessness. When the first batch of hair growth water products came out, after repeated cost calculations, everyone was surprised to find that the cost of this thing was much lower than expected. Counting all the expenses, except for the logistics costs that would be difficult to control in the future.

The cost of a bottle of hair growth water is only about seven dollars, which is a very low price. Of course, this is thanks to Li Jie directly cutting the amount of self-healing factor by 95%. It is because of this decision that the production cost of the entire potion has been reduced.

As for pricing, hehe.

"Thirty dollars? Doctor, are you crazy?!" Li Jie looked at Hank with disbelief. He doubted the price proposed by Dr. Hank.

"Is this price high? Well, it is indeed a bit high considering the cost is seven dollars. In fact, we can make a lot of money at twenty dollars." Hank thought Li Jie thought the price was too high, so he took the initiative to propose a price reduction.

"Doctor, I think you are really only suitable for doing research in the laboratory, not for participating in business." Li Jie held his forehead and shook his head.

"But if we drop the price further to $20, our profit will be too little," Hank frowned.

"Doc, twenty dollars is correct." Li Jie said to Hank earnestly, "But we have to add a number in front of the twenty dollars. It's one hundred and twenty dollars a bottle!"

Poof! Tony, Charles, and Rogers, who were drinking coffee, all burst out laughing at the same time. Li Jie's price was too high. He wanted to sell something for 120 dollars that cost 7 dollars?

The price has increased by seventeen times. Tony used to sell arms, and it is said that selling arms is very profitable. But from the profit margin point of view, the profit from selling arms is far less than that from selling hair growth water!

Marx said: When the profit reaches 50%, the capitalists will do whatever it takes; when the profit reaches 100%, the capitalists will take risks; when the profit reaches 200%, the capitalists will dare to ignore all laws, dignity and morals just to pursue wealth.

What if the profit reaches 1,700 percent? Such a profit is enough to drive any capitalist crazy!

"Guys, don't look at me like that. This money is not for my own use. This is public funds, and ultimately it is taken from the people and used for the people." Li Jie looked at the way other people in the Illuminati looked at him, just like Yang Bailao looked at Zhou Baopi.

Li Jie doesn't think his price is high. One hundred and twenty dollars guarantees that your hair will be thick and black in three months, and it will be natural growth, not transplanted hair or wigs.

That's only 40 dollars a month, or less than 300 yuan in RMB. Is this expensive? Not at all! Most people can afford it, and Li Jie guarantees that they will think it's a bargain!

After Li Jie's repeated persuasion, the others finally accepted the price. After that, Tony persuaded Pepper to take over the company.

Three days after Tony and Pepper talked, the first batch of large-scale products was about to be launched. The first batch of products was nearly 100,000 bottles. After learning about the product introduction and performance of the entire company in detail, Pepper urgently held a product launch conference.

Due to time constraints, many news media did not have time to arrive at the scene. However, many news media based in New York still attended the press conference. After all, this was Tony Stark's product launch.

His last press conference shocked the whole world. That new energy press conference changed the world. This time, everyone was curious about Tony's new product. Especially when they heard that this was a company run by Tony himself, not under the Stark Group, everyone became more interested.

What kind of invention would make Tony so cautious that he wouldn't even let Stark Group get involved? The media that received the invitation went to the product launch site with great interest.

When they arrived at the scene, they found that the scene of this press conference was completely different from that of Stark Group in the past.

In the past, apart from the media, those sitting in the front row of press conferences were either political bigwigs, military representatives, or at worst business elites from various industries.

But today, none of the veteran reporters sitting in the reserved seats in the front row recognized him. This made many veteran reporters confused. What was Tony Stark trying to do today?

"Jason, do you know these people sitting here?" Zhou Hai, a senior reporter from Xinhua News Agency, asked his colleague from AFP next to him.

Jason, a reporter from AFP, looked for a long time and finally recognized a man: "I know that man, the one in the blue suit. He is the global purchasing manager of Carrefour in France."

At this time, Zhou Hai also found someone he knew: "I also saw someone I know. Is that Watsons' Asia Operations Director?"

The two senior reporters looked at each other. It seemed that Tony Stark's products had nothing to do with Carrefour and Watsons.

In fact, in addition to representatives from Carrefour and Watsons, there were also senior executives from many large retailers such as Walmart and Yaohan. When they received Tony's invitation letter, they didn't know what Tony invited them to do.

Heavy weapons are not allowed to be sold in supermarkets!

However, when they saw many of their peers at the scene, everyone suddenly realized that Tony might be launching a civilian product this time...

At this time, Zhou Hai and Jason also figured out this clue. The two senior reporters seemed a little excited, because Tony Stark always surprises people. What kind of surprise will he bring this time?

Chapter 61 Changing the World

Tony is a man who is good at creating surprises, whether it is the unimaginable weapons he launched in his early years as an arms dealer, or the sudden announcement of the closure of the weapons manufacturing department of the Stark Group, or even his big moves in the field of new energy, every press release always makes people look forward to what surprises he will bring. Especially when everyone speculates that he is about to launch civilian products.

At this moment, Tony Stark could swear that everything that happened next, including all subsequent events, had nothing to do with him. He swore on his thick hair that everything he said was true.

Wal-Mart's Americas Operations Purchasing Manager and Carrefour's Global Purchasing Manager sit next to each other. In the retail industry, both Wal-Mart and Carrefour are giants, with Wal-Mart having a slight advantage. As the supermarket overlord, Wal-Mart controls the world's most critical retail sales channels. This large company can always obtain various privileges, such as lowering supplier prices and requiring large quantities of goods to be delivered quickly.

For Walmart, this is normal, because in this era, channels are king. Whoever controls the channels will have the last laugh. But now, traditional retail is suffering from a strong impact from online sales, especially in the Chinese market. Thanks to the popularity of Jack Ma's Taobao, online shopping has become a new way of shopping.

In order to regain lost ground, traditional retailers must make some improvements and have their own unique products. Therefore, in Wal-Mart or Carrefour supermarkets, you can see some special products that are only sold in these supermarkets. These large retailers integrate supplier resources and develop products that are only sold in these supermarkets, such as low-priced and high-quality cooking oil and grain, or T-shirts, hats, and sometimes even

customized metal furniture.

Today, the global retail and cosmeceutical giants gathered together, all because of a sentence Tony Stark said on the invitation: New products will not be sold online. This means that Tony's new products will go through the traditional retail route. Although everyone is still unclear about what the new products are, it does not prevent them from guessing.

The Carrefour representative asked Wal-Mart representative Smith: "What new products do you think Tony will launch?"

Smith shrugged. "I don't know. The last time Mr. Stark released a shocking civilian product was a hover car, which is now on the market on a large scale."

"He bypassed the Stark Group this time and is likely not involved in heavy industrial products. It is unlikely to be something like cars, Dyson."

The Dyson representative from Carrefour nodded: "If it's light industry or daily necessities, I haven't heard that Mr. Stark has done in-depth research in this area."

"Could it be a personal hovering vehicle? Applying the car's hovering technology to a single-person device?" Smith speculated.

Nowadays, there are many single-person mobility scooters in cities. Although there is a certain market, it is not large. If they are transformed into floating types, they should be more popular.

AFP reporter Jason and Xinhua reporter Zhou Hai also speculated in this direction: "Do you think it might be a product related to suspension technology?" Zhou Hai asked.

Jason nodded. "Yes, Tony Stark pursues speed. In addition to the hover car, he may launch more similar products." He analyzed it clearly. "Have you seen Back to the Future? In that classic movie, the protagonist traveled to 2015. In addition to the hover car, he also got a hoverboard! Although the hover car was launched two years later than the movie predicted, if Tony Stark launched a hoverboard, it would also be a good selling point. 'We have realized the dream of Back to the Future'. What do you think?"

The two were discussing with great interest. Almost everyone was guessing technology and machinery, and the most outrageous guess was electronic products related to AR and VR, because this was Tony Stark's usual research direction.

When the press conference time arrived, after the host's lengthy opening remarks, Starleon, the product project manager of Sugon, came on stage. He was nearly sixty years old and full of energy. Tony and Pepper did not host the event in person, perhaps because they were embarrassed.

Starleon started the speech concisely: "I think you must be very curious about what kind of surprises Tony Stark, the outstanding scientist and philanthropist, who has changed the world countless times, will bring this time!"

Everyone was eagerly waiting for it. After all, this product launch was broadcast live by 25 online media outlets and could be seen by people from all corners of the world. The new energy released by Tony Stark last time had profoundly changed the world, so this new product launch had more than 90 million viewers watching it live online around the world.

Netizen A asked: "Will he launch something that will change the world this time?"

Netizen B responded: "It's hard to say. I heard that the news revealed at the scene was that it was just a civilian product."

Netizen C firmly believes: "Tony Stark will not let us down! He was born to change the world!" It seems that he is a die-hard Iron Man fan.

However, in the secret base of the Illuminati, Tony buried his face deeply between his knees. He did not dare to look up at the computer screen, for fear that his reputation would be ruined after the new product was announced.

"Cheer up, Tony, this is also a good thing that can change the world." Li Jie sat next to Tony and encouraged him.

"No, can you turn the computer around? I don't want to see what happens next." Tony covered his face with his hands. He could no longer accept the fact that he was going to sell hair growth water. This was completely inconsistent with his image.

Iron Man should be researching high-end fields such as machinery, supercars and new energy, so why was he persuaded by Li Jie to start a company to sell hair growth water? Although the Illuminati is indeed short of money.

But whether Tony was willing to face it or not, what he was worried about finally happened. At the press conference, Starleon announced with excitement: "Now, I want to introduce to you a product that can change the world! This is the new technology product that Tony Stark has spent several years to develop - Dawn 101 Hair Growth Toner!"

Tony, who was far away in Rome, huddled on the sofa, covering his ears with his hands, feeling extremely embarrassed. It was so embarrassing, so embarrassing! He had never known what embarrassment was, but now he experienced it.

At the press conference, when Starion unveiled the name of the product and announced that it works as a hair growth water, the whole place fell silent.

"WTF?" Smith, the Wal-Mart representative, couldn't help but curse. Tony Stark was selling hair growth water? He felt that he might have attended a fake press conference, and the Tony Stark who was invited was also fake! He was still good, at least he could react.

The other delegates and journalists were all in a state of ecstasy, as if they had just seen Voldemort cast the petrification spell in the Harry Potter movies. On the live streaming platform, many netizens also suddenly became speechless, as if they had forgotten how to type, and the comment section suddenly became quiet.

Until Xinhua News Agency reporter Zhou Hai raised his shaking hand and asked: "Hello, you just said that Mr. Tony's new product is hair growth water?"

Zhou Hai felt like he was dreaming. Even if Tony announced that he had invented a super weapon that could destroy the earth with one shot, people would not find it too bizarre. Although they would be shocked, it would at least be within the expected range. But how could Iron Man sell hair growth water? He even devoted himself to research for several years? Could it be that Tony was originally bald and had been relying on wigs and hair transplants to cover it up, and invented this to treat his hair loss problem? Reporters immediately thought of an explosive news headline - "The Mystery of Iron Man's Five-Year Hair Loss".

After Zhou Hai's question, the crowd regained some clarity. Some people thought it was a scam and that the press conference was not initiated by Tony; others thought that Tony was a mechanical expert and that hair growth water involved biology or chemistry, so it was impossible for him to come up with a high-quality product.

On the Internet, netizens who had just been "petrified" also started to become active again.

Netizen A joked: "Oh my god! Tony Stark is selling hair tonic? Will the hair be as hard as gold-titanium alloy after using it?"

Netizen B exclaimed: "I must have watched a fake press conference."

Netizen C supported it as always: "Even if Tony Stark sells hair tonic, it must be the best in the world!"

In the secret base of the Illuminati, Tony was trembling. He hid here because he was afraid that reporters would block the door after the press conference. The other Illuminati members, including Captain Rogers, were watching the press conference intently.

Professor Charles commented: "Looks like good publicity." Tony thought: To me, this is negative publicity!

Captain Rogers analyzed: "This may be contrast marketing. Tony has never been involved in this industry before, and the cross-border cooperation of super giants always attracts attention." Tony thought to himself: I don't want this kind of attention at all!

Dr. Hank said: "Tony, although the hair tonic was invented by me, I think it is most suitable to be named after you." Tony suspected: You just want to see me make a fool of myself!

Li Jie said gratefully: "I have to thank Tony for his contribution to the organization this time. I believe that after this product is on the market, we will be able to earn enough funds and we will no longer have to ask Tony for money. We can be self-sufficient. Thank you, Tony!" Tony thought to himself: It's all your fault that I am like this!

Chapter 62 Manager

Mr. Iron Man hid in a corner of the sofa. He planned to draw a few circles to curse those who wanted to create chaos in the world.

The press conference was bustling with noise.

"Everyone, please be quiet." Starleon is an experienced manager. He knows how to control the situation, that is to divert everyone's attention: "Please listen to me."

"This product is different from any hair growth product on the market and does not contain any false advertising." Starleon took out a small black bottle. Its simple and elegant design was eye-catching, and a close-up on the big screen followed.

"This is a real hair growth product. There are no fancy gimmicks and it does not require any treatments or cycles. Just use it and you will get a surprise in ten minutes." Lesdaang signaled the people who were ready backstage to come on stage.

These people are all suffering from hair loss. Lesdayn knows that facts speak louder than words, so he decides to demonstrate the power of Mr. Tony’s new invention on the spot!

Everyone present guessed his intention because he said that after using this hair growth water, hair would start to regenerate in ten minutes!

The usage of Shuguang 101 is very simple. Just pour it out like water and apply it to the area where hair loss occurs. It has no irritating odor.

The camera was focused on ten men with hair loss on the stage. After applying hair growth water, they began to grow black hair in their bald spots in just one minute. The audience and the netizens who watched the live broadcast were

amazed.

Everyone has discovered that this hair growth water is completely different from what is advertised on the street, it is really effective!

Lesdaon introduced the functions and characteristics of the hair growth water in detail, and repeatedly emphasized that it is non-toxic and harmless to the human body. The only drawback is that one bottle can only last for 90 days, and if you want to continue the effect, you have to buy it again.

Representatives from major supermarkets and drugstores immediately realized the importance of this product, and its launch would revolutionize the global hair care market.

Because Shuguang 101 can continuously repair and maintain hair follicles, even people who do not have hair loss can use it to protect their hair. This is an irresistible temptation for women who love to perm and dye their hair.

Perming and dyeing hair is extremely harmful to hair and hair follicles. With Shuguang 101, you don’t need to worry about dry, split ends, and yellow hair! Hair care lotions from brands such as Head & Shoulders, Clairol, Rejoice, and Vidal Sassoon will be replaced. One bottle of Shuguang 101 is worth multiple bottles!

Starleon's speech ignited the enthusiasm of the whole audience. Supermarket managers understood the value of this product. How many people would stay up all night to queue outside the supermarket for a bottle of Shuguang 101?

How much traffic can this product attract? Rational market managers know what traffic means to supermarkets.

In particular, Tony clearly stated in the invitation letter that this product would not be sold online, but would only be supplied directly to retailers to avoid intermediaries.

This cuts off the possibility of buying Sugon 101 from other places. Even if there is, it is from supermarkets or pharmacies.

The Illuminati urgently needed to recover funds, so Li Jie thought that online sales or building their own channels were not good ideas.

Although building your own sales channels is the best from the perspective of maximizing profits, it takes time. There are many examples of companies that built their own channels, like Xiaomi, but the results were not ideal.

Therefore, Li Jie and Tony decided to use the existing world-class sales channels. In modern society, it is often said that channels are king, but the specific situation depends on the specific analysis.

When a product is scarce and a necessity, the market is dominated by sellers. Whoever has the product is the boss, and channels can only obey.

Because the channel is not single, it would be terrible if you were excluded due to the lack of a certain popular product.

In a society with serious homogeneity of commodities, both online games and VR have to face fierce competition. When creating a popular game, you have to consider its profitability lifespan.

Is there any good business like hair growth water, which can provide long-term benefits with a one-time investment? As long as people still have hair loss, the product will continue to make money! More importantly, others cannot copy it.

When the men with hair loss on the stage grew hair back, their original hair became smooth and shiny.

Watsons' Asia operations director couldn't help but ask, "Excuse me, I want to ask if Shuguang 101 is a drug batch number or a cosmetic batch number."

This question is crucial because drugs require special sales licenses. Starleon smiled and replied: "Don't worry, this is a cosmetic batch number."

Hearing this, all the retail representatives breathed a sigh of relief. If it was cosmetics, it meant that it could be put on the shelves in large quantities.

"Mr. Starleon, what is the capacity of your production line? When will the first batch of products be available for sale?" Walmart representative Smith asked directly.

Traditional retailers have been hit hardest by e-commerce, and they urgently need a flagship product to save the situation.

"The current production capacity is 300,000 bottles per month. The first batch of 100,000 bottles has been manufactured and is waiting to be shipped from the warehouse. In the future, we will increase it to about 1 million bottles per month and continue to expand production capacity depending on the situation." Starleon's smile made Smith feel a little nervous.

One hundred thousand bottles is too few. For Walmart, which has thousands of stores around the world, it is difficult to distribute even one bottle to each store. Even one million bottles is not enough, as Walmart alone can take them all.

At this moment, Smith felt that all his colleagues present were competitors! He was not the only one who thought so. Those who were as close as brothers just now kept their distance.

The quantity of products is limited. Whoever offers better conditions and can seize the opportunity first will be able to get the supply!

Smith has already whispered to his assistant behind him: "Do everything possible to arrange for me to meet Miss Pepper! I will sign a contract with her this afternoon! I will see this product on the shelves of Walmart tomorrow!"

Watsons representatives are also quietly discussing with the group president: "We must get this hair growth water no matter how much it costs. We must fight for resources even if it doesn't make money. Otherwise, we will have no place in the pharmaceutical cosmetics market!"

The Shuguang 101 hair growth water was just the beginning of the conference. Laisdaang smiled and announced the company's next product plan to all the representatives attending the conference.

"Dawn Trauma Repair Fluid (tentative name) can repair minor body injuries caused by various accidents, including cuts and burns. It can also repair large areas of skin with first-degree burns." For those who are familiar with the cosmetics and plastic surgery market, everything Starleon said is enough to trigger a global craze.

“From now on, skin grafting and laser scar removal will become a thing of the past. Shuguang will provide a more friendly cosmetic treatment method for those in need!”

The entire audience was stunned instantly. Not only would skin grafting and laser scar removal have to say goodbye, but if this repair fluid really appeared, both the Lancome little black bottle and the SK2 big red bottle could be thrown into the trash can!

Veteran journalist Zhou Hai knew what today's event meant. He looked at Jason from AFP and exclaimed: "Tony Stark is going to become the overlord of the global cosmeceuticals market!"

"That's right." Jason agreed, "Guns are men's toys, and cosmetics are women's toys. Tony is good at both!" Huh? Jason suddenly felt that he had found a good news clue.

The launch of Dawn Hair Growth Water and the planned release of Scar Repair Fluid have once again stirred up global excitement. This time it was not due to any high-end event, but rather the cheers of the grassroots people for their needs.

Developing helium-3 and hovering cars are too far away for ordinary people. These are out of reach for them, but Tony's new products can really change daily life.

Especially the repair fluid, for many people who have been disfigured due to accidents, it can help restore their appearance, which will be a great deed.

On the Internet, countless women are looking forward to the launch of the repair fluid, and countless men are starting to ask how to buy Dawn 101, even if they have to queue up all night to buy it!

"Bald Savior! Friend of Women!" Slogans like this spread on the Internet, and these titles were given to Tony Stark to thank him for his contributions to men and women. Although Tony may not like the title of "Bald Nemesis Iron Man", it sounds like the name of a third-rate villain.

At this moment, Mr. Iron Man, who was being talked about by everyone, was sitting on the sofa trembling, looking at Mr. Nightcrawler who was smiling. Although he had expected this situation, he did not expect that his reputation would be ruined so thoroughly.

All this is thanks to the guy in front of me. He was the one who proposed to make hair growth water and repair fluid! The good Iron Man has become a

cosmetics dealer!

"Nightwalker, just wait, one day I will make you pay the price!" the trembling Mr. Iron Man swore to himself.

Whether it is Shuguang Company’s hair growth water or the upcoming repair fluid, it instantly attracted a lot of attention around the world.

If someone else suddenly came up with a similar product, claiming that it could solve the problem of hair loss for years, your first reaction would probably be to not believe it. What if the product is fake with special effects?

But since the boss of Dawn is Tony Stark, a world-renowned scientist and superhero Iron Man, his name itself represents credibility. No one thinks he would deceive others in this regard, because it makes no sense to Tony.

On the afternoon of the product launch, Ms. Pepper, who is also the CEO of Sugon Technology Co., Ltd., had her phone ringing off the hook. As the workload increased, Pepper had assigned herself a professional team of seven secretaries. Of course, the cost was paid by Tony.

Secretary A found Pepper with the documents: "Ms. Pepper, Mr. Smith from Wal-Mart wants to arrange a meeting this afternoon." Wal-Mart is one of the top ten companies in the world. Although it has no intersection with Stark Group before, Pepper usually meets with their representatives out of courtesy. Moreover, her products will be sold in Wal-Mart soon.

Secretary B then said, "Ms. Pepper, the general representative of Carrefour North America would like to invite you to dinner." It goes without saying that it was also for Shuguang 101. "The representative of Watsons also hopes to discuss cooperation with you." "The representative of Yaohan wants to meet, they are already downstairs in the company!" "The representative of Jiuguang Group..." Before the press conference was over, Pepper was surrounded by a group of retailers who wanted to obtain the source of goods. In the end, Pepper felt that it was too cumbersome to negotiate one by one, so she decided to call all the retailers who wanted to obtain the source of goods to talk together.

"Walmart has more than 50,000 top-notch supermarkets around the world. Walmart can help Shuguang sell your products all over the world!" As the representative of Walmart, Smith is full of confidence. After all, Walmart has the

strength to do so.

However, Smith's words caused dissatisfaction among representatives of other retailers. Especially for Watsons, which mainly sells drugstore cosmetics, the future products of Shuguang Company clearly indicate the trend of the industry. Even if Walmart does not sell drugstore cosmetics, it can still sell other products; if Watsons does not sell drugstore cosmetics, it may have to close down!

Therefore, the representative of Watsons immediately showed his trump card: "Watsons is willing to be the exclusive agent for all future products of Shuguang Company, and only take 1% of the profit!" This statement caused an uproar at the scene. In the retail industry, a 1% profit is almost a loss, and it may even lose money. Watsons is going to use a ruthless trick!

Seeing the chaotic scene, Pepper knocked on the table: "Gentlemen, calm down! I have a distribution list here, you can take a look."

Pepper instructed his secretary to distribute the pre-prepared distribution table to everyone. "Shuguang Company's products are not only hair toner and repair fluid, we also have many excellent products under development. Tony has mastered a new technology that will lead the revolution in the pharmaceutical and cosmetic industry." Pepper mistakenly thought that Tony's achievements were all created by himself.

"In the future, traditional cosmeceuticals will be gradually replaced by Suguang's products. I can reveal that in addition to the products that have been announced, our strategic plan also includes eyebrow pencils, skin moisturizers, teeth and gum protection mouthwashes, etc.! These products will have real effects, not false advertising!" Pepper's words ignited the hearts of everyone present. They knew what this meant. When Suguang Technology Co., Ltd. really puts these products on the shelves, it means that traditional cosmeceuticals companies will exit the stage of history.

Chapter 63 Divide

How much profit can the global cosmeceuticals industry generate? According to incomplete statistics, the world spends more than $1 billion on cosmeceuticals and personal care products every year. With a global population of 75 billion, each person spends at least $15 on skin care every year. This is a huge market. And it is foreseeable that as living standards improve, this market will only expand, not shrink.

At this critical moment, Tony Stark took a crucial step. The final result of the negotiation was that Walmart obtained 50% of the supply, after all, it is the leader in the global retail industry.

Next was Watsons, which specializes in cosmeceuticals. Due to its small size, Pepper would not have sent an invitation letter if it had not been for its professional status. Watsons received 10%, and the remaining 40% was divided among other companies.

In terms of pricing, the factory price of Shuguang 101 is set at $120, which is non-negotiable. Retailers cannot get any price discounts. The suggested retail price is $158 per bottle, which ensures the profit of retailers.

But high profits do not come without a price. Suguang does not bear the cost of logistics, publicity, promotion and other activities, which must be paid by retailers from their profits. This can be called an overlord clause, but in a seller's market, Pepper proposed these conditions and the retail giants had no objection. Because they understand that if they refuse now, they may not have a share in the future.

After signing the agreement, everyone was concerned about one question: where is the goods? They want to pick up the goods now and put them on the shelves for sale tomorrow or the day after tomorrow! Retail giants began to contact special aircraft. For these multinational retailers, having several special aircraft is the norm.

Retailers are all planning how to distribute the limited supply. Walmart can only get 5 bottles at most, which is far from enough. So Walmart concentrates its resources in North America. Carrefour is responsible for Europe, Yaohan and Hisamitsu dominate the Japanese market, and Watsons is responsible for the Chinese market. For example, Watsons announced that it will only sell Shuguang 101 in ten stores in the three major cities of Beijing, Shanghai and Guangzhou, and the daily quantity is limited to 50 bottles per store per day, while stocks last.

Each customer can only buy one bottle in the store. Wal-Mart and Carrefour have also adopted a similar sales strategy because the supply is really limited. The limited supply in major cities has attracted the interest of many people who have watched the video of the launch conference. People with hair loss hope to use it to grow hair, while those who have not lost hair want to use it for hair care.

After learning about the sales strategies of various companies, almost everyone who wanted to buy this product began to line up in front of the sales point. This time it was no longer a night of waiting in line for the new iPhone. For many people, the Sugon 101 was much more important than a fashionable new phone.

From New York to Tokyo, from Frankfurt to London, to Shanghai and Paris, people all over the world were fascinated by a cosmetic product for the first time. But the news media was even more enthusiastic than the people, which made Tony feel uneasy.

"Jarvis, don't send me any news about me today!" Tony knew that there would be a lot of reports about him today, so he made an explanation in advance. But he could control Jarvis, but he couldn't control Li Jie. At the Illuminati base, Li Jie bought back all the newspapers that mentioned Tony and the news of the Shuguang Company.

So when Iron Man arrived at the base, he saw a group of Illuminati members gathered together to discuss the contents of the newspaper. "I like this title, which has the flavor of Chinese online news, "Why is Tony Stark obsessed with developing hair growth water?" It is really eye-catching and can bring more attention to our products." Li Jie said, holding a Chinese newspaper bought in Chinatown.

Facing all this, Tony felt like his head was about to explode. He came here to avoid the limelight. He knew how many reports there were about him, and this

was what he least wanted to hear at the moment. Come on! He is Iron Man! He invented the Ark Reactor and changed the world's energy structure! He has done so much for the world, why is he only focusing on hair growth water! Tony was so angry that his lungs were about to explode.

At this time, Li Jie found Tony coming and greeted him in a casual tone: "Hey, Tony, good morning! Have you watched the news? There are many reports about you and our products. We think these news are beneficial to the sales and future development of our products." He also suggested, "By the way, how about being the spokesperson for the new product? Make an advertisement, which can save a lot of publicity fees. I think the nickname 'Bald Buster' is quite suitable for endorsement, what do you think?"

However, Tony was wearing an iron armor and had a face full of anger, but Li Jie didn't notice it. He continued, "By the way, the Internet has given you a new nickname: King of Cosmetics. What do you think? I think it's quite impressive! King of Cosmetics Iron Man! So cool!" Li Jie looked serious.

Tony suppressed his anger under the armor and said to Jarvis calmly: "Turn on all weapon configurations of the Iron Armor and release all safety locks. Start the tracking missiles and the Ark reactor will output at full power. Lock the target and ensure a single hit!" "Wait, sir, this is Nightwalker!" Jarvis thought Tony was being controlled, "Sir, please wake up!"

"I'm sober! Do as I say! I'm going to kill this bastard!" Tony's anger finally broke out!

Finally, Tony and Li Jie almost got into a fight. Tony had set all his weapons to firing mode, with the laser blast at maximum power. His abnormal behavior caught Li Jie's attention, but fortunately Li Jie reacted quickly and snatched the captain's shield to block a laser attack.

Otherwise, he might really meet Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. Everyone thought Tony's mind was manipulated, but in the end it was confirmed that he was just mad. Because of Li Jie's rudeness, he almost lost control. Obviously, no one wanted this to happen.

Li Jie realized that Tony was angry about these nicknames and public opinion. After regaining his sanity, he apologized to everyone. Well, he had to apologize because he was pinned to the ground by the other four members of the

Illuminati. Captain's shield broke one of Tony's arm armor, Li Jie pulled out the thunder knife and put it on Tony's neck, the professor used a telepathic shock to hit Iron Man, and Hank even kicked Tony with his big foot.

Logan experienced unprecedented pain and suffering. The Night Walker had not lied to him. Practicing Buddhism was indeed extremely painful. This pain was beyond Logan's expectations. For Logan, what the Night Walker said about walking on thin ice and treading on fire was not an exaggeration at all, and might even be an understatement.

He felt that the experience he was experiencing now was even more cruel and terrifying than going through fire and water. He sat cross-legged, cleared all distracting thoughts, and let his mind enter a state of tranquility and relaxation. This was simply too terrifying!

Wolverine's life is always full of movement, whether it's fighting, fleeing, or something else. Fast and intense, this is the norm in Logan's life. Quiet, relaxing, and letting the mind be empty? Sorry, what are these things to him?

Logan never understood the meaning of these words in his life! And his son Daken is almost the same. This guy has been living a high-pressure life for the first half of his life. Mariko's ruthless suppression and experiments have kept his mind in an extremely tense state, like a taut bowstring.

He may hurt others at any time, and even more likely hurt himself, which is what Logan is most worried about. So he found Li Jie, hoping to resolve the killing in his and Deacon's hearts through Buddhist practice.

At first, Logan thought that Buddhist practice was no different from any practice he had experienced before. But when the first thing Li Jie asked him to do was beyond his expectations, he changed his mind.

"Logan, put away your claws. Buddha said that if you put down your butcher knife, you will become a Buddha instantly. You can't do that." Li Jie put down the small statue of Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva and said.

“Now, go find a clean place and sit cross-legged. Then relax your mind and feel the tranquility of the Rocky Mountains.”

"Huh? What?" Logan suspected he had heard it wrong.

"Do as I say, Logan." Li Jie said firmly. Following Li Jie's instructions, Logan sat cross-legged with Deacon, trying to feel the damn tranquility.

Damn, my legs are numb, Logan thought. There are so many mosquitoes by the lake, the buzzing is so annoying! This is what Daken thought.

The smell of lake water and pine forests and freshwater bass distracted Logan.

The father and son spent every minute in agony. They only felt various trivial things and did not experience the so-called peace at all. This boring time passed so long. Logan and Daken sat with their eyes closed, feeling as if a million years had passed.

Li Jie only told them to remain silent after sitting cross-legged, as if he had entered into tranquility. Logan thought this was practice and had been enduring it. However, Wolverine's patience was limited, and he could not sit still for a long time. He couldn't do it, and neither could Daken, although he was determined to be a good example for Daken.

Well, let me see how the Night Walker feels the tranquility. Logan found an excuse for himself, quietly opened one eye and peeked at Li Jie.

However, Li Jie did not feel the peace as Logan thought. He was playing an elimination game on his phone, and it was in silent mode! Flash stood behind him, instructing him on how to play the game.

Jean and Razor-Eyes Scott were also watching them not far away, and further away, the other X-Men were also watching them, trying to experience tranquility as if they were killing X.

After Logan realized something was wrong, he stood up angrily and shouted, "Night Walker!" regardless of Li Jie's words of calmness.

Logan felt terrible that he had been fooled and embarrassed himself and his son in front of everyone.

Seeing Logan and Daken discover the truth, the other X-Men no longer suppressed their laughter. Many laughed out loud, as if they had just watched a wonderful show. Twinkle smiled and said to Li Jie, "It seems that you won the bet. He lasted ten minutes. Here is twenty dollars." Twinkle actually bet on the

matter of Logan and Daken?

Logan's anger grows deeper and deeper, and the conversation between Jean and Scott adds fuel to the fire.

Jean put her arms around Scott's neck, rested her head on his shoulder, and laughed, "Wolverine is really a wolf, and sometimes he's not smart enough."

Scott's words were even more sarcastic: "Not smart enough? Jean, you're being too subtle. In fact, you could just call him stupid!"

An unprecedented sense of shame burned in Logan's heart. He felt that he had become a laughing stock from beginning to end. His hands were clenched and trembling, and the steel claws of adamantium stretched out unconsciously. And Deacon, who was even more unable to suppress his anger than Logan, stretched out his bone claws and rushed towards Li Jie. To Li Jie, the threat of this little wolf was not serious.

His attack method was too simple, and Li Jie easily kicked him away. This scene completely stimulated Logan. He was completely filled with anger and forgot that the person in front of him was his partner. Killing and anger filled his heart at this moment.

He swung his adamantium claws and pounced on everyone! Wolverine is not an easy little wolf to deal with, he is a real killing machine.

Seeing Logan's anger reaching its peak, Li Jie's mouth curled up into a smile.

.....

Earlier,

"Do we really want to anger Logan? What's the purpose of doing this?" Qin put her hands on her hips and looked at Li Jie puzzledly.

"In order to make him completely angry. His anger is like toxins in the body. Only by letting it show will we have a chance to gradually eliminate it." Li Jie explained to Logan's teammates.

"Greed, anger, and obsession are three poisons that will work best only if all the

anger in his heart is triggered for the first time. Because once it happens for the first time, he will be on guard. If you can't eliminate most of the anger the first time, it will only be more difficult later."

The X-Men didn't fully understand what Li Jie said, but they all agreed to cooperate in the end. After all, Logan was their most important comrade, so it was okay to pretend to make him angry!

Only Scott's attitude was ambiguous, and he did not make a clear statement. This was normal, after all, his relationship with Logan had always been bad.

The key to the problem is Jean. She is Scott's girlfriend, but Logan has a crush on her. Scott is tolerant enough to maintain a normal conversation with Logan.

Now asking him to cooperate in acting to eliminate Logan's anger is too much! Please let me prove that I am tolerant enough. It is not easy for me not to expose you!

Li Jie understood Scott's troubles, so he talked to him alone: "Scott, do you know the Buddhist concept of emptiness of the four elements?"

"Not really sure," Scott answered honestly.

"Yes." Li Jie was silent for a moment and decided to explain in a more popular way: "To put it simply, if Logan believes in Buddhism in the future, he cannot get close to women, cannot get married, and cannot have feelings for women. He needs to cultivate his spiritual world wholeheartedly. As a teammate, I hope you can do your best to help him get through this difficult time."

Li Jie's tone was deep, like an elder's advice to a young man. Scott didn't think there was anything wrong with it.

As a young man entrusted with an important task by his elders, Scott immediately stated: "No problem! I will do exactly what you ask! I will do whatever you want me to do! I will help Logan embark on his Buddhist practice path smoothly!"

Li Jie nodded with satisfaction. He found that he seemed to have a talent for angering people.

.....

When Logan rushed towards Li Jie with his claws waving, the real test had just begun!

Chapter 64: Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva's Original Vow

Logan and Daken had no idea that this was a carefully designed play, aimed at provoking their anger. Their unwitting anger was exactly what Li Jie expected. If they could still remain calm and not get angry when facing others' ridicule, Li Jie would be helpless.

But if Logan and Daken could really calm down, then they wouldn't need Li Jie to help them eliminate their violence. Logan felt his anger burning in an instant, and his blood was boiling. The long-term killing had already had a subtle effect on him in his heart.

In simple terms, Logan's current state is like an assassin who has been transformed into a berserker. He is irritable, bloodthirsty, has high attack and agility, and often delivers critical hits and fatal blows. It may be a good thing to activate this state in a life-and-death struggle, which can allow Logan to make many unexpected moves. But in normal times, both Li Jie and Logan think this is not a good thing. Logan is not stupid, but sometimes he is influenced by killing and anger. The more he kills, the greater the impact.

When Logan rushed towards Li Jie with his adamantium claws, Li Jie had a smile on his face. According to the original plan, the other X-Men had left the area, leaving the space for Li Jie and Logan.

When Logan rushed over 20 meters and was about to beat Li Jie, the small statue of Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva on the ground suddenly changed. The statue, which was originally only the size of an adult's palm, suddenly became as tall as a mountain, as tall as the legendary giant Kuafu who chased the sun.

This huge Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva statue, hundreds of meters high, is made of black jadeite, with a hint of colored glaze in the black. Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva

is covered in seven-colored colored glaze, and the black colored glaze symbolizes the aspiration to cut off the karma. The statue lowered its eyelids and a loud voice rang out: "Greed, anger, and ignorance are the three poisons. Cut them off!"

The majestic sound of these seven words echoed in the valley, shook the sky, and almost broke the eardrums of Logan and Deacon. "What?" The sudden change made them at a loss. Why did the statue suddenly become bigger?

The huge incarnation of Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva did not give them more time to think. After a shout of "slash", Logan felt murderous aura permeating the sky and the stars in the world changed instantly. Logan and Daken were like being frozen and unable to move. He turned to Li Jie and the other X-Men with difficulty. They seemed to have no reaction to what happened here, as if they could not see the huge Ksitigarbha statue, nor could they see the abnormality of Logan and Daken.

A huge palm covered the sky and the sun. It was the palm of the incarnation of Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. Logan and Daken were crushed into pieces before they could resist.

On the other side, the mutant police in the distance did not see the huge statue in front of Logan, nor did they hear the Buddhist chant. They only saw Logan, who was originally rushing towards Li Jie, and Daken in the distance suddenly stopped. Their eyes were all focused on the small Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva statue, as if they were attracted by it.

Li Jie sat cross-legged, his hands in the Abhaya Mudra, white light surging around him. The energy of the Mahavairocana Seal and the Ten Stages of Mahayana Merit flowed through his body, and he quickly recited the Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva Sutra in a low voice.

After returning from hell, Li Jie has been studying the purpose of the small Buddha statue given by Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. On the back of the Buddha statue are densely engraved scriptures, which are exactly what he is reading at this moment. Li Jie has tried many methods to find the special features of the Buddha statue, but he has never found anything.

Until one day, he tried to inject the energy of the Mahavairocana Seal into the statue and felt the movement inside the statue. Li Jie began to understand that

the energy of the internal exercises was the key. After trying many methods, he found a way to use the small statue - reciting the scriptures of Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva with the energy of the internal exercises to stimulate the vision inside the statue.

After Lan arrived, Li Jie obtained the Buddhist practitioner's notes preserved by Kamar-Taiji through her. These precious materials taught him a lot and also made him understand the purpose of the small statue sent by Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. Whether it is a Buddhist practitioner or a Kunlun martial artist, the most difficult thing in practice is to maintain the original intention and avoid getting lost.

In the process of cultivation, whether you are troubled by karmic obstacles or facing the three toxins of greed, anger and ignorance, you need to work hard to eliminate them. Li Jie recalled that when he first met Tie Quan and asked him for advice on cultivation, Tie Quan helped him eliminate his karmic obstacles once.

The statue given by Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva was designed specifically for Buddhist practitioners to help them eliminate greed, anger and ignorance in their hearts on the path of practice.

Although the iron fist can help remove karma, it is obviously inferior to Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. However, Li Jie has not used this statue to remove karma or toxins for himself. He is not sure whether the tools created by Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva, with its power, can immediately help him reach the state of emptiness of the four elements if used to deal with the three poisons. Li Jie feels that he dare not try it easily. Although becoming a monk has its fun, he feels that he is more suitable to be an ordinary person.

Li Jie decided to use this Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva statue for the first time for the Logan father and son who needed to resolve their anger. In order to eliminate their anger more thoroughly, he also specially strengthened the effect.

After reading the notes of many Buddhist practitioners, Li Jie deeply understood that practitioners have extremely high requirements for spiritual realm. This reminded him of the Millennium Building Blocks that the system gave him after returning from hell. It was a prop that could build a complex maze in the mind. If it was only used as an ordinary spiritual defense tool, Li Jie thought it was too wasteful. This time, the training of Logan and his son happened to use this maze-

like Millennium Building Blocks.

"Collect!" Li Jie gave the order, and the Fearless Seal was transformed into the Aquarius Seal. He connected his spiritual energy with the Millennium Block, and passed it to Logan and his son through Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. The Millennium Block on Li Jie's chest slowly rose.

.....

What is death? Logan has never thought deeply about it. For him, death is too far away. No matter what kind of injury he suffers, he will not really die. Even the atomic bomb explosion in Nagasaki cannot take his life.

Wolverine is not an Alpha-level mutant because his mutant ability is self-healing, and the important sign of the Alpha level is the ability to freely control the opening and closing of superpowers. Logan's self-healing is passive and cannot be turned off by himself. In other words, as long as the self-healing factor exists, he cannot choose to die.

Since the disbandment of the mutant school, the professor has been running around, trying to restore it, but to no avail. Magneto has set off a mutant revolution around the world, especially in the United States, where the situation is turbulent.

Logan looked at his rough hands, his thoughts drifting back to the past. How long had it been? Fifty years? A hundred years? All his former companions had either passed away or grown old. How many of them were still alive? Logan sighed, picked up his axe, and walked into the pine forest under the Rocky Mountains. He had to work now, after all, he had to raise children.

Today, Wolverine Logan looks a little old and staggering. In the Canadian pine forests, tall and strong pine trees are high-quality economic timber.

Logan contracted a small forest farm, which was his only source of income. However, today, uninvited visitors came to the forest farm, and they had been waiting for Wolverine for a long time.

Chapter 65 Who is this?

Hey, look who's here. Hey, let me guess, isn't this a former superhero? That voice is really asking for a beating, that kind of youthful and slightly arrogant tone that Logan often heard in the first half of his life, especially in Brooklyn, New York.

The person who spoke was a young man with colorfully dyed hair, earrings on his ears, and a sloppy look. Logan never wanted to deal with such people, he had seen too many of them.

But the young man kept provoking: "Oh, right! I remember now, you are from the X-Men, right? Yes, I read your comics when I was a kid. How is Marvel? I heard that they went bankrupt, and the boss is living on the streets, and his life or death is unknown? Haha!"

The young man's provocative smile was so irritating to Logan that he wanted to cut off his tongue and feed it to the turkey.

Everything changed after Magneto launched the mutant revolution. Magneto Eric continued to create various mutant terrorist incidents targeting government officials instead of civilians. This caused governments around the world to panic because they became real victims. The United States was the first to introduce a mutant control bill, requiring all mutants to register and live in centralized locations.

The privacy rights of mutants are seriously violated, and most companies are reluctant to hire mutants, which makes their lives more difficult. Magneto continues to put pressure on the lower-level mutants through the Anti-X plan.

The officials he controlled within the government constantly proposed various bad policies and implemented high-pressure rule on mutants. However, under high pressure, there must be resistance, and the greater the pressure, the stronger the resistance.

When the spark of resistance ignited in the mutant colony in Arizona, it meant that Magneto's strategy was successful. Nightcrawler, the professor and Iron Man were ultimately unable to stop the war between humans and mutants. Starting from Arizona, spreading to Pennsylvania, Nevada and California, the mutant resistance war broke out across the United States.

This was a carefully planned attack, all part of Magneto's plan. At the beginning of the rebellion, those who opposed the X-plan revealed their mutant identities, acted as death squads, and carried out suicide attacks on human leaders. Congress fell, the generals in the Pentagon suffered heavy casualties, the president died, and the vice president took over.

The entire US military fell into a chaotic battle without a commander, unable to distinguish who was a civilian and who was a mutant rebel. So the army implemented a cruel operation, that is, ordinary humans who were detected as mutants could be killed directly without asking for permission.

This pushed many mutants who originally did not want war and even stood on the side of ordinary people into a desperate situation. The government forced them to take up arms and fight!

At this point, the unrest in the United States reached its climax. With the United States as the center, the storm of mutant rebellion swept the world.

The Brotherhood of Mutants makes a public appearance. Magneto King Eric declares: "Mutants are the fruit of evolution and the ultimate form of humanity. Ordinary people should be eliminated in this torrent of history! The world belongs to us!"

The Brotherhood of Mutants unified the global resistance forces, and Magneto fought against human government forces in various places with brutal means.

In the past fifteen years, only a few ordinary human countries have been left in the world. In the fifteen years of war, Logan watched his former comrades fall one by one. Captain Rogers and his Avengers died heroically in the defense of New York. Nightcrawler and his Nightwatchmen were wanted worldwide. It was said that Nightcrawler had been captured and executed the year before last.

There is also Iron Man Tony Stark. He is the last one to hold on. At the beginning of the war, Magneto crippled his legs and Iron Man could no longer

walk. Osborn's regeneration technology could not save him because the Osborn Group had been occupied by mutants. It is said that Tony now leads an underground resistance army. Although he cannot fight personally, he uses scientific wisdom to manufacture weapons and equipment for the human resistance army. It is said that Tony is still alive, but Logan thinks that such a life is too depressing for Iron Man.

Of course, don't expect him to provide financial assistance now, because Stark Group has been confiscated by Magneto. In today's world, mutants have the final say.

Just like this little bastard in front of him. It was obvious that he was a mutant. Judging from the reptilian features on his hands, Logan concluded that this little bastard's mutation was incomplete, his genes had obvious defects, and were not completely integrated.

Even so, he is still a privileged class in this world. Fifty years is enough to change a lot of things. Magneto changed the rules of the world, putting mutants at the top and the surviving ordinary people at the bottom.

If the lower class wants to survive and have food to eat, they have to listen to the upper class. Magneto also issued a new education regulation in the school: "Ordinary humans are a failure in the history of biological evolution. Without mutant genes, you should have perished in this cruel society. And now you are still alive, all thanks to the tolerance of mutants. Humans must learn to be grateful." This is the education method promoted by Magneto in the school, or perhaps it would be more appropriate to say brainwashing.

The thugs in front of him brought five or six people to block Logan, preventing him from going to the cabin to get tools. The thugs looked at Logan provocatively and said sarcastically: "You are such a powerful mutant, and you are cutting trees here? How funny!"

Logan said expressionlessly: "Because I'm not a lazy loser. I tell you, you'd better disappear from my sight immediately, otherwise..."

"What else? Are you going to scratch people with your broken claws? Hahahaha!" The little thug's laughter was sharp and piercing. He didn't take the old and frail Logan seriously at all. In his opinion, how capable could an old man be?

The other hooligans who came with him also smiled mockingly. Does this old man still think that he was at his strongest fifty years ago? How ridiculous! Laugh, laugh, they don't know that sometimes people can't laugh.

"You're right! I'll kill you!" Logan's adamantium claws instantly pierced into the gangster's kidney. Although he was old, his killing method was still quick and decisive.

At this point, the other mutants realized that this old man was not to be trifled with. A man who could control plants tried to tie up Logan with vines, but under the adamantium claws, these plant fibers were more fragile than A4 paper.

Logan has never been a good-tempered person. His sharp claws harvested the lives of these troublemakers. Logan didn't think there was anything wrong, killing was an instinct flowing in his blood.

Heads rolled and blood splattered. Six thugs either had half of their heads cut off or their arteries severed. The blood was like a free mountain spring, nourishing the forest. Logan didn't care, there were wolves in the mountains anyway, they would help him deal with everything.

The gangster who was stabbed in the kidney had no idea who he had offended. He was so scared that he wet his pants and begged for mercy in a crying voice: "Don't kill me, don't kill me! I swear, I didn't want to come here by myself, someone else made me come here."

Blood was still dripping from Logan's claws. He asked coldly, "Who asked you to come? What did you ask them to do?"

"I don't know him, a tall man. He told us to keep you company. I don't know why he was looking for you, I just vaguely heard the word 'sentinel'. He said he was going to your house alone." The gangster spoke quickly, fearing that he would lose his life if he was slow.

After hearing what the gangster said, Logan immediately ran away because his child had no ability to defend himself!

Logan contracted this forest to avoid all the disturbances. He did not like Magneto's ideas, even though Magneto himself had been persecuted by the Nazis and Hydra.

But what is the difference between Magneto's current behavior and those who persecuted him back then? He just replaced the Nazis with mutants and ruled over humans from a superior position.

This is not something the X-Men would agree with, because it is just a shift from one extreme to another. Logan is tired of it all and finally chooses to escape because there is nothing else he can do.

When Daken showed up with Katie, holding the twins in his arms.

"Dad, these are Katie and I's children. But we can't raise them in peace." Daken said guiltily, hugging Katie's shoulders.

"Why?" Logan asked as he swept the dust from the fireplace.

"You know why, Dad. We are wanted criminals worldwide. Magneto is hunting us because we killed many of his accomplices, including Paul the Fire Man, many of whom were killed by me." Daken's voice was very low. He was no longer the young man he used to be.

Time has endowed him with more depth. He is only in his forties, but he looks like he is in his fifties. And Katie, who loved to smile in Logan's memory, has no smile now. Maybe she hasn't smiled for many years.

She hadn't smiled since her parents were killed by Magneto and his gang. War has no mercy. When a bullet pierces your chest, it doesn't ask about your religion, nationality, wealth or gender.

Finally, Daken and Katie left with sorrowful faces. They began their escape journey, leaving only two one-month-old children to Logan.

Eight years have passed since Daken's visit. Logan has been secretly inquiring about their news, but he dared not say it because he still had to take care of his grandchildren.

He lived here under an assumed name just to keep his children away from that damn evil education. He didn't want them to become the kind of thugs that just happened.

Logan ran very fast, especially for his age. He ran as fast as he could back to the

cabin outside the forest farm, but he was too late.

His grandson, a dark-haired boy named Joey, has been captured by a green-skinned mutant, and his granddaughter, Lily, a little girl who looks like her mother, has been strangled by a bald mutant.

Both children were terrified, and Lily had difficulty breathing because her throat was strangled...

Chapter 66 Playboy

The mutant leader was a big, sturdy guy who looked like a giant in the legend. Logan recognized this guy, and although he looked a little old, his appearance had not changed much.

This person is none other than Magneto’s right-hand man, Juggernaut!

Red Tank looked at Logan who was running towards him, smiled and clapped his hands, saying: "You are faster than I expected, Logan!"

Although Logan is old, his sharp claws are still deadly. His adamantium claws are extended, and he roars at Juggernaut fiercely: "Juggernaut! Let those two kids go, or you'll be in trouble!"

However, Logan's threats only resulted in more brutal treatment of the child. Red Tank responded contemptuously: "Logan, you have been hiding for so long and we still found you. Do you think I came here just to reminisce? It's really stupid of you to threaten me."

"Put away your sharp claws, otherwise my men will get overly nervous and might strangle the children's throats." Red Tank was not joking, and Logan could only put away his claws helplessly.

"Red Tank, our grudge has nothing to do with the children! Let them go, if you are looking for me just for me." Red Tank listened and just smiled without saying anything.

"Looking for you? An outdated and useless X-Man? Did all your companions die in New York? I don't think a person who survived by chance is of much value!"

Red Tank's words were like a sharp sword piercing Logan's heart, making him so painful that he couldn't breathe.

"As for you, Logan. Why do you think you were able to live in Canada safely for so many years? It's all because of Magneto's mercy! Otherwise, you would have died long ago!"

If Magneto was really merciful, why would he let billions of people around the world fall into war? Is the death of more than a billion people the result of mercy? ! Logan was angry, but he couldn't refute it because the child was still in their hands.

"What on earth do you want!" Logan looked at Lily, who was having difficulty breathing and almost suffocating, and shouted, "She can't breathe!"

Red Tank glanced at eight-year-old Lily. The little girl's once cute face had lost all color, and her chest was heaving violently, unable to breathe in fresh air.

Red Tank signaled his men to loosen up a little so that the girl could catch her breath.

"Do you know about the Sentinel Project?" Red Tank revealed the true purpose to Logan.

"The Sentinel Project was a conspiracy by the human government to exterminate all mutants. But they gave up before they could do anything about it. This is a good thing for mutants."

Logan listened quietly to Red Tank's story. "And now, we have new intelligence. In New York, a group of little guys are planning to restart the Sentinel Project. This is not a good thing for our mutant society."

Red Tank looked directly at Logan and said, "Magneto is giving you a chance to atone for your sins. Find those little guys underground. Magneto will forgive your previous crimes. He will also pardon your son and daughter-in-law."

"The choice is yours now, Logan. Make your decision."

Juggernaut said that Logan should make a choice, but does Logan have a choice now? His grandchildren are still in the hands of the other party, and his son and Katie are wanted by Magneto, and their lives are uncertain.

It's not easy living in this world of mutants. Sometimes, there's just no choice!

.....

new York.

In the dim and vast sewer, an old man sat in a wheelchair. His legs were amputated at the knees, and the wheelchair became his only means of movement. He was very old and had difficulty breathing on his own. He needed to rely on life support equipment and a ventilator to maintain his life.

Behind him, there was another equally old man. He looked healthier and younger, but in fact he was also very old. His face seemed to be disfigured, with wrinkled skin sticking to his facial muscles, which looked very scary.

He pushed the wheelchair slowly forward.

"Tony, why did you bring me down here? Don't you know how dangerous we are now? Magneto is hunting us down everywhere!"

The old man sitting in the wheelchair, who is very old and may die at any time, is the Iron Man Tony Stark!

The old man pushing the wheelchair is the Night Walker who was rumored to have died many years ago!

"We have to come here, Nightcrawler. For the final fight."

Tony's breathing is louder than his voice. He is no longer the superhero and playboy he once was. He can't walk without a wheelchair, and he may suffocate at any time without a ventilator.

Age spots covered his cheeks, like the marks of the countdown to death.

Night Walker's hands are no longer as strong as they were fifty years ago, and they tremble slightly when he pushes the wheelchair.

The two former superheroes are now like rats in a sewer, slowly walking into the darkness.

New York's wide and dark sewers have a history of hundreds of years. When they were first designed, they took into account the drainage problems that might

be caused by heavy rains, so the passages here are wide enough for a BMW MINI to speed through... ...

The old Nightcrawler pushes Tony Stark, who relies on a life support system, and they move through the dark sewers like rats in the dark, or those who cannot see the light. The former superheroes are no longer glorious. Ever since Magneto unified the mutants around the world and brutally suppressed the human government.

The superheroes in this world either succumb to Magneto and become his pawns to kill their own kind, or most of the rest are eliminated by him. Magneto is like the Nazis who built the Auschwitz concentration camp, locking up all those who oppose him. Speaking of concentration camps, Magneto has a lot of experience in this area, because he grew up in a concentration camp and knows the life and loopholes there.

Therefore, the concentration camps he built were the cruelest in human history. As Magneto said, the high-pressure rule of the human government forced the mutants to rise up in rebellion. And Magneto's causal cycle is difficult for many ordinary people to accept. But unlike mutants, when ordinary humans are oppressed and lose the tools to resist, they cannot easily revolt like mutants.

Because every mutant is a weapon in itself, especially those powerful Alpha and Omega mutants, who do not need any equipment, and their own strength alone is enough to be feared. Ordinary people cannot fight against mutants without external help. Except for a very small number of mutants with inferior genes and failed fusion, most mutants are stronger than ordinary people.

And those top combat forces, one person can overthrow an army division, or even cause greater damage. In order to fight against mutants, the humans in the underground resistance organization tried every possible means.

"I contacted some people in the former military, and they found a technology that was covered up by the military many years ago." Tony, who is sitting in a wheelchair, has a soft voice. His vocal cords are declining and he can't speak loudly. In addition, his lungs lack breathing capacity, which makes his voice lack strength.

"What technique?" Nightcrawler, who was pushing Tony, spoke in a bad tone, his voice remaining low.

"The Sentinel Project! This is what Hydra wanted to use to eliminate all mutants." When he said this, Tony's old and dim eyes suddenly flashed with a strange light.

"That's a killing machine specifically designed to deal with mutants! We need this!" Tony said seriously.

"Hydra? They're not good people. In fact, they're almost like Magneto." Nightcrawler's tone was exhausted and lifeless, like an elm tree that was beginning to decay. Even the pests that had depended on it in the past began to leave the dying tree, no matter how lush and leafy it had once been.

"Do you think it's meaningful to say this now?" Tony suddenly raised his voice, but unfortunately, even though he tried his best to roar, his voice was still weak, like the last flicker of a candle that was about to go out, and it disappeared in an instant. If you don't listen carefully, you can hardly notice the difference.

"At least Hydra is still human, not mutants! Mutants ruined my life, they took away my company, killed Pepper, and made me lose my legs! Even Jarvis was destroyed by them!" Tony was excited at first, but he was crying at the end.

"I have nothing left! What do we care about?! The world has already become like this, can it get worse?" Night Walker's voice was full of despair.

"Have you forgotten who burned your face and killed your family and friends. Everything I have is destroyed, but what about everything you have? What else do you care about?!" Faced with Tony's questioning, Nightwalker remained silent for a long time.

"Well, it doesn't matter anymore. I don't think my old bones will last much longer." Night Walker said calmly, without a trace of emotion in his tone. When he lost everything, the meaning of life also disappeared. Now he is living like a dead tree.

"How's Frank doing lately?" Tony suddenly mentioned the Punisher, which made Nightcrawler look at him with some worry. Tony knew that Frank had died in the war a few years ago.

But in the past two months, his mind has become increasingly confused, he often forgets some things in the past, and his memory has become problematic. The

night walker felt his throat was a little tight, as if it was blocked by phlegm.

Nightcrawler tried to speak calmly: "Tony, Frank is dead. He has been dead for a long time. We can't find a place to bury him. We can only cremate his body and scatter his ashes into the Pacific Ocean. If we want to mourn him, we can only pray to the Pacific Ocean now."

Tony fell into deep thought. This shouldn't be the case. Why did his companions and comrades die or disappear one after another, and his brain began to become dull...

He whispered weakly, "Nightcrawler, is my brain failing? Just like Charles, you'll have to tie him up in a house made of lead. If I start to degenerate too badly, don't just end it like you did to Charles. Kill me."

The once majestic Iron Man is now just a helpless old man, repeating "Kill me". Nightcrawler stopped pushing the wheelchair, gave Tony a hug, and tried his best to comfort him: "We will not abandon any friend, never."

Tony's eyes had become blurry, and his expression was almost invisible. All he could see was his moist eyes closed weakly.

... At the other end of the sewer is the meeting point they agreed on. After completing the transaction with the Hydra forces, Nightcrawler and Tony's people will come here with the information to meet them and then leave.

The two parties in the transaction were also two elderly people, but they were relatively younger. Spider-Man, who was over 60 years old, could no longer swing in the sky of New York, because as long as he showed up, Magneto's men would kill him. Moreover, he was over 60 years old and was no longer suitable for difficult actions. The other was the only remaining member of S.H.I.E.L.D., Agent Hawkeye Barton.

But now, the name Hawkeye doesn't seem to be appropriate, and Cyclops is more suitable for him because he lost his left eye in the previous defense of New York. Due to the injection of infinite serum, Hawkeye's aging speed is slower than that of ordinary people. Now he looks only in his fifties, and he is the youngest among these people.

Chapter 67 Elegant

Hawkeye and Spider-Man had been waiting at the rendezvous point for about three minutes when Nightcrawler arrived with Tony's wheelchair.

"You two old guys walk so slowly." Spider-Man complained, completely forgetting that he was also old.

"Because we can't fly over New York." Nightcrawler responded humorously. This boring joke has become one of the few ways to entertain and relieve stress in this dark age.

"Has the data been returned?" Tony was more concerned about whether the Sentinel's information was brought back safely. Hawkeye shook the USB flash drive in his hand with a capacity of about 2TB.

"All the data is here, almost 2TB is full. There should be no problem." The one-eyed Barton, wearing an eyepatch, looks like a pirate captain.

"Besides that, I found a treasure." Hawkeye took out a small box and opened it carefully as if showing off a treasure: "An infinity serum! This thing is rare now, especially after the demise of the last power of S.H.I.E.L.D."

"I went to great lengths to get this. It was produced thirty years ago. The activity of the drug is very low. But if I inject it into you..." Barton pointed to Tony's brain.

"Your brain will be able to recover to the state it was when you were 30 in at least half a year. But after that, your aging may accelerate."

Tony took a look at the Infinity Serum and said without hesitation: "Give me the injection. I'm almost ninety. It doesn't matter if I age or not."

No one present stopped Tony's decision. After all, they were all veterans and

even the coffin was ready. What was there to be afraid of?

Night Walker took the USB drive from Patton, glanced at it, and said, "It doesn't matter. Let the world see what these old guys can do!"

"I like this sentence, but can you please not include me in it?" Spider-Man smiled and waved his hand, "I'm still young."

"Yeah, you are indeed young. I forgot that your 70th birthday is coming soon, right?" Night Walker forced an ugly smile with a teasing look on his face.

The current superheroes have no decent bases. Due to the lack of funds and venues, their every move may attract the attention of Magneto's gang. The regime controlled by Magneto has far more power over the lower classes than ordinary governments. With the various strange abilities of mutants, Magneto's orders and management cover almost every corner of America, realizing true top-down vertical management.

Hidden in the vast Gobi Desert of Mexico is the last refuge for superheroes and the last stronghold of resistance of the rebels. This base looks like a border fortress built by an ancient civilization hundreds of years ago, but now it has been abandoned and dilapidated by wind and sand erosion. It is no different from the common scenes in the Gobi Desert and will not arouse any suspicion.

Under this fortress, there is a large underground palace. Originally a natural cave, it was transformed and expanded by Night Walker and Tony, and eventually became an underground community that can accommodate a thousand people.

But now, the number of people in the underground palace has been overloaded, and ordinary people, mutants and super-powered people (non-mutants) oppressed by Magneto have begun to flee the city controlled by Magneto. They have nowhere to go, and they are finally accepted into the underground world of Nightcrawler...

The original plan was to build a base for a thousand rebels to hide secretly, but it was forced to accept nearly 2,500 people, including many women and children who were not capable of fighting. This put the entire base under tremendous survival pressure.

This group of elderly superheroes had to shoulder this final responsibility, adding more burdens to their already aging and weak bodies, making their backs, which were no longer straight, even more bent.

However, at certain moments, having more people does have its advantages. For example, right now, Tony is manufacturing the Sentinel Project! Now, Tony has lost his steel factory and the artificial intelligence Jarvis who helped him.

Therefore, many things must be done by manpower. These rebels hiding underground united again and tried their best because they believed in Nightcrawler and Tony.

This will be their best chance to overthrow Magneto's rule. Almost everyone lends a hand. People with super powers go out to look for materials, while women and children help with logistics and simple tasks within the base.

The entire resistance organization was full of energy. And far away from the hustle and bustle, in a lead room in the base, lived an old man. He was very, very old, and even his sweat hair began to turn white.

He is Charles Xavier, the former moderate mutant leader. He was lucky enough to survive the Battle of New York and the subsequent brutal siege.

However, as an old man, he was unfortunate enough to have to bid farewell to his comrades and students time and time again, those young mutants who joined the resistance against Magneto because of his ideas.

The life span of a mutant depends on the degree of integration of the X gene. The lowest level Ipsilon-class mutants may live shorter than ordinary people, while perfectly integrated Alpha-class mutants like Professor X can usually live to be one hundred and fifty to two hundred years old.

Living too long is not necessarily a good thing, especially when you see people younger than you die one after another. Professor Charles began to have mental problems.

At first, the attacks were intermittent, and in recent years, the Night Walkers had to lock him up in a room made entirely of lead. Every time he had an attack, the professor could not control his mutant ability - mental invasion.

Once out of control, his mental power will burn the brains of those around him. The professor suffers from Alzheimer's disease, or simply put, senile dementia. It is undoubtedly a great irony that the world's most important and dangerous mind suffers from this disease.

In order to suppress the disease, Nightcrawler and Spider-Man had to look for medicine for him. In the base, only Nightcrawler had a certain resistance to Professor X's mental shock, so the task of delivering medicine to him fell on his shoulders.

As usual, he walked into Charles' room with the packed medicine: "Professor, it's time to take your medicine." Charles in the corner did not respond.

Nightcrawler approached Charles and shouted, "Time to take your medicine!"

"I'm not deaf." Nightwalker's sudden shout startled Charles, and he muttered to himself: "You guys have been busy lately? You don't even have time to play chess with me?"

Charles took the pills from Nightcrawler and swallowed them with cold water. Without this psychotropic drug, Charles knew he would fall into a state of madness. He now spent most of his time sleeping.

But he didn't dare to fall asleep, because every time he fell asleep, he would dream about those dead students. He resisted sleeping in his heart, but he couldn't resist the physiological needs. So, Charles's genetic system activated the protection mechanism, making his memory gradually decline and forget the past, so that he would not resist sleeping.

Nightcrawler sat on Charles' bed and whispered, "Yes, Charles. Tony found a way to fight Magneto. We retrieved the Sentinel plan. Tony has reviewed it and he thinks it can be implemented." Nightcrawler did not hide this from Professor X.

"This is a weapon designed specifically to fight mutants. You may have heard of it before."

Charles pursed his lips and did not answer. After a while, he asked in a trembling voice, "But Tony's brain is as useless as mine now. He is no longer the Iron Man of the past. I doubt if he can solve a quadratic equation plus a square root math

problem now."

"Hawkeye got an infinite serum. Tony's brain can be restored to the state it was in when he was thirty, at least for the next six months." Nightcrawler helped Charles tidy up the room, including folding the quilt and picking up the debris that Charles threw on the ground.

Charles noticed that Nightwalker's hands were shaking badly, especially when he bent down, which took a lot of effort. Charles turned his head to look at the wall, so that Nightwalker could not see his eyes: "But this will come at a price. The Infinity Serum has been discontinued for a long time."

"Yes, this bottle is the infinite serum from thirty years ago. The efficacy is not very strong anymore and can only last for half a year. But it will speed up Tony's aging." Nightcrawler spoke in a calm tone as if he was talking about ordinary daily trivia, such as today's burger tasted good.

Charles buried his head in the quilt and muttered to himself: "Does this make sense?"

"Tony is nearly ninety years old, and I'm seventy, Charles. It doesn't matter to us anymore." Night Walker tidied up the chess table, moved to the opposite side of Charles, and said, "Didn't you say that I haven't played chess with you for a long time? Let's play a game today."

Due to the obstruction of tears, the black and white chess became blurred in Charles' eyes.

……

The desert area on the Mexican border.

"Wolverine, smell the atmosphere here carefully. Find out where these people come from and where they are going." Red Tank led many of his men and Wolverine to this desert.

Faced with the choice previously proposed by Juggernaut, Logan has not decided. He can only agree to help Juggernaut for the sake of his grandchildren. He does not know who his opponent is, but he knows that someone created the Sentinels, and Magneto wants to destroy them.

Magneto found him and gave him two choices: either help him or say goodbye to his grandchildren. Logan had no choice but to agree.

In the desert, he relied on his strong sense of smell to detect unusual smells in the air and indicated the direction for the Red Tank. The Red Tank waved and the armored convoy immediately headed in that direction.

……

new York.

Far away in New York, Magneto watched Logan's actions through the monitor, with a satisfied smile on his face. In the past fifty years, Magneto seemed to have not aged at all, perhaps the nourishment of power made him look younger.

In the newly built Magneto Building, in Magneto Eric's office, besides him, there are two other mutants watching the monitor images with him.

One man and one woman. The male mutant is a handsome middle-aged man, and the female mutant is a sexy woman with blonde hair, blue eyes and a hot body.

"Sebastian, do you know what the most interesting thing in the world is?" Magneto asked the male mutant with a smile. The other side shook his head gracefully.

"That is to give people hope and then destroy it in front of them!" Magneto smiled happily. After that, he continued to talk about business.

"This is the age of mutants, Sebastian. I hope the Hellfire Club will behave themselves in the future and not embarrass me."

The middle-aged mutant Sebastian nodded: "Of course, we will abide by the agreement. After all, you are our White King now."

The attack on the last Mexican resistance base took place in the early morning. Under Logan's guidance, Red Tank and others successfully found the seemingly decayed fortress.

"Earth-penetrating bombs." Red Tank ordered through the intercom. In the rear

convoy, the roofs of several assault armored vehicles were opened, and portable ground-attack missiles were installed. These were specially used to attack solid bunkers or underground facilities.

The ones Red Tank brought were all elites, all mutants who had received formal training, had super combat power or possessed special abilities, although there were only more than 400 of them.

But their tacit cooperation and the weapons they carry are enough to rival several super elite armored divisions composed of traditional humans, and their combat effectiveness is even stronger.

One after another, the ground-penetrating missiles flew out with blazing tail flames, first rising to a certain height at a forty-five-degree angle, and then adjusting their flight direction.

After reaching above the target, the missile turns and flies downward, while fine-tuning the angle until it falls from the sky at a vertical angle of ninety degrees and penetrates the earth!

Hundreds of bunker busters fell at different times and places. What they had in common was that they easily penetrated the soft Gobi Desert in Mexico, penetrating dozens of meters deep.

The flames and shock waves generated by the explosion cut through the silent night sky. The towering columns of fire and raised sand were particularly eye-catching in the Gobi Desert.

The most spectacular fireworks in the world could not compare to the light of a missile explosion. It was a fire of death, with only the messengers of hell dancing around it and singing about death.

Logan turned his head away, unwilling to witness all this. "I'm sorry." He apologized softly, feeling guilty, but he had no choice and was powerless to change.

Red Tank looked at Logan's actions and laughed mockingly. When the missiles completed the attack and blew a big hole, exposing the entire base to everyone, Red Tank launched a general attack.

Hundreds of fully armed mutant warriors wearing specially powered skeletons, under the command of Red Tank, advanced towards the resistance base in an orderly manner.

……

At the moment when the missiles hit, Tony Stark was busy making sentinel robots and writing programs. His time was limited, and the infinite serum could only support him for half a year...

Chapter 68 Full of Spirit

Recently, Tony's brain has been working faster than ever before, just like going back to the time when he made the Iron Man armor fifty years ago. However, now three months have passed, and the manufacturing progress of the Sentinel robot has only been completed by 40%.

Tony felt an unprecedented sense of urgency, because he knew that time was running out. Once the effect of the infinite serum was exhausted, his brain would age rapidly. By then, he might not even be able to see the complex data on the drawings and the details of a bunch of mutant formulas.

He worked day and night, but what was holding him back now was not his brain, but the lack of resources and limited technical staff. It was no longer fifty years ago when Tony could not mobilize all the resources he had before, when he controlled Stark Industries, raw materials were readily available, Jarvis's intelligent AI was on standby at all times, and there was a fully automated manufacturing plant under the villa.

If Tony had received this design fifty years ago, he would have been confident that he could have built the first prototype within a week and developed at least two improved models within three months. But at this base in Mexico, he had no resources and no manpower, and although everyone was full of enthusiasm, this could not make up for the lack of technology.

Tony has already adjusted the life support system to the highest level and increased the oxygen supply of the ventilator. A large amount of oxygen enters the blood and is transported to various organs throughout the body, especially the brain.

The high oxygen content stimulates Tony's brain, and the oxygen-rich blood provides sufficient nutrition to the brain, keeping him energetic at all times.

For a moment, he was transported back to his teenage years at MIT, when he had

boundless energy, but now MIT had become a place that worshipped mutants, and Tony felt heartbroken to think of what his alma mater had become.

"You should go and rest." Nightcrawler and Hawkeye walked into the lab to remind him, "Tony, you are almost ninety years old. Staying up late is not good for your health. You are overdrawing your life. If you continue like this, the Infinity Serum may not last more than half a year before it loses its effect."

Hawkeye was not exaggerating. Tony had stayed up a lot of nights in the past month. Although he was full of energy, his body began to shrink. The strength that had been gradually restored by the infinite serum weakened again.

This was not a good sign, meaning that the effectiveness of the Infinity Serum was fading quickly.

"I can't stop, guys, I don't have much time. If I can complete the manufacturing process of the Sentinel and write a detailed operating manual when my mind is clear, who will guide the young people to complete this complicated work in the future?" Tony didn't even raise his head and continued to type quickly on the keyboard in front of the computer, listing a series of complex calculation formulas.

"I have to finish it as soon as possible!" Night Walker and Hawkeye looked at each other. They knew that the success of the Sentinel Project depended largely on luck.

Because they lack key materials, they are lucky to complete 40% of the manufacturing. Even if the Sentinel is completed, can it really meet everyone's expectations and eliminate mutants? Maybe, but one is definitely not enough, and hundreds of them may be needed. But if it is so difficult to manufacture one, how can hundreds of them be achieved?

In fact, from Nightcrawler to Hawkeye, to Spider-Man, and even Tony himself, they all had doubts in their hearts and were ready to give up. But they still persisted in order to inspire the morale of others in the resistance base. The most terrifying thing in the dark age is to lose hope. These old guys knew this very well, so they kept silent tacitly.

Seeing how persistent Tony was, Nightcrawler and Hawkeye stopped arguing with him and found a place to sit quietly, watching him check the formulas and

list the tasks.

In fact, the design and manufacturing steps are almost finished with Tony's day and night efforts, and he is only doing the final verification now. The next step is to find a suitable USB flash drive or other storage device to copy the files.

Just as the three old men were busy in the laboratory, Daodan's attack came suddenly. The huge explosion and shock wave caused Tony to fall directly off the chair.

"Tony!" Nightcrawler yelled, rushing forward to protect Tony from being hit by falling debris.

"The enemy is attacking! It's Red Tank! He is coming with Magneto's first elite force! Our base is exposed!" Spider-Man rushed in amid the violent shaking and brought bad news.

"Damn it! How did Magneto find this place!" Hawkeye held on to the wall to avoid falling.

The explosion of Daodan lasted for nearly a minute. Tony's laboratory was located at the bottom of the underground, so it escaped. However, the upper level of the underground palace suffered heavy losses, and the sentinel robot, which had just completed 40% of its manufacturing, was also destroyed in the violent explosion...

"The explosion has stopped! They are planning a frontal attack." Nightcrawler announced loudly when he noticed that the shockwave had stopped. The First Elite Battalion was the strongest assault force under Magneto. Even if it was intact, the resistance base could not withstand this force, not to mention that it had been bombarded by hundreds of sudden earth-penetrating bombs.

Tony, who was protected by Nightcrawler, patted him on the back gently, signaling that he could let go: "Hawkeye, quickly get Abraham and Millie over here, we are out of time! Nightcrawler, help me up, there are only a few formulas left, I must finish this code!"

Tony yelled at the top of his lungs, "Hurry! We only have a few minutes left!"

.....

Logan didn't watch how Red Tank's men attacked the rebel base, and he didn't want to know what would happen next. He just turned his head, took out a bottle of gin from his arms and took a swig.

However, Red Tank did not miss the opportunity to provoke Logan, and said to him with a half-smile: "Logan, do you know who is leading this resistance base?"

Logan didn't even look at Red Tank and continued drinking.

Seeing this, Red Tank shook his head, as if he was disappointed with Logan's performance: "Ah, you don't care at all. You just want to end everything here as soon as possible, and then take your grandchildren to Canada to continue logging, right?"

"Well, you really don't have to care about that, even if the leaders are Tony Stark, Nightcrawler, Hawkeye Barton, Spider-Man, and Professor Xavier Charles Xavier!" Red Tank said indifferently.

As each name was mentioned, Logan's pupils suddenly contracted, and the hand holding the wine bottle involuntarily exerted force until the bottle broke, and the amber wine spilled all over the ground. The sharp fragments pierced his palm, and blood flowed, but he was completely unaware.

.....

Hawkeye led a group of young men and women to Tony's laboratory. They were carefully selected potential people. For this group of older people, they had already prepared for the worst.

There are about twenty men and women, all of whom are young people who have just turned twenty years old. They were ordinary people with super powers and were later adopted by Magneto.

Nightcrawler and his friends took these people in and trained them in a planned way. In addition to teaching them combat skills, they also imparted various knowledge, including scientific knowledge taught by Tony.

The team leaders were Abraham and Millie, who served as the male and female captains respectively. Tony handed a small USB flash drive to the two of them.

"Listen, there's no time, kids. You should understand what we're facing. Magneto has found us." Tony said, looking at the two young men.

"They're afraid, Magneto is afraid of us, so he always wants to get rid of us as soon as possible, especially when we have weapons that can destroy his regime." Tony said, pointing to the USB drive.

"It contains the production methods of all the sentinels, as well as the improvement plans I proposed. You must keep it properly and build these machines when the time is right! Remember, don't let anyone find you!" Abraham and Millie's faces were full of sadness, and so were the other young people.

They knew what this meant; they had been told the worst possible outcome since the Nightcrawler had begun training them.

"No, I don't want to leave you!" Millie cried, holding onto Nightwalker and Tony's clothes tightly and unwilling to leave. She was saved by Nightwalker at the most critical moment. To her, Nightwalker and Tony were her family, and this resistance base was her final destination, but now they told her that her family was broken up.

She had experienced this kind of pain once as a child and didn't want to experience it again.

"There's no time, kids. Leave quickly, we will buy you time. Where's Spider-Man? Is the Professor here? Let him go with the kids!" Nightcrawler shouted.

Before Spider-Man could answer, the professor's voice was heard: "No need, don't let these children suffer. My old bones are of no use. It would be better to buy them some time."

The professor pushed the wheelchair into the laboratory with difficulty: "I have seen too many students die, and I don't want to see the disappearance of young lives, so I'd better stay."

Nightcrawler, Tony, Spider-Man and Hawkeye looked at each other, and no one objected. They urged the young people led by Abraham and Millie to enter the secret passage that had been prepared long ago, so that they could escape through the passage.

When well-equipped mutant warriors holding powerful weapons appeared in front of Nightcrawler and others, the elderly Nightcrawler drew out his thunder blade. Although his hands were shaking, he said firmly: "Everyone, it is my honor to fight alongside you. I am lucky to fight with a group of real heroes at the last moment of my life."

Stop talking so much, Night Walker. You're more talkative than anyone else. You might as well steady your shaking hands and kill a few more bad guys. Hawkeye has already put the arrow on the bow.

At least I can die on the battlefield instead of dying in bed, which will be my greatest honor. Tony said in a wheelchair. Professor Charles beside him also nodded in agreement: I think so too.

Don't forget me. Spider-Man straightened his costume and said solemnly, "We have always been heroes, fifty years ago and still are today. Friends, let's put a perfect end to our last heroic career!"

After saying that, Spider-Man rushed towards the enemy first, followed by Nightcrawler, Hawkeye, Professor and Tony. These elderly heroes, at the end of their lives, declared war on death with an angry charge.

Perhaps from the beginning, they had no illusions about the Sentinel Project. Perhaps these old heroes had long ago lost hope in this gloomy world.

But they used their old and bent backs to bear all the haze. They were as hard as steel and as tough as spider silk. Their bent backs carried the final hopes of countless people.

Even in this darkest era, even in the years when there was no hope, they still made a choice. They kept despair for themselves and passed on hope to others.

For those who gave them spiritual encouragement, for the young people who fled in the secret passages with the flame of hope in their hearts.

The desperate charge of a group of old men may not seem very heroic, but it makes everyone understand: a hero is a hero until death!

Chapter 69 Hawkeye Barton

In a semi-enclosed circular space in the Magnetron Building in New York. This place is quite spacious, with a height of ten meters. There is a large stage in the center of the circular space, which seems to be built for performances. However, at this moment, there is no performance on the stage, but five people are trapped in a special adamantium device.

Today is a special day for Magneto, because he finally caught the little bugs that have been bothering him for years.

Those little bugs that buzzed in his ears like flies, making him upset. In this world, most governments have surrendered to Magneto and accepted his rule. Eric Lansherr is the master of this world, and no one dares to challenge his majesty.

In addition to the people in front of him, Tony Stark, the former Iron Man and now disabled in both legs. In the early days of the war, his Iron Legion did cause him a lot of trouble, but he eventually solved them one by one.

And the Spider-Man who once flew over the city as a spy and thief. Now the old man can no longer perform those difficult moves, and his old body can't avoid bullets. His legs were pierced by bullets and he can't walk.

Next is the remnant of S.H.I.E.L.D., the strongest resistance force among humans - Hawkeye Barton. He has killed many high-ranking members of the Brotherhood of Mutants by assassination and long-range shooting. But since he became blind, his abilities have gradually declined.

Then, look who it is, ah, it's Nightcrawler, the most annoying character here. He always uses his mouth to incite various forces, countless times uniting the scattered resistance forces, so that they can unite to fight against Magneto! He is the most annoying guy! If it weren't for him, this war wouldn't have to last for fifty years.

Oh, and there is an old friend, Professor X, Charles Xavier. I have proved through my actions that mutants can only resist and win. But this old man is stubborn and refuses to join my organization.

He also used his influence to constantly organize forces against me! From then on, my friendship with Charles came to an end!

Magneto looked at the captives in front of him with satisfaction. They were the old guys who wanted to launch a final charge before death and achieve heroic glory. How could Magneto, who was watching the whole process through the monitor, let them do what they wanted?

Why would you want to achieve the fame and glory of your enemy? Magneto is not a soft-hearted person. Only by completely destroying a person, from the spirit to the body, is Eric's style!

"Look, look! Who are these? My old friends? We have been dealing with each other for fifty years, some of them even longer. Look why my old friends ended up like this?" Magneto laughed at the captured old heroes.

His eyes, tone, and every move were mocking these stubborn old guys, laughing at their inflexibility and stubbornness.

"Ah! I understand, it's because they are against the great Magneto! They don't recognize the key step in the evolution of species - survival of the fittest!" Magneto shouted loudly, waving his arms, looking aggressive.

"Just like Homo sapiens eliminated Neanderthals, mutants replaced ordinary people and became the mainstream of evolution. This is an inevitable trend! However, some people want to go against the tide and ignore the trend of history!"

Magneto stared at everyone fiercely, his eyes as gloomy as an old vulture. He suddenly shouted loudly: "Stupid! Stupid!"

Everyone, including Nightcrawler, didn't care about Magneto's yelling. At this age, they already knew that there was no need to get angry or argue about something. Instead of arguing with Magneto, it's better to save your energy to breathe.

The battle with the Elite First Battalion left everyone wounded, and every breath was accompanied by severe pain. Of course, although they were old, they were still sharp. In the process of capturing these old guys alive, the Elite First Battalion also paid a heavy price.

Nightcrawler and his men killed many of Magneto's elites, and they felt that they had made their money back. After all, at this age, they were open-minded about matters of life and death. Even if Magneto was to announce that they would be executed in the most cruel way, they would not blink an eye, as all this was already expected.

Eric was unhappy with their attitude of ignoring Magneto. He didn't capture these people just to make them ignore him.

Magneto pressed the button on the wall, and at the other end of the circular space, a lift brought up a person who was very familiar to Nightcrawler and others.

Wolverine Logan, whose whole body was bound by adamantium. They hadn't seen Logan for a long time, at least twenty years. They hadn't seen Logan since the last joint battle.

This was a reunion of comrades after many years. Charles, in particular, excitedly shouted to Logan: "Logan! I thought I would never see you again!"

The others looked at Logan with complex emotions in their eyes, and they were equally excited. However, the reality prevented them from fully expressing their joy, because at the moment they were all captives, under the control of hostile forces. In such an environment, reunion did not seem to be the most appropriate time.

Magneto quietly watched the excited group of people, with a slightly raised corner of his mouth, revealing a mocking smile. He broke the silence and said in a provocative tone: "You must be very happy to see these old comrades. But you can never imagine who led the troops to find your hiding place and completely destroyed your last safe haven."

His words were like a sharp sword, piercing everyone's heart. The originally warm atmosphere cooled down instantly, and everyone looked at each other, their hearts full of doubts and uneasiness. They began to think about who

betrayed them and forced them into a desperate situation. And Logan fell into deep contemplation...

"Right, Wolverine?" Magneto's ridicule made Logan furious. Yes, it was Wolverine Logan who led Red Tank to the Mexican desert and found the last resistance base. It was he who witnessed Red Tank ordering missiles to bomb the base and watched those fully armed mutant warriors use advanced weapons to massacre ordinary people who had no time to react.

All this is because of him, Wolverine Logan! Anger and self-blame gnawed at Logan's heart like strong drugs, and regret spread in his mind. He couldn't resist this terrible negative emotion, because of his choice, he was about to end the lives of his last few friends with his own hands.

"Why!" Logan could only ask Magneto this question. His reaction aroused the doubts of others. These old heroes had experienced many vicissitudes of life and had seen many conspiracies and intrigues. They probably already had the answer in their hearts.

Hearing Logan's doubt, Magneto just smiled and clapped his hands. On the second floor of the circular building, the originally closed compartments opened one by one, revealing the French windows behind.

"Why? To let the whole world see what happens when you resist me!" Magneto pointed to the second floor, where there were many cameras, which seemed to be broadcasting live to the world.

In addition to the cameras and reporters, there are many mutants in suits. They look like gentlemen and ladies, but their words and deeds are not gentlemanly at all.

These are the members of the Hellfire Club, the elite among mutants. One of them shouted at Magneto on the second floor: "White King! Where is the exciting show you mentioned? We can't wait!"

The question drew cheers from the other Hellfire Club members, who were eager to see the thrilling show that Magneto promised.

Magneto waved his hand to signal the people upstairs to be quiet, then smiled at Logan and said, "See, that's enough reasons, right?"

"Logan, now I'll give you one last choice, to save your grandchildren, or to do something else. It's all up to you." Magneto waved his hand and untied the adamantium chains tied to Logan.

For Magneto, Wolverine might be the easiest mutant to deal with. His adamantium frame is a problem for others, but for Magneto, all metals are his playthings.

Wolverine flew in front of Nightcrawler and others like a toy in his hand. Magneto said: "Logan, you have two choices. Either kill these people in front of you, or wait for me to kill your grandchildren and then kill you together!"

As Magneto finished speaking, two children were pushed to the sidelines by two sturdy mutants, with guns pointed at their heads. The children's faces were full of fear, and both the boy and the girl were crying silently.

The granddaughter Lily burst into tears and shouted in despair: "Grandpa! Grandpa!" The cry was heartbreaking and touching.

As helpless as a lost fawn in the forest calling for its parents.

"Why! What are you doing, Magneto!" Logan shouted at Magneto in despair. He had indirectly destroyed the hard work of his friends, but Magneto wanted him to end his friends' lives with his own hands!

Magneto ignored Logan's shouting and began the countdown: "10."

As Magneto counted down, the Hellfire Club members on the second floor began to yell frantically: "Kill him! Kill him! Kill him!"

These people love killing and take pleasure in the suffering of others. Before mutants gained power, they, as upper-class mutants, did not care about the lives of their lower-class compatriots and lived a life of debauchery.

When Magneto took power, these people immediately gathered around and respected Magneto as their White King. The most shameless people in the world are these people.

"Kill them! Do it now, Wolverine! Or your little girl's head will explode!"

"Go ahead! Let us see your diamond claws!"

"Hurry up, Logan! I heard that you like killing people! Your way of killing is extremely cruel! Show it now!" The shouting from the second floor continued, but Logan did not move.

Magneto's countdown continued: "5." The countdown was halfway through, and Logan heard the sound of loading the gun, and the bullet had been loaded.

The two children desperately called for their grandfather. Logan felt weak and filled with an unprecedented sense of guilt. In his darkest moment, Charles' voice rang in his mind: "Go ahead, Logan. We have already discussed this. We are all old guys who are about to die."

Chapter 70 Relief and Satisfaction

"It's worth it to exchange the lives of us old men for the chance for two young people to survive." Charles took great pains to invade Wolverine's consciousness.

"But..." Wolverine tried to respond in his mind, but his body moved involuntarily. Charles was forcibly controlling him.

"There's nothing to say but, Magneto will not let us go today. Don't resist my thoughts anymore, Logan, at least let us die quickly and with some dignity." Charles said this in Logan's thoughts.

He forced Logan's body to move and walked to Hawkeye first. Hawkeye smiled at Logan: "At least the adamantium piercing my heart is sharp enough, so I won't feel too much pain."

Logan raised his shaking hands and pressed his fist against Hawkeye's chest. He wanted to stop it, but his body wouldn't listen. The professor manipulated Logan's nerves and controlled the adamantium claw to pop out.

With a swoosh, the sharp claws instantly pierced Hawkeye's heart, fast and deadly. As Hawkeye expected, he died without feeling much pain.

Logan wanted to shout loudly, but no sound came out. He watched like a bystander as the professor manipulated his body to do something he didn't want to do. But he could feel his body.

He could feel the blood from Hawkeye's heart on his hands. Then, he came to Nightcrawler. Nightcrawler whispered to him, "Take good care of the children in the future, and don't let Magneto find you again."

With a swoosh, the diamond claw pierced the heart again. Compared to Hawkeye, Logan clearly felt that Nightcrawler's muscles were denser and more

difficult to penetrate. The sensitivity to this subtle difference almost made Logan collapse.

He personally ended the lives of his companions one by one! On the second floor, the members of the Hellfire Club were immersed in ecstasy. Is there anything more exciting than killing each other? Magneto was right, he put on a good show for everyone!

"Hey, although we haven't seen each other for many years, you are still so young, Logan. Your claws better be a little bit tilted, because my heart is not in the right position." These are the words of Spider-Man, who greets death with his unique humor.

Tony Stark also walked to the finish line with a smile, his eyes revealing a sense of relief and satisfaction.

"At least I died in your hands, shot to pieces, but at least my body was intact. This is the best ending for me." His voice was calm and firm, as if he had already seen through life and death.

"If you can help collect my body, please remember to give me prosthetic limbs so that I can be buried intact. It is too ugly to lose both legs. I don't want to be buried in such a mutilated state." The corners of his mouth raised slightly with a hint of sarcasm.

After saying this, he slowly closed his eyes, waiting for the final moment to come. At this moment, he had no fear at all, only respect for life and calmness towards death.

Logan's sharp claws mercilessly pierced Tony's heart, as if to end his life completely. However, at the same time, Logan himself had already burst into tears and could not control himself. His emotions surged out like a flood, and tears and snot intertwined with each other, making this once majestic old man so fragile and helpless at this moment, as if he had lost all his strength and support.

His eyes were filled with endless sorrow and regret, tears slid down his cheeks and dripped onto the ground, forming puddles of water stains. His once resolute and cold face was now distorted by pain, and the original majesty was gone. His lips trembled, trying to make a sound, but only sobs and sobs came out of his throat.

At this time, Logan was like an old man wandering the streets, lonely and helpless, with a tormented soul. His body was trembling slightly, and it seemed that he might collapse at any time. His heart was full of contradictions and struggles. On the one hand, he felt deeply guilty about his behavior, and on the other hand, he could not escape the shackles of fate.

At this moment, he became a person swallowed by sorrow, lost in the abyss of pain, unable to find a way out. The world around him seemed to be far away from him, leaving him alone to face the darkness and despair in his heart.

When he reached Charles, he was able to speak at last. He cried out in sorrow, "Why! Why!"

Charles raised his hand with difficulty and touched Logan's weathered face, and said in a calm tone: "Because nothing matters anymore."

Puff. Professor X, who had fought for the peaceful coexistence of mutants and humans all his life, finally died at the hands of his students. Charles' control was lifted, and Logan was able to move freely.

He held Charles' body and cried bitterly, his features twisted. Tears poured out like a flood, and great grief invaded him. Logan was no longer the indestructible tough guy, crying so hard that he couldn't even control his snot and saliva.

He hugged Charles' body tightly like a last resort, crying loudly and shouting: "Ah!!!!!"

Like the wolverines in a pack returning from hunting, the wail of the wolverines echoed in the valley after seeing the entire pack dead.

Those friends whose lives were taken away by Logan's claws all had smiles on their faces. Only Logan will live forever with sadness.

I indulged in self-harm again today, just to make sure I could still feel everything.

Feeling the pain with all my strength is the only truth I have left.

The pain was so piercing, as if an old wound had been opened again. I tried to drive it all away, but I still remembered it in my heart.

What I was, my dear friend, is gone.

You are better than anything I fight for in this world, and I am afraid that I will only disappoint you and hurt you.

If I could do it all over again, I would travel around the world, stay true to myself, and continue to search for the path of my soul.

Under the Canadian Rockies, the X-Men stood far away, forming a cordon to protect Li Jie and Logan and his son, and prevent anyone from disturbing them.

Ever since Logan and his son were trapped in a mental maze constructed with thousand-year-old building blocks by Li Jie in a special way, he created an illusion that belonged only to them in the maze through the statue of Ksitigarbha Buddha.

The father and son seemed to be frozen in time. Occasionally, Logan's face showed expressions of calm, anger, and joy.

But more often than not, it was an indescribable sadness. Although he was immobilized and fell to the ground powerlessly...

Tears kept rolling down his eyes, and he curled up like a baby who had just left his mother's arms, looking weak and helpless.

Many X-Men frowned, their faces full of worry. Blink stood side by side with Jean, she held Jean's arm tightly, and asked anxiously, "Will Logan be okay?"

Qin was also confused at the moment, after all, she couldn't go to investigate the situation of Li Jie and the others. At the moment, Li Jie was doing his best to drive the vision formed by the thousand-year-old building blocks and the Buddha statue, and had no time to explain.

Jean could only manage a smile: "It should be fine. Logan is a tough guy who never falls down."

Qin didn't know that sometimes it might not take any cruel torture to defeat a tough guy, and the real fear came from the despair deep in the soul.

Li Jie used all his energy and felt that he was close to his limit.

Although there were no obvious signs, he had a hunch that Logan and the others were about to emerge from the maze of Millennium Bricks.

Li Jie launched a final mental attack on Logan, releasing the strongest energy wave. The Ksitigarbha statue, which was originally glowing faintly, now shone brightly.

Everyone understood that Logan and the others would be back soon!

……

It was like being trapped in a thorny bush. If I moved, I would be stabbed by the sharp branches, cutting my skin and exposing the muscles underneath to the air without any protection.

The thorns pierced my body, injecting a poison called chaos into my blood. I don't know where it started, and I don't know when it will end.

I am trapped in this cage of chaos, unable to reincarnate or escape. Whenever I want to take action, the toxins of chaos corrode my heart.

The air was filled with the smell of blood, a smell I had longed for for years. Only by irrigating this chaotic thorn with the most concentrated blood could they flourish.

In this hell, I continued to live in the way I was used to. I didn't want to resist, and I didn't expect hope anymore, because everything seemed futile.

The corpses scattered all over the ground are my final destination. When the sharp claws pierce the chest of any life, the familiar sounds and familiar smells, I have become accustomed to them.

I gave up praying, because I knew it was all in vain. After hundreds of years of struggling, every time I tried to free myself, Hell only bound me tighter.

I gave up my faith and the light.

All of this is so familiar, every time I pray for a new beginning, I know the ending deep in my heart. They appear in different forms, but the taste is always the same: chaos, evil, killing, and lingering nightmares.

Fatigue and boredom surrounded me. I didn't want to think any more, nor did I want to make any unnecessary efforts, because I knew the outcome every time.

No matter how things start, they always end the same way.

Living forever is an unspeakable pain. I personally ended the lives of my friends, and they were freed with a smile, transcending everything in the world.

And I am still struggling in this endless dark hell, unable to see light and hope. I have given up thinking and just want to sink into this darkness forever.

I am willing to sacrifice eternal damnation in order to free my friends and loved ones from the shackles of this world.

Even if I am surrounded by thorns, even if my body is filled with chaotic toxins, as long as they are safe, I have nothing to fear.

I will use my sharp claws to survive in this dark hell, and spend the rest of my life helping those who can leave here to get rid of it all.

Even if the thorns grow more and more dense, even if everything may be in vain.

All I know is that when darkness falls, I can't resist, even prayers are useless. My enemies, those beasts that feed on blood.

I will use your blood to nourish this hell of thorns until the most beautiful flowers bloom, as red as roses and as hot as roses.

I will be the only gardener in the dark hell, letting these thorns spread throughout the hell, imprisoning all of you, and letting those bloodthirsty beasts fall into the thorns. This is my final destiny in this life.

Like the mountains and the sea, I will never change. I swear on my eternity. - James Howlett, John Logan, Wolverine, Wolverine.

I swear by every name and every journey in my life that I will stay in hell forever until it is filled with beautiful flowers...

...

Logan lay by the lake at the foot of the Canadian Rockies, feeling the wet and cold pebbles and smelling the scent of lake water and cedar. Everything was so familiar, as if he had returned to the past.

The war had not yet begun. The sun shone on him, and Logan was sure that this was not a dream. In his tear-blurred vision, he saw the people he longed to see in his dream again, and they ran towards him with a smile. If this is the last dream before I die, please let me die in this dream...

Chapter 71 James Howlett

Logan woke up from his dream and collapsed on the floor exhausted. Everything seemed to be a mixture of reality and illusion. He fell into a deep sleep. When he woke up again, he had changed, bringing a brand new aura.

Maybe others haven't noticed it yet, but Wolverine is no longer the same person he used to be. At least he remembers his original name - James Howlett!

It has been a long time since Logan and his son recovered from their trance, and no one knows what they experienced in the illusion.

They didn't intend to reveal a word. Today, the Logans seemed even more taciturn than before.

Especially the first few days after waking up, it was a torment for Logan. The illusion of the thousand-year-old building blocks and Buddha statues constructed by Li Jie was so realistic that it was heartbreaking. He seemed to be able to feel the temperature of the blood on his hands.

Zhuangzi dreamed of a butterfly. Was it me who dreamed of the butterfly, or was it the butterfly that dreamed of me? Logan spent his days in a state of confusion, where it was hard to tell the truth from the false. Days passed like a dream.

Charles even talked to Li Jie specifically: "What's wrong with Logan? He has been behaving strangely lately."

Li Jie himself had never used the Ksitigarbha statue or similar magic weapons, so this was his first attempt. All the methods he adopted were learned from the notes of other Buddhist practitioners. As for the specific situation, Li Jie could only be vague: "Well, it's just a transitional stage. These are normal sequelae. They will be fine after a while."

It will be fine after a while. Well, probably. Professor Charles looked at Li Jie

doubtfully. He began to wonder if it was a mistake to let Logan ask Li Jie for help?

According to Li Jie, after a while, Logan's condition seemed to have improved and he was no longer as restless as he was in the previous few days.

A few days ago, he didn't say a word, just watched everyone vigilantly. He didn't even eat with everyone, but ran to the lake under the Rocky Mountains to fish and barbecue.

Today, Logan was finally willing to have breakfast with everyone, which made everyone feel a little relieved.

Storm, who was in charge of breakfast, was obviously surprised when she saw Logan walk into the restaurant, but she soon smiled and said, "Logan! Aren't you going fishing today? What would you like for breakfast?"

Storm asked kindly, holding a spatula. The other X-Men in the restaurant also turned their eyes to Logan.

Logan ignored everyone's gazes and said in a slightly hoarse voice, "I want to eat scrambled eggs."

"Okay! Logan, wait a moment, it will be ready soon!" Storm immediately started preparing scrambled eggs for Logan.

The atmosphere in the restaurant was eerily quiet, everyone stopped breakfast and stared at Logan. The only sound was the sound of Storm cooking scrambled eggs for Logan.

Fortunately, this strange silence did not last long, and Storm quickly brought the scrambled eggs that Logan had ordered to him.

"Logan, your scrambled eggs." She also placed a spoon in front of Logan.

Logan picked up the spoon and tasted the scrambled eggs one bite after another. The warm and soft egg liquid had just the right saltiness and exuded the unique aroma of eggs.

Logan chewed the scrambled eggs with great relish. Everyone stared at Logan as

he ate.

Logan lowered his head and ate the eggs in big bites, but his body suddenly began to tremble, like an uncontrollable muscle spasm.

"Logan, what's wrong with you!" Storm noticed Logan's abnormality and couldn't help but pat him on the back.

She was the person closest to Logan and the first to notice that something was wrong. Logan wasn't having a convulsion, was he crying?!

Oh my God! Storm swore that she had known Logan for so long and had never seen him cry or even show a weak expression!

Logan lowered his voice and said, "I'm fine, it's just that these scrambled eggs are so delicious. I haven't eaten such delicious scrambled eggs for a long time!"

"Logan, it's not that long. It's just that you haven't had dinner with us in the past few days!" Qin immediately corrected Logan.

Because Li Jie once said that Logan's recent abnormality was mostly because he had not yet completely distinguished between illusion and reality. They needed to help him understand that he was now in the real world!

Logan looked up when he heard what Qin said. Everyone saw that his eyes were slightly red, but there were no tears. It was unknown whether he didn't cry or he was holding back.

Logan scooped up a big spoonful of scrambled eggs and said to Storm, "This is the best scrambled eggs I've ever had. It seems like I haven't tasted anything like this in decades."

"It's okay, it's okay, Logan. If you like, I can do it for you every day." Storm patted Logan's back to comfort him.

Logan did something that no one expected and that he had never done before.

He stood up and gave Storm a hug, holding her tightly, feeling her body temperature, and confirming that she was not an illusion: "I'm so glad you're alive!"

Not just Storm, he embraced every member of the X-Men, including Scott, whom he once hated the most.

"Dude! Dude! Don't be so strong. You're almost breaking my waist!" Wolverine's strong hug made Scott feel a little uncomfortable...

"Scott, it's great that you're alive! You are all alive. I can stand here, hear your voices, see your appearance, and smell your breath! There is no better thing than this!" Logan said sincerely.

"I apologize to you for my previous asshole behavior. As long as you are still alive and real, that's enough."

At first, Scott was upset about Logan hugging their mutual girlfriend Jean tightly, but after hearing what Logan said, he took the initiative to pat Logan on the shoulder and said, "Logan, no need to say more, always remember that you are a part of us, and everyone in our big family is important!"

.....

Considering that the emotions of Logan and his son have not yet completely stabilized, the follow-up training plan arranged by Li Jie for them has not yet started.

However, Logan and the other person's experience in the illusion had obviously had a great impact on them. Their impulsiveness, anger and bloodlust were significantly reduced. Especially Logan, he seemed more thoughtful and wise. This is a good thing for all parties. The professor also agreed with Li Jie's opinion and let Logan and the others return to their daily lives first and then conduct follow-up training later.

While Logan was recovering, Tony brought news: "Everyone, prepare your travel stuff. We are going to have a picnic on Venus this time!"

Ever since Li Jie brought back the space ring made by Master Gu Yi from Kamartai, Tony has been testing its stability. After several tests, he has determined that this device is practical and feasible.

Now, he has built a portal inside the Eternal City, the remains of the Holy Shield Brotherhood in Rome, which can teleport directly from Earth to Venus. Each

teleportation relies on the energy provided by the Ark Reactor.

It must be said that this method of transmission is very convenient, and there is no need to use solid fuel rockets or Tony's Ark spacecraft. Because using any aircraft through the atmosphere, according to the current level of technology, it is easy to be detected by other countries, which is contrary to the Illuminati's principle of keeping a low profile.

The use of space portals can cleverly avoid these problems. As long as a space portal is opened in the Eternal City of Rome, the Earth and Venus will be just a stone's throw away. Its efficiency and speed far exceed any existing flight equipment. But the only drawback of the space portal is its extremely high energy consumption. Every time a portal from Earth to Venus is opened, it consumes the energy of several large Ark reactors.

An Ark Reactor is very expensive. Fortunately, Tony is the inventor of this technology and has the ability to improve this energy source, which makes it possible to build a portal between the Earth and Venus. If it were someone else, the cost of opening the portal each time would be prohibitive.

Even so, Tony's private property is still shrinking rapidly. At present, the Venus base has just started, and he has already lost $1.5 billion. To achieve self-sufficiency in the Venus base, at least an additional investment of tens of billions of dollars is needed.

If the Venus base is to reach a certain scale and meet Li Jie's expectations, more investment is needed. This will be a huge expense and may even drain all of Tony's private property, even though he is the world's richest man.

It can be said that interstellar navigation projects are not something that can be borne by private financial resources, not to mention that this is so costly only with the help of the Kamar-Taki wizard. If Li Jie had not proposed to produce a series of cosmetics such as hair growth water and scar repair fluid, and put these high-efficiency products on the market to make money, Tony Stark's desire to play with the Venus project might really go bankrupt.

Now in the Eternal City of Rome, Tony radiantly announced to the other members of the Illuminati: "Everyone, put on your equipment! The first phase of the Venus base project has been completed! Now, we will set foot on a planet that has never been explored by anyone - Venus!"

After confirming that the space ring was correct, Tony began to build the Venus base with all his strength, continuously transporting construction materials to Venus through the portal of the Eternal City.

The Iron Legion, a construction engineering unit specially designed by Tony, was responsible for the construction of the Venus base. Since they did not need to participate in combat, Tony could remove the most expensive fire control system and combat components of the Iron Legion. There was no need to use expensive combat armor such as gold-titanium alloy or adamantium alloy.

The most expensive material used in this batch of steel construction corps is titanium alloy. Many non-critical components use ordinary corrosion-resistant and heat-resistant materials, and then a layer of titanium alloy coating is applied on the outside to reduce costs.

This greatly reduced the cost of the Iron Legion. Despite this, the total price of this Iron Legion of more than 50 units still exceeded 500 million US dollars. It was this investment in the construction of the legion that enabled Tony Stark to remotely control the Iron Legion on Venus through Jarvis on Earth...

Chapter 72 Other Planets

These Iron Men work day and night, and their efficiency is equivalent to that of a team of thousands of ordinary people. It is because of them that Tony can now tell everyone that they can travel to Venus for inspection.

The surface temperature of Venus is extremely high, about 450 degrees Celsius, like a huge furnace, emitting a blazing light. The atmosphere here is extremely harsh, filled with all kinds of toxic substances, but lacking the oxygen necessary for life. Under such extreme conditions, it is extremely hot during the day, as if you are in lava; and at night, it becomes extremely cold, like falling into an ice cellar. Faced with such a difficult environmental challenge, Tony stood in the Immortal City, wearing an indestructible steel armor, and said seriously: "These are the two major problems we must solve." He knew that the road ahead was rugged, but his determination was unwavering.

"The first phase of the Venus base has been completed, and we can go and see the new base. However, before we set off, I have customized armor for you because the environment on Venus is not suitable for human survival." Tony led Li Jie and others to the equipment station in front of the space gate.

Many robotic arms are ready with various armor parts. They are responsible for helping Li Jie and others put on Venus-specific armor with life support systems.

"Come on, friends. Step onto the platform, put on your travel gear, and let's go to Venus!" Tony was as excited as a child who was about to go on a long journey.

Li Jie and others watched Tony walk up to the equipment platform and put on a full set of Venus armor. Tony had already activated the space gate.

The blue space gate opened, this side is the Earth, that side is Venus. At this moment, human beings set foot on a planet other than the Moon for the first time!

……

Venus is the second closest planet to the sun after Mercury in the solar system. The air pressure here is 90 times that of the earth, equivalent to the pressure of the 900-meter deep sea on earth.

With a broken atmosphere, scorching surface temperature, and occasional sulfuric acid rain, human civilization has never considered this planet closest to the Earth as a target for colonization.

Aside from a few astronomers who are mildly interested, most scientists and governments pay little attention to this desolate place.

But today, Earth civilization has begun to build a complex on the land of Venus. A gray hut has just appeared on the surface of Venus, which is just the tip of the iceberg of the entire base and only the entrance. More secrets are hidden under the surface of Venus.

The busy steel engineering team uses earth materials to shape traces of civilization on this lifeless planet.

Li Jie, wearing armor, passed through the space gate and set foot on the land of Venus for the first time. Above his head was the atmosphere of Venus composed of carbon dioxide.

Looking around, the surface of Venus is desolate. It is a waterless planet with 70% of it being plains, and the sight line can reach the end of the horizon.

Li Jie bent down and grabbed a handful of Venusian sand, and after careful observation, he scattered it into the air. This Venus, called the Morning Star, will become the key base of the Illuminati. Morning Star, everything will start from here!

Li Jie clenched his fists and strode towards the Venus base.

When building the Venus base, Tony had conducted a detailed survey of the surrounding area. Using various geological equipment, he conducted a detailed investigation within a radius of 50 kilometers to ensure that the geology was suitable for building a base.

The person who assisted him in this was Dr. Beast Hank. After all, Tony also had a lot of things to do on Earth and couldn't hide on Venus every day. Otherwise, Pepper might go crazy looking for him.

So, in the Venus base, besides Tony, Hank is the biggest help. There is really no way to deal with this situation! After all, Professor Charles is very inconvenient to move due to physical reasons; and what about Li Jie and Captain Rogers? When they face the scientific data provided by Tony and Hank, they are no different from illiterates.

Professional matters can only be left to professionals.

There are many mining areas within a radius of 50 kilometers, which is the main reason why Tony and Hank chose to establish a base here.

First of all, we cannot always rely on the earth to supply raw materials. This not only costs a lot of money, but will also attract attention in the long run.

Secondly, Li Jie's subsequent plan requires a large amount of various materials. If all of them are collected on Earth, it may destroy the ecological environment of the entire Earth.

For Li Jie and Tony, the Earth is an irreplaceable and important planet, and destroying the environment is unacceptable. They can only transform Venus into a large mine and construction base.

Most of the buildings were built underground because Venus has acid rain, which is highly corrosive. If there were too many buildings on the ground, a lot of protective measures would be needed to prevent acid rain from destroying the base, which would be a huge expense. Before Dawn Company made a profit, the funds came from Tony's personal property. Tony couldn't be allowed to bear such a huge financial pressure.

According to Tony and Hank's design, there are not many ground buildings on the Venus base, only a few inconspicuous small houses.

Through these small houses that have been specially treated for corrosion, you can enter the semi-underground open activity layer, which is the preparatory layer of the base. Currently, a large amount of building materials are stored here. After the base is completed, this will become the entrance and helipad and other

facilities.

The second floor is the most complete area, mainly used for meetings and leisure for Illuminati members. Tony even plans to build a swimming pool and artificial light garden here to avoid feeling that Venus is too boring.

The third layer is the equipment layer, which has the life system and energy supply to maintain the base. There is also a backup database of Jarvis, so that Jarvis can help the Illuminati members to process complex calculations and data. Even Li Jie and Captain Rogers, who don't know much about scientific knowledge, can quickly master the various high-tech equipment in the base through Jarvis.

The fourth floor is a smart manufacturing factory, similar to the one in Tony's house, used to manufacture Iron Man armor. This fully automated smart factory allows him to produce a large number of Iron Legions in a short period of time. As long as he inputs instructions and key data, Jarvis can manage the entire factory.

The factory at the Venus base is larger than the one under Tony's Los Angeles villa, because in the future, it will not only manufacture steel armor, but also a larger scale. Currently, the fourth floor is still under construction, and except for the basic equipment, everything else is being rushed. After the factory is completed, it will first help manufacture other steel engineering mechas. However, considering that some mechas do not need to work on the surface of Venus, the design standards can be appropriately lowered to reduce the pressure on funds and raw materials.

In addition to the Venus base under construction, another important location is the mine on Venus. This is the key reason why Tony and Li Jie chose to build a base on an alien planet. They need a lot of mineral resources! In addition to the known and mined mineral deposits, Tony also made a lot of neutron detectors to let them scan the surface of Venus and find more mineral deposits. If he did this on Earth, Tony might be caught, after all, governments may be hiding secrets. But on Venus, he can scan with confidence, and mining is more direct, without having to consider environmental issues or paying taxes.

As Tony walked, he enthusiastically introduced the Venus base to Li Jie, Rogers and Professor Charles in detail. As one of the participants in this plan, Hank

naturally did not need to be introduced in detail.

Tony said excitedly, "Everyone, this is the Venus base we carefully built. It is not just a simple scientific research station or military base, but also a powerful fortress for us to deal with possible alien invasions in the future! It is no exaggeration to say that once faced with the threat of alien creatures, the Venus base will become the second indestructible line of defense to protect mankind. It can even be called the most critical and vital strategic location to resist alien crises!"

The group walked into the conference room, which was very similar to the common conference rooms on Earth. Obviously, this design was to allow everyone to adapt to the environment more quickly and better devote themselves to work.

Tony continued to explain: "We will deploy preliminary armaments here, all kinds of weapons that may be equipped." Captain Rogers asked: "Don't we need to notify the government?" After all, the Illuminati is now building armed forces in outer space. Li Jie answered on his behalf: "One person may be smart, but a group may be stupid. Captain, you will not forget the panic caused by the 1938 radio drama "World War" in the United States, right?" They gathered together largely because of their distrust of politicians and fear that they would turn important things into personal interests. Rogers was not unfamiliar with this, so he did not object again. He just mentioned the government out of habit.

The five members of the Illuminati learned about the progress of the Venus base in detail and clearly determined their goal - to lead mankind to resist the invasion of alien species. When this short trip to Venus was about to end, Tony was responsible for sending the others home. However, Li Jie deliberately stayed until the end, and it was obvious that he had something to say to Tony alone. Tony naturally understood Li Jie's intention, so he waited until everyone left before turning around to face Li Jie and asked, "Is this another new crazy plan?"

Li Jie smiled and replied, "This is not some crazy plan, but a small gift I brought to you." Then, he took out a bunch of 2TB mobile hard drives from his space belt. These mobile hard drives looked small and delicate, flashing a faint light, as if they contained endless secrets.

Tony raised his eyebrows when he saw so many hard drives. "What are these?

Tell me, you gave me more than ten TB of seeds because Pepper has been keeping a close eye on me recently?"

"Oh, please don't misunderstand me! I'm not interested in your messy personal affairs." Li Jie waved his hand quickly, and then continued: "This gift is genuine and given to you sincerely! Of course, it is not only for you, but also a generous gift for all of us on Earth! You know, it is an indispensable and important tool for us to explore the vast universe!"

Li Jie's face was very serious. He slowly emphasized: "Because this is the design of an entire interstellar fleet!"

Back in 1938, when the Columbia Broadcasting Company in the United States was broadcasting a science fiction novel "The War of the Worlds", it accidentally interrupted the news channel due to frequency problems. As a result, people across the United States who were listening to the news suddenly heard the broadcast: aliens have occupied Washington and are advancing towards the eastern coastal areas!

This was a scene from a novel, but audiences across the country believed it to be true. Countless people hurriedly fled their homes, taking everything they could carry with them and heading to the west coast, just to escape the so-called alien threat from the east coast.

The "fake news" incident caused by this misunderstanding is still considered one of the most influential in history...

Chapter 73 Starfleet

Tony mentioned that Li Jie gave him a dozen terabytes of hard drive seeds, but he actually underestimated the number of hard drives Li Jie brought. Li Jie kept taking out new hard drives from his space belt.

Finally, he took out nearly 2 mobile hard disks and filled the conference room table with them, which looked quite impressive. The smallest of these hard disks had a capacity of 8TB, and most of them had a capacity of TB.

"Tony, you were wrong just now. This is not a gift of a dozen TB. The data I brought you is a total of 225 TB!" Li Jie said, pointing to the mountain of hard drives.

Ever since Li Jie opened his social media platform, his popularity has been growing rapidly, especially after his video "One for All, All for One" to support Spider-Man became a global hit.

Thanks to this video, Li Jie experienced a surge in reputation. Before this, Li Jie had already understood the requirements for gaining reputation. Gaining reputation is not as simple as being well-known. It does not mean that you can gain reputation just by letting everyone know you.

You can only gain reputation when many people agree with you. If others do not approve of your views and actions, they will not provide reputation even if they know your deeds. This was clearly understood when Li Jie dealt with the vampire incident.

In this globally popular video "I for Everyone, Everyone for Me", Li Jie's unique way of expression broke the barriers between heroes and ordinary people, humanity and divinity, and was recognized by ordinary people around the world, because they are all ordinary people!

Although Spider-Man is the protagonist of the video, Nightcrawler's speech at

the end is also very good. Now that the video has passed its popularity, Li Jie's reputation income has returned to normal.

But that craze brought him nearly 1.8 million reputation points. Combined with other previous events and comic promotions, Li Jie accumulated about 2 million reputation points.

Is more than two million reputation points a lot? It is indeed a lot, at least it seems so. However, Li Jie found that if he really wanted to exchange what he wanted in the system, these were far from enough.

When he holds the Thunder Blade and his strength is raised to B+ level, he can unlock more items. At this level, there are some things that Li Jie needs for his plan.

[Nighthawk-class early warning detection aircraft, B-level rating. Equipped with medium armor and stable cruising speed. Possessing special reconnaissance capabilities, it can detect all types of units, including those using cloaking devices.]

[It carries basic attack missiles and can attack aerial targets. It can carry two fully automatic turrets and drop them from the air to the battlefield. It has its own drone hangar and can release six small drones. The drone uses laser weapons and can attack both air and ground targets.]

[This battleship has a maximum speed of twice the speed of sound in the atmosphere and a cruising speed of 22.5 times the speed of sound outside the atmosphere. It is equipped with a small jump engine and can perform interstellar jumps.]

[A full set of design drawings are available for exchange, including armor technology, weapon technology, jump engine, etc. The exchange price is 30 reputation points (Note: This is the price of the basic technology version. Upgrading technology requires additional fees. There are three levels in total, and each level increases by %).]

This is one of the items that Li Jie wants to browse and exchange. That's right, a whole batch of real interstellar battleships! Detailed design drawings and technology. Although it is a basic technology template, the price is already quite amazing.

Li Jie didn't want the Chitauri to come to Earth to fight, but reality would not change because of personal wishes. Therefore, all Li Jie could do was to make more preparations. In his opinion, interstellar space wars were much better than land wars on Earth.

He had this idea during his contact with Tony. He wanted to completely change those things, whether it was the Battle of New York or the inexplicable civil war. The movie had already foreshadowed a bad outcome, and Li Jie didn't want to experience it himself.

Li Jie trusted the wisdom of Tony and Hank, two geniuses. As long as there were blueprints, they could probably build it. But he didn't let them design and build the interstellar battleship by themselves, even though Li Jie believed they could do it.

But how long will it take to do all this? Although Tony is a talented arms dealer and has designed the Ark spacecraft, he has never built a real interstellar battleship.

From project establishment to conception, to prototype construction, and then to repeated trials and improvements, even a genius like Tony Stark may need five or even more than ten years to come up with a mature Starfleet plan.

So Li Jie doesn't plan to wait that long. Who knows when the Chitauri or other aliens will come to Earth? He needs to get a complete and mature interstellar battleship plan faster to give those aliens who want to invade Earth civilization a big surprise!

Of course, a Nighthawk-class early warning reconnaissance aircraft alone is not enough to form a complete interstellar fleet. Li Jie's reputation points are not wasted.

[Banshee-class attack aircraft, B-level rating. Has light armor and fast movement speed. Mastering the special shielding position can make the fighter fly and attack in full stealth.]

[Equipment includes four 225mm caliber Gauss electromagnetic cannons, and can carry eight Thunderstorm-class tactical nuclear missiles and eight Punisher multi-purpose missiles.]

[This warship has a maximum speed of 3.8 times the speed of sound in the atmosphere and 40 times the speed of sound in interstellar flight. It is equipped with a small jump engine and can perform interstellar jumps.]

[A full set of design drawings are available for exchange, including armor technology, weapon technology, jump engine, etc. The exchange price is 30 reputation points (Note: This is the price of the basic technology version. Upgrading technology requires additional fees. There are three levels in total, and each level increases by %).]

[A Hydra-class medical transport aircraft, rated B. It is characterized by its sturdy heavy armor. In order to reduce weight, it has given up all weapons and fire control systems, and is equipped with powerful thrusters, giving it excellent maneuverability.]

[The cabin is equipped with a multifunctional medical room and rest area, and can transport up to 8 sets of heavy-duty individual mecha equipment.]

[The ship can reach a maximum speed of Mach 3.5 in the atmosphere and a cruising speed of Mach 30 in the interstellar space. It is equipped with a small jump engine and can jump within the star system.]

The exchange price of this battleship is the same as that of the Banshee class, which is 200,000 reputation points.

[Viking-class multi-purpose warship, B-level rating. It has heavy armor and high-speed mobility, and has a unique transformation function. It can fight in the air and in the stars, and can also transform into land combat armor to cause devastating blows to ground targets.]

[Equipment includes two 300mm plasma cannons (anti-aircraft) and four 125mm caliber Gauss electromagnetic cannons (anti-air and anti-ground).]

[The maximum speed of flight in the atmosphere is 3.8 Mach, and the interstellar cruising speed is 40 Mach. With the medium-sized jump engine, it can achieve cross-star system jump.]

[This product provides a full set of blueprints for exchange, covering armor, weapons, jump engines and other technologies. The basic version exchange price is 30 reputation points (Note: the price of technology upgrades will increase,

divided into three levels, each level increases by %).]

[Yamato-class battlecruiser, B+ rating. Has super-heavy armor, can withstand nuclear attacks, and ordinary 300mm Gauss cannons cannot penetrate its first layer of armor. Moves slowly, and its speed will drop significantly after entering the atmosphere.]

[The weapons include a 3000mm ultra-high-power plasma main gun (needs to be charged), twelve 300mm plasma cannons, and thirty-six 125mm Gauss electromagnetic close-in defense guns on board the entire ship.]

[The maximum speed of flight in the atmosphere is 0.7 Mach, and the interstellar cruising speed is 25 Mach. The large jump engine enables it to perform star-level jumps, making it a true interstellar navigation battleship.]

[A full set of blueprints is available for redemption, including armor, weapons, warp engines, etc. The basic version redemption price is 30 million reputation points (Note: The price of technology upgrades will increase, divided into three levels, each level increases by %).]

The above is the entire interstellar fleet that Li Jie exchanged, including attack aircraft, interceptors, medical transport aircraft, reconnaissance early warning aircraft, and the most expensive battlecruisers that determine the outcome of the battlefield. This is also the highest level of interstellar battleships that Li Jie can exchange. The advanced technology versions of these battleships are all rated as A-level, which Li Jie cannot unlock at present. Even if he can unlock them, he lacks enough reputation to purchase them.

"This is a complete fleet! All types of warships are available. This is information that no government can obtain! The Venus base must be kept absolutely confidential!" Li Jie patted the hard drive and said to Tony.

After listening to Li Jie's introduction, Tony felt a little nervous and his throat was a little dry.

This guy is serious, not kidding. He has already prepared the information about the interstellar war! Tony swallowed his saliva and looked at the hundreds of TB of hard drive data. If any of the warship technology in it fell into the hands of the Earth government, it would disrupt the global military balance.

He understood why Nightwalker repeatedly emphasized that this information must not be leaked, and why Jarvis at the Venus base had to disconnect from Earth.

Once the information is leaked, it will lead to an imbalance in the earth's military, and the consequences will be disastrous. This world has never lacked ambitious people, and there are always people who try to unify the world with powerful force.

The earth is fragile and cannot withstand such torment from humans. Tony is well aware of the importance of Li Jie's words. Although he has not checked the information yet, he instinctively believes that with this information, he can create the first interstellar fleet in human history and win the first interstellar war.

But before that, Tony Stark still had a small question: "Honestly, where did these come from? No one on Earth can make these things."

"Before us, humans have never left Earth to establish colonies and interstellar civilizations." Tony was telling the truth. The Venus base should be the first interstellar colony of mankind. After all, the moon is only a satellite, not a planet.

Li Jie smiled. He knew Tony would have such doubts. It would be strange if Tony didn't have doubts when he took out these things of unknown origin.

Tony Stark has always lacked a sense of security. Li Jie placed the Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva statue on the table and whispered, "I can reveal a big secret that will answer all your questions. But at the same time, I want you to swear to me that you will never reveal this secret!"

Chapter 74 Precious Information

Tony swallowed his saliva, his eyes wandering between the Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva statue and Li Jie. He felt like he was standing in front of a huge and mysterious door. As long as he pushed it open, a secret would be revealed! Tony was hesitant, not sure whether he should accept Li Jie's proposal.

But he also longed to uncover the unknown secrets, and that feeling was like countless little bugs crawling across his heart.

"Swear on this statue? Why do I feel like you have some ulterior motive?" Although Tony really wanted to know the secret from Li Jie's mouth, he was somewhat resistant to the idea of swearing.

Li Jie shrugged: "It's up to you. When have I ever cheated you? If you don't want to swear, I won't force you."

Tony felt that Li Jie's words were not credible at all: "You have never cheated me? Who asked me to sell hair growth water? Do you know what the media outside are saying about me now!"

Tony gets angry when this is mentioned. He is a person who cares a lot about his image. After the streaking incident in New York, he spent tens of millions of dollars to acquire a bunch of insignificant video websites, which is a testament to his image.

Those websites just put his streaking video on their front page, what's the big deal? Li Jie thought nonchalantly.

"Believe it or not, if you don't want to know, don't ask me where these things come from. These technological drawings are real and can be used. That's enough. Don't think too much." Li Jie said, preparing to put away the statue of Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva and leave.

At this time, Tony called him: "Wait!"

Tony had a complicated expression and confirmed again: "Do you really want to swear?" Li Jie nodded.

"Okay! You have to promise that this oath will not have any negative impact." In the end, Tony compromised with Li Jie. He really wanted to know where these things came from.

Because these things obviously come from a high-tech civilization similar to Earth or humans.

Could it be that the Night Walkers were actually aliens from Earth civilization? This conjecture made Tony itch.

Li Jie ignored Tony's guess. He took out the statue of Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva and asked Tony to put his hand on it.

This is another technique that Li Jie learned from the notes of Kamartaiji Buddhist practitioners. Through Buddhist instruments, people are mentally restrained and made to abide by their vows, which cannot violate basic human morality.

Li Jie also added value to this spiritual vow, not only using the statue of Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva, but also his thousand-year-old building blocks.

He mobilized his own power, and used the energy of the Millennium Brick and Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva to make a spiritual oath for Tony, promising that he would not reveal anything he had heard today.

"Okay, I've sworn." Tony followed Li Jie's instructions and finished his oath. He asked, "Can I tell you now?"

Li Jie smiled and said, "Tony, this is a complicated story. It starts with another race."

Tony's throat moved. Could Nightwalker really be an alien? If so, how should I face him? Is he good or bad? Is he an alien or an ET? Tony's thoughts were all over the place.

"Do you remember the Asgard I told you about?" Li Jie started with the topic of Asgard, and Tony listened attentively.

"Actually, my family has a foster prince from Asgard, the insignificant Thor who calls himself the God of Thunder. He was sent down by his father, King Odin, to learn humility." Li Jie said this, which surprised Tony.

Tony didn't expect that Li Jie had such a deep friendship with the alien civilization, and even helped educate the prince! Well, Tony imagined that educating the prince was more like the etiquette courses of European aristocrats.

He probably couldn't guess what the actual situation was like with the education and foster care that Li Jie mentioned.

"There are a lot of complicated things going on. For various reasons, this man named Thor should have inherited the throne of Asgard, but he is not suitable to be king now." Li Jie continued seriously.

"In Asgard, there is a second prince who is better and wiser. He can lead troops to victory and govern the country well, so..."

Before Li Jie finished speaking, Tony took over the conversation: "So this second prince covets the throne because he is actually more suitable to be the king. It's just because of the order of succession that he has never had the chance, right?"

Tony frowned, this kind of thing was common in any civilization and it happened all the time on Earth, so he wasn't surprised.

Li Jie nodded: "Yes, that's right. In fact, I have a better relationship with the second prince, and I support him to become the king of Asgard. My acquaintance with Asgard was actually facilitated by Master Ancient One."

"Asgard is a civilization that worships magic. They have been fighting in the universe for many years and have accumulated a lot of spoils, including some extinct civilizations similar to Earth. I think you should have guessed what I am going to say."

Tony already had the answer in his mind: "So what you mean is that you supported the second prince to ascend the throne and let the eldest prince stay on

Earth in exchange for the useless technological civilization information in their hands, right?"

Tony thought about it and felt that this reason made sense. Compared to the throne, those useless data were really nothing.

Li Jie nodded and shook his head, leaving Tony a little confused: "Did I understand it wrongly?"

Li Jie smiled and said half-jokingly, "It's half right and half wrong. What I'm going to say now is the key. You can't reveal this matter to anyone, not even for verification. You have to swear to keep it secret."

Tony thought about it and nodded in agreement.

Li Jie sat at the conference table, tapping it gently and said, "In fact, our subsequent plans, including the introduction of the dark elves, can only be realized with the help of the second prince. So before certain things are completed, I hope you can be sure that there are some things that you can't say even if you are drunk!"

Tony shook his head. "I haven't been drinking alcohol for a long time. Now I just drink an aperitif before dinner at most."

Li Jie nodded: "Because it's a secret. In fact, the second prince of Asgard is actually a princess. She is a girl!"

"What?!" This reversal came so suddenly that Tony couldn't react for a while.

Li Jie ignored Tony's confused expression and threw out more shocking news: "And this second princess of Asgard has fallen in love with me."

Li Jie said shamelessly that for him, face does not exist at all.

Tony was completely confused by Li Jie's words.

What kind of plot development is this? An alien princess falls in love with an earth boy and helps him make the earth rise? Would anyone believe this kind of story? Tony asked himself and answered, well, I believe it.

If I tell you that an alien princess falls in love with an earth boy and helps him make the earth stronger, would you believe this kind of bloody story? My answer is very clear, I believe it.

Because this world is full of unexpected craziness. Often, things that seem logical are actually illusions that others are leading you astray.

Tony Stark has experienced many such things. Many times, the truth is often shocking, unbelievable, and even like a dream.

Although what Li Jie said sounded like a fairy tale, it made people feel that only such an absurd story could explain it all. Otherwise, where did those high-tech drawings come from?

On the other hand, Tony is very narcissistic. He always thinks that there is no woman he cannot conquer. To some extent, Tony subconsciously believes that if an alien princess is really conquered by an earth boy and falls in love with him, it will be a matter of pride, and it is also a symbol of honor for him as an earthling. Because he can show off: Look! The princess of the Asgardian Gods has fallen in love with my kind and my good friend! This is something I can brag about for the rest of my life!

So Tony laughed, put his arm around Li Jie's shoulders and asked, "Are you serious? The second prince of Asgard is a girl?"

Li Jie nodded: "Yes, she showed her true identity to me. So I am sure of it."

Tony then asked, "Does she really love you?"

Li Jie said nothing and took Tony to the surface of Venus. He drew out the Thunder Blade and for the first time did not suppress the power of this quasi-divine weapon.

The violent power of thunder erupted at this moment, and the lightning illuminated the sky. With Li Jie as the center, the surrounding magnetic field began to distort severely. You know, Venus has almost no magnetic field or a very weak magnetic field.

But this quasi-artifact Thunder Blade gave a magnetic field to a specific area of the planet for a period of time, which is enough to imagine the power of this

weapon.

Li Jie felt that he had demonstrated enough, so he put away the Thunder Blade, shrugged and said, "Look, this is the weapon she gave me. It's a quasi-artifact sword that is close to the artifact level."

"Wow~!" Tony was amazed at the energy fluctuations displayed by the Thunder Blade just now, which was stronger than the output of the Ark Reactor when it was running at full capacity.

"This knife incorporates the energy of the entire Thunder Pool, and is made of the divine metal Uru. The handle looks wooden, but it's actually made of branches from the World Tree. It was made by the best blacksmith of the dwarves, and then engraved with inscriptions by the best wizard of the elves." Li Jie introduced the Thunder Knife to Tony in detail, like a child showing off a toy.

As Tony listened, he kept nodding his head and making "Hmm~Hmm~Hmm~!" sounds, just like an elementary school student who was listening attentively.

Li Jie finished talking about all the functions of the knife and put it away. Then he put his arm around Tony's shoulder and said earnestly, "Look, Tony, do you think ordinary people would give such an expensive gift? Even if they are princes or princesses?"

Tony, who had been nodding just now, immediately shook his head when he heard this question. Are you kidding? Who would be so bored as to give away quasi-artifacts everywhere? Nightcrawler just said that the weapons used by the eldest prince of Asgard are not quasi-artifacts... ...

That Night Walker has nothing to do with Asgard. If the second princess didn't have a special liking for him, how could she use her private vault to make a special combat knife for him? It's incredible to think about it!

Now, Tony almost believed the story told by Li Jie. In his mind, he had conceived a tragic love story: an alien princess came to Earth and met an upright and kind-hearted Earth youth (this needs to be verified).

Later, the young man helped the princess adapt to life on Earth. During the time they spent together, the young man did not know the princess's true identity, so the two treated each other as equals. This experience was completely new to the

princess, who was always high and mighty. During their days on Earth, they laughed, quarreled, and then attracted each other and slowly fell in love.

But because of the difference in status, the alien princess had to leave the earth eventually, just like Princess Anne in the movie "Roman Holiday". No matter how happy she was, she still had to return to her kingdom. So the princess and the young man separated. However, fate played a trick on them, and the princess and the young man met again, this time as a superhero and the heir to the kingdom.

After learning the truth, the young man on Earth decided to unconditionally support his beloved to ascend the throne of power, and the alien princess also decided to help the young man on Earth defend his hometown. To this end, she used her private library to create a quasi-artifact, secretly stole precious information from the palace database, and was even willing to cooperate with the young man's various plans.

Chapter 75 International Interests

In this way, an interstellar love story that transcends race and civilization begins! This is not just the love between two young people, but also a great exchange between two civilizations!

These scenes played out in Tony's mind, and he was almost moved to tears. Although Tony Stark is a rigorous scientist, he is actually delicate and emotional.

He was moved by the great love between Night Walker and the princess.

Li Jie patted Tony on the shoulder and said seriously: "Tony, there are some things you can't say or ask. She still wants to ascend the throne of Asgard. If her daughter's identity is known to others, I will be finished."

Li Jie was telling the truth, but the real meaning was definitely different from what Tony understood. But this did not stop Tony from assuring Li Jie: "Don't worry, I understand."

Tony looked up at the starry sky and sighed, "Sometimes, even people in high positions cannot help themselves!"

Li Jie stood aside and echoed: "Yes, yes!"

Tony patted Li Jie on the shoulder and said, "Don't worry, my friend. I won't tell anyone about what happened today. I won't reveal a single word. Even if I meet the second princess of Asgard in the future, I won't reveal any flaws. I won't let your relationship with her become awkward."

Li Jie said gratefully: "Thank you, my friend."

"But what about the information? How do I explain the source to others?" Tony thought of the Starfleet information in the conference room.

"Just find an excuse and say that you suddenly had an idea. Or return it to the Holy Shield Brotherhood and say that it was Newton and your father who conceived it but never had the chance to execute it. Then you made improvements after getting the information. Anyway, we don't know much about the Holy Shield Brotherhood, so whatever you say is what it is." Li Jie answered indifferently.

"Why do I have to deal with all these things?" Tony was a little frustrated.

"What?" Li Jie said in an incredulous tone: "Isn't this the meaning of Iron Man's existence?"

Anyway, it's not the first time that Iron Man has taken the blame. You'll get used to it slowly. As a superhero, you need not only superpowers, but also a strong heart and thick skin! Li Jie thought.

Katie has been so busy lately that she doesn't even have time to rest or have a quiet meal, especially after meeting Brazilian super-rich Roberto.

On the surface, Roberto is the richest man in Brazil and an important figure in the global supply of raw materials, but in addition to this, his more important identity is a mutant, and an extremely highly evolved Alpha-level mutant. He has powerful fire abilities (more accurately, atomic fission) and is nicknamed Sunspot. When Katie sought his help, the proud young man initially refused because as a world-renowned man, he was not subject to the discrimination that ordinary low-level mutants encountered.

But in the end, Katie's words convinced him, and he agreed to help realize Katie's seemingly incredible plan - to establish a country!

That’s right, super-rich Roberto proposed a bold and practical plan, which is to buy a country!

It sounds ridiculous, right? How can a country be bought and sold like a commodity? Which sovereign country would easily give up its territory? Aren't they afraid of being blamed by future generations?

In fact, the real world is sometimes more absurd and even more fantastic than novels and movies. For example, buying and selling countries is possible in reality...

In today's society, due to large-scale human activities, large amounts of greenhouse gas emissions have caused the melting of Antarctic and Arctic glaciers and the continuous rise in sea levels. This has brought serious problems to many coastal countries, especially those small island countries. For continental countries or large island countries like Toyo, a few centimeters of sea level rise may not have much impact.

But for some small island nations, every centimeter of sea level rise is enough to cause panic. For example, the world-renowned tourist destination of the Maldives. This picturesque country is facing troubles. Optimistic predictions show that by 2100, the Maldives will be completely submerged, and by 2070, the country will no longer be suitable for human habitation.

The Maldives has begun the countdown to destruction, and most of its citizens will witness the country being swallowed up by the sea and disappearing in their lifetime. Earlier, the president and government of the Maldives began a plan to purchase land overseas, buying land that was willing to be sold, and preparing to relocate all citizens before the country was flooded. The Maldives is lucky that they have time and money to deal with this disaster. As the world's most popular tourist destination, the Maldives has accumulated a lot of wealth in the tourism industry, which is why they are able to purchase land overseas and obtain loans from international banks.

However, not all island countries are as lucky as the Maldives. Take Tuvalu, for example, an obscure small country. The country covers an area of only 26 square kilometers, has a population of about 1.1, an annual output value of less than 1700 million US dollars, and a per capita output value of less than 2000 US dollars. The tragedy of this world's fourth smallest and least developed country is that its speeches at the United Nations General Assembly are often ignored.

The President of Tuvalu has repeatedly called for reducing greenhouse gas emissions and slowing sea level rise, but due to the small size of the country, these calls have often fallen on deaf ears. The highest point in the country is only 4.7 meters above sea level, and most areas are only a few centimeters to a dozen centimeters above sea level. According to the current rate of sea level rise, the most optimistic scenario is that by 2050, 60% of Tuvalu's territory will be submerged by sea water. In fact, the rate of sea level rise has been increasing in recent years. According to this calculation, half of the territory may sink into the Pacific Ocean by 2030.

Tuvalu has no money to build flood control facilities or raise the height of the land, nor can it buy land overseas. International banks have repeatedly refused to lend money, and other countries have refused to accept Tuvaluan refugees. The global media has turned a blind eye to this country, as if it does not exist. Although Tuvalu is a member of the United Nations and enjoys the status of a sovereign state, no one has extended a helping hand because there is no return for helping Tuvalu, and accepting refugees also requires solving the resettlement problem.

No one is willing to take on this responsibility for no reason, unlike the Libyan refugee incident, which was profitable. Tuvalu's problems will only bring bad luck to those involved. Therefore, the world watched indifferently as this country gradually went to ruin.

In just 2017 years, from 2030 to 13, Tuvalu will lose half of its territory, and the remaining part will be uninhabitable. All citizens live in fear and depression. Those who are rich or have overseas connections have already managed to flee, and the rest have nowhere to go. The only way for this small island country to communicate with the outside world is the airport built by the US military during World War II, and one over-aged plane transports residents every month.

Today, Katie and her companions set foot on this land for the first time. Roberto's luxury plane landed in this poor and backward place. The events that are about to happen will change the fate of this country and its people, and completely rewrite the history of mutants. Katie walked in the shabby airport of Tuvalu in light sneakers, followed by a group of young mutants she had gathered. They were full of passion and blood, and they knew their mission. Among them, the older middle-aged man was the guardian of the young student "Sparkling". He was the leader of the West Coast Assassin's League and the Thieves' Guild, known as "King of Cards" Remi.

This was a wild era, a period full of ups and downs. An old-time mutant powerhouse like Gambit never dreamed that one day he would be brought to such a backward place by a group of young people in this way.

Because at this moment, the mutants are about to establish a nation!

Tuvalu President Modote paced back and forth anxiously in the presidential palace. Ruling this small country with only more than 10,000 people, for a big

country, the population under the president's jurisdiction may be less than that of a community director.

But no matter what, a country is a country after all. Tuvalu has complete diplomacy and sovereignty, and is theoretically qualified to establish a modern army.

The reason why people elected Modote as president was largely because of one of his words: I will do my best to save this country and the people here!

Yet now, he has begun his second term, seven years into his presidency, despite having given up on saving the country in 2012.

Modott's original plan was to apply for a loan from an international bank and then build a dam to withstand the continued rise in sea levels. But this was only a stopgap measure, and how much money would it cost to build such a dam? Small countries simply couldn't afford it, and international banks directly rejected his loan application.

However, the stubborn president did not give up. It was his responsibility to save the people who were about to be swallowed by the sea. Thanks to his lobbying, the United Nations General Assembly passed a special proposal.

Tuvalu is allowed to reclaim land and expand its territory to resist rising sea levels. The United Nations has approved Tuvalu's expansion of its 26 square kilometers of territory to 1500 square kilometers.

It is important to know that the expansion of island countries is a serious matter that may affect international interests, because according to international law, each coastal country has a 13-kilometer territorial sea baseline and a 200-kilometer exclusive economic zone.

If an island country arbitrarily expands its territory, it will encroach on public economic waters, which is unacceptable to other countries. Tuvalu's expansion is also subject to conditional restrictions: first, it can only be carried out on its own land; second, after the territorial expansion, the area of the exclusive economic zone remains unchanged and remains the same as before the expansion; finally, reclamation must be within the scope designated by the United Nations and cannot exceed the prescribed size and scope.

Modott's efforts earned him special permission from the United Nations, which seemed like a victory, but he felt bitter inside because the United Nations rejected his most important request - to ask for help from other countries.

However, the five permanent members of the United Nations Security Council have made it clear that they will not unconditionally support Tuvalu, and Tuvalu has no attractive resources or capital to seek help. China did provide $10,000 in aid, which is the only foreign aid Modott has received in recent years. But this amount of money is not enough to replace the parts of the national power equipment.

U.S. government representatives even privately stated that a country like Tuvalu was not worth bothering with, and they also put pressure on international bank representatives because the United States did not want to pay for Tuvalu's aid.

So, Modott used fierce and even insulting words to criticize the US representative at the UN General Assembly, but he was asked to leave the meeting without any practical benefit. Oh, no, the $10,000 in aid was sent after that incident. Was it a reward for his scolding of the United States at the UN? Modott's heart was filled with desolation.

At this time, Modott has no other options, no money, no skills, nothing, and no hope. The 60-year-old man is exhausted and has exhausted all his energy to maintain the operation of this weak country.

When he was so desperate that he even considered committing suicide after confessing to the public, Roberto, a super-rich man in South America, found him and said, "I am interested in Tuvalu. I can help you resettle refugees. I have many farms and plantations in South America, Northeast Asia and Southeast Asia."

Roberto said this on the phone, with an arrogant tone, as if this was a gift to Modotte. But Roberto did have the capital to be arrogant, and Modotte no longer had any bargaining chips. This country only had less than thirteen years left to live.

Now, how to safely transfer and protect the citizens has become his most important task!

Chapter 76 Super Rich Generation 2

Tuvalu had already prepared for the reception. As soon as Katie and her group got off the plane, someone took them to the presidential palace. As for sending a special car to pick them up, that was not necessary at all. This place is so small that even a bicycle is too big. Cars here are simply a waste and decoration. There is not even a gas station in the country.

Modott had long been standing outside the presidential palace waiting for Katie and the others to arrive. His suit was neatly ironed today, and he looked particularly energetic.

He saw the Brazilian tycoon Roberto from afar. When he approached, Modott could not wait to shake his hand and said, "Welcome, Mr. Roberto. If your company is willing to accept Tuvaluan citizens, you can recruit workers in the country!"

Roberto just smiled and patted Modot on the shoulder. He responded, "Mr. President, I can't make the decision this time. You have to listen to this lady. Please discuss with her how to negotiate and what conditions to use. I am only responsible for paying the bill."

Confused, Modott looked in the direction of Roberto's finger and saw a young and beautiful girl. He swore that the girl was not even older than his granddaughter.

Katie smiled and said to Modott, "Mr. President, let's go to the conference room and talk in detail."

It wasn't until Katie spoke that Modott realized that the people who came this time seemed very young, almost like high school students. If he hadn't confirmed Roberto's true identity, he would have almost suspected that he had encountered a fraud gang.

But what is there to cheat about in Tuvalu? Even if they sell people abroad, it is much better than sitting and waiting to die on this small island. Modote laughed bitterly at himself.

In the meeting room of the presidential palace, Katie's companions used their mutant abilities to check around to make sure there were no wiretaps, surveillance or other security risks. They nodded to Katie only after they confirmed that it was safe. Now, this 17-year-old girl has become the leader of this group of young mutants, and even the king of cards, Remy, was just pulled in to boost momentum.

After the young man finished his work, Modotte spoke up, "Regarding the issue of Costa Group recruiting workers in our country..." He thought Roberto was here to recruit workers.

Modott had prepared many plans before, such as seeking job security for citizens, etc. Although it would be very hard for refugees to work and the pay would be low, the old president always wanted to get as much welfare as possible.

Katie raised her hand to signal Modott to pause: "Mr. President, we are not here to recruit workers. We want to buy something from you!"

"Buy something? Buy what?" Modote was about to introduce the population situation of Tuvalu, but at this moment he had to put down the folder. He wondered if these people were really deceiving him.

Because Tuvalu has almost nothing of value except cheap labor. Apart from the blue sea outside, Modott can't think of anything else to sell in this country.

Could it be that he wanted to buy sardines? The old man wondered wildly.

Katie looked at Modott's confused expression and said seriously, "We want to buy this country!"

"What?" Modott thought he had misheard. What did the young girl just say? They wanted to buy the country of Tuvalu?

Was he too outdated, or was the world going crazy? Modott felt that his thoughts were no longer up to date.

Katie said to Modote in a serious tone: "President Modote, I say we are going to buy all of Tuvalu! Buy all the sovereignty of this country!"

This time, Modott listened very carefully, and he was sure that he had heard correctly. This girl named Katie did indeed state their intention, not to buy land, not to buy the right to use the sea area, but to buy the sovereignty of the entire country?

"Wait! You want this country? The whole country?!" The folder in Modott's hand slipped because what Katie said was beyond his expectations.

"Yes, we need the full sovereignty and political power of this country. Tuvalu is a small island, and it is an island that may be swallowed by the sea at any time. Any accident will accelerate the demise of the country." Katie's tone was firm, and what she said was fact, without exaggeration or embellishment.

"Life on this island is too hard for you and your people. If there is not enough money to build flood control dams or raise the elevation of the entire land, I believe you know what the end of this country will be."

"This is not a threat, Mr. Modott. The continued rise in sea levels has brought panic to this country. I doubt you will even survive until 2030. Perhaps civil unrest will break out in 2020."

Katie's words are not groundless. Modott knows that this small country is in dire straits. Recently, domestic unrest has become the norm. Some people think that it is meaningless to survive in this country with a bleak future, so it is better to enjoy the last days.

They intend to overthrow the existing regime and dream of living in anarchy for more than a decade before being swallowed by the sea. There are indeed some such fanatics. These people have completely lost hope.

If it weren't for Roberto's previous call, Modote would have announced to the whole country that large companies in South America would be recruiting a large number of workers and providing overseas employment opportunities for citizens. I'm afraid those people would have already started to take action.

Modott only had a guard force of less than 100 people, most of whose equipment were leftovers from the US military during World War II. He had no confidence

in quelling the possible unrest.

Today, Roberto's luxury plane landed at Tuvalu Airport, and the whole country watched. Everyone's last hope is pinned on this overseas job. Only by leaving this damn island can they start a new life!

Modote smiled bitterly. It seemed that these young people had already understood the current situation in Tuvalu and came here just to confront each other.

Negotiation is like a game, and like all games, it requires chips and trump cards. Katie showed her hand, but her trump card was not yet revealed, and her chips were very rich. On the other hand, Modott's hand was terrible, his trump card did not exist at all, and as for the chips, he had nothing except the sinking island.

Modott sat across from Katie helplessly and sighed, "What do you want? Buy this sinking country to satisfy your presidential addiction? But the people of this country no longer have their hearts in their hearts, and they just want to escape. I'm doing my best to help them. If you want to rule them and play the game of thrones, you'd better go somewhere else."

Modott treated these young people as the second generation of super-rich people who spent money like water.

Katie smiled and said, "It's not that boring, Mr. President. We will indeed do a lot of things for you, such as what Roberto mentioned on the phone before, to provide overseas employment opportunities for your citizens. And we guarantee that all of our more than 11,000 citizens can be transferred to a safe place."

Katie pointed to Roberto, who smiled and confirmed Katie's words.

This made Modott a little confused: "Without citizens, what's the point of having this country?" In this way, the country was just an empty shell.

However, for Katie, this empty shell is what she needs! A blank slate is the basis for a new vision. Only with this empty shell can she build a mutant home.

Katie said slowly, "It doesn't matter, Mr. President. You don't have many choices now. Either save your people and let them leave this slowly committing suicide country, or give up this opportunity and bury this country along with your

people."

Katie motioned to the naughty boy behind her to hand over a document, and she took the document and handed it to Modott.

"This is the best and perhaps the last chance for this country. Mr. President, please read this agreement before making a decision." Katie said calmly, because this time the initiative was in her hands, and Modote and Tuvalu had no choice!

.....

The night in Tuvalu is not noisy, and even seems lonely. Since there are no street lights in many places, if the waves hit, you may disappear in the sea in an instant.

Therefore, people in this country rarely go out at night. The only relatively lively place is the area near the airport and the presidential palace. This is the highest place in the country and one of the few places with entertainment. Not far from the airport is the "most luxurious" bar in the country, which is roughly equivalent to the level of a bar in a rural town of a few hundred people in the United States.

Even so, most people would not choose to spend money here, because many daily necessities in Tuvalu are imported, and bar consumption is high, especially for a country with an annual per capita output value of less than US$2000.

But today, many people flocked to this bar, and the boss did not drive anyone away even if they did not drink. Everyone was waiting for news. Since seeing Roberto's luxury plane land during the day, all citizens believed the words of old President Modote, and a large number of overseas job opportunities were coming!

For the people of Tuvalu, this is a godsend! Even those extremists who want to overthrow the government and live in anarchy for a few years are looking forward to this opportunity.

Because they are not stupid! The previous thought was just because they could not see any hope in this country, and there was no other way out except waiting for death. But if there is a chance to work abroad, it means that they can have a considerable income and may even settle down abroad in the future. This is a vital matter for everyone...

Chapter 77 Ordinary Appearance

This place is called a bar, and it is very close to the presidential palace and the airport. Moreover, the son of the bar owner works in the presidential palace, so the latest news can often be obtained here first.

The boss knew what the guests expected. Evicting them at this time would cause public outrage. He himself was also eager to know whether the president could reach an agreement with the American boss.

"Old John, give me a beer." Two young men who looked a little frustrated shouted to the boss. They were the Slaughter brothers. The brothers used to have a small fishing boat, catching fish such as sardines. Sometimes New Zealand fishmongers would buy their fish when they met them at sea. But last month, because they couldn't agree on the price, the New Zealanders pushed the price too hard, and the two brothers only sold two tons of sardines for 800 US dollars. Although sardines are not worth much, they are not so worthless. So the brothers had a quarrel with the fishmonger and beat him up.

The New Zealander was so angry that he rammed and sank their fishing boat. His boat weighed thousands of tons, while the brothers' boat was only a small wooden boat of 20 tons. As a result, the fishing boat sank directly.

The two men drifted on the sea for three days holding the broken wood before returning to Tuvalu, and they almost lost their lives. President Modote made a diplomatic protest, but the other side did not take it seriously at all, and did not even respond, let alone compensate, as if the incident had never happened.

Since then, the two brothers have become extremely depressed and have lost hope in life. If they had not heard about the opportunity to work abroad, they might have joined the anti-government forces.

The Slaughter brothers drank listlessly, and like everyone else, they looked towards the door from time to time, hoping that someone would bring news to

tell everyone how things were going.

"Make way, make way." A girl of about fifteen or sixteen, with a dignified appearance, squeezed in front of the bar counter. She asked anxiously, "Old John, is there any news?"

The boss shook his head silently: "Kadele, not yet. To be honest, Kadele, this is an overseas labor job. I heard that Costa Group is recruiting for positions in plantations, farms and mines. They need heavy manual laborers, and it may be difficult for you to be selected."

The young girl named Kadel looked at herself. Her thin arms and legs were obviously not suitable for manual labor. She said sadly, "But if I lose the election, what will happen to my sick mother? Do you want me and my mother to stay on this island and wait to die?"

Big Slaude glanced at Kadel and said, "Kadel, to tell you the truth, my brother likes you. If you are willing to marry him, both of us brothers should have a chance to be chosen. Then we will find a way to take you and your mother abroad. As long as you agree to marry my brother."

Little Slode looked at Kadel, without saying a word, but nodded silently. Kadel looked at the Slode brothers, who used to make a living by fishing, and their life was not bad, because they ate well and were relatively strong.

This overseas labor job requires heavy manual laborers, and they are both likely to be selected.

Kadel hesitated. Big Slaude's words were obviously tempting her. There was no such thing as love here. In this country where it was difficult to survive, love was a luxury. Living was the most important thing.

Cardell looked at little Slode, who had an ordinary appearance, neither handsome nor ugly, but a very strong body. She had neither a favorable nor unfavorable impression of this person.

Big Slaude was a little impatient with Kadel's hesitation: "Girl, make a decision quickly! If we brothers are selected, I will not agree if you come to my brother again. There will be many good girls vying to go abroad with him!"

What the great Slaude said was true. Cadel had no time to hesitate and was about to answer:

Ding-ling-ling! The door of the bar was pushed open again, and everyone's attention was drawn to it, including the Slud brothers and Cardell.

The man who came was John Jr., the son of John Sr., who worked as a waiter in the presidential palace. He was out of breath as if he had just run from the presidential palace. He walked to the counter and everyone made way for him. The originally noisy bar immediately became quiet, and everyone stared at John Jr., waiting for the news he would bring.

Little John drank some water at the counter and took a breath, then stood at the bar and announced to the hundreds of people present: "The president has signed an agreement with Mr. Roberto, and will start recruiting workers at Tuvalu Airport tomorrow! The jobs will be in South America and Southeast Asia! I heard it's a long-term contract of more than ten years!"

Wow! Applause, stamping, crying and laughter mixed in the bar. The bar, which was quiet just now, was boiling instantly. It was one thing to know the news, and it was another to confirm that the news was true. After all, only when it was confirmed that the old president had really reached an agreement could the people feel truly at ease.

"Little John, wait a minute! Did they say how many people they want to hire?" The Slud brothers thought more long-term. If they hired a small number of people, the competition would be very intense...

The doubts of the Slud brothers are also the focus of many people. Everyone is eager to have more job opportunities so that they can be selected. Especially girls like Kadel, they hope to find cooking or logistics jobs.

Little John cleared his throat and told everyone in a cheerful tone: "The job quota is here, friends! That's all!"

Tuvalu's national anthem is "Tuvalu Belongs to God." After learning that Costa Group was about to recruit nationwide, the sinking island nation echoed with the joyful singing of this song all night long.

Ironically, it was not the legendary God or gods who saved the country and its

people, but a group of young mutants.

Modote stood in the villa of the presidential palace, listening to the singing and laughter coming from all over the country, feeling mixed emotions that were beyond words.

Should he feel sad for his countrymen's disloyalty to the country? Or should he feel angry? Modott's emotions are complicated and far beyond the simple description of sadness and anger.

This complicated feeling is like going to a gift shop with money in your pocket and full of expectations to choose New Year gifts for your family, but being told that all the favorite items are sold out.

Perhaps, this unspeakable loneliness and loss is a true reflection of the old president's inner feelings at this moment.

"Mr. President, be happy. After all, this is a win-win situation. You cannot force the people's thoughts. No matter how much you love this country, you cannot change the harsh reality it faces," Roberto said to Modote.

The mutant, called Sunspot, understood the president's thoughts, but he felt that the old man was just asking for trouble. How could a country without prospects and a future expect these people to remain loyal to and identify with the country?

This country has no achievements to show off, no history and culture to celebrate, and no hope or future to be seen. It is good enough that the people born here have no complaints, but you cannot expect too much.

Roberto was ordered by Katie to talk to Modotte. Now that an agreement has been reached, they don't want to make any mistakes at the critical moment and must ensure that the plan is foolproof.

Roberto walked up to Modott and said with emotion: "You have fought for this country all your life. It's time to take a good rest."

"What do you mean?" Modott turned to look at Roberto and asked.

"Look, I have prepared a high-quality villa for you on the coast of Portugal, and a 30-meter-long yacht. As for your granddaughter's studies, I have helped you

contact a private university in the UK. What do you think?" Roberto said bluntly.

Modotte was about to say something, but Roberto immediately interrupted him.

"Don't be quick to refuse. This is what you deserve. You have worked hard for the country and the people all your life. It is not too much to get this." Roberto looked at Modote with a smile and turned his gaze to the other corner of the room.

Modott followed Roberto's gaze and saw the middle-aged man who had met him at the meeting, with a serious face and looked difficult to deal with, standing there.

He stared at Modot with sharp eyes like a poisonous viper. Modot felt almost breathless just by looking at this man. This man was a real ruthless character. Modot felt that he could take his life at any time if he wanted to.

Modott was sweating profusely. Roberto was very satisfied with his reaction and continued, "Look, you take what you deserve, the villa, the yacht and enough dollars for you to spend the rest of your life. I just don't want to hear some inappropriate words in certain occasions, do you understand me?"

Modott swallowed his saliva. The young man in front of him was in a high position and was the world's top supplier of raw materials. He was not afraid of even the president of a superpower. This kind of momentum could not be matched by the leader of a small country with a population of more than 10,000.

Modotte almost didn't hesitate and immediately replied: "Okay, Mr. Roberto, you are actually helping us. My countrymen and I are very grateful to the Skota Group. I don't think anyone will say anything about it, please rest assured."

At this moment, the stubborn old president put aside all his pride and stubbornness. Look at the cheering and singing crowd outside the window! There is nothing in this world worth Modott's persistence.

Instead of wasting time on these thankless tasks, it is better to go to Portugal and enjoy the rest of your life. And my granddaughter will have the opportunity to study at a prestigious British school! I believe the little girl will be very happy. She has always dreamed of becoming the kind of elite and intellectual modern woman in the movies.

As for Tuvalu? Sorry, after tonight, this country has nothing to do with me!

Chapter 78 Shocking

Roberto had already prepared for the migration of all residents of Tuvalu. Although it was indeed expensive to buy the country, as the world's largest farm and mine owner, his company did need a large number of workers.

Tuvalu's cheap labor force was a good choice, and Costa Group's transport planes and cruise ships were already on standby. Long before Katie and the others signed the contract with Modott, these transportation tools were ready, waiting to go to Tuvalu immediately after the agreement was signed.

Tuvalu was instantly in chaos and bustle. Everyone tried their best to take away what they thought was precious, because they knew they would never return to this island. Because when they signed the labor agreement with Costa Group, the group had promised to provide them with the identity of the new working country. These islanders were afraid that such a good opportunity would be snatched away.

In just one day, the residents of Tuvalu suddenly became foreigners. If all the people of a country leave, then objectively speaking, the country disappears.

Katie and her team certainly did not allow this to happen. Therefore, when the residents of Tuvalu signed the agreement to become foreigners, Katie and her team planned that a large number of letters from foreigners applying to become citizens came in like snowflakes.

During this time, Katie has been busy with this matter. She contacted moderate mutants who were willing to support her, mostly alumni of Xavier's School for Gifted People.

During the persuasion process, some people agreed and some refused, but everyone kept it strictly confidential. Even those who refused hoped that Katie's plan would succeed, but they just waited and saw for some reason.

Katie used the mutant students Charles had taught for many years to weave a close network of relationships. First, she contacted the most influential person among the graduates each year and persuaded them, and then these people led the people they knew to form a point-to-point communication. Among them were many mutant parents, some of whom were senior mutant warriors, such as the King of Cards who was brought in by Flash, who was a good example.

More than 10,000 residents quickly became foreigners, while more than 4,000 foreigners became official residents of Tuvalu. Katie cleverly used a legal loophole to announce that Tuvalu recognized dual nationals as citizens of the country and enjoyed civil rights.

This allowed many mutants in the United States, Canada or South America to join Tuvalu without having to give up their original nationality. New laws were enacted one by one as the old citizens left, and the speed was astonishing. More than 500 old laws were abolished and more than 300 new laws were enacted in one day. This was the speed of Katie's leadership team.

They are racing against time to complete all this before other countries can react and catch them off guard!

The last Tuvaluan citizen left his homeland, and more than 10,000 people on the island disappeared. The island seemed empty, with almost nothing left except houses and garbage. Katie strolled on the island, with rippling blue waves on both sides of the road, and only a narrow path connecting the two ends of the island. The sea breeze ruffled her hair, and her long chestnut hair fluttered in the wind.

Katie felt unreal when she stepped on this land. Her impulsive decision had brought her to this point. Her seemingly bold and even absurd ideas came true one by one, and she felt like she was in a dream.

The world is crazy. It doesn't care how weird, arrogant or crazy you are. It always tolerates everything. Genius and madness, strangeness and arrogance are not the sins of this world. As long as you have the capital to use these qualities, just show yourself!

Because for this world, mediocrity is the greatest sin!

"We actually have our own country." The little rascal following Katie still felt

like he was dreaming.

"That's right, but this is just the beginning. The real test has just begun." Katie's eyes were firm.

Because the documents regarding the replacement of Tuvalu's president have just been delivered to the foreign ministries of various countries.

Because what different policies will the new leader bring, and what impact will it have on the economic life and security of the international community, these are issues that leaders of various countries and many businessmen need to consider.

Even if the president does not come in person to make his position known to various countries, especially those that are important to him, it will be handled by important diplomatic officials such as the minister of foreign affairs or the secretary of state.

If you don't enter the social circles of big powers, you can only allow big powers to formulate policies at will. Whether it is good or bad for your country, you either accept it or resist it. The choice is that direct.

Of course, the countries that are busy with foreign affairs are usually the big countries, the powerful countries and the superpowers. Just look at the change of the leader of a small emirate in West Africa. How many countries would care?

However, no matter what the diplomatic form is, diplomatic rhetoric must be used, because only when the credentials are submitted and the other party responds to the diplomatic credentials, the regime change is legal and recognized by the world.

Katie took great pains to control such a small country because of Tuvalu's status as a globally recognized sovereign state, and the country is so small that it almost does not exist.

Katie silently prayed in her heart that everything would go well. Now the whole plan has entered the final critical stage. As long as this step is passed, the establishment of the mutant nation will be a foregone conclusion!

……

At this point, the EU has actually begun to split internally, and the European integration process has failed. The current EU is just barely maintaining the status quo. When France and Germany, the two most important EU member states, begin to turn away from the EU, what future can you expect for this union?

At this time, Tuvalu's diplomatic documents were officially sent to the British Foreign Office. Normally, the prime minister should personally review such a major event as a change of leadership. But the commissioner of the Foreign Office just glanced at the name of Tuvalu and said, "Tuvalu? Where is this? Their president has changed?"

Well, even professional diplomats couldn’t remember the existence of this country. However, other specialists looked up the information and answered: “A small country in the Pacific with a population of less than 2030 is expected to sink by .”

Hearing this reply, the commissioner in charge of handling the diplomatic letter rolled his eyes and said: "Give it to the Ministry of Diplomatic Communications and congratulate them on their election of an excellent president in accordance with official rhetoric. Our country sincerely believes that under the leadership of the new president, Tuvalu will usher in a brilliant future."

Well, the commissioner didn't even look at the president's name and handed it directly to the Ministry of External Affairs, which is responsible for such matters. He only needs to file the matter and then give it to the Foreign Secretary for review.

Such a trivial matter has to be sent to Downing Street? Is he waiting for the Prime Minister to teach him a lesson?

……

One of the new assistants to the Deputy Secretary of State is a recent Yale graduate who was fortunate enough to start his first job in the White House.

This is an enviable job for other students. So this young man named Bob worked very hard. At this moment, he was holding the credentials submitted by Tuvalu and knocked on the door of the Deputy Secretary of State's office very solemnly.

"Come in." The Deputy Secretary of State is always very polite, whether to subordinates or superiors, this is his personal cultivation. The Deputy Secretary of State is nearly sixty years old, and this may be the highest position he can climb in his life. He has been contented, people should not be too greedy...

Now he no longer cares too much about the gains and losses of power, but starts to think about cultivating the next generation of the family. For example, the young man in front of him, Bob, is his distant nephew. At a family gathering, he discovered this young man, who was young but an outstanding student at Yale University.

The Deputy Secretary of State wanted to promote him, and the old man also dreamed of turning his family into a political family. When he met young people with potential, he was never stingy in cultivating them. As a result, Bob was able to become one of the assistants to the Deputy Secretary of State right after graduating from college.

It was a rare opportunity for him to learn politics from other assistants and secretaries.

"Mr. Secretary of State, here is a diplomatic document, a diplomatic note regarding regime change in Tuvalu." When the Secretary of State was not present, Bob never addressed the Deputy Secretary of State by his title, always carefully omitting the word "Deputy".

The Secretary of State took the document from Bob and frowned, as if wondering what Tuvalu was. Then he remembered that the former president of this country had insulted the US representative at the United Nations General Assembly and was asked to leave the meeting.

Looking at the documents on the table, the Secretary of State had no interest in reading them. He smiled and said to Bob, "Do you know how big Tuvalu is?"

"Twenty-six square kilometers, sir." It seemed that Bob had done his homework beforehand.

"What about the population?"

"Over eleven thousand, sir."

Listening to Bob's fluent answers, the Secretary of State felt a little helpless. This young junior was smart, but sometimes he was not flexible enough. This was also an area where he needed to be taught.

"A small country with a population of only 11,000 and a land area of less than 26 square kilometers, do you think it is worth it for the Secretary of State or even the President of the United States to spend more than ten minutes or even half an hour to read their diplomatic documents and then respond personally?"

Bob seemed a little hesitant: "But sir, this is a sovereign country."

The Secretary of State shook his head. "It doesn't matter, Bob, unless it's Monaco or the Vatican. Otherwise, such a small country is not worth mentioning. Remember, Bob, the assistant's job is to reduce the burden of the boss's work, not to increase it."

Bob immediately remembered this sentence. The Secretary of State's words and deeds are more important than the knowledge in college textbooks.

"So, this matter does not need to be notified to the president and others?" Bob asked.

The Deputy Secretary of State shook his head and said, "No, you should reply with a standard diplomatic message, such as congratulating them on their successful transition of power and expecting the new leader to lead Tuvalu to glory."

Why is this diplomatic rhetoric so similar to that of the United Kingdom? The Deputy Secretary of State stood up and straightened his clothes: "Bob, you still have a lot to learn. Please help me arrange the car for this afternoon. The President and I will go to a Boy Scout cookie sale organized by a dozen elementary schools in Washington this afternoon. After this is done, you can deal with Tuvalu's affairs."

From beginning to end, the deputy secretary of state did not even look at Tuvalu's diplomatic documents. The diplomatic documents of these small countries are all the same and worthless. At most, they complain in various ways and ask for foreign exchange assistance from big countries. He has seen this kind of thing many times, and now he has no interest in even looking at it.

But for Katie and others, this was the best outcome! Because at this moment, the countries that were notified recognized the legitimacy of the new Tuvaluan regime. Perhaps they didn't even notice that the new president of Tuvalu was a 17-year-old girl named Katie.

Remy, who was watching all this silently, laughed in his heart, but he didn't make any sound. He looked at Charles and Magneto, with an indescribable expression on his face. He thought to himself: "Charles, you and Magneto always have high aspirations and always want to change the whole world in one go. You always think too much and have too many concerns. You are always worried about the consequences of your actions and are always afraid that you will hurt innocent people. But have you ever thought about what the world will become if you don't take action?"

Remy shook his head slightly and sighed in his heart. He knew that Charles and Magneto were both excellent mutants with powerful abilities and firm beliefs. However, their ideas were sometimes too idealistic and naive. They thought that they could change the world and let everyone live a happy life with their own strength. However, the reality was much more complicated than they imagined.

Remi couldn't help but think of the things he had experienced. He knew that the world was full of various dangers and challenges, and it was not easy to change it. Sometimes, even if you make great efforts, you may not get the desired results. However, he also understood that if you don't try, you will never have a chance. Only by bravely facing difficulties and constantly exploring and trying can you find a real solution.

Thinking of this, Remi's eyes became more determined. He decided that no matter how many difficulties and obstacles there were ahead, he would persist and fight to realize his ideals. At the same time, he also hoped that Charles and Magneto could learn lessons from this failure and re-examine their goals and methods. Perhaps, only in this way can they truly change the world...

"Have you two never thought about learning from this little girl? Look at her, she starts from small things and does things in a down-to-earth manner. What about you? This time, it really opened my eyes! These young boys' whimsical ideas actually succeeded!" Poker King Remi shook his head helplessly and muttered to himself. His eyes showed both disappointment in the two people and admiration and respect for the girl.

He thought it was time to call Charles. The kids might be able to handle the early stages, but Remi knew that the real difficulties in building a country were still to come.

Without the support of smart, capable and charismatic people, a group of young people's enthusiasm alone is likely to result in failure.

……

New York, the city was hushed and quiet under the night. However, for Li Jie, this peaceful night was broken by a sudden phone notification. He picked up the phone in a daze, and the screen flashed with a message from Charles. He glanced at the time, and it was already three o'clock in the morning!

Li Jie shook his head helplessly, muttering, "Is the sleep quality of the elderly so poor? Why are you still not sleeping in the middle of the night? What kind of message is this?" He knew that Charles was always energetic, but he didn't expect him to send him a message at this time. Maybe there was something important, Li Jie thought to himself, and he forced himself to open the message.

Charles was in no mood to joke with Li Jie, and he said something short that directly woke Li Jie up: “My student Katie has established a legal sovereign state in the Pacific!”

Silence, absolute silence. Five Illuminati members sat around a round conference table, not saying a word...

Chapter 79 Taking a Stand

Captain Rogers was staring at his shield, as if he saw a stunning work of art in it, so focused that it seemed as if nothing in the world could distract him.

Li Jie sat on the chair, chewing on his index finger joint, as if he thought his finger was particularly delicious. Charles and Hank frowned and said nothing. This depressing atmosphere made Tony Stark lose his patience first.

He couldn't help but complain to Professor X and the Beast: "Please, can you two say something? Charles, you woke us up in the middle of the night. And then tell us that one of your students founded a country in the Pacific Ocean. What's the name?"

Li Jie took over the conversation: "Tuvalu."

"Yes, Tuvalu!" Tony nodded. "It's a sovereign country! And it has been recognized by the international community for some unknown reason. To be honest, this student of yours has brought us a big 'surprise'!"

Charles and Hank remained silent, and they didn't know how to respond. The closure of Xavier's School for Gifted People had caused such a major change.

Li Jie was listening to Tony's complaints and felt a headache. This world was beyond his imagination. A 17-year-old girl actually established a mutant country in the Pacific Ocean, and it was legal and internationally recognized. Although other countries might not know what kind of country they recognized.

"A mutant country, Charles! It's not your school, it's a country. Do you know what that means?" Tony said weakly, looking helpless.

It can be said that the members of the Illuminati gathered here because of this unexpected event. No one could have guessed that Katie would establish a country. It can be said that everyone's first reaction was to be shocked by the

girl's behavior.

Charles moved his lips and finally forced a smile: "You mean my fifty years of hard work are not as good as a seventeen-year-old girl?" He tried to change the subject and spoke evasively.

"Professor, we may not have time to joke around now." Li Jie took a deep breath and said seriously, "A real mutant country will become the target of public criticism."

Li Jie began to explain his point of view, and the others listened attentively, their expressions becoming more and more serious.

"From a certain perspective, a mutant country will give all mutants a sense of belonging and identity. This is different from your school, professor. Not all mutants will go to your school. But once Katie's country is made public, it will become a holy place in the hearts of mutants around the world!"

Li Jie rubbed his temples, feeling like his head was about to explode. "Then it will become a role model for all mutants. This is foreseeable. Regardless of whether mutants are willing to join or publicly support Tuvalu, deep down in their hearts, they will have a natural sense of belonging to this country."

"How many mutants are there in the world?" Li Jie looked at Charles.

Charles closed his eyes and thought for a moment: "According to the data I got from the brainwave enhancer, there are about 1.1 million."

"One million, one hundred thousand, this number is not small, even more than the total population of some small countries." Compared with the world's more than seven billion people, one million is not a lot. The proportion of mutants is less than one thousandth. But in terms of the total number, if the mutants scattered around the world unite, their strength is quite amazing, especially since most of them have extraordinary abilities.

"This country will have a natural appeal, just like when Israel was founded. Although not all Jews will become Israeli citizens, the scene of the global Jewish mobilization when Israel was founded is still vivid in people's minds. Countless materials and funds poured into this new country." What Li Jie said is exactly what everyone is worried about.

The Jewish establishment of Israel was not a peaceful one, and the Israeli-Palestinian conflict remains unresolved to this day, not to mention the four Middle East wars in the early days of the nation. The Arab world united and fought four brutal wars with Israel, which gave Israel its current territory and regional power status.

The newborn nation was supported by millions of Jews from around the world. They used all kinds of connections and abilities to come from all over the world. Countless mothers sent their children to the battlefield just to win the battle for nation-building. Hundreds of thousands of volunteers from all over the world flocked to Israel, even though they knew that the battlefield was a place of death, countless people did not look back.

There were also many Jews who spent all their money to support the establishment of their own country. Because they had experienced the tragic Holocaust and discrimination, when their own country emerged, their appeal and sense of belonging were unprecedented.

The situation of mutants is not much better than that of Jews. If Katie announced that Tuvalu is a mutant country today, then tomorrow Tuvalu may receive astronomical foreign aid and immigration applications...

Charles' eyes seemed a little tangled and worried. "Katie, she just wants to create a [home] for mutants. She doesn't have any desire for power or ambition. Tuvalu is not Iserlia."

Li Jie agreed with Charles's point of view. After all, he and Katie were also good friends. This girl was gentle and kind.

"That's right, professor. If your student hadn't remained rational and hadn't made this public, and if she hadn't had any big ambitions, we might not be sitting here in a meeting now, but might be preparing for war." Tony said implicitly.

Everyone fell silent, not knowing how to deal with this emerging mutant nation. At this time, Captain Rogers, who had been silent all along, suddenly spoke up: "Actually, to some extent, this may be a good thing."

Captain Rogers stared at the shield in his hand and said, "Maybe this is a good thing." From beginning to end, Captain Rogers never expressed his position on the establishment of a mutant nation.

As the only government insider in the Illuminati, everyone actually cares about Captain Rogers's opinion. If he thinks that the establishment of a mutant nation is a huge threat, with his influence, it may trigger a war.

Therefore, before Captain Rogers made his statement, Charles and Hank were both worried. It was not until this moment when Rogers said that this was a good thing that they were relieved.

Li Jie and Tony looked at Captain Rogers together: "Please tell me in detail."

Captain Rogers tapped his shield unconsciously. "Actually, I don't hate mutants. That's clear. There were mutants in my Howling Commandos, such as Wolverine."

The Wolverine that Captain Rogers mentioned is Logan.

"In fact, I have always believed that the mutant problem is not a big problem. In the 20s and 30s, the world did not experience major turmoil due to mutants. But that doesn't mean there were no mutants at that time."

Captain Rogers tapped his shield, producing a brisk rhythm.

Li Jie was a little confused: "Maybe there were fewer mutants at that time?"

Rogers nodded, "Yes, it's possible. But don't forget, the global population was also small back then. So, I believe the proportion of mutants back then was not much different from now."

The captain continued: "But in recent years, the years I was away, the conflict between mutants and ordinary people began to intensify."

"Exclusion, discrimination, even violence and terrorist incidents occur from time to time." What Captain Rogers said is exactly the biggest problem between mutant society and ordinary people's society today.

"What caused all this?" Captain Rogers raised his index finger. "First of all, I think the most important point is that some politicians saw power in mutants, power beyond that of ordinary people. Just like the Super Soldier Program, training a group of controlled super soldiers is the wish of many politicians and generals."

"Just like you told me, Wolverine was later forcibly transformed. It was precisely because of this behavior that he only cared about the immediate interests that the greatest confrontation was triggered! It was because of these things that Magneto left S.H.I.E.L.D., embarked on the path of opposing the government, established the Brotherhood of Mutants, and embarked on the road of resistance!"

Captain Rogers' words were recognized by everyone. In politics, Captain Rogers does have keen insight and thinking.

"The second point is that mutants' abilities are uncontrollable. This is the most difficult point for civilians to accept. There have been more than one incident of casualties caused by mutants' uncontrolled abilities. This is the main reason for the current bad public opinion. Although the guidance of politicians is also related, the key lies in the problems of the mutants themselves." Captain Rogers held up his second finger.

"The third point stems from the complexity of human nature. Just like politicians want to have a super army that obeys their orders, but are afraid that the army will rebel, so they put all kinds of shackles on them. Ordinary people are both afraid and envious of the abilities of mutants." Captain Rogers held up his third finger.

"They don't understand the abilities of mutants. In most descriptions of mutants, their abilities are powerful and innate. This seems to have nothing to do with acquired efforts. But we all know that this is impossible. From the growth of students at Xavier's School for Gifted People, we can see that all powerful mutants need long-term training."

“There are geniuses in the world, but what God gives them is just a ladder to climb, not a place to stand directly on the top of the mountain. People can see the footprints of geniuses climbing step by step, and their awe of climbing to the top makes them have no right to envy geniuses. Because they know that even if they are given the same talent, they can't do the same thing.”

Captain Rogers' three points objectively outlined the situation of the opposition between mutants and ordinary people in the current society. Li Jie nodded: "Captain, then what do you think is a good thing for Katie to establish a mutant country?"

Rogers stood up, walked behind Charles, gently pressed his shoulders, and said,

"Because from now on, the issue of mutants is no longer just a simple ethnic dispute or personal grudge. Mutants are part of this country, and discrimination and insults against them will evolve into major political events."

"Of course, this is not something that can be changed overnight. It's a long process. But Katie plays an important role in this process, especially in maintaining stability between mutants and ordinary people." Captain Rogers glanced at everyone present.

"She established a mutant nation, which will likely completely disintegrate the Brotherhood of Mutants. The Brotherhood's actions in recent years are the main reason why ordinary people are increasingly disgusted with mutants."

"Politicians, especially those of today, often don't have a long-term vision. Many of them only care about their own position. For them, profit is the key. It makes no sense to touch a new mutant country that has no profit, even in the United States."

"Unless the president is willing to use a nuclear bomb to wipe out Tuvalu directly, any attack on Tuvalu is likely to trigger a situation similar to the Israeli-Palestinian conflict. And everyone knows the outcome of the Israeli-Palestinian conflict." Captain Rogers said as he paced in the conference room.

"Katie's new country is beneficial to us to some extent. Because of Night Walker's plan, governments around the world will soon realize that Earth civilization is not alone, and there are many dangerous civilizations in outer space watching us. Uniting all forces that can be united is what all countries on Earth should do." Captain Rogers clapped his hands.

"The most important thing for Katie's new country right now is to keep a low profile, especially to prevent infiltration by the Brotherhood of Mutants. Otherwise, it may cause a series of terrible consequences," Captain Rogers concluded.

"The most difficult problem now is the out-of-control abilities of mutants. I have to rely on you in this regard, Dr. Hank."

Hank pushed up his black-framed glasses. "In fact, research on this type of drug has been ongoing. Especially with Tony's financial support, the progress has been accelerated a lot."

"Also, I want to correct what the captain just said. Not all mutants' abilities are very practical or powerful. In fact, among the mutants in the world, nearly half have abilities so weak that they can be almost ignored."

"And among the remaining half, most people's abilities are not strong enough, or their sudden mutant abilities are almost useless." Hank pushed up his glasses again as he spoke.

Li Jie suddenly became very interested: "What exactly are the useless mutant abilities you mentioned?" He had never seen truly useless mutant abilities.

"Well, for example, there's a student who has the ability to make a huge noise when he farts, making the farts particularly loud. We have been teaching him how to control the volume of his farts." When this was mentioned, Charles' face changed visibly, but he quickly returned to normal.

This reminded Li Jie of the face-changing performance in Sichuan opera. Hank continued, "There is another student who emits foul-smelling gas when he burps. You can imagine the smell of the large intestine. In fact, most mutants have this ability."

Hank finished speaking and adjusted his glasses again. Li Jie looked at Hank and Charles and thought to himself: Mutants are such a wonderful race...

Chapter 80 Ender's Game

Charles did have some selfish motives. Deep down, he still hoped that Katie's dream of establishing a mutant nation would come true. Because in a way, Katie was fulfilling his long-cherished wish. So in that meeting, Charles was strangely silent, because he was afraid that once he spoke, his opinion would be biased.

Fortunately, the other members of the Illuminati, including Captain Rogers and Li Jie, generally had a positive attitude towards Katie's approach. Li Jie and Katie had a good personal relationship, and he admired this girl who always had a smile on her face. From a personal perspective, Li Jie could not find any reason to embarrass Katie.

Moreover, the problem of mutants needs to be solved eventually. Magneto's radical revolution is too radical, and Charles' peaceful evolution will take too long. Without a hundred years, Charles' goal may be difficult to achieve. Moreover, the longer things are delayed, the greater the variables.

The mutant country proposed by Katie is between the radical faction of Magneto and the moderate faction of Charles. It is neither aggressive nor passive, but rather proactive. If it is operated properly, the whole situation may develop in a more positive direction.

Captain Rogers has a similar view on this, and he has a deeper understanding of politics. In the six months since he woke up, he has seen the faces of modern politicians. They are completely different from the leaders in the war years. The leaders at that time were charismatic and courageous, while these politicians now only care about power struggles and maximizing personal interests. The difference between the two is obvious.

In Rogers' view, no country would be stupid enough to start a war to create a new mutant country. Who would do something that has no benefits? How much money and lives would be lost in a war? Attacking a country like Tuvalu is obviously not worth the cost. There is no benefit if you win, and you have to

bear the consequences if you lose. Who would be stupid enough to do this? Attacking a poor mutant country, and then being labeled as warmongering by political opponents, and finally being driven out of the political stage!

Everyone has their own account in their mind. Now is not a war era, no country can gather the national strength like in World War II. The president's power expands during wartime, but in peacetime, try it. Whether it is Congress, state legislatures, or governors and mayors, do you want to touch their power? As long as someone has this idea, they will be suppressed by vested interests the next day.

For Congress, the worst situation is that the country is in a full-scale war, which means that the power of Congress is limited and a new round of power reshuffle is about to take place. This is the reality. When faced with selfish desires, many people will put public power under selfish desires. Therefore, Rogers is not worried about the outbreak of war between countries.

What is really worrying is the terrorists among mutants, that is, the Brotherhood of Mutants. If they start a war, it will be difficult to extinguish the flames of war. In addition, there is Rogers' old friend, the Hydra organization among humans. The Red Skull is an out-and-out extremist who hates mutants. Hydra is also implementing this policy. If Hydra also interferes, the subsequent chain reaction will be terrible.

Therefore, Rogers felt it necessary to issue a warning: "The establishment of the New Mutant Nation actually provides us with an opportunity to resolve the conflict between mutants and ordinary people."

"This is both a crisis and an opportunity." Captain Rogers held Professor Charles' shoulders and said seriously.

However, in my opinion, it is not appropriate to rely solely on a group of high school students. After all, they are still young, lack experience and resources, and find it difficult to cope with the complex political and social environment. So, professor, I think you should give them strong support behind the scenes. At the very least, we must ensure that this emerging country will not be eroded by unnecessary enemies, such as the Brotherhood of Mutants or Hydra. These organizations have strong strength and ulterior motives. If they are allowed to infiltrate this new country, the consequences will be disastrous. Therefore, we

must remain highly vigilant and take all necessary measures to protect the security and stability of this country. Only in this way can this country thrive and become a truly free, equal and harmonious society.

Charles patted Rogers' hand and said, "Don't worry, I will keep a close eye on these children."

After the conversation, Li Jie looked at Tony with a gloomy face, and then said in an unquestionable tone: "At the same time, I think we are in urgent need of a decisive and powerful force to support us. If the situation continues to deteriorate in the future and eventually turns into a full-scale war, then we must have enough strength to intervene in this war!"

Li Jie threw the question to Tony, who curled his lips and said, "You can rest assured about this. I have recently found a lot of clues from my father's materials, including some information left by the Holy Shield Brotherhood. A long time ago, Newton, my father and other scientists have considered the issue of the Earth being invaded."

"They drew up the design drawings for the first batch of interstellar fleets. They are very powerful blueprints!" Tony said, staring at Li Jie closely. "I found them recently and made some improvements. I think we should speed up the production of these warships at the Venus base. Only in this way can we ensure that at the critical moment, we have the strong power to intervene in a full-scale war."

Tony's tone was full of determination, as if he had seen the future battle scenes. He knew the importance of these warships, and he also knew that only through continuous efforts and improvements could people

"Very good, Tony." Captain Rogers nodded to Tony in agreement. Charles and Hank did not notice anything unusual in Tony's words.

Of course, there won't be any flaws, because Tony and Li Jie have rehearsed this over and over again. This is the perfect time to bring up this matter by taking advantage of Katie Jianguo's incident.

"Well, everyone, we have to do our respective duties. I'll be responsible for building the ship." Tony said while clapping his hands.

"I will go to the political circles to obtain first-hand intelligence and be ready to appease politicians and stabilize the situation at any time." This is the duty of Captain Rogers.

"Hank and I are going to talk to the kids about the new country. Now that they've come this far, we can't let them mess around." Charles and Hank exchanged glances.

Well, it seems that other members of the Illuminati have important tasks, but when it comes to Li Jie, everyone seems to think that there is nothing for him to do.

Feeling that everyone's eyes were focused on him, Li Jie quickly waved his hands: "Please, don't look at me like I'm here to eat for free."

"I also have important things to do." Li Jie explained quickly.

Hank pushed up his black-framed glasses and stared at Li Jie through the lenses with sharp eyes: "What's the matter?"

Li Jie pointed at Tony and said, "Mr. Iron Man has arranged a video game for me. If I don't perform well in the game, he won't let me off easily." Tony nodded, indicating that what Li Jie said was true.

But then again, how can you still think about playing games at such a tense moment? Nightcrawler and Iron Man, are you really okay? Everyone is busy with work! Captain Rogers asked in confusion, "What game?"

Seeing the confused expressions of the other three, Li Jie knew what they were thinking. He had originally planned to give everyone a surprise (or shock) after he and Tony were done, but now he had no choice but to say, "Ender's Game!"

Chapter 81 Computational Unit

"Ender's Game?" Captain Rogers was still confused. Charles and Hank were also confused and didn't understand what Li Jie was talking about. Li Jie looked at Tony and found that there was indeed a generation gap between the two of them and this group of elders (including Captain Rogers).

"Ender's Game is a famous science fiction novel that won the Hugo Award and was made into a movie a few years ago. Don't you know about it?" Li Jie originally thought that as soon as he mentioned the title of the book, they would understand what he and Tony were planning.

"Well, to put it simply, it's a game simulating a war. You know, if we form a starfleet, someone has to control it." Tony had to come forward to explain.

"I don't think such a powerful military force is suitable to be handed over to others. So we need to use special methods to control this interstellar fleet." Li Jie nodded in agreement.

“Yes, we found inspiration in the classic science fiction novel Ender’s Game. By combining augmented reality (AR) and virtual reality (VR) technology, we can command fleet operations in a way similar to real-time strategy games.”

"That is to say, the future interstellar fleet is likely to be an unmanned fleet, relying on super-powerful AI computing power to build a super-powerful cloud computing network, and each warship is an independent computing unit. The more these units there are, the stronger the computing power. Moreover, this system will be separate from Tony's Jarvis system."

Tony nodded in confirmation: "The new AI system of the Venus base will be completely disconnected from Jarvis on Earth. The future data system will be divided into two parts: Earth and Venus. As for the new AI, I have made a lot of improvements using Jarvis' code. Although it is still in the testing stage, the results are promising."

Obviously, Tony separated the two different AIs for safety reasons, and everyone could understand his intentions.

“So, your new AI will become the fleet’s intelligent assistance system? What’s the name of the new AI?” Professor Charles asked curiously.

"Yes, Professor, you are right. She will indeed be our primary auxiliary AI, and her name is Friday." Tony spread his hands.

Li Jie always felt that this was not a good name. Although he knew that the name came from the character in "Robinson Crusoe", he always felt it was not a good name to give a female AI this name.

The new AI has a female personality, which is different from Jarvis's gentle male personality. The female personality designed by Tony seems cold and inexplicably reminiscent of Pepper Potts.

Li Jie was too lazy to guess Tony's personal tastes, as long as Mr. Iron Man was happy, that was all that mattered.

"The current control system is still in the experimental stage and requires a lot of experimental testing. Let Night Walker do it. He said he is good at playing strategy games and it's a good opportunity for an experiment." Mr. Iron Man said indifferently. It seemed that he had already treated Li Jie as a guinea pig for the experiment.

"So, I still have a lot of work to do, friends, like helping Tony troubleshoot his new game." Li Jie pointed at Professor Charles.

"Professor, I heard that you also play World of Warcraft?" Charles glanced at Hank. He didn't know who leaked the fact that he played World of Warcraft. It was really a difficult question to guess.

Facing Charles' gaze, Dr. Hank turned his head and unconsciously pushed up his black-framed glasses.

Li Jie watched the silent communication between Charles and Hank and smiled: "Professor, according to the original plan, it would be ideal for your super brain to control everything."

"But now the situation has changed. Katie's new country still needs your special care. I'm afraid you can't spare enough time for this kind of cooperation and training." Charles breathed a sigh of relief: "It's better not to let me do this. I'm not good at real-time strategy games. Let you young people with a hand speed of 1000 APM play it."

Li Jie shrugged, glanced at Tony, then turned to Charles and continued, "However, Professor, you'd better find some free time to practice first-person shooter games. Because at certain moments, we need precise shooting, and we need a weapons officer with super mental concentration and keen observation. So, if possible, can you take the time to play this kind of game?"

Charles frowned. “I don’t play this kind of game often.”

"You can take some time to play these games while helping Katie manage the new country. I heard that Cyclops is good at first-person shooter games, why not let him give you some guidance?"

What Li Jie mentioned gave Professor Charles a headache. He played World of Warcraft in his private office and never entered the Xavier School for Gifted Students' dedicated advanced network classroom to play with students.

Because as the headmaster, Charles needs to establish authority. Although he usually behaves in a friendly manner, a moderate degree of majesty is still necessary.

Li Jie asked him to go to Scott to learn how to play first-person shooter games. How could the teacher maintain his dignity?

Charles could only cough twice: "I think I can practice it myself, maybe I don't need to ask Scott for help."

After saying that, Charles glanced at Hank again. Who leaked the fact that he played World of Warcraft? How strange!

Li Jie shrugged and said, "Okay, since you insist, I'll send the game to you in a while."

This Illuminati meeting started in a serious atmosphere but ended in a weird atmosphere.

Everyone has his own tasks and things to do.

In addition to Illuminati affairs, everyone has other responsibilities. For example, Captain Rogers is nearing the end of his negotiations with SHIELD and the military.

For example, Tony is busy preparing for a new round of Stark Industries Expo.

In addition to teaching Thor and being ready to teach Logan at any time, as well as playing strategy games, Li Jie has another important thing to do.

This is a very important event for all high school students - senior prom is about to begin!

Prom is a big event for many American high school students.

Because graduating from high school often means that your child has reached adulthood, whether you are going to college or preparing for work.

For most Americans, high school means leaving home and living independently.

It goes without saying that many young people will choose to rent a house outside and try to break away from their families and get rid of their parents' all-round care after going out to work independently and having independent financial income.

If you choose to go to college, you will probably have to live farther away. And in the United States, the tuition fees of prestigious universities are never cheap.

Take Peter Parker for example. His uncle and aunt earn about $80,000 a year, which is considered middle-class income in the United States.

But apart from the expenses, in order for Peter to attend a prestigious school like New York University or MIT, he would have to get a full scholarship.

If the school can only offer a half scholarship, Peter will have to resort to high student loans, which could leave him with tens of thousands of dollars in debt before he finds a job.

However, for Peter Parker now, four years of college tuition of more than

100,000 US dollars is a small amount. As the copyright of Spider-Man, he has earned nearly one million US dollars (equivalent to Hawkeye's income in ten years).

And this is the actual income after deducting taxes. Although part of it is used to maintain the expenses of the Guardian Base and charity projects, the remaining money is enough for Peter to have no worries about food and clothing during his four years in college.

Therefore, he rejected the more than $20,000 college fund that his uncle Ben had prepared for him.

"I got a full scholarship to New York University and found a suitable part-time job. I can support myself and get through four years of college. So uncle, this money can be used for you and Aunt May to travel. For example, go to Europe or Los Angeles." Peter refused the cash check handed to him by Uncle Ben.

Uncle Ben and Aunt May are very happy that Peter is becoming more independent and mature. The young bird will leave the nest one day, and the young bird will eventually spread its wings and fly high.

"Peter! Get in the car!" It was Li Jie who came to pick up Peter for his high school prom. He was always low-key and always drove his second-hand Ford.

Even after he founded Marvel Comics, he didn't buy a new car because he was used to the old one and didn't think it was necessary to change.

But today, as the last graduation dance of high school, Li Jie was high-profile for the first time. He drove the hover car produced by Stark Industries Group given by Pepper.

The metallic red mirror paint and the cool appearance like a supercar will definitely attract attention when driving on the road.

This hover car can reach a maximum speed of 600 kilometers per hour. If the safety height limit device is removed, it can float at a height of up to 15 meters. Of course, doing so is illegal.

It can be said that this car truly interprets the saying: It’s not that you run too fast, but that you don’t fly high enough.

This car is the world's top suspended car model launched by Stark Group. It is limited to 500 units worldwide. The model is Sleipnir, which is named after the eight-legged divine horse in mythology.

Currently, this car is only owned by a few wealthy people in the world. If Li Jie had not acted as a matchmaker between Stark Group and Osborne Group, he might not be able to afford this top-level supercar with his current income.

Except for the one time when Loki drove the car and made Thor carsick, Li Jie himself had never driven the car.

Now, it’s our last high school reunion. It doesn’t matter whether we are high-profile or low-profile, just have fun the way you want.

Chapter 82 Excited

It's so cool, you should have driven this luxury car earlier instead of that shabby Ford. Peter exclaimed as he sat in the luxurious and technologically advanced Les Buniers.

Since you like it, I'll let you drive today. I remember you got your driver's license. Li Jie said, and stood up to give his seat to Peter.

Peter patted Li Jie on the shoulder and said gratefully: "Thanks, brother! I have always wanted to experience the feeling of supercars!"

Peter couldn't wait to switch positions with Li Jie, gripping the steering wheel tightly, extremely excited.

Li Jie looked at Peter who was still not moving and urged him, "Okay, my superhero, can you drive now? Let's take our time to appreciate the interior of this car next time."

Oh, okay. Actually, it's like this... Peter is a little embarrassed: I can't find the start button and clutch of this car.

Li Jie patted his head helplessly, hoping that there would be no car accident.

When Peter safely drove the hover car to the graduation dance in the school auditorium, the super cool sports car became the focus of the whole audience. About two hundred senior high school students attended the dance.

Almost everyone who passes by this car wants to take a photo and post it on social media. Young people, both boys and girls, are passionate about supercars. This thing is attractive.

At the same time, Harry was driven to school by a Bentley. He saw Li Jie's floating supercar and whistled: How is it? Have you figured it out? Don't let

good cars sit idle and gather dust?

Li Jie raised his lips slightly, revealing a helpless smile, then shrugged his shoulders and said indifferently: "Forget it, we are about to graduate anyway, so let it go. Perhaps, this is also the last willful revelry in our youth, right?" After that, he cast his eyes on Peter and Harry beside him, and the two of them understood and smiled at each other. The smile contained both expectations and longings for the future, and a hint of reluctance and nostalgia. It seemed that they had foreseen what kind of life challenges and choices they would face when they were about to step out of the campus gate. However, at this moment, they just wanted to enjoy this rare relaxing time to the fullest, and let the passion of youth burn more brilliantly at this moment.

To the other students, these three formed a small circle that no one could easily fit in. Although Li Jie, Harry, and Peter were all friendly, the three of them only considered each other as friends, not as true circle-mates.

This inner circle seems to be surrounded by an invisible barrier, like an impenetrable fortress, isolating the outside world and forming an insurmountable gap. For those who try to break into it, it is like a mysterious and dangerous area, full of unknowns and challenges. Especially when these people have already shown extraordinary talents and outstanding achievements in high school, countless people regret why they did not establish close ties with them earlier.

Perhaps it was because of their immaturity and ignorance when they were young that most people missed the opportunity to make friends with this group of future stars; or perhaps it was because of their own timidity and hesitation that they missed the best time to integrate into this circle. However, time cannot be reversed, and the regrets of the past cannot be made up. We can only sigh silently in our hearts and lament the impermanence of fate. Now, looking at the members of this core circle who are full of vigor and brilliance, those who once missed out, in addition to envy, feel more regret and self-blame for their original choice.

Needless to say, Harry, as the only heir to a global group, has always been a born lucky man. No matter how hard others try, they probably can't reach his status.

Peter Parker was originally just a nerdy kid who was too smart and only knew how to study hard. People like him were often bullied by the football, baseball,

basketball teams, film clubs and rock bands at school (well, that's how Hollywood movies are usually set up).

But now, this seemingly clever guy has been admitted to New York University in advance, and several of his biological research papers have been published in professional journals, although in poorer pages.

But being published in a professional journal is an honor in itself. These journals are where scientists build their reputations, and many people's master's and doctoral dissertations or even professorial articles may not be selected. But Peter Parker, a high school student, had his article selected. Does this indicate the rise of a new scientist? For the school, this is worth celebrating, and the school leaders have already started planning for this.

If Peter could publish the same quality articles during his college years, the school might award him the title of honorary alumnus. Those who once looked down on nerds began to regret why they didn't get in touch with such people.

As for Li Jie, more people have deep resentment towards him. Harry has an extraordinary background, Peter has a genius mind, but what about Li Jie?

He is handsome, but not handsome enough to attract women to marry him; he is strong, but not as abnormal as a football player; his grades are between B+ and A, which is above average; he is smarter than the average person, but not to the point of being extraordinary.

However, his achievements made his classmates envious. He became a food legend in New York by driving a food truck, and gourmets were willing to line up to taste his dishes. He opened a comic book company and acquired a number of superhero copyrights in just over half a year. Now he also holds the most valuable copyright of Captain Rogers. Entertainment companies such as Sony, Disney, and Paramount have contacted this start-up comic book company to discuss the purchase of copyrights, film adaptation, animation and peripheral products.

It is said that this guy is also related to Tony Stark. For example, this global limited edition supercar was donated by the Stark Group.

This drove Li Jie's classmates crazy. How did an ordinary person who seemed excellent but not particularly talented get to where he is today?

Li Jie has just graduated from high school, but he has already reached heights that many people cannot reach in their lifetime.

Of course, these students did not know the other side of Li Jie, nor did they know about his plans with the Illuminati. If they knew, many of them would probably exclaim, "What's the point of living!" and choose to end their lives.

Life is an endless journey of struggle. If you don't go crazy in this complicated world, how can you live happily? The dull and uneventful days always make people feel that something is missing, as if the color of life has become dull. When a person has some special abilities, this desire for struggle becomes stronger.

Li Jie deeply understands this truth and regards it as his life creed. Therefore, his life is destined to be extraordinary, but full of unexpected challenges and adventures. Whether facing difficulties or calm, he always maintains his passion and courage, moving forward bravely and never retreating. Because only in this way can he truly feel the meaning of life and make his life more fulfilling and wonderful.

The system only gave him a starting point, but it was he himself who really made it to where he is today.

On the sofa in the auditorium, Li Jie and his two good friends drank carbonated drinks (because they were not yet of legal drinking age, alcohol was not served at the school dance) and discussed something.

After rejecting the fourth wave of girls' invitations to dance, all the girls at the scene thought that these three guys must be gay! Otherwise, why would they not want to dance with such beautiful girls, and even didn't want anything to happen after the dance?

Every beautiful girl is confident in her charm and cannot accept the damage to her self-esteem caused by being rejected by the opposite sex. Therefore, they can only attribute everything to being homosexual.

One of the reasons why Harry and Peter didn't get too involved with other girls was that they both had girlfriends. Harry knew exactly what fantasies those girls who threw themselves at him had, and he wasn't the suave Tony Stark of his youth.

Although he is as young, rich, handsome and dashing as Tony was when he was young, Harry is more stable than Tony was back then. He has little interest in the world of pleasure, especially after having Mary Jane.

Peter was worried that Gwen would suddenly bring up the prom one day and he wouldn't be able to come up with a good excuse. After all, Gwen was smart and hard to fool.

As for Li Jie, he didn't even look at the other girls. Apart from chatting with his friends, he was always paying attention to another girl at nine o'clock. Her name was Roland, and she was a classmate of the same grade but different class.

Coincidentally, this girl was the one that Captain Rogers had asked him to secretly protect. Once there was a problem with the captain's manpower allocation, the Night Watch would send someone to protect her.

"Hey, hey, hey! I know you're on a mission, but this is a prom, buddy. Can you stop staring at that girl? There are three of us here, don't take it so seriously." Peter waved in front of Li Jie.

"Don't forget, there is a beautiful wizard living in your house! This has made me afraid to go to your house to play games for a while." Peter complained.

Harry raised the corners of his mouth slightly, revealing a relaxed smile: "Relax, man, this is a graduation party. Although we won't be dancing, don't you want to invite a beautiful girl to dance with you? Maybe something wonderful will happen next. Look at those enthusiastic girls over there, they look at you with eyes full of expectations. Especially Tiffany from the cheerleading team, she has been waiting for you to invite her. So, be courageous and take the initiative, there may be unexpected developments."

Harry encouraged Li Jie with a smirk. Li Jie took a sip of the Coke in his cup and replied, "Ha, didn't you hear what Peter just said? There's a beautiful wizard living in my house!"

Li Jie finished speaking, shook his head and smiled: "I just feel that Roland gave me a special feeling, I can't tell why. I always feel that Roland, who was drinking water quietly, is a little weird. Every time I see her eyes, I feel like she seems to be able to see through something. I also had a similar feeling when I secretly protected her several times."

"You're overthinking it, buddy. My spider sense has never worked on her. You just simply think the other girl is pretty, and you're hesitating between choosing a female wizard or a female classmate!" Peter said, gently nudging Li Jie's chest with his elbow.

"Don't describe me as a playboy who flirts with women and plays with their emotions, okay? I don't want to be seen as Tony Stark!" Li Jie waved his hands helplessly, muttering to himself. He stared ahead, his eyes revealing a hint of determination and confidence. After all, if the spider sense didn't give any response, it was very likely that

"Oh, right." Peter seemed to remember something and took out a few tickets from his pocket. "These are what Eugene Thompson gave me when I met him before. Our school's basketball team has entered the quarterfinals of the summer league. The game is held in New York. Our school's quarterfinals will be held at the Knicks Garden. Thompson gave me the tickets. Do you want to go and watch it?"

Li Jie took the ticket from Peter and handed one to Harry as well. "Why not go? The NBA season is just over. Watching the preseason games and NBA Development League games is not as good as watching the high school summer league finals."

Harry looked at the ticket and said, "It seems that Thompson's apology is sincere. This is the best seat in the first five rows."

Peter, Li Jie and Harry looked at each other, and Li Jie said with emotion: "Well, anyway, no one will die from watching a game. The world has not yet ended, and we must go on with our lives as usual!"

Madison Square Garden in New York is the home of the NBA's New York Knicks.

Backed by the megacity of New York with a population of more than 20 million, the Knicks have a huge market.

New York fans have the highest spending power in the league, which makes the Knicks the richest team in the league.

Players' salaries often exceed 100 million yuan, exceeding the salary cap every

year, and paying a sky-high luxury tax every year. But the boss doesn't care. Anyway, relying on the big market in New York, the Knicks have plenty of money. As a result, Madison Square Garden has become one of the best-built stadiums in the entire league.

Chapter 83 Winning the Championship

The only thing that New Yorkers are unhappy about is that the Knicks haven't won a championship for a long time. So long that most New Yorkers can't remember when the last NBA championship parade was.

This has led to a phenomenon that New York fans are the most loyal and at the same time the most unreliable in the entire NBA.

They are loyal because the Knicks' market is the most profitable among all NBA teams. No matter how bad the team performs, there are always people willing to spend money to watch the Knicks games and buy the jerseys of Knicks stars.

However, they are said to be disloyal because as long as the visiting team plays well, New York fans will give warm applause, and even when the Knicks are in poor form, the audience will collectively boo their own players.

This kind of thing has happened before, so New York fans can be said to be one of the most peculiar fan groups.

Even though the team is not playing well, they are still willing to spend money to watch the game. You know, NBA tickets are not cheap, especially the playoff tickets are even more expensive.

New York fans know that it will be uncomfortable to watch the Knicks play, but they are still willing to go to the scene and make themselves unhappy.

Maybe this is a habit? After being abused by the Knicks, you get used to it. In this respect, Knicks fans are similar to fans of the Chinese national football team.

Of course, Madison Square Garden will not be idle during the NBA suspension.

The NBA Development League and preseason games will still go on, but the level of these games is too low and almost no fans are interested.

People who come to watch the game are either extremely passionate about basketball or think that the tickets for the official game are too expensive, so they come specifically to experience the on-site atmosphere of the low-priced tickets.

However, compared to those mediocre development league games, the National High School Summer League every summer is quite eye-catching.

In the United States, where basketball culture is well developed, the competitive level and intensity of the high school league are comparable to many international competitions.

Especially the games after entering the quarterfinals are more enjoyable to watch, because becoming the top high school basketball star in the United States is very tempting for most young people, and everyone will go all out in this game to win the championship.

This fighting spirit is unmatched by the Development League and preseason.

In this year's summer league, New York's local Metropolitan High School made it into the top eight and has a strong chance of winning the championship.

Their power forward Thompson is an all-around player who has already attracted the attention of NBA scouts.

As long as he stays in college for one year, he will be eligible for the NBA draft.

Many scouts believe that Thompson's development model is LeBron James. His breakthrough, passing, mid-range shooting and offensive organization are all excellent and highly evaluated. Thompson's future is limitless, far surpassing his stepfather who only won the best sixth man award.

There are already basketball shoe manufacturers who plan to sign an endorsement contract with Thompson after he wins the championship and gets the MVP. Even if it means waiting a year to enter the NBA, the manufacturer is willing to pay a year's endorsement fee. Signing Thompson now is definitely more cost-effective than signing him after his fame grows, even if it wastes a

year's worth of contract value.

Since the local high school made it to the quarterfinals and had a chance to win the championship, many New York fans came to support Metropolitan High School. After all, a Summer League champion is still a champion! It's much better than the Knicks being eliminated early in the playoffs in recent years, or even failing to make the playoffs!

Therefore, the Madison Square Garden, which can accommodate more than 18,000 people, had a very high attendance today. Although it was only the quarterfinals of the high school league, it was at least 80% full, with nearly 15,000 spectators filling the entire stadium.

This once again proves the spending power of New York fans, who are willing to pay to watch even high school sports leagues. Of course, part of the reason is that there are no other major sports events in New York City this weekend. There are no baseball games or football games scheduled.

As a result, many fans and sports enthusiasts choose to spend their weekends watching high school games.

Li Jie was sitting on the sidelines. He looked at Peter and Harry next to him, pointed to the front and said, "Look, the man in the first two rows seems to be an assistant coach of the Knicks. I've seen him on TV, and he also came to watch Thompson's game."

"I heard that the Knicks have already talked to Thompson. They hope that Thompson will go to New York University for a year, and then the Knicks will select him in next year's draft. The Knicks have the third pick in the first round. If Thompson follows the Knicks' advice, he can become the third pick in the NBA next year." Peter looked at the Knicks assistant coach in front of him and said to the two.

It seems that since reconciling with Thompson, Peter's relationship with him has become more harmonious, and Thompson will even tell him things like this.

Today, the team that will face Metropolitan High School is Oak High School, a high school basketball powerhouse with a long history. Metropolitan High School is a rising star team that has never won a championship, while Oak High School has won championships many times and has cultivated many outstanding

NBA players.

The game was very intense from the beginning. Metropolitan Middle School adopted the popular fast break tactics, which had a fast tempo and high scores, making the game very entertaining.

The game at Oak High School was like a textbook example of positional warfare. After all, high school players have not yet reached the level of the NBA, and the running and gunning tactics are too demanding for them. Although the score is high and the scene is beautiful, the speed is too fast and it is easy to make mistakes.

Oak High School pursues real victory, not whether it is exciting or not. They would rather spend 30 seconds in each quarter, even if it makes the game ugly, than speed up the pace.

This style of play disrupted Metropolitan High School's rhythm. After winning the opening jump ball, Metropolitan High School took advantage of the situation to score quickly, but was then disrupted by Oak High School's full-court press. At the end of the first quarter, the score was 23 to 18, and Metropolitan High School was 5 points behind. This slow offensive rhythm turned off the audience and booed.

The opposing coach doesn't care. As long as they can win, what's the harm in playing ugly?

"Come on, Thompson! Beat them up! Show the same spirit that you had when you beat me!" Peter, who was sitting in the fifth row, cheered loudly for Thompson so that all the players from Metropolitan High School could hear him.

In addition to the fans, many students from Metropolitan High School also came to watch the game and cheer for their school. Peter's shouting inspired other students, and the deafening cheers may have helped the confused Metropolitan High School find its way back.

Thompson was not in good shape in the first quarter, but he started to work hard at the beginning of the second quarter. His sharp breakthrough attracted the opponent's double-team, and the defense had loopholes. He cleverly made a fake move, fooled two defenders, and then passed the ball to his teammate in the bottom corner. The basketball went into the net, a wonderful three-pointer.

From this assist, Thompson was unstoppable. In just one and a half minutes, he drew a foul with a three-step layup and completed a two-plus-one. After that, Thompson was like a god, with mid-range shots, breakthroughs, slam dunks, and post-ups. He was in hot form and had a good shot. Seeing Thompson's condition, the coach decided to attack around him.

As long as someone double-teams Thompson, he will be exposed. As a power forward, Thompson has excellent passing ability and a wide field of vision. If he is double-teamed, he will assist; if he is not double-teamed, no defensive player at Oak High School can defend him one-on-one. In the second quarter alone, Thompson scored 19 points, 5 rebounds, and 5 assists, igniting the enthusiasm of the entire audience.

The Knicks' assistant coach nodded repeatedly, saying that such players could become the core of reconstruction within a year or two with a little training.

In the middle of the third quarter, the score became 65-55, and Metropolitan High School led by 10 points. The coach asked Thompson, who had played for 25 minutes, to rest and replace him with a substitute. At this time, Thompson had contributed 27 points, 8 rebounds, and 7 assists, just one step away from a triple-double.

The game entered a dull period. Li Jie looked at Peter, who was cheering for the school team until his voice was almost hoarse, and asked, "Do you two want something to drink? I'll go buy some."

Harry: "Sprite, thank you!"

Peter said with a hoarse voice: "Gatorade, thank you. I think cheering on the sidelines is more tiring than playing the game."

Li Jie reluctantly walked out of the auditorium and headed towards the empty corridor where the vending machine was. When Li Jie stood up and left, the girl who had been observing him from a distance also walked out. She was the person secretly protected by the captain of the Night Watch, Roland.

Today, she was dragged by her friends to cheer for Metropolitan High School. Although they were far apart, Roland still recognized Li Jie, or more accurately, recognized the complicated timeline above Li Jie's head.

When Li Jie was about to put in coins to buy a drink, Roland suddenly approached and said, "Jason Lee, you are one of the people sent to protect me secretly, right? At the same time, you are a masked hero."

Roland's tone was gentle, but the content surprised Li Jie: "What are you talking about?"

"Don't be surprised. Captain Rogers asked you to protect me. I believe you are reliable. Aren't you curious why they sent you to protect me?" Roland said to himself, ignoring whether Li Jie was listening or not: "If I say that a serious and terrible accident will happen in this game, will you believe me?"

Roland looked at Li Jie sincerely, and the two looked at each other in the empty corridor. Li Jie thought he might be crazy or there was something wrong with his ears.

Chapter 84 Doubt

Roland and Li Jie stared at each other in the empty corridor. The vending machine had already spit out the three bottles of drinks that Li Jie had selected, and they fell into the basket under the machine with a thumping sound.

The noise in the basketball hall seemed to disappear in an instant. Li Jie felt that this girl, Roland, was very strange, so strange that she didn't fit in with the world around her.

She stood there and spoke: "Do you doubt what I just said?" Roland stared at Li Jie quietly.

"You don't have to worry about someone eavesdropping here or anything like that." Roland said calmly, "Because I can see many things that others can't see."

Li Jie stretched out his hand to signal Roland to stop: "Student Roland, that's enough. No matter what game you want to play, or what prank you want to play before graduation, I admit defeat. I can buy you a bottle of drink, but please stop saying these weird things."

Li Jie said as he picked up a bottle of Coke and threw it to Roland, and at the same time bought a new bottle.

Roland steadily caught the Coke that Li Jie threw to him, walked slowly past Li Jie, and said, "Whether you want to listen or not, some things are there and will not change. Just like when you handed me the Coke after I said those words to you. Do you know why?"

Roland's footsteps were light: "Because the past determines the future. No matter how people think they can change the future, in fact, the future has been determined when they think about it."

"The past is fixed, and the future is fluid. When the roaring river is frozen by

layers of ice, everything begins to move in the predetermined direction. It doesn't matter whether your name is Jason or some other masked hero." Roland unscrewed the Coke and took a sip.

"I just want to tell you one thing, I can see things that you can't see! The blue past and the golden future! The timelines of the past are intertwined into a chain, and the golden future gradually loses its vitality in the deep blue past." Roland's words made Li Jie frown.

He believes that SHIELD has a reason to protect the girl. This is especially evident when Captain Rogers, after Nick was removed from his post, even distrusts some of SHIELD's agents, and relies on his own cronies and outside organizations like Nightwatch.

If what Roland said was true and she could see the timeline, then her value was self-evident. She must be at the highest level, and it was estimated that only a small number of people within SHIELD knew of her existence.

But why did she come to chat with him for no reason? Li Jie was confused. Was he really exposed? Even if he was exposed, why did she tell him this?

"Our thoughts and actions, the moment our deeds become the past, they determine the future. Just like if I drink half a bottle of Coke in one breath, I will definitely burp after a while." Roland shook the Coke in her hand, and the carbonated drink stirred up bubbles in her hand.

"That's just the effect of carbon dioxide, that's all." Li Jie shook his head.

However, Roland did not accept Li Jie's point of view: "It's not just CO2, it's the future. Because I made this choice, I got this future. The past determines the future!"

"Because I can see and I know. Everything is so powerless! I know what is going to happen, but I can't stop it. Because the future has been locked in the past. Even if I can see the future, it is just a part of the future design." Roland took a big gulp of Coke, drank half a bottle in one breath, and then burped happily.

She didn't care at all whether it was rude for a pretty girl to do this. She laughed heartily, but her tone was filled with an inexplicable enthusiasm: "Look, life is so boring. When you know all the endings but are powerless to change them, you

can only become a manipulated pawn, being manipulated and rewritten at will."

"I saw the trouble SHIELD and Nick Fury would get into, with that half-vampire Deacon Firth. I warned them, but the result was still the same. Nothing changed. I flicked the beautiful timeline, but I could only succumb to it all. Me, us, everyone! We are just marionettes, a blue string, a golden string, that's all our lives!"

Li Jie wondered if the girl was drunk. He said, "Okay, Miss Roland. Do you want me to take you back to your companions? Or do you want me to take you somewhere to rest?"

Roland ignored Li Jie's words and just smiled and said, "Do you believe everything I just said, Jason? Are you willing to be a puppet being manipulated invisibly? The seemingly possible future variables have actually been set in the past. All efforts and hopes are just illusions."

"I don't like fatalism, and I don't like what you said even more. Okay, Roland. Let me take you to find your friend." Li Jie said as he prepared to send Roland back.

"Since you don't like it! Then tear these into pieces! Destroy and trample all those terrible rules and those ridiculous established routes! Step on them all!" Roland suddenly shouted hysterically at Li Jie.

Li Jie felt that there was an indescribable madness in the look in the girl's eyes when she looked at him just now, as well as a hint of inexplicable expectation.

You have the ability to do all this, you are special. I can see it! " Roland felt that there was no need to say more. Compared to the monotonous golden and blue timelines of others, Li Jie's golden future timeline was as complex and dense as a spider web.

Each line symbolizes a different choice, which brings a completely different future. Roland saw a person who was not bound by the past timeline, and his future was boundless.

Roland couldn't see into Li Jie's future, nor could he try to see into his friends' futures. Once involved with Li Jie, all futures would become blurry.

Roland is tired of her life. She can foresee the future, but she cannot change it. She cannot avoid tragedy, because in the future she sees, she herself is also part of the past.

She has become part of the push for that future to happen. Can you understand this feeling? You know you will be hit by a car tomorrow, but you can only watch it happen. You know your loved ones or loved ones will leave unexpectedly, but you can't stop them. It may even be that they left because you foresaw the future and tried to interfere.

Life has lost its expectations and freshness. There are no surprises or shocks. All emotions have been felt before they are actually encountered.

It's like a role-playing game with a single plot. You complete the game and understand all the stories. But you become the protagonist of the game. No matter how hard you try, you can only follow the original route and repeat the protagonist's experience.

It was dull and boring, and there was an indescribable loneliness and solitude. It was like diving into the deepest part of the Pacific Ocean and experiencing the darkness and coldness of the deep sea. Roland had had enough of it.

When she first met Li Jie, she knew he was different. She had wanted to talk to Li Jie countless times, but she was never a brave girl. Until today, she finally mustered up the courage to tell him everything in her heart.

Although Li Jie was confused and didn't understand what she was saying, Roland didn't care. The foreseeable future was too bad, and she didn't want to live like this, not even for a second.

Even just once, she would roar at fate: "No! Screw the destiny!" And Li Jie would be her best entry point to change the future. No matter what the result is, she decided to give it a try, even if it might be worse.

So today's conversation happened. Roland's excitement frightened Li Jie a little. He couldn't help but ask, "Are you okay?"

"Don't worry about me, okay? I want to tell you something now. There will be a huge explosion in this stadium and thousands of people will die. Do you think you can change this future?" Roland's big eyes flashed with determination.

Chapter 85 Time Passes

It was too easy for Roland to recognize Li Jie. Although Li Jie tried his best to hide himself, the future timeline on his body, which was as complicated as a spider web, was too unique. Those intertwined lines that symbolized countless possibilities could not be imitated.

Roland didn't know why Li Jie was so special, and she was too lazy to explore the reason. To her, what was more important was whether Li Jie could really change the destined future and break the lifeless destiny like a still oil painting. Therefore, Roland did not hesitate to reveal her identity and superpowers. She was tired of living a routine life like a chess piece, and that kind of restraint was like living in prison.

She gave Li Jie one last look and said, "Whether you believe it or not, this is my last message to you. Whether the future can be reversed or let it ruthlessly crush you depends entirely on your thoughts. The explosion will occur at the last moment, and the name I saw is Myron."

Roland returned to the audience seats at the basketball court and found an excuse to take her female friend with her. She had tried her best, but she could not change the upcoming facts, even though she knew how tragic it was that thousands of innocent spectators died in the inexplicable explosion. But she was powerless. If Li Jie had the ability to change the future, she could only wait and see.

Li Jie watched Roland and her friends leave the gym. It seemed that she was not joking. When Li Jie bought three bottles of drinks and returned to the audience, Peter complained, "Why are you so slow? You missed the exciting part. Thompson just returned and scored eleven points in a row. Now Oak High School is completely confused. The score difference has widened to 25 points. The rest of the game may be garbage time."

There were only seven minutes left in the fourth quarter, and Oak High School

was still trying to catch up, but the score difference was too big, and their efforts seemed to be in vain. The audience had already started to celebrate in advance.

Li Jie looked around the basketball court. There were more than 15,000 spectators sitting in the stadium. If what Roland said was true, there would be an explosion here. How many people would die? How many casualties would be caused by the stampede caused by panic?

Li Jie thought Roland was not joking. Since she was valued by Nick Fury, there must be a reason. He was unwilling to risk more than 10,000 lives to verify whether Roland's words were correct, especially since there were many classmates from Metropolitan High School in the audience. He didn't want to attend the funeral of his classmates at this age. They still had a long life ahead of them.

"Peter, does your spider sense have any signs?" Li Jie asked quickly, ignoring Peter's previous complaints, because Peter's spider sense is usually very accurate.

Peter's intuition would send out a strong warning whenever danger was about to occur.

"Why are you asking this suddenly? This is a basketball game, not the streets of Baghdad." Peter shrugged.

"Listen, there's no time to explain. I just received some news. I'm not sure if it's true or not, but I can't take any chances." Li Jie quickly whispered to Peter and Harry, "There's a guy named Myron who's planning to set off an explosion on the basketball court."

"What?" Peter and Harry looked incredulous.

"I'm serious." Li Jie said with a serious face: "They can't even watch a football game in peace, these people are really crazy! When I catch the guy who caused the trouble, I will make sure he pay this time! It doesn't matter if he is Hydra, the Brotherhood of Mutants or any other organization!" Li Jie couldn't help cursing.

"This is the end of our wonderful weekend." Li Jie shook his head. "Peter, your sensing ability can detect danger. I may need you to walk around the audience a few more times to see if you can sense any danger."

"I'll go to a higher place to see if there are any suspicious people. Turn on the communication headset and we'll keep in touch." Li Jie made concise arrangements.

Harry also nodded: "Then you go to the east and I'll go to the west."

The three of them simply divided the work. Li Jie felt that Roland's ability to predict the future was too inaccurate. Although he saw that there would be an explosion on the court, he didn't know where Mellen would be and how to detonate it. This gave Li Jie and others at least a general direction.

But now, they can only blindly search for people who may cause the explosion in a limited time. Evacuate all the fans? With only six minutes left, how to safely evacuate more than 10,000 spectators without causing panic and stampede?

It would be the most ironic if the bomb didn't explode and a bunch of people were trampled to death. As time passed, Li Jie and the other two were frantically looking for Myron in the stadium. There was not even enough time to ask for help.

If Roland had told Li Jie from the beginning, he might have had more ways to deal with it. But now, the three of them were more like doing their best and leaving the rest to fate. The only thing they could rely on was Peter's spider warning.

During this chaotic moment, Peter was running around the gym, trying to trigger the spider alarm, and accidentally bumped into a vendor selling pretzels and popcorn.

The vendor was knocked to the ground, and the cookies and popcorn in his hand were scattered all over the ground. Peter quickly helped the vendor up and apologized, "I'm sorry, brother, are you okay? If you are okay, I will leave first."

Peter's tone was a little irritable, even a little rude. Under normal circumstances, Peter might have been more polite, after all, he had bumped into someone by accident. But now, the safety of more than 10,000 spectators in the entire stadium depended on him, and there were less than three minutes left before the time bomb exploded. He didn't have time to argue with the vendor. Just as Peter was about to leave, the popcorn vendor grabbed him.

"You knocked me to the ground, and that's it?" The vendor was obviously dissatisfied with Peter's attitude.

"Okay, okay. Brother, I have something urgent to do. I'm sorry for knocking over your snacks, I'll buy them. Here's $100, take it." Peter hurriedly took out a hundred-dollar bill from his pocket and stuffed it into the vendor's shirt pocket.

He was really in a hurry and didn't have time to argue with the vendor over such a trivial matter.

"Wait, do you look down on me? Do you think I'm selling snacks in the stadium just to make trouble for such a small amount of money?" The vendor was not grateful for Peter's act of forcing the money on him, and even felt that his dignity was offended.

"So you just think I'm trying to cheat you out of your money? I'm just not happy with your attitude towards apologizing!"

"Brother, what do you want? I have something important to tell you." Peter broke free from the vendor's hand. Spider-Man's strength is not something that ordinary people can resist. In addition, Peter was anxious and did not control his strength. As a result, the vendor was dragged by him and fell to the ground and fell again.

This time the vendor got really angry and immediately stood up and waved his fist at Peter.

Li Jie, who was watching the stadium closely from a high place, also noticed the situation on Peter's side. "Sir, can I borrow your telescope?" Li Jie borrowed a telescope from the audience sitting at the highest point of the stadium to observe the situation on Peter's side.

"Peter, have you found the person who is going to detonate the bomb? Subdue him quickly!" Li Jie thought Peter was fighting with the suspect.

Peter answered through the headset: "No, it was just bad luck. It was a snack vendor, and I bumped into him accidentally. Then we got into an argument, and now we're fighting."

Peter was so agile that the vendor couldn't hit him at all.

"Don't get entangled with him, go quickly." Li Jie urged. He used a telescope to look at the vendor who was entangled with Peter in the distance. Now the vendor had his back to Li Jie.

The vendor was an in-house employee of Madison Square Garden, wearing a uniform of blue and white stripes with the name of the stadium printed in large letters on the back.

Behind this line of big characters is the employee number 606 and his name - Myron.

Myron? Myron! Li Jie immediately called Peter through the intercom: "It's him, Myron!"

"What?" Peter was distracted for a moment and was punched by Myron. Peter looked at the vendor in front of him in disbelief, his originally gray eyes now turned blood red!

At this moment, Li Jie suddenly understood what Roland meant when he said that the entire future has been determined by what happened in the past.

Chapter 86 Creating the future

When Peter saw Myron's fiery red eyes, his spider-sense suddenly went into a frantic warning.

It told Peter urgently that he was now in great danger.

“This guy doesn’t look like he’s carrying a bomb, he is a bomb! What’s worse, it seems like I pissed him off!” Peter described his discovery to Li Jie and Harry through the headset.

Li Jie and Harry in the distance also started running towards Peter.

At this moment, Li Jie truly understood what Roland meant when he said that the past is part of the future.

If Roland hadn't told him that today, Li Jie wouldn't have considered working with Peter and Harry to find the terrorists in the stadium.

Peter wouldn't be walking around in anxious circles, trying to activate his spider-sense.

He would not have run into the vendor named Myron. Peter would not have said anything rude to the vendor because of time pressure, let alone hit him.

If none of that had happened, Myron wouldn’t have been enraged.

According to Peter's judgment, this guy probably has some powerful mutant ability. Maybe it was because Peter angered him that he couldn't control his anger, causing the energy in his body to go out of control, and even causing a superpower explosion.

Li Jie, Peter and Harry are no longer surprised by the out-of-control explosion of superpowers. This can happen to mutants or ordinary people who accidentally

gain superpowers.

All of this was caused by the conversation between Roland and Li Jie.

Roland foresaw this future, so he went to find Li Jie to see if he could change the future.

Everything she did seemed destined. As she put it, the future was locked in the past.

All the struggles here seem to be in vain. Everyone is like a chess piece, moving along the predetermined track, unable to resist.

For the first time, Li Jie felt Roland's irresistible feeling of powerlessness.

Being manipulated? Or is it all just an illusion? Thinking you have control over your destiny, you are actually being played by it?

Li Jie didn't want to think too much, because every time he thought deeply, he felt himself sinking deeper and deeper, as if he was living in Truman's world.

"Anyway, I don't want the future to be fixed and arranged!" Li Jie gritted his teeth and thought coldly.

If life is really controlled by invisible forces, I believe no one would like this feeling.

"Peter, find a way to lure this guy out the door. We can't let him get into trouble on the court!" Li Jie said to Peter through the headset.

In fact, Peter had already begun to do just that, trying to lure an angry Myron off the court.

According to Roland, this guy will explode in sixty seconds.

The fight between Peter and Myron on the sidelines attracted the attention of some fans, but soon Peter and Myron disappeared into the corridor of the stadium and the fans stopped paying attention.

After all, watching a game is always more interesting than watching a fight.

Metropolitan High School is about to win, and the fans are preparing to celebrate.

Li Jie ran towards Peter from another exit. At this moment, he felt a little resentful towards Roland, but he couldn't tell the specific reason. Maybe it was because she could foresee the future, or because she could foresee the future but was powerless to change it?

Li Jie was in a complicated mood, but you said I could change the future, and my future line is as complicated as a spider web!

In that case, let me tear all those nasty things into pieces!

Li Jie doesn't like being manipulated, nor does he want to accept a predetermined future. It's like he came to the Marvel world but never thought about living according to the plot.

He even ruthlessly affects many plots, whether intentionally or unintentionally.

Those once familiar stories have changed beyond recognition after Li Jie's intervention. Countless examples of change prove his attitude.

He never believes in a predetermined future, but only believes in the future he can create with his own hands!

It is this attitude and belief hidden deep in his heart that has shaped the Li Jie of today, including his way of thinking, which is determined by this attitude.

When Li Jie ran to the fire escape of the stadium, following Peter's instructions, Myron was completely out of control.

His arms were like red-hot steel, flashing with dazzling light and high temperature.

Peter relied on his spider-sense to dodge Myron's attacks while continuously punching him in the body.

Fortunately, this is a fire escape and no one came in, otherwise Peter and Myron's fight would definitely attract onlookers.

Peter's fists were like the wind, hitting Myron fiercely, trying to knock him out, because Peter's intuition told him that once Myron fell unconscious, he would lose control of his violent energy.

This way, there won't be any explosions or anything like that. Spider-Man's current strength is close to ten tons, so it's no problem for him to overturn a container truck with one full-strength punch.

However, Myron took several punches from Peter and seemed unharmed, which only aroused his anger. Surging energy continued to flow out of his heart.

His entire upper body was now glowing with heat, not just his arms.

When Peter approached Myron, he could feel the burning heat beside him, as if his body was about to be burned.

His clothes began to smoke and even showed signs of being burned, and his body hair curled slightly due to the high temperature.

Peter originally came to watch the game and had no weapons in his hands. Facing this guy who seemed to be burning all over, especially in a narrow space, it was indeed a tricky problem.

So when Li Jie arrived, he saw Peter trying his best to dodge. Li Jie didn't say much nonsense, he took out the Thunder Blade from his belt, suppressed the violent lightning, and concentrated all the energy on the tip of the blade.

Li Jie ran at full speed, like a shot arrow, and the thunder knife in his hand was like the sharpest arrow.

At the moment when Myron and Peter were fighting, Li Jie swung the thunder knife and passed by Myron from behind.

When the thunder knife was swung, there was a whistling sound of wind and thunder, which sounded like the swinging sound of the lightsaber in "Star Wars".

With the sound of Li Jie's knife, Myron's two arms, which were like red-hot steel, were directly cut off by him, and the blood gushing from his arms was instantly evaporated by the high temperature outside the body.

"Ah!" The great pain sobered Myron up a little from his anger, and he screamed in pain.

Li Jie swung the Thunder Blade towards Myron's head. At the critical moment, Myron's heart burst out with powerful power again.

The energy starts from the heart, goes up along the throat, and finally bursts out through the mouth.

An extremely strong energy flow, with high temperature and powerful penetrating power, Li Jie used the thunder knife to reflect the energy back.

The release of the energy flow seemed to have drained a lot of Myron's energy. He looked a little tired, and when he retreated, he lost his balance and fell.

Li Jie approached with the lightning sword in hand. There were only fifteen seconds left before the final explosion that Roland had mentioned.

Don't you want to blow it up? Then I'll chop off your head! I want to see how you blow it up!

Li Jie's murderous expression caught Peter's attention, and he shouted, "Wait! You're going to kill him?!"

Li Jie was stopped by Peter's shout and looked at him. Peter saw anger and murderous intent in Li Jie's eyes.

The two looked at each other for three seconds, and the thunder knife in Li Jie's hand fell fiercely!

After a brief look between Li Jie and Peter, Li Jie finally swung the back of the Thunder Blade at Myron. "Are you crazy? Did you kill him?" Peter looked at Li Jie in disbelief.

Li Jie exhaled a breath of foul air and sighed: "No, I just knocked him out with the back of the knife."

Peter carefully checked Myron's head and found that he had no wounds. He just looked like he was knocked unconscious. At that moment, Li Jie did have the intention to kill him.

The inexplicable irritability and disgust at being controlled almost made him lose control. However, Peter's roar worked, and he finally knocked Myron unconscious with the back of the knife.

The fainted Myron lost his threat, and the red energy began to retreat. Peter's spider sense, which had been warning him constantly, also stopped the alarm.

Peter breathed a sigh of relief: "Fortunately you didn't kill him. We had no reason to kill him."

"Yes." Li Jie put away the Thunder Blade: "No matter where his power comes from, he looked like a harmless ordinary person before."

Peter nodded. "If I hadn't been so impulsive and hadn't angered him, perhaps none of this would have happened. So, the explosion was actually caused by us? He was just an ordinary vendor."

Peter looked at Li Jie seriously, and Li Jie nodded helplessly: "It seems so. Because knowing the result has become the cause." Roland's weird ability is really annoying.

"It seems that we were wrong this time, and this man named Myron is actually innocent." Peter looked at Myron who had lost both arms, and said with some reluctance: "We should give him treatment."

Myron's arm stopped bleeding and the wound began to heal. Li Jie felt his pulse and it was still strong, not like a seriously injured person at all.

"Go contact Harry and prepare a limb regeneration surgery for this guy. Since I cut off the arm, I will bear the cost." Li Jie recalled the energy burst of Myron just now, and he felt like he had seen it somewhere.

Peter had already contacted Harry, who was not able to arrive immediately because he was far away from Peter and Li Jie. Now he was going to arrange for someone to handle the follow-up work.

Peter walked up to Li Jie and patted his shoulder: "I'm really afraid that you will kill him with a knife." Peter was indeed a little scared, because in Peter's opinion, Myron was innocent.

If Peter hadn't stimulated him, he might still be selling snacks in the stadium and living his own life.

If Li Jie killed Myron for some reason, Peter would be the one who found it hardest to accept it, as he would bear the heavy burden of indirectly killing an innocent person.

"What would you do if I really killed him at that time?" Li Jie turned his head and looked at Peter seriously.

"I don't know, I certainly can't accept it. No matter what the reason, it was the death of an innocent person. I..." Peter shook his head, not knowing how to express his emotions.

Chapter 87 Desperate Virus

"If that's the case, I don't think I can play Spider-Man anymore." Peter thought to himself. He didn't say anything, but his heart was already surging. If Li Jie really killed that man, there might be an insurmountable gap between them, and they might even take completely different paths.

After all, that person is completely innocent and has not committed any unforgivable crime. He is just an ordinary person, fundamentally different from those heinous and mad criminals. The meaning of Spider-Man's existence is to protect these innocent people from harm. If he can't even do this, how can he continue to wear this suit?

"Fortunately, he is not dead." Li Jie breathed a sigh of relief.

"Yes, luckily he didn't die." Peter agreed. As for the chopped-off arm, since the man was still alive, modern regenerative surgery shouldn't be a big problem.

During the conversation with Peter, Li Jie inexplicably felt much lighter, as if a heavy burden had been lifted off his shoulders. He thought it was just a psychological effect.

And in a place that Li Jie couldn't see, among the complicated future lines on his body, a chaotic and rugged line began to dim gradually, until it disappeared silently. Li Jie didn't know what this meant, but it seemed to indicate that something was changing.

Ancient One, who was far away in Kamataki, suddenly felt the Eye of Agamotto on his chest vibrate slightly. He took a deep breath, not sure whether it was a good thing or a bad thing.

Before sending Myron away, Li Jie told Harry to isolate him for treatment. While waiting for the arrival of the people arranged by Harry, Li Jie and Peter discovered a shocking fact.

The injured part of Myron actually began to regenerate slowly. The bright red energy was slowly repairing his wounds and might even reconstruct his limbs.

Looking at Myron's current condition, combined with his performance in the battle just now, Li Jie suddenly thought of something. Although according to the timeline, these things should not happen at this moment.

However, the Marvel world today is no longer the world that Li Jie is familiar with. Anything that appears ahead of time is very likely to happen. Faced with this situation, Li Jie was full of vigilance and worry.

On the other hand, Harry said that they would isolate Myron and keep him under close observation. This would not only ensure his safety, but also provide a better understanding of his physical changes and recovery. After all, the mutation of Myron's arm was too strange, and if not handled carefully, it could lead to a greater crisis.

In the coming days, Li Jie and his team will also go all out to study Myron's physical condition and try to find a solution to the problem. At the same time, they will also pay close attention to the dynamics of the entire Marvel world to deal with various challenges and dangers that may arise. Because they know that in this ever-changing world, only by maintaining a high degree of vigilance and constantly exploring and innovating can we survive.

"Thank you for helping me clean up the mess." Li Jie patted Harry's arm.

"You're welcome. But as for that girl named Roland you mentioned, I think we should stay away from her in the future. What you said today made me feel that this girl is too weird, and I don't have a very good impression of her." Harry said with a frown.

In fact, not only Harry, but also Li Jie and Peter didn't like this girl very much at this time, and always felt that something was wrong. Li Jie felt that it was necessary to talk to Rogers, maybe the night watchman was no longer suitable to protect this girl.

However, Li Jie was at least a little relieved that Roland believed that the future was irreversible, and that she herself was the reason for the result, but this time Li Jie broke her prediction. "Is this the inconsistency between the time traveler and the timeline and the multiple futures?" Li Jie thought.

……

Inside the Night Watch base, Li Jie walked into the laboratory carrying Myron's two arms that he had cut off, and Peter followed him in. They were all curious about Myron's body.

Li Jie asked Peter to use experimental equipment to check if there was anything abnormal about this guy, because in his memory, some people's situations were very similar to Myron's, such as the super-powered gene drug created by the villain in "Iron Man 3" - the Extremis virus modified body. Although this thing should not appear in this timeline, the world is so chaotic now, and Li Jie does not expect everything to develop according to the trajectory he knows.

Speaking of Iron Man, Li Jie is currently focusing on the personal feud between Tony Stark and Rogers. If I remember correctly, the Superhero Registration Act triggered the Civil War.

The two main factions were led by Tony Stark, who supported the bill, and Steve Rogers, who opposed it. Due to the opposition between the two and some unclear personal grudges, the superheroes fell into a civil war.

Li Jie doesn't like to see superheroes killing each other, which is not good for anyone. So he entrusted Zeng Chu to do one thing, which is to find a way to find the video of Howard Stark's car accident.

If it is correct, Howard's death was not an accident, but was caused by Captain Rogers' friend, the Winter Soldier Bucky Barnes. This incident was used by someone, resulting in an irreconcilable rift and confrontation between Captain Rogers and Tony.

Before the Civil War, Captain Rogers had met his old friend Bucky and knew he was still alive. He had been looking for him and opposed a fatal blow to Bucky, which made Tony extremely dissatisfied. In the end, Tony led his team to fight Captain Rogers.

It can be said that it was these two extremely influential superheroes who truly determined the direction of the Civil War rather than the implementation of government bills.

Needless to say, Captain Rogers is a man who, in this world, can force the

military and Congress to compromise with legal means and news strategies alone, which shows how powerful his influence is in guiding public opinion.

And Tony Stark is not to be underestimated now. He has mastered the technology to develop helium-3. Not only is he super rich, he also has a significant influence on the world situation.

Compared to what Li Jie saw in the movie, if Tony and Captain Rogers really opposed each other in this world and started a civil war, the destructiveness would be far more than just destroying an airport in the movie.

Therefore, Li Jie decided to find the surveillance video of the Winter Soldier killing Tony's parents before Captain Rogers saw the Winter Soldier in person, and then put all the problems directly on the table of the Illuminati for discussion.

Some problems must be discussed openly, and only through open discussion can solutions be found. At present, Captain Rogers has not seen the living Winter Soldier, and he did not destroy the Delta Wing Building of SHIELD, so there is still room for discussion and compromise.

As long as they find a suitable time to let Tony take off his iron armor and prevent the captain from coming with his super shield, Li Jie believes that if a conflict really occurs, he, Professor Charles and Hank will be enough to stop the two guys.

During this period, Zeng Chu was extremely busy at the base. He was searching through a huge amount of data for video records from nearly 20 years ago, and he felt like he was about to collapse.

"You owe me ten years of Starbucks, Night Walker! And it comes with a brownie combo!" He yelled as soon as he saw Li Jie.

Li Jie waved his hand and said, "No problem. I'll take care of all your Starbucks for the rest of your life. Order whatever cake you want. Drink whatever coffee you want. One cup at a time is fine, as long as you help me find the video that reveals the truth about Howard Stark's car accident."

Li Jie's promise barely calmed Zeng Chu's complaints. Li Jie looked around the base. Mike was repairing the gun and Big Daddy was shooting at the range.

Frank had recently gone to Italy to deal with Franco Stanich's affairs.

Barbara and Peter were in the lab, Zeng Chu was in the computer control room. Everyone was there, but he felt like something was missing: "By the way! Where's Mindy? Why haven't I seen her for a while? She doesn't even play PS4 games?"

Zeng Chu responded to Li Jie again: "She's been having a blast with her new little loli friend recently, and has no time for us old guys!"

As Zeng Chu said, Mingdi has not been at the base very often recently. In the past, Mingdi would go home early after school every day, finish her homework within half an hour, and either study and train with the people at the base, or stay on the sofa playing games, or lie on the bed reading comics, and basically did not interact with people of the same age. Now, Mingdi's life is much richer.

Now she no longer rushed back to the base as soon as school was over, but always stayed back until dinner time (primary school ended early, and dinner at the Night Watch base was usually around seven o'clock).

Mindy made it clear that she had made a very good friend, and they played together every day and sometimes went to each other's house. Especially on weekends, it was even more difficult to see her.

This made Big Daddy and Frank very worried, but they did not dare to interfere too much, because this was Mindy's first friend of the same age, and the adults were worried that their intervention would destroy the friendship between the two children.

So, despite some worries, the two fathers did not dare to ask too much, and every time they saw Mindy come back, they were hesitant to speak.

In order to prevent the two fathers from worrying about her, Mindy took some selfies with her mobile phone and showed them photos of her and Laura going to amusement parks or parks together.

"I really made friends, not fell in love. Please, don't be so stubborn. I'm not interested in little boys, they don't attract me!" Laura explained.

This relieved Damon and Frank. And Mindy was telling the truth, she hung out

with Big Daddy, Frank, Nightcrawler, and Spider-Man every day.

This kind of life has a significant impact on her values. For example, her view of attractive men is completely different from that of other girls in her class.

Some girls are obsessed with the handsome guys in "Twilight", but for Mindy, they have no appeal: "They look good, but what's the use of this gym body except for good looks? I guess any 60-kg boxer can knock them all down."

Mindy criticized her classmates' taste with a sharp tongue and shook her head: "A bunch of good-looking sissies will be helpless if they encounter an armed robbery."

"They have bodyguards! We don't need them to deal with robbers!" A girl in the same class defended her idol: "And they are not just barbarians who can only fight!"

Mindy rolled her eyes and said disdainfully, "Tsk, trash." Well, Mindy's aesthetics and values are very different from those of ordinary girls, and cannot be measured by her standards.

It can be said that Li Jie and Spider-Man have a great influence on Mindy. Although she has never seen their true faces, she can tell from their voices that they are very young. She thinks that the boys she likes should not only look at their appearance, but also have a sense of responsibility, like Nightcrawler and Spider-Man, who can do something practical for the world. Such boys are what she appreciates.

Therefore, when chatting with Laura, she always complains about the aesthetic taste of her classmates. These words can only be said to friends of the same age and gender.

Mindy had wanted to complain about these things for a long time, but she couldn't find the right person. It wasn't until Laura appeared that she found someone to confide her inner thoughts to.

Chapter 88 Unstable Factors

Mindy and Laura sat together on a park bench near the Bronx Zoo, both holding a double-flavored ice cream cone, strawberry and vanilla. Mindy talked nonstop while Laura listened quietly, occasionally interjecting.

"Do you think those pretty boys who are popular with girls are really attractive?" Mindy asked Laura about her views on the popular aesthetics in school. Because of her unique views, Mindy often felt that she was out of tune with her classmates.

Laura put one hand on her thigh to support her face. She savored the ice cream slowly while listening to Mindy's words. She wore a pair of new jeans with shiny patches on the pockets, full of youthful vitality. She paired it with a T-shirt with a cute Zelda pattern. Although Laura didn't know who Zelda was, she liked the playful image and bought the clothes.

Mindy accompanied her to the store to choose these clothes. In addition to clothes, they also visited shoe stores and jewelry stores and bought many small things that little girls like. For example, they wore the same bracelet on their hands, woven with brown elastic ropes and decorated with some Indian-style metal ornaments. Although the bracelet is not expensive, it means a lot to Laura because it is the first gift she received from Mindy.

This period of time was the happiest time for Laura. She had a comfortable bed instead of the hard bed in the laboratory; she had colorful and beautiful clothes instead of the same old hospital gown; she had delicious food, and sometimes Mindy would bring special snacks. More importantly, Laura experienced the warmth of friendship. Although Mindy was lively and active, Laura was quiet and steady. Although they had different personalities, it did not affect them becoming best friends. At this moment, Laura looked at Mindy quietly and listened to her campus stories, whether they were happy or troubled.

Mindy sometimes complains about the school, but she is always careful not to

involve Laura's problems. As for Laura's past, Mindy respects her choice and never asks too much.

When Mindy finally finished talking about the trivial things in school, she found that her ice cream was melting and her hands were covered with cream. "Ugh." She quickly finished the remaining ice cream, but the stimulation of the cold drink gave her a headache.

"Are you okay?" Laura asked with concern when she saw Mindy's look.

"Not bad." Mindy recovered after a while and said helplessly, "It's just that it's summer vacation now. I can't go to school, and I can't go out with my dad and the others. Do you find it annoying if I come to play with you every day?"

Laura shook her head, her long chestnut hair fluttering gently with her movements: “As long as you are willing to play with me, I am always welcome.”

Mindy heard Laura's answer and gave her a thumbs up.

"You know what? I've been thinking about what we could do this summer," Mindy said, resting her chin on her hands.

Laura glanced at her: “What do you want to do?”

"You know, Laura, there are many heroes on the streets of New York right now," Mindy said excitedly, "It's all because of the Night Walker video that inspired many people to come out and maintain law and order and do good deeds."

"Hmm?" Laura responded softly.

"So, how about we form a team this summer and show our talents in New York?!" Mindy put forward her idea with sparkling eyes.

For Mindy, such days are indeed a bit boring. Although playing with Laura is fun, she feels that it can't be limited to this. The little girl always has some bigger plans, such as making Hit-Girl active again. After all, this once sensational name has been silent for more than a year.

This won't do. Even if Mindy is no longer in the martial arts world, there is still a legend about her. She can't accept this. What she wants is not only a legend, but

also the freedom to roam freely in the martial arts world.

In the past year, she has been closely supervised by the Night Watch and feels that she is about to become rigid. Especially after receiving training from the Night Watch, Mindy feels that her abilities have improved, but she has no chance to practice, which makes her unbearable.

Especially since the heroic video of Nightcrawler went viral on the Internet, it has inspired many people to join the ranks of street justice. Whether they have superpowers or not, they have begun to take the initiative to maintain order and fight crime. These street vigilantes do not specialize in dealing with gangs or terrorist crimes like the Night Watch, but they protect the city in their own way.

Doing so would bring great risks. After Li Jie discovered the craze caused by his short video, he began to pay attention to controlling the direction of public opinion.

Many people discussed on the Night Watch forum about establishing a street vigilante team similar to the Night Watch. This is not an easy task. If someone really has problems while serving as a vigilante, such as being attacked by gangs or accidentally hurting innocent people, this will set off a huge wave of public opinion. This will make many people question the legitimacy and stability of street vigilantes.

Will the increasing number of masked vigilantes make the government regard them as potential destabilizing factors? You know, the Superhero Registration Act was promoted because of this kind of thing.

Lee knows this well, so he joined forces with other heroes on Night Watch’s social media and his own personal platform to call for action on how vigilantes and the New York City police can collaborate.

Because Li Jie and Peter had reached a cooperation consensus with George Stancy before, the New York City Deputy Police Commissioner was not surprised when they approached George again.

"Let's make those vigilantes informal members of the police department?" George asked doubtfully. "They don't have the power to enforce the law. To be honest, many vigilantes are just ordinary people, or people with ordinary super powers."

George looked at Li Jie and Peter deeply and said, "Most of them don't have the strength you two have, and their emotional intelligence and logical reasoning may not be as good as yours. To be honest, this matter has just started and is still within control, but it will become a problem when there are too many people."

Li Jie did not refute. He said, "That's right, but we can't ignore their existence just because they didn't show up before. Maybe someone has been doing it quietly for a long time, but we just don't know about it. Burying your head in the sand and escaping is not a good idea, Sheriff."

"Just like we can maintain good cooperation with the New York City Police Department, I think these people can do the same." Li Jie said seriously, "As long as you promise not to force every vigilante to reveal their identity. As you said, many people are ordinary people or ordinary superpowers. If their true identities are exposed, their daily lives may be affected."

George patted his cheek and said nonchalantly: "I have never traced the true identity of you and Spider-Man. Just like the undercover and plainclothes police in the police station. I know what to do and what not to do."

In this regard, George, as a senior policeman, is obviously different from those politicians who want to control all power. George is more pragmatic and understands the mentality of the grassroots people better.

When he was a grassroots policeman, many clues came from people who did not want to reveal their identities, so he continued to ask: "However, how do you think we can keep them from crossing the line and beyond the scope of the law? As the most influential street heroes, do you night watchmen have any suggestions?"

Li Jie looked at George and said, "Actually, Sheriff, have you ever paid attention to the news in China, especially in Beijing? Especially regarding public security."

George crossed his fingers. "Occasionally, but not often. There are rarely any major and sensational cases in Beijing, so I don't know much."

Li Jie raised his index finger and pointed: "In fact, as a super-large city, Beijing's population density may be higher than that of New York. Such a large city will produce a large number of cases every day."

George nodded, agreeing with Li Jie's point of view. He didn't believe that a city with a population of 20 to 30 million could be peaceful every day. This was not a utopia.

Li Jie went on to say: "In Beijing, many cases have just happened, or even before they happened, the police have caught them. Whether it's drug trafficking, illegal gambling, or illegal underground transactions."

George became interested: "How do they do it?" He knew that Beijing's police force was no larger than New York City's, and it was impossible to have police stationed in every community.

"Because Beijing has several very powerful civil organizations that work closely with the police department," Li Jie said seriously. "They help discover crimes in corners and places that the police cannot reach and cannot see."

"You mean secret service organizations and secret police? Like the FBI in the old days?" George didn't like this kind of thing because secret police often brought chaos and abuse of power.

"No, no, of course not." Li Jie shook his head. "It is a group of civil groups that cooperate with the police tacitly, provide intelligence, and the police decide how to act. The police will not pursue the details of anonymous people excessively. I think this model is very suitable for the current situation in New York."

"So, these organizations have official names?" George asked.

"Of course, they include the 'Fengtai Persuasion Team' and the 'Haidian District Netizens'." Li Jie said seriously, "The two most powerful ones are called 'Xicheng Aunties' and 'Chaoyang Masses'!"

George fell into deep thought after hearing this. It is a practical proposal to incorporate a group of ordinary people with special skills or enthusiasm for community security into the informal organization of the New York Police Department.

Chapter 89 Holy Aura

This is not an impulse or a sudden whim, nor is it one of those empty slogans or meaningless concepts that are actually empty nonsense.

The idea proposed by Li Jie may seem a little frivolous, but it is actually very serious: "The New York Police Department is not omnipotent, and you should know that, Chief. There are some things you cannot do."

George did not refute, he knew the limitations of the New York Police Department. The lack of police force prevented them from fully covering all communities in New York.

As the gateway city of the United States, it is very important for New York to maintain its image. Where does New York's image represent? Manhattan, Long Island, and possibly part of Queens. In order to maintain these face-saving projects, most police forces are deployed in these areas.

In particular, the neighborhoods around Times Square in Manhattan are the areas where New York police resources are most fully deployed, including, of course, Wall Street and Central Park.

Police forces in these places are almost overloaded.

As for areas like the Bronx and Brooklyn that really need a large number of police forces to maintain law and order, George has no police available. This is often the case, wealthy places often get more resources, even if these resources are already in excess.

But those places that really need resources get nothing.

"In the early stages, we can learn from Beijing's practice and connect these volunteer police officers. In addition to normal community volunteer activities, such as helping the elderly and children, or conducting ordinary security patrols

in the community. In other cases, if they discover criminal behavior, they should try to solve the problem by calling the police. Perhaps New York City can set up a special hotline for volunteer police officers." Li Jie said, touching his chin.

"We don't encourage ordinary people to fight dangerous criminals on their own, which is irresponsible for them. Even if some people have superpowers, we don't advocate it. Not everyone has professional training and they may overreact."

"Let every community, including those with insufficient police force, have police 'eyes'. Preventing crime before it happens and lowering the crime rate of the entire city is the key. We want everyone to see the positive role of street vigilantes."

"Appropriate collaboration rather than confrontation, like the anonymous whistleblower in Beijing. It's not that people don't want to fight crime, but the price they may have to pay after committing a crime is something many people cannot afford, including their own and their family's safety." Li Jie's words are not alarmist, but the truth.

"Although this is only in the preliminary stage, I think we can give it a try in some aspects." Li Jie said to George seriously.

"I'm a little curious, why did you think of doing this?" George suddenly asked, and Li Jie didn't react for a moment: "What? Which method are you talking about?"

"It's about connecting the vigilantes on the streets in this way. Let them be organized and capable to do what they should do, and ensure that their actions don't go too far." George said seriously.

"I want to ask why you would consider doing this. Logically, these things have little to do with you. There is a big difference between night watchmen and street vigilantes. You are more professional and do more things. There is actually no need to wade into this muddy water."

"Sheriff, a lot of what you said is right, but you are wrong about one thing." Li Jie glanced at George's badge: "There is no difference between the night watchmen, street vigilantes, the New York Police Department, and the more than 20 million civilians in this city."

"We live here, this is our home. Whether it's a vigilante or a superhero, they are never isolated individuals. In essence, there is no difference between heroes and civilians." Li Jie's words made George fall into deep thought.

"Heroes themselves should not be separated from the crowd, no matter how great your abilities are. Ordinary people are always concerned about their daily lives. Why does the hair growth water developed by Tony Stark receive far more attention than his new energy inventions and the deeds of Iron Man?" said Li Jie.

"Because those things are too far away from ordinary people. When Tony Stark was flying in the clouds wearing the iron armor, the higher he flew, the farther he was from the people. The greater the idea, the greater the distance from the crowd. So everyone thinks Iron Man is cool, but few people really understand Tony Stark's ideas."

"This is just a microcosm of a superhero. Therefore, the Night Watch has been committed to fighting street crime and controlling the crime rate in New York. Someone once said to me, especially to Spider-Man: Is it worth spending your time and ability on something like this to waste ten minutes catching a thief?"

George listened to Li Jie's words and looked at the superhero for the first time. He was telling the true inner world of a hero.

"I would say it's very worthwhile," Li Jie said seriously, "because for ordinary people, they don't care what world-changing invention Tony Stark invented today. But his wallet may contain all his living expenses for this month."

"People are sometimes extremely fragile. A small blow can change a person's life and future trajectory. For some people, it may be just a wallet, but for the person concerned, it may be the whole world."

Li Jie smiled slightly: "Aren't vigilantes and superheroes doing things to save the world? Whether it's saving the entire earth or someone's world, it's very important, isn't it?"

"If a person's world collapses, he won't care about any new inventions or new developments in the world, because those are no longer relevant to him. If superheroes are indifferent to these things, it will only cause ordinary people to become increasingly alienated from them, and even create estrangement and confrontation. Admiration cannot be used to make a living. Without a popular

base, any superhero is just a ridiculous joke." After Li Jie explained his views, George nodded deeply in agreement.

He completely agreed with Li Jie's views on the relationship between heroes and the public, and George admired Li Jie's approachable attitude. In fact, ever since Li Jie released the "I am for everyone" video, he has been doing something similar. He tried to strip the sacred halo of heroes and show their human side, so as to truly win the support of the public. The so-called masked hero registration bill has therefore lost its foundation.

"Of course, if vigilantes and superheroes are willing, they can register their hero names and costumes on the Night Watch website, and preferably register their superpowers. But these are all voluntary, and there is no need to upload personal information." Li Jie continued, "I can ensure the security of the website, and no information will be leaked."

Li Jie does not trust the government. The current U.S. government is like a sieve. Who knows how many organizations like Hydra are hiding inside.

"Our goal is to allow a group of elites to lead mutual assistance and cooperation within the community. This is only in the initial stages, but I think it's worth a try. Let the New York police and the vigilantes establish a tacit understanding, and it may even become a model for other cities," Li Jie proposed.

"Small people can also play a big role, making more people realize that they can do much more than they imagined. It is also a good thing to eliminate the indifference between people." George exclaimed, "You are such an excellent persuader. I can't find any reason to refuse this plan. By the way, what do you plan to name this plan?"

"How about calling it 'Community Joint Defense, Safe Home'?" Li Jie smiled happily.

Because Li Jie and George reached a consensus, New York City's community security prevention regulations and regulations on the duties and rights of masked vigilantes became new security measures under George's promotion.

Now that the New York City election is heating up, Li Jie's previous work is starting to pay off. The two originally popular candidates, Democratic Bugle Daily Editor James and Republican former New York State Assemblyman

Luerson, are starting to suffer setbacks.

James was involved in fake news that defamed Spider-Man. Voters viewed his actions as false propaganda and political showmanship. He had no advantage in publicity as the owner of the Daily Bugle. On the contrary, the group's website was often attacked by hackers who spoke up for Spider-Man. Every time he gave a public speech, someone opposed him. This made his current situation in New York worrying, and he had to bring bodyguards to attend public events. Considering that there were also cases in the United States where candidates were beaten by the opposition during speeches, James seemed guilty when he brought bodyguards, and his support rate dropped sharply to less than 10%.

He who was once very popular has suddenly become deserted, and anyone who gets involved with him is in trouble.

As for Luersen, no matter what his relationship with Jin Bing was, Li Jie did not intend to let him be elected. Under the joint suppression of the Stark Group and the Osborne Group, this popular candidate also quickly lost many political resources.

Luerson was not born into a political family. He had worked hard to achieve everything he had today. But how could his connections be comparable to those of the two major financial groups? Whether it was the Osborne Group or the Stark Group, the technologies they mastered were currently popular, and no one wanted to offend them because of Luerson.

You know, politics needs money to support it. Osborn and Stark are not only rich, but also have deep connections in the military and Congress. Therefore, Luerson lost the support of many external forces. What's worse, Kingpin has not returned yet, and he has lost his biggest financial backer.

The most surprising thing is that George Stancy, who was not favored by all political analysts at the beginning, was originally just a runner-up.

Everyone knew this and didn't consider him as a competitor. However, at this moment, this inconspicuous old policeman showed amazing energy.

George was able to put together a professional and large campaign team thanks to the cooperation between the Osborne Group and the Stark Group. After eliminating the differences in funds and backgrounds, George showed

advantages that other candidates could not match.

First of all, George's appearance is a highlight. In this age of appearance, although elections are not beauty pageants, handsome candidates always get extra points. In comparison, James gives people the impression of a cunning businessman, and Luersen's beer belly reminds people of a corrupt official. George's appearance is particularly outstanding.

Of course, George's charm is not only his handsomeness, but also his temperament. His long-term struggle with criminals and his rise from the bottom have given him an extraordinary demeanor. When he is not smiling, he is like a majestic lion. When he speaks, his tone is firm and powerful. He stands straight and sits upright, which makes people feel that he is confident and reliable, and a trustworthy leader.

Compared with other opponents who ran as congressmen or newspaper editors, George has real government work experience, and his experience of starting from the grassroots makes it easier for him to gain the support of ordinary voters. In particular, his campaign slogan - creating a safer living environment for New York and reducing crime rates - has won the trust of many people.

Since he achieved remarkable results in public security management in Queens, public security there has improved significantly. No one wants to live in a terrifying community where they dare not go out after 9 o'clock in the evening and have to hold their guns tightly when they hear knocks on the door at midnight.

Especially after the street heroes, mainly night watchmen, publicly supported professional policeman George to become the mayor of New York, many fans of the heroes also stood on George's side. Spider-Man posted a message on his social media: "We patrol the streets only to improve the city's security. If there was a mayor who knew how to make the city better, we wouldn't have to hang around every day." This message was forwarded by a large number of Spider-Man fans. Although it was not explicitly stated, everyone knew that the better mayor he was talking about was George Stacy.

Then, George's proposed community defense policy established a connection with the increasing number of street vigilantes, further winning the favor of voters. He did not completely deny the police, but made clear the boundaries and

told them what they could and could not do. As long as they did not go beyond the limit, doing good deeds was encouraged. If there were things that were beyond the boundaries but needed to be dealt with, the police also set up a special hotline for the vigilantes to use. You know, New York's vigilantes are also citizens and voters, and they welcomed George's open attitude.

Chapter 90 Children's Club

Therefore, in the first election support survey, George Stancy received an astonishing 60% support rate, and it is still on the rise, which shocked many people. An unknown old policeman is about to become the mayor of this super metropolis!

... In Mindy's old lair, she and Laura are busy. What are they doing? Well, Mindy and Laura are getting ready to make new uniforms!

Now that New York City has a large vigilante team, Mindy also wants to join it, and has even thought of a team name: The Beyonder Twins!

Mindy has her own ideas about the new team. For example, the team name "Beyond the Twins" was inspired by the PS game she played, which tells the story of the daily life of a loli with super powers. Mindy thinks this name is very suitable for her and Laura's current status and relationship.

Two little girls with extraordinary abilities, although not real twins, but the relationship between them is like that of real sisters. For Mindy, Laura is her other half in the world. Although Mindy and Laura are more mature than ordinary little girls, at certain moments, they still retain the characteristics of little girls.

They do not hide their love for each other, and are as close as sisters. Girls' minds are sometimes complicated, especially little girls, and adults often find it difficult to understand their thoughts and emotions. But sometimes girls are very simple, especially little girls, who may cheer for a long time because of an ice cream, or smile for a whole day because of a new stuffed toy. The friendship between them is pure and innocent.

Laura did not object nor show any particular excitement to Mindy's invitation to join her in becoming a New York vigilante. In general, she seemed much calmer than Mindy. Since Mindy liked it, it was okay to accompany her, and what

Mindy wanted to do was not a bad thing, so Laura had no need to stop her.

"What do you think of my new uniform?" Mindy made herself a new uniform after outgrowing her old Hit-Girl and Big Daddy outfits.

First of all, let alone her height, which had increased significantly over the past year, her previous suits were now too tight to wear. Besides, if she continued to wear that "Hit-Girl" outfit and go out as a vigilante, the Night Watch would probably come knocking on her door in a few days.

Don't underestimate these people, they are very powerful when they are serious. Mindy knows this very well, so she decided to change her image. This is also one of the reasons why she brought Laura to form a team.

Because she was just a little girl, she was too obvious a target. If there were rumors in the underground of New York City that a cruel and violent little lolita had appeared again, the night watchmen would quickly think of her. In order to solve this problem, Mindy found Laura. One violent lolita was eye-catching, and two were even more eye-catching. But the more eye-catching, the less likely it was to cause speculation and association within the night watchmen.

I have to say that Mindy's idea makes sense. Well, she's just a little too confident. After all, plans in this world often can't keep up with changes.

Mindy's new outfit is no longer the original purple leather jacket with plaid skirt and cape. In her opinion, that kind of dress is a bit outdated.

Now, she needs a super cool outfit. The black leather jacket, along with black leather gloves, is made entirely of cowhide, with crocodile leather inlaid on the shoulders and waist, making the overall look rich in layers and three-dimensionality despite being black.

She sewed a little red artificial leather on the edge of the clothes as decoration, adding a bit of liveliness. This design looks more vivid.

Of course, as a masked hero, a mask is essential. Mindy made her own version based on the eye patch of the popular female character Civet Cat in the comic book Nite Owl.

With a long black wig, Hit-Girl looks completely different from before. Mindy

stands in front of Laura in her new look, expecting her appreciation.

"Cool." Laura praised without reservation. She liked Mindy's new clothes very much. It was indeed well made.

"Not bad, I made the same one for you too. Now we have our own superhero outfits!" Mindy said seriously.

"You spent several days making these, why don't we just buy them ready-made?" Laura asked, pointing to some details on the leather jacket.

"Don't be silly, Laura, a superhero's outfit must be unique. Real superheroes make their own clothes. I've never seen anyone buy ready-made clothes in a store." Mindy took out the clothes prepared for Laura and urged her to change.

"You know Spider-Man? He's the guy in the comic I showed you," Mindy said.

"I know, what's wrong?" Laura asked while changing clothes.

"He made his own clothes, too, although they were terrible at first. He couldn't sew, so he made a faded red hood as a mask, and his family thought he was beaten every day." Mindy adjusted the collar of his leather jacket.

"Even so, Spider-Man has always insisted on making his own clothes. Even though the first few sets looked terrible, like outdated red wrestling suits. But now, you see his outfit has become a classic and even his symbol!"

"That's why superheroes insist on making their own clothes, you know? Because it's unique. In comparison, I've seen another guy." Laura's leather jacket was a little stuck, and Mindy helped her pull it and smoothed out the wrinkles: "His name is Kick-Ass, and his clothes are ridiculously ugly."

"Kick-Ass? What a strange name. Would anyone choose a nickname like that?" Laura was curious.

"He didn't choose it himself, but someone else gave it to him. He got the name because he was beaten up the first time he did something heroic." Mindy shrugged: "His clothes are just a set of ready-made green diving suits, which are so ugly. Believe me, even if he becomes a superhero, he will definitely not have any fans if he dresses like that!"

"Look at why Night Owl in the comics is so popular. He is just an ordinary man, and his opponents are often the patients of Assam Mental Hospital. He can never catch those patients, so they escape and make big news. But Night Owl is still popular." Mindy said seriously.

"To a large extent, it's because of his handsome outfit. Strength is not important. The key is to be able to strike a pose, act cool, be a little artistic, and say something profound. That's how Night Owl won fans. Just like the movie "Night Owl vs. Skeleton Dragon" that was released last year, it tells the story of two mentally ill people who don't talk well, but there are still many people who like it."

Mindy said helplessly, "So, Laura, you see, it's important for a superhero to have a handsome outfit. If your outfit is too ugly, even if you become famous, few toy factories will be willing to produce your peripheral products!"

Laura couldn't help laughing when she heard this: "So, we have to be cool?"

"Of course, babe!" Mindy put her arm around Laura's shoulders as they stood in front of a full-length mirror in their cool new outfits.

The mirror reflects two cool girls wearing tight black leather jackets, long flowing hair, and eye masks that are as mysterious as cat's eyes.

Mindy and Laura are both satisfied with their outfits. The Amazing Twins are officially on the move tonight! Crazy criminals in New York, be careful starting tonight! Because the New York Kids Club is established starting tonight!

New York, a city full of luxury and nightlife, has many places to spend money, such as various bars and some indescribable places.

The main function of these places is to provide a variety of alcoholic beverages. Whether you just want to drink or plan to do something else after drinking, alcohol is always the opening of the night's entertainment.

Since the ancient Egyptians discovered wheat fermentation thousands of years ago and brewed the first cup of wine in human history, this intoxicating liquid has been enthusiastically sought after and welcomed by people. From ancient times to the present, alcohol has been strictly controlled by the government.

In the past, winemaking consumed a lot of grain, which was a strategic resource for the country, so the government had to control winemaking. In modern times, due to various violent incidents and sudden illnesses caused by alcoholism, the government has always controlled alcohol.

The strictest example is Prohibition in the United States during the 2s, which made any drink with an alcohol content of more than % illegal.

This was driven by the Puritans at the time, but also reflected the government's concern about social problems caused by alcohol.

For example, violent incidents caused by drunkenness, or even shootings. In a way, drunk people are very similar to drug addicts in that they cannot control their behavior.

Just like in Russia today, every winter many people freeze to death on the streets due to drunkenness, and there are also incidents of domestic violence.

Some people call Russia a fighting nation, but believe me, you don't want to live with a group of drunk fighting nations.

The US government at that time enacted the Prohibition Act for similar reasons, but of course, it ultimately failed.

You can't stop people from wanting to drink, like what happened today on a bar strip in Queens.

A beautiful girl is drinking with two male companions. It is difficult to judge what the motives of the two boys are in inviting the girl to drink.

They kept toasting the girl: "Jane, today is your first day at work, we should celebrate it."

The boy raised his glass to toast the girl again. The girl named Jane actually didn't want to drink anymore.

She doesn't drink much, and the two people who invited her to drink were helping her find a nursing job.

Being a nurse in a private hospital is a good job, at least the salary is good, so

Jane couldn't refuse their invitation, just to have a couple of drinks. Jane's idea was simple.

But now she does feel that she has drunk too much: "This is the last drink, I have to go home, I drank a little too much today."

Jane felt dizzy and barely finished the last sip of beer, ready to leave and go home.

At this moment, she especially missed the big bed at home and wanted to fall down on it and have a good sleep.

"Hey, Jane, it's still early, not even half past ten, no need to rush back." One of the men said, holding Jane's hand, as if he wanted her to drink more.

"Let go, let go." Jane struggled hard but failed because she was already a little drunk.

"It's okay, let's have some more drinks and we'll take you home later." The two men tried to pull Jane into the bar.

How could Jane possibly contend with two men? She had no choice but to shout, “Let me go!”

But there was no one on the street at this time. No one would be wandering around the streets at this time, so naturally no one could help Jane out.

Just as the two men were about to drag Jane back to the bar, an arm suddenly reached out and opened their hands that were holding Jane.

"Let go! Didn't you hear that this lady doesn't want to drink with you, she wants to go home and rest!" The speaker was a woman wearing a white suit and a white mask.

"If you don't give up, I will call the police now!" The woman who suddenly appeared took out her cell phone and really started calling the police.

This caused the two men to loosen their grip. "Tsk!" They snorted in disdain. Recently, there are more and more women wearing masks like this.

These are the vigilantes that have suddenly emerged on the streets of New York.

Some of them have superpowers, but more are ordinary people. Inspired by the Night Stalker video and the new policing regulations introduced by the New York Police Department, more and more people are joining the ranks of street vigilantes.

"Don't be afraid, ma'am. I'm a street hero officially registered on the 'Night Watch Alliance' website. My name is Moonbird." The woman in white clothes and a mask gave Jane a brief self-introduction.

"When I have time, I come to bar streets like this to make sure those drunk ladies get home safely."

Although Jane was a little dizzy, she still understood what Moonbird said: "Night Watchman? Do you have super powers?"

Chapter 91: Difficult to Conclude

Jane was already a heavy drinker, but she had never noticed it in the bar before. But once she got out into the wind, she couldn't even stand steadily and had to rely on Moonbird to support her to walk.

"Superpowers? Sorry, I don't have any." Moonbird said with a smile, "But I brought a stun gun and pepper spray. Drunk girls in bars are dangerous. One-third of sexual assaults in the United States happen this way. And because of drunkenness, it is usually difficult for the court to determine whether it is sexual assault or consensual."

Yue Niao said seriously: "So I don't think it's a good thing for girls to go out and drink like this."

Jane smiled: "I don't usually drink. It's just that there are special circumstances today. Thank you very much for helping me. I will go..."

Before Jane finished her words, she suddenly covered her mouth and ran to the corner of the alley next to her and vomited violently. She really drank too much.

"Are you okay?" Yue Niao walked into the alley and asked Jane about her condition with concern, while gently patting her back to make her feel more comfortable.

When Yue Niao walked into the alley, the two men who had been urging Jane to drink also appeared. There was a reason why they were drinking so frantically. Now they were interrupted by this lady named Yue Niao, and they were very unhappy. However, Yue Niao was tall and had a good-looking wheat-colored skin. Maybe she got a bargain today?

When the two grown men walked into the alley, they were completely unaware that there was a pair of smart eyes staring at them from above.

Mindy patted Laura's shoulder and said, "Look, our target is here! It's a pity that we can't kill them, otherwise Dad and the others will definitely find out who did it."

Mindy is used to using cruel methods, and her Nightcrawler team can easily find her based on her methods.

"Actually, there's no need to kill them, as that would cause unnecessary trouble. Just teach them a lesson!" Laura didn't like to use such extreme means if it wasn't necessary.

These two unlucky guys don't know yet that they have become the first target of the New York Kids Club.

Mindy and Laura were hiding on the fire escape of an old house. They were wearing black leather clothes and were almost invisible at night. If you didn't look carefully, no one would notice that there were two little girls hiding on the fire escape on the third floor.

The two men who had been pouring wine into Jane walked into the alley. This alley was a dead end, and the only exit was the way in.

Yue Niao's white dress was particularly conspicuous in the dark night. She did this on purpose, because she was not an extraordinary person with superpowers, but just an ordinary woman who practiced some mixed martial arts-like skills after get off work.

The white color makes her more conspicuous, and she will not go to overly dangerous places. From the stun gun and anti-wolf spray she carries with her, it can be seen that she is not the kind of person who solves problems by force. She mostly does things within her ability.

After watching the short video made by Night Walker, Yue Niao had this idea. Because for Yue Niao from Chelsea, she herself is a victim of sexual assault.

The perpetrator was her high school classmate when she was still a high school student. Before graduating from high school, her classmates held a party.

Student parties are often more fun than school proms because alcohol is always available at these parties. For American teenagers, the legal drinking age is 22,

which is too strict.

Because she was drunk, everyone was drunk. It is impossible to determine whether it was premeditated or voluntary. The punishment for those male students was just community service, which is a light punishment.

Because of this incident, Yue Niao moved from Chelsea to New York. After hearing the declaration of the night watchman, she recalled many past events and decided to stand up and help those women who were also violated.

Yue Niao uses her off-get off work time to help women near the bar street who appear drunk and unwilling to get involved with men, ensuring they return home safely.

In contrast, the striking white clothes of the Moon Bird easily attract attention on the street. If someone entangles with it, it is easy for others to notice it. Therefore, so far, the Moon Bird has not encountered any real danger.

Of course, the two men who forced Jian to drink today did not seem easy to deal with.

If you like something that belongs to someone else, take it and you will always find a lawyer to defend you. - Frederick II

This is what a tyrant said more than a thousand years ago, and some people still believe it today. Just like these two guys who are already half drunk and confused, a little nurse and a masked woman, how much trouble can they cause?

These two people were Jane's seniors in college. They studied different majors. The only thing they had in common was that they were both very wealthy. This was not the first time they had done this. Anyway, they could solve these problems by finding a good lawyer. At most, they would have to pay a little more money, which was no big deal.

They had no shortage of money to hire a lawyer, especially when drunk, it was the hardest to make a conclusion. The two were not afraid. As long as they could make her faint quietly before Yue Niao noticed, everything would be easy to solve.

One of them pulled out a stun gun from his pocket. This thing can instantly

knock people unconscious if it is within five meters. After dealing with the moon bird, the drunk Jane is naturally no problem.

But they forgot that they were also very drunk at the moment. Although they tried to approach Yue Niao and Jane as quietly as possible, Yue Niao, who was patting Jane's back, still heard the noise when he was five or six meters away from them.

"What do you want to do?!" Yue Niao turned around and saw the two drunks approaching with ill intentions. She immediately pulled out the stun gun from her waist and prepared to teach these two bastards a lesson.

"Damn it!" The man holding the stun gun cursed and fired immediately. However, due to the distance, Yue Niao was prepared and missed.

Yue Niao also shot at him. "Ah!" The man screamed in pain, but because Yue Niao's stun gun did not hit his body directly, but only hit his leather jacket, the man struggled a few times and shook off the stun gun's contact pin.

What Yueniao bought was just a civilian version of the electric shock gun, not a professional Taser, which lacked power and accuracy.

Her resistance angered the two men, and Yue Niao felt that she could not deal with two adult strong men alone, so she quickly pressed the alarm on her waist, which was a signal to contact other members of the organization for help.

At the same time, she hid the pepper spray in her hand. As long as the two men dared to come forward, she would use pepper spray to make them taste extreme pain. She only needed to delay for a few minutes and wait for other people in the organization to arrive.

"Bitch!" The man who had just been electrocuted cursed and pounced on Yueniao, while the other man found a piece of wood by the wall and decided to give this woman who dared to resist a beating.

The man who attacked Yue Niao seemed to have practiced boxing, and his attack was very powerful. He protected his vital parts and head, making Yue Niao's pepper spray useless. The other man waving the wooden board was too far away from her, and it was even more ineffective.

Moonbird could only adopt the mixed martial arts stance she had learned and prepare for a head-on confrontation. If she ran away now, she could foresee what would happen to the drunk Jane.

The man's punches were fast and powerful, and despite being drunk, his force was still accurate. The whip kick effect started from the heel and was transmitted to his fist through the rotation of the waist and legs. The power was very fast.

On the other side, the wooden board swung towards Yue Niao with the sound of wind, blocking her escape route. Yue Niao gritted her teeth, it seemed that she had no choice but to fight hard. Since she chose to become a street vigilante, she was ready to bear the possible pain.

But since she made the choice, Yue Niao has never regretted it. Because someone has to stand up and do something. Not everyone can be a cowardly quail. Yue Niao raised her arms, prepared for the coming pain, and decided to attack the man who was punching first, force him to retreat, and then resist the counterattack of the wooden board.

Well, stupid move. Mindy on the fire escape shook her head. This woman obviously had no fighting experience. "Get started, girl." Mindy patted Laura on the shoulder and jumped down from the fire escape on the third floor. Laura followed closely behind.

Two black figures descended from the sky. Mindy jumped down from the third floor and rolled over to absorb the force. She was unharmed. She slid directly under the punching man and kicked him hard in the ankle.

Let me just say that Mindy was wearing hard-soled shoes. Crack! In the dark night, the sound of a broken ankle was clearly audible. The man who was so aggressive just now suddenly lost his balance due to the pain and could only hold on to the wall next to him.

The moment Laura fell from the sky, she stretched out her claws and swung them. A cold light flashed, and before people could see what it was, the wooden board that was originally swung towards the moon bird instantly broke into several pieces.

Before the man could react, Laura punched him in the stomach. Although the little wolf girl was young, her strength was no less than that of an adult. Her fist

was steady and accurate, hitting the man's stomach directly.

My stomach, which had drunk a lot of wine that night, was hit by this and I started vomiting instantly.

Yue Niao was prepared to be hurt, but before she felt the pain, she heard the wailing of the two men.

She looked carefully and saw that the two girls in black tight leather jackets who had just fallen from the sky in a flash had already knocked down the two arrogant men. The key point was that the two girls didn't look very old. Judging from their figures, Yue Niao even suspected that they were under fourteen years old. And judging from their clothes, they looked like twins?

"You are wearing white clothes and have no fighting skills. Do you know how dangerous your behavior just now was?" Before Yue Niao could say anything, she heard one of the little lolis in black leather jacket complain to her.

Chapter 92 Huge Resources

"You actually tried to block the board with your arms. Your upper and lower arms would break into three pieces. Then you would be beaten up by those two bastards, and then something bad would happen! Although your original intention of becoming a vigilante was good, you lack experience! This will cause you to suffer a lot of unnecessary injuries."

The guy with the injured ankle tried to run away, so Mindy chased him and kicked his other ankle as well: "You still want to run away! See, girl in white, you don't have enough experience dealing with this kind of villain, and you're too gentle. Even if you don't want to use a gunpowder gun, at least you should have a special Taser, which is much more effective than an ordinary electric shock gun. Also, I see the pepper spray in your hand, this brand is not spicy enough. You should buy the Mexican one, the kind that can make people live worse than death for three days!"

"I can tell you the brands of these things and where you can buy them legally in New York in a moment. Your equipment is too unprofessional even for a vigilante!" Mindy circled around Moonbird twice and criticized him bluntly. After all, Mindy has always been among professionals, and she was very upset to see a half-baked person like Moonbird.

Because Laura was present, Mindy was especially careful to control her words. Otherwise, she was very good at using some sharp words.

"Ah?" Yue Niao never thought that one day she would be criticized by a little girl. As an adult, Yue Niao found it hard to accept, so she said in defense: "I have informed my friends and they will be here in two minutes. I am just stalling for time."

"You have a team? What's the name of your team?" Mindy asked curiously. Laura crossed her arms and watched Mindy's complaints about Moonbird quietly. She thought this scene was quite interesting.

Yue Niao glanced at Mindy. Mindy's complaints and professional accusations just now made her a little embarrassed to say the name of the team.

“Why can’t you tell me?” Mindy waved her hand. “If you don’t want to tell me, forget it.”

Yue Niao felt that it would be impolite not to say it, but it was a bit embarrassing to say the name of the team. It was not because the name was bad, but mainly because she felt that the name was too high-end and not suitable for amateurs like them. She hesitated for a long time and said, "My team is called: Justice League."

"Huh?" Mindy looked at Moonbird in disbelief. A group of amateur vigilantes actually called themselves the Justice League? The Night Watch should just change their name to the Guardians of the Earth!

Yue Niao was also helpless about this name that was full of middle school feeling. This was not her choice, it was her name before she joined this organization.

Justice League, Moonbird would not use his full name if it wasn't necessary.

She usually prefers to use the code name "Alliance" to represent the entire organization.

"Yes, that's the full name. It was called this before I joined." Moonbird looked at Mindy's astonished expression and quickly clarified that the name had nothing to do with her.

It took Mindy a moment to come to her senses. Even Laura was surprised that a group of amateur vigilantes would come up with such a name.

This name is really too "big", no matter what the meaning is.

"How did you join such an organization? It sounds like a concentration camp for transvestites." Mindy couldn't help but complain: "I feel like I'm seeing a group of weirdos in strange costumes. It's so immature!"

"Is there any psychopath in your team who likes to go out in underwear?" Yue Niao immediately shook his head and said no.

"What about the women who walk around the streets in bikinis in the colors of the American flag during the day?" Yue Niao continued to shake his head.

"Is there anyone who dresses himself up like a half-robot and never hides that he is a cute boy?" Yue Niao said firmly: "No!"

Mindy breathed a sigh of relief. It seemed that they were not a group of hopeless cross-dressers. "If you don't have these, there shouldn't be any crazy people wearing green clothes in your team!"

This time, Yue Niao did not shake her head immediately. She hesitated. Although someone had bad taste, he was her teammate after all. It seemed bad to dislike his taste, right?

Finally, Yue Niao nodded hesitantly: "Indeed, he is our convener. And I think he is coming soon."

Moonbird said, pointing to the alley. Mindy and Laura looked in the direction of her finger and saw a man in a tight green diving suit with yellow stripes running towards them, holding two heavy-looking metal batons in his hands. He had already seen Moonbird in white in the alley.

"Mooniao, are you okay? I'll go save you!" As he said that, he rushed towards Mindy and Laura with a short stick in his hand.

"Wait! Wait! Kick-Ass, it's not these two girls!" Yue Niao shouted as soon as he saw that something was wrong.

"What?" Kick-Ass, who was attacking Mindy, was stunned. As a result, he was kicked on the knee by the little loli and took several steps back.

The person who came was none other than Kick-Ass David. Compared to his past life, he has now undergone tremendous changes.

In the original story, he is just an insignificant supporting character in "Hit-Girl" and can be almost ignored.

From every perspective, he is a very weak character. He was beaten down by a few thugs when he first appeared, and he didn't even have a chance to resist.

But in this universe, due to the chain reaction triggered by Li Jie, David got the chance to change his destiny.

For example, now he has become Gunshou's personal disciple and is receiving formal training in the Chunzhen Society.

Gun Shou taught him many skills, including ninjutsu and fighting techniques, without reservation, because David was different from his other two apprentices.

The skinny eldest apprentice, Rock, is an orphan who has been raised since childhood, while the second apprentice, Matt Daredevil, has lost his father and is blind.

It can be said that these two disciples have a lot of dark sides deep in their hearts, but they have not yet erupted.

Therefore, Gunshou has always been a little worried about them.

As Gunshou grew older, he began to distribute the vast resources under his control.

The eldest apprentice Rock will inherit the Innocence Society, while the merged Hand will be handed over to Matt Daredevil.

David, the youngest apprentice, seemed to have gained nothing and received no benefits or inheritance, but this was only on the surface.

Because Gunshou left the most important legacy to David - that was the training method he had never taught to Panshi and Matt, the method of practicing internal energy.

This is a practice that originated from Kunlun in China, but during the practice one needs to constantly challenge one’s inner demons.

Gunshou nearly died from this kind of practice when he was young. He was worried that once the dark demons in Matt and Panshi's hearts erupted, they would not be able to control their own violence.

Compared with his two senior brothers, David is an extremely simple person.

Although he came from a poor family in Brooklyn and his mother died early.

He was often bullied at school. However, this teenager, who seemed to be full of darkness and resentment towards society, was not defeated by life.

Instead of becoming negative, he became more positive and optimistic. This is evident from the fact that before he met Gunshou, he dared to do justice in a one-piece diving suit.

Whether you call it chuunibyou or the restlessness of adolescence, he has extraordinary courage and responsibility.

He dares to do things that others dare not do. Although he is timid sometimes, his heart is sincere.

He didn't care about Gun Shou's inheritance, although David's family was not rich. Living at the bottom of Brooklyn, he might never have the opportunity to splurge in Manhattan's high-end shopping malls.

But David doesn't care, he pursues inner satisfaction more than material things. Just like the night watchman, he wants to form a heroic team of his own!

"So, what are your names? Are you willing to join our organization? We have officially registered with the Night's Watch." David rubbed his leg. Mindy's kick just now was really heavy.

David should be grateful for the training over the past year. If it were an ordinary person, Mindy's kick would have been enough to break his bones.

Mindy took a closer look at the guy in front of him, although he was indeed annoyed by his indiscriminate attack on him.

But he knew this guy, and Night Walker had even treated him to a meal.

"Leaving aside the question of whether to join the organization or not, Mindy just wants to ask one question: How did your organization's name get successfully registered with the Night's Watch?" Mindy was puzzled by this.

In fact, this is due to Lee Kit's acquaintance with Kick-Bian. When Kick-Bian was beaten for the first time, it was Lee Kit who came to his rescue.

Later, David also provided Li Jie with information about the Hand. In addition, Li Jie had a good relationship with the Innocence Society, and gradually became familiar with David.

Although this kid has some middle school syndrome, he is essentially a good kid. This is how Li Jie evaluates David.

Zeng Chu, who was in charge of registering the Night Watch Alliance, originally intended to reject the organization name submitted by Kick-Bian.

Because this name seems too presumptuous. But Li Jie said: "That's good, let's approve the name of this child's organization."

Although Li Jie was not an American comics fanatic in his previous life, he also knew about an organization as famous as Marvel's Avengers, the iconic DC team, the Justice League.

This world has no Superman, no Batman, and of course no Wonder Woman. Without the Big Three of the Justice League, there is naturally no Justice League.

But now, there is a group of teenagers with middle school syndrome who want to inherit the spirit of the Justice League. Li Jie fully agrees with this.

Is there anything better than this way of passing on the spirit of DC in the Marvel world?

Compared to Marvel, which has only become popular in recent years, Li Jie grew up watching Batman and Superman cartoons when he was a child.

Therefore, Li Jie's love for DC is deep!

Well, one more thing, Kick-Ass' clothing taste is similar to Superman's. One wears a wetsuit, the other wears his underwear on the outside. Isn't that the same taste?!

Clark Kent, a reporter for Metropolitan Star, wears black-framed glasses and red underwear as outerwear. Don't worry, although you are in a different universe, your spirit and dressing style have a perfect successor in this universe.

Please rest assured that I will make the Justice League flourish in the Marvel world, let more amateur vigilantes join the Justice League, and let people know what kind of organization it is.

This is my deepest love for you, DC! Li Jie thought as he clenched his fist.

Chapter 93 Romance Debt

Li Jie is currently unaware of Hit-Girl Mindy's current activities in New York and her chance encounter with Kick-Ass David. Although Mindy is considered the mascot of the Night Watch team, we can't always keep an eye on her 24 hours a day, especially since she is a very independent girl.

As long as it is reasonable, adults usually let her make decisions, unlike some parents who use parental authority to demand their children. Otherwise, Hit-Girl might be ruined. Mindy's uniqueness is largely due to her independent personality, which cannot be erased. Smooth her edges?

Come on, there are enough people in the world who don't do anything, why make a cute girl mediocre? Sharp edges and a don't-care attitude are how Hit-Girl survives in this world, making her unique.

So, the first friendly meeting between the Uncanny Twins and the Justice League, the exchange of ideas between the two leaders, and even some mutually beneficial agreements, all of which were kept in the dark by Li Jie and his partners. They all just believed that Mindy had found a good friend. Frank was very happy about this, even happier than Damon "Big Daddy", as if he was Mindy's biological father.

Li Jie also expressed his congratulations, but he had more important things to do, such as understanding the situation of the desperate virus.

"Extremis virus? No, I haven't heard of it." Discussing this matter with Iron Man, because the explosion that almost happened in the stadium made Li Jie first think that Myron might be related to the Extremis virus, and this virus seemed to have some connection with Tony Stark.

It seemed that it was caused by a romantic debt Tony owed more than ten years ago? Li Jie could no longer remember the specific details.

"It has the ability to regenerate limbs, and it is accompanied by unstable energy. If it explodes, it will release a large amount of energy and high temperature." Li Jie handed Tony Peter the research report. This report was obtained by analyzing the genes and blood of Myron's severed hand. The valuable information is mainly concentrated on neurons, which are the most vulnerable part. Peter can't get much useful data.

After Tony took the information, he began to read it carefully. His eyes were focused and sharp, as if he wanted to see through the papers to see the secrets hidden in them.

As time went by, Tony's brows gradually furrowed. "It doesn't look like genetic modification..." he muttered to himself. According to the gene map and DNA sequence in the data, no abnormal changes were found. All the data showed that this was a normal human genome, no different from ordinary people.

Tony fell into deep thought, and he began to recall similar cases he had encountered before. In past experience, genetic modification often leads to obvious gene mutations or special sequence characteristics, but the data in front of him showed no such signs at all. Could it be that his judgment was wrong? Or is there some other factor involved?

With doubts, Tony once again reviewed the information in his hand. He checked every data one by one, analyzed every detail, and did not miss any possible clues. Gradually, some subtle differences began to emerge. Although it seemed normal overall, the gene expression in certain specific areas seemed slightly different. This discovery made Tony very excited. Perhaps it was these tiny differences that were the key to solving the mystery!

"?" Li Jie always thought that the desperate virus was a product of genetic modification.

"The enhancement of neurons may indicate the presence of some irritant substance, such as a foreign drug. I know several experts in biology and pharmacology, and I will discuss similar issues with them." Tony scratched his head. These fields were not his expertise. "I will study the information carefully. If possible, it would be best if you could give me a sample."

Li Jie nodded deeply, agreeing: "Well... there is indeed no problem." After all, he knew very well that no matter what, the extremely terrifying desperate virus

would find them sooner or later. Even if the timeline of the entire world has undergone tremendous changes and modifications, Li Jie still cannot be 100% sure that everything else will change and adjust accordingly. At least for now, this extremely terrifying desperate virus has appeared in front of everyone earlier than the originally expected time point. This made Li Jie feel a strong sense of uneasiness in his heart, as if something bad was about to happen.

He is not interested in following the plot of "Iron Man 3" and making Tony fear weapons and finally defeat the villain as a mortal, not as a superhero. Just watch the movie. Now Tony is his important ally and the main funder of the Illuminati. If Tony suddenly becomes disgusted with the Illuminati, it will be interesting.

After discussing the Extremis virus issue with Iron Man Tony Stark, Li Jie had other matters to deal with regarding the comic company.

Recently, Deadpool has been looking for Li Jie because his first issue of his personal comic has not been released yet, and he is just making cameos in other hero publications. Without a personal publication, Deadpool will not get dividends, and more importantly, without a personal publication, there will be no high-value IP copyrights, not to mention the big movies and anime peripherals that Deadpool is looking forward to. All of this is related to what Deadpool cares about most - US dollars!

For Deadpool, who wants to buy an island in Spain and invite a group of hot girls in bikinis to play with him, he will not join the Avengers of S.H.I.E.L.D. if he has no money.

Therefore, Deadpool's solo publication can't be delayed any longer, but Li Jie still has the copyright of Hawkeye. A million investment can't go to waste!

So Li Jie found Ivy, an important painter in the company.

"Ivy, you know, the copyright of Hawkeye cannot rot in the hands of the company. After all, one million is not a small amount of money. But Hawkeye's reputation is not good at the moment. Although it needs to be refrigerated for a while, it cannot be refrigerated indefinitely. We need to take the initiative to increase Hawkeye's popularity." Li Jie said to Ivy earnestly.

"So, Boss, you want me to be the editor-in-chief of Hawkeye's personal magazine?" Ivy felt that he understood what Li Jie meant.

"Yeah, almost. But it's not the kind that is serialized within the company." Li Jie said seriously: "The release of the Deadpool issue also needs preheating and accumulation of popularity. We need to create some selling points, the story of the feud between Deadpool and Hawkeye."

Ivy listened attentively, and Li Jie also said frankly: "I understand that you have drawn a lot of BL fan works on the Internet, and you have a group of loyal fans. Regarding the story of Deadpool and Hawkeye, I think we can make some changes. We don't have to make their relationship too rigid. We can change it to a love-hate relationship. Do you understand what I mean? Of course, this is not voluntary labor, and the company will pay you accordingly."

Li Jie had made it very clear, and Ivy naturally understood. Just as she is still keen on drawing Spider-Man comics, she maintains a high enthusiasm for this type of creation.

But the boss took the initiative to make such a request, and paid for it, which made Ivy very happy. In an instant, many ideas emerged in her mind about why Deadpool only asked Hawkeye for salary and threw all the dirty water on him.

Why does Deadpool do so many extreme things, such as throwing feces, welding doors, etc.? There are so many contradictions to explore here!

Thinking of this, Ivy got goose bumps with excitement! But she still had some concerns: "Boss, Deadpool and Hawkeye are both official characters. Two years ago, I was sued for drawing Captain Rogers' fan fiction and was accused of defaming official heroes. Although I was only sentenced to community service in the end, if I am sued again, I will have a criminal record."

Ivy's concerns are not unfounded. No one wants to have an indelible stain on their record, no matter what crime they committed.

Li Jie waved his hand: "It doesn't matter, I have already talked to Deadpool. He doesn't mind anything in order to become famous. As long as you can make him popular, you can draw him however you want. As for Hawkeye, Deadpool promised me that he will not give Hawkeye a chance to resist."

Hearing Li Jie's assurance, Ivy immediately stood up: "That's no problem! Boss, I think I have to start working right away! Oh, I also have to call Gwen, we need to discuss the plot and write the script together tonight!"

Li Jie nodded to signal Ivy that she could leave. Looking at her excited look, Li Jie sighed in his heart: Fujoshi are really scary, especially when Gwen was Peter's girlfriend.

I was just thinking about Peter and Gwen, and the next second, Peter Parker (Little Bug) walked into Li Jie's office with his face covered.

He lazily fell on the sofa, covering his face as he said, "I think I need to stay at your house for a few days."

"Why? College hasn't started yet, don't you live with Uncle Ben?" Li Jie asked curiously.

"Not possible in the next few days, you see." Peter loosened his hand that was covering half of his face, and saw a huge purple mark on it. Professionally speaking, this was subcutaneous hemorrhage caused by external impact.

"Wow!" Li Jie said in surprise: "Encountered a tough criminal? Do you need my help?" His first reaction was that Peter had offended a powerful opponent.

After all, Peter Parker, who has spider-sense, could dodge bullets, but now he was hit directly in the face and seemed unable to fight back.

"No, it wasn't the criminals who beat me." Peter shook his head.

"Who is that? Uncle Ben or Aunt May? Are they angry because you got into trouble outside? But they are not the kind of parents who would hit people." Li Jie was confused.

"It wasn't them." Peter stammered, "It was Gwen who hit me. She used all her strength. I couldn't dodge at the time, and I had to take the beating to make her calm down. She is very angry now, and I have to apologize tomorrow, and I will probably get another beating. I can't face the questions from Uncle Ben and Aunt May if I go home with injuries every day."

"Huh?" Li Jie's first reaction to Peter's statement was disbelief. After more than a year of contact, he thought he knew Gwen.

She is smart, elegant, independent and very rational. She may quarrel with Peter over something, as quarrels between lovers are common. But she will never hit

anyone. She is an elegant girl, not a violent girlfriend.

Unless Peter made a mistake that made her so angry that she lost her mind.

"How did you succeed in angering Gwen?" Li Jie was a little curious. Gwen was able to hit Peter, and Peter didn't dare to dodge or refute, and even planned to apologize tomorrow. This meant that Peter must have done something that made Gwen extremely dissatisfied.

"You must promise not to tell anyone what you saw!" Peter reminded Li Jie first.

Li Jie nodded and said he would keep it a secret. Peter lifted the collar of his shirt and let Li Jie look at his neck. There was a bright red mark on his neck. It was not Peter's birthmark, but a new mark that had appeared in the past two days.

If Li Jie is not mistaken, this should be the legendary kiss mark? The kiss mark itself is not a big deal, after all, Peter has a girlfriend. But from Gwen's reaction and Peter's current attitude, Li Jie can be sure of one thing.

This hickey was obviously not left by Gwen, otherwise she wouldn't be so angry. Peter must have accidentally revealed this hickey during the date, and Gwen happened to see it, which made her furious. And the usually obedient Peter Parker actually played the Shura Field game at this time?

"So, you cheated?" Li Jie looked at Peter, his tone suddenly becoming somewhat unpredictable.

Chapter 94: Give up

Li Jie's suspicious look made Peter feel uneasy. He wanted to defend himself but didn't know where to start.

Li Jie did not ask about it, because whoever asks about this kind of thing will be in trouble. There is no right or wrong in love. When Li Jie saw the kiss mark on Peter's neck, he instinctively thought that Peter had betrayed Gwen.

The specific process and reasons are not important. Infidelity is infidelity. The principle applies to different genders.

Li Jie didn't have much hope that Peter would ask Gwen for forgiveness. It's like a boy coming back from a business trip and finding his girlfriend hanging out with someone else. What can he do? Of course he would choose to forgive her! Haha.

To Gwen, Peter's current predicament is like a cuckold. Men can be cuckolded, and women can be cuckolded, and Gwen is obviously very concerned about the fact that Peter is cuckolding her.

"Gwen only punched you once, it's unbelievable." Li Jie looked at the deep kiss marks on Peter's neck and was amazed. How affectionate it must be. Spider-Man, don't tell me you were forced. I don't believe it! This woman kissed your neck for at least several seconds. With your reaction speed and strength, there is no reason why you can't break free. Unless someone like Wonder Woman tied you up with the Lasso of Truth.

"I heard that Gwen is good at chemistry and biology, which is higher than your level." Li Jie said cluelessly, which made Peter a little confused: "What do you mean?"

"I mean, she just beat you and didn't intend to use poison or chemicals against you. I'm so lucky for you. At least you're still alive." Li Jie said seriously.

"Haha." Peter laughed dryly: "I don't think Gwen is that terrible. She should be forgiven if she apologizes a few more times... I think so." Peter himself was not sure.

Li Jie looked at Peter deeply and said, "Do you think you're done after getting beaten? If Gwen is still willing to beat you tomorrow, it will be good news for you. But if she doesn't do it." Li Jie made a gesture that said you're done.

"Why?" Peter was puzzled. But Li Jie was too lazy to explain. It didn't matter why Peter cheated. For the time being, Li Jie let Peter live at home.

The next day Peter went to see Gwen, and Li Jie was not optimistic about it.

The deeper the love, the heavier the hatred. Gwen's feelings for Peter are real and intense.

For this girl, this may be the first time she has been so committed to a relationship.

Since they have known each other and fallen in love for more than a year, even outsiders like Li Jie and Harry can see how much Gwen cherishes this relationship.

Putting aside the secret of Peter being Spider-Man, just looking at Peter and Gwen's own conditions, no one thinks they are a perfect match.

Yes, Peter is handsome and intelligent. As an ordinary person, he will become an outstanding scientist or scholar in the future, which is already a remarkable achievement.

But everyone also looks at Gwen, this girl is beautiful, with golden hair, blue eyes, and long legs. She has always been the object of pursuit of boys in school.

Moreover, she is as smart as she is beautiful. During her internship at Osborne Group, she was the best intern and the leader of the entire team. New York University sent her an admission letter in advance, not only New York University, but also Brown University and Cambridge University in the UK.

It can be said that Gwen is as intelligent as Peter, and even better in some aspects.

Looking at the family background, Peter's parents are both dead, and he was raised by his uncle and aunt. The family is considered middle class, but the annual income is $80,000. After deducting various taxes and loans, the actual available money is not much. Therefore, Aunt May has to budget carefully every month to set aside a budget for Peter's future tuition.

Gwen's father, Sheriff George, started out as a policeman, but after thirty years of hard work, he has risen to the position of Deputy Commissioner of the New York City Police Department. Even without Li Jie's push for him to run for mayor, he is still an influential figure in New York, a city with a population of 26 million, just by virtue of his position as Deputy Commissioner.

When Gwen was born, George already had considerable power in the police department, and as Gwen grew up, his status continued to rise. It can be said that Gwen was born into a wealthy and prestigious family, and she herself was an out-and-out upper-class lady.

Gwen is a real white, rich and beautiful woman, but when she fell in love with Peter, Peter was not yet tall, rich and handsome. Her father George has always disliked Peter because he is a bit slick. George has talked to Gwen about Peter many times, and Gwen did not hesitate to have a big fight with her father for this. You know, Gwen has been closest to and admired her father the most since she was a child. Compared with the superheroes that have emerged in recent years, Gwen's patron saint has always been her father George, because this old policeman has been guarding the city for 30 years. In Gwen's heart, George's status far exceeds any so-called superhero.

If Gwen had to choose her hero, she would have chosen her father without hesitation. As a daughter who was deeply loved by her father and always well-behaved, she actually said to her father for Peter: "If you don't want to see me, I can move out." This was a very destructive statement, which hit George hard, and he never asked about Gwen and Peter again.

Gwen has invested far more in this relationship than Peter. Others will only envy Peter for having a girlfriend like Gwen, and Gwen's upper-class friends may not say anything on the surface, but they will gossip about it in private. Some people say that Peter is just good-looking and may be planning to rely on Gwen for a living; others say that Peter is particularly good at something, so Gwen likes him. In short, Gwen must be blind to fall in love with Peter Parker!

It is conceivable how much pressure Gwen endured to stand firmly by Peter's side. When she saw the kiss mark on Peter's neck, her heart was broken. All the pressure and rumors completely destroyed her at that moment. After returning home, she cried alone in her room all night.

The next day, when Peter found Gwen, he tried to make his tone sound light: "Gwen, listen to me, some things are not..."

"No, Peter Parker." Gwen said calmly. She had beaten Peter yesterday and was too tired to do it again today: "I think it's better for us to separate." After saying that, she forced herself not to cry, pushed Peter away, and walked away without looking back.

Peter stayed there in a daze, unable to believe what he heard. Gwen really broke up with him, and her attitude was firm, there was no room for redemption! At this time, Peter finally understood the meaning of Li Jie's words "If Gwen is willing to beat you, it's good news."

Peter Parker really wanted to die at this moment.

In Li Jie's current residence. Today is a working day, Xianyu needs to go out to work, and the beautiful female wizard also has to go out to help Gu Yi find a successor. The huge house became empty in an instant, with only Li Jie, Harry and Peter sitting on the sofa in the living room, the three of them sitting face to face, without saying a word.

Peter lowered his head and looked like he had just cried. Li Jie and Harry sat opposite him solemnly, with no intention of comforting him at all, especially Harry, who looked a little angry.

He patted Peter's back hard, with such force that it made a thumping sound. He was teaching Peter a lesson seriously: "Are you crazy, Peter Parker? I've known Gwen since she was an intern at Osborn Corporation in high school. I've never seen a girl as outstanding as her! And I've never seen her fall in love with other boys!"

Harry stood up, pulled Peter up and threw him back on the sofa: "I introduced you to each other because I thought you were a good guy and could match a good girl. Look what you have done now!" Harry's anger made Li Jie glance at him sideways, but Harry didn't notice.

As Harry said, Gwen is excellent in all aspects, so she attracted Harry's attention at the beginning of the Osborne Group. After all, it is his family's business. Li Jie is not sure whether Harry had thought about pursuing Gwen two years ago, but Harry is obviously not the type Gwen likes. Gwen's attitude towards Harry is just like an ordinary friend. Despite this, they are still very good friends. Without Harry's matchmaking, Peter would not have known Gwen so quickly.

Perhaps it was because of his failure that Harry thought of introducing this good girl to his good friends. Li Jie still remembered that the first time Peter met Gwen and the lunch party with everyone were arranged by Harry.

It seems that this matter is much more complicated than he thought. Li Jie pinched the bridge of his nose and relaxed the acupuncture points around his eyes. It was simply too ridiculous. A superhero blockbuster turned into a ridiculous idol drama. Li Jie secretly complained.

"Okay, Harry. Peter is Gwen's boyfriend, and you are Mary Jane's boyfriend." Li Jie's light words immediately calmed down the originally angry Harry, and he snorted twice on the sofa.

"Stop dwelling on those useless things. So Gwen really decided to break up with you?" Li Jie rubbed his head in pain. Peter now looked lifeless.

He bowed his head and nodded.

"So you are really two-timing now?" Li Jie asked seriously.

Peter looked up at them, hesitant, but finally nodded: "Yes."

"Ha!" Li Jie was speechless. Peter Parker, who was always well-behaved, was actually two-timing. It was really eye-opening. Now, Li Jie didn't even sympathize with Peter Parker. Since he had taken this step, it was reasonable for him to be dumped after being exposed.

Harry turned his head away and didn't look at Peter again. Seeing that his two old friends didn't stand on his side, Peter was a little anxious: "I can't lose Gwen."

Chapter 95 Black Cat Female Thief

"Don't you have a little lover?" Harry silently turned on the TV and switched to the rebroadcast of "Hell's Kitchen Season 11", just in time to hear Gordon Ramsay cursing, as if he had spoken for him.

You are eating what is in your bowl, but you are still envious of what is in the pot. Do you think starting a harem is as easy as reading a novel on Qidian? Peter Parker, you are still too naive!

"Please help me! I was really wrong! I can't let Gwen go!" Peter pleaded with his two friends. His tone was sincere with a hint of sadness.

Li Jie touched his chin and said, "Then at least tell us how you got the mark on your neck. How did you get involved with another woman? To be honest, Peter, although we are good friends, if you are just playing around, I also think it is right for Gwen to leave you."

"After all, it's you who's wrong now, not her." Harry also agreed with Li Jie's point of view. "That's right, Mr. Parker, tell us who you were with and why you forgot that you had a real girlfriend."

Peter looked at his friends, who all looked serious and seemed unwilling to help without a clear explanation. He hesitated for a moment and had to speak.

That was about a month ago. As New York's most popular and down-to-earth superhero, Spider-Man travels through the streets of New York every day, fighting all kinds of crimes.

This is also the difference between him and other members of the night watch team. Li Jie and Frank are more inclined to deal with underground organizations and criminals that are difficult for the police to catch. As for patrolling and catching thieves every day, they are not very interested.

Since working with the New York police, George and Spider-Man have reached a kind of tacit understanding. Peter still browses the police network, but no longer interferes with planned operations.

Most of the time, he would observe from a distance, and if he was sure the police could handle the situation themselves, he would leave. He would only intervene when the police were unable to handle an emergency or when the police's life was threatened.

In this way, the relationship between Spider-Man and the police became harmonious, and George was also happy to cooperate with such a Spider-Man.

But recently the New York police encountered troubles - a major art thief appeared in the city and the collections of many wealthy people and artists were stolen.

Among these treasures, there are not only many famous paintings handed down from the Renaissance, but also some extremely rare ancient porcelains. The most eye-catching one is the Ru kiln porcelain from the Song Dynasty! There are only more than 30 pieces of this kind of porcelain in the world. It can be said to be a rare treasure and a priceless treasure! Each one is enough to make people stunned and amazed! They represent the superb craftsmanship and unique aesthetic style of that era. Their historical and artistic value is simply inestimable. Owning such a porcelain is undoubtedly the best proof of the owner's status and taste.

The rich and the artists were furious. They were all upper class people and the stolen artworks meant a lot to them. So they jointly put pressure on the police to catch the thieves as soon as possible and recover the stolen artworks.

This was supposed to be the duty of the police, not to mention the urging of many people involved. This forced George to go all out to deal with the case.

However, ideals are full of hope, but reality is very skinny. After several ambushes, the police did not even see the shadow of the thief. The only thing they were sure of was that the thief was a woman, and she was quite famous in the art circle.

The consecutive failures made George passive at the critical moment of the mayoral election. Out of concern for his father-in-law, or the mentality of being

nosy, Peter browsed the police network again and learned about the latest operation arrangement.

He decided to assist the police in catching the art thief - the female thief named Black Cat!

Black Cat's real name is Filiasy Hardy, a lady with shiny white hair, tall figure and stunning face.

She fits the modern definition of beauty and sexiness, unlike girls like Gwen or Mary Jane. She is an absolute sex symbol.

She was not short of money. Stealing was just a hobby for her to satisfy her collecting habit.

Filiasi's father was very wealthy and left her a generous inheritance before his death. She herself was also a graduate of Empire State University.

Even if she donated all the inheritance left by her father to the foundation, she would still be able to get enough income every year to live a wealthy upper-class life.

However, one movie that had a profound impact on her as a child was The Italian Job, starring Catherine Zeta-Jones and Sean Connery, which tells the story of a world-class thief.

The heroine's outstanding skills and the sense of accomplishment after each successful theft deeply touched Filiasi and touched a chord deep in her heart.

Perhaps many people have experienced that kind of middle school period full of fantasy and imagination deep in their hearts. At that time, we may have a strong interest in certain images or characters, such as feeling that gangster bosses have unparalleled charm. They control power, wealth and endless glory, which makes people yearn for them; or we are attracted by the cold-blooded killers in the movies. Their handsome appearance, extraordinary skills and invincible presence seem to ignite the desire for power and excellence deep in our hearts. So, we hold these seemingly unattainable dreams, looking forward to growing into such a powerful and awe-inspiring existence one day.

Such thoughts may have existed in the minds of many young boys and girls, but

they were too embarrassed to speak of them when they grew up, let alone realize them.

Filiasi is not someone who will give in easily. She always finds a way to achieve what she has decided to do. For example, she wants to imitate the heroine in the movie, hone herself, and even start to try stealing.

But she did not steal for such mundane reasons as money. Here we should mention another peculiar habit of this beautiful lady.

That is the incurable addiction to collecting. Filiasi is obsessed with all kinds of artworks and exquisite crafts, such as famous paintings handed down from ancient times and exquisite porcelain watches.

She also has a high level of appreciation for art. When she was at Empire State University, her oil paintings and sculptures were praised many times by professors and were even recommended to several masters, giving her more opportunities for learning and communication.

This girl is passionate about art, has artistic accomplishments, has a serious collecting habit, and constantly practices stealing techniques. Every time she sees an exquisite work of art, she wants to take it for herself.

However, the prices of masterpieces by masters like Van Gogh or Monet are beyond the reach of ordinary wealthy people. Although Filiasi's father left her more than 10 million US dollars, this money is not enough to buy a few priceless works of art even if she goes bankrupt.

What to do if you want something but can't afford it? You can only steal it! Those famous paintings fall into the hands of local tyrants who only know how to make money, and they don't know how to appreciate them at all! These paintings are just home decorations for them, tools to show off their status and wealth. They have no idea of the artistic value behind these paintings. Black Cat convinced himself so.

Those works of art seemed to be whispering something, they seemed to be telling their own stories and values, longing to be discovered by people who truly understood and appreciated them. A strong emotion surged in Filiasi's heart, and she firmly believed that she was the one who could save these works of art.

"How can saving artworks be considered stealing?" Filiasi cried out in her heart. She felt that she was not committing a crime, but saving these precious cultural heritages. Each piece of art carries the crystallization of history, culture and human wisdom. If they are allowed to be buried or destroyed, it will be an irreparable loss.

Filiasi is determined to protect these works of art and make them shine again. She believes that through her efforts, more people can recognize the value of these works of art and pass them on. This is not only a respect for art, but also a contribution to human civilization.

Filiasi was gifted and had never failed since her first theft, and more and more artworks appeared in her private collection.

Until one day, she stole something she shouldn't have stolen - a self-ringing clock from a museum in Washington, DC, which was well made and originated from Paris, France in the 18th century. She liked this little object very much, so she took action.

However, she didn't know that this seemingly ordinary clock was actually a treasure in the heart of Nick Fury, the former director of S.H.I.E.L.D. This man, nicknamed "One-Eyed Dragon", had almost no free time for entertainment on weekdays. He devoted all his energy to maintaining the operation and security of S.H.I.E.L.D. However, if he had the opportunity to be in Washington, he would definitely take time to go to the museum just to personally see the clock that fascinated him.

Watching the second hand of the clock move quickly allows him to clear his mind for a short time, and it is the only moment of relaxation in his busy life.

Filiasi stole the clock, angering Nick Fury, who sent his agents to catch her, even though SHIELD didn't handle thefts.

The result was obvious, Filiasi was arrested and imprisoned in SHIELD prison. She escaped until the last prison riot.

After escaping from the suffocating place for months, the desire for art in her heart was burning like a prairie fire. Especially when she remembered the last time she was caught by Nick, all her cherished art collections were forcibly taken away. It was simply a nightmare! Without these precious works of art, it

was like a lack of oxygen and water in her life, making Black Cat feel extremely painful and tormented.

She knew that S.H.I.E.L.D. was in a mess now, as if Nick was no longer in office. S.H.I.E.L.D. was in a mess, and she was not a serious criminal, just a common theft. The new leader did not pay attention to her and did not send many people to hunt her down.

After all, Black Cat has never done anything bad except stealing artworks. She doesn’t steal artworks for profit or resale, but carefully preserves them, even cherishing them more than the average rich person.

Hill has countless things on hand now. She doesn't want to get involved in the black cat's escape unless there is a big trouble. Although she understands that those works of art are precious cultural treasures of mankind, she really can't appreciate the works of abstract masters. They are no different from the spaghetti accidentally spilled on the tablecloth during lunch.

Today, Black Cat succeeded again. Although the New York City police have set up tight control, ordinary police officers cannot catch her without the intervention of SHIELD.

She patted the bag on her back with satisfaction. It contained the manuscripts of Masaccio, a great Renaissance painter. Although they were not finished works, the sketches and line drawings also had a unique beauty. The black cat couldn't wait to go home and study these manuscripts carefully.

She used a zipline to move quickly between the city's tall buildings to avoid the police's pursuit. Suddenly, two white spider silks shot out from the side.

Black Cat caught a glimpse of the white object and dodged it flexibly. She made a difficult dodge of almost 720 degrees in the air and avoided the attack of the spider silk. But this forced her to land on the roof of a ten-story apartment building. If it weren't for the safety device of the zipline, she would have been injured.

A guy in red and blue tights appeared in front of him. He was the one who shot the spider silk. Black Cat knew him, the guy called Spider-Man.

Chapter 96 Loyal Fans

"Surrender, miss. I don't want to arrest you by force." Spider-Man pointed at her, but still maintained a little gentlemanly demeanor. After all, Black Cat was not a vicious criminal. Apart from stealing artworks from the rich, Peter did not find any other criminal records of her.

So he would always be polite to women. Of course, it was necessary to tie her up with spider silk when necessary. Otherwise, the New York police might not be able to catch her when they came.

Trapped on the roof of the apartment building, Black Cat looked around and found that there was no place nearby that could be used as cover. Surrender was impossible, and she had to find a way to get out of her current predicament.

Filiasi looked Spider-Man over carefully, maybe she found a good idea, a smile appeared on her lips, and dimples appeared.

"You, you are Spider-Man?!" Black Cat was like a little fan seeing her idol when she saw Spider-Man. She said in a tone full of disbelief and admiration.

The twinkling light in her eyes was like stars, and anyone who heard her voice and saw her expression would think she was a harmless beautiful woman.

Black Cat did just that. She put the bag on the ground without paying any attention to the precious manuscript inside. She walked towards Spider-Man without any defense, even jogging. Like a star chaser, she said to Spider-Man while running: "Can you give me an autograph? I am your most loyal fan!"

"Huh?" This was the first time Peter had encountered such a situation. In the past, no matter which suspect he helped the police catch, those people would either resist to the end or take the opportunity to escape. This was the first time he had encountered a prisoner who was looking for an autograph with stars in his eyes.

And according to his spider-sense, the other party had no ill intentions towards him because the sensor did not give any warning.

Unlike Gwen, who looked young and immature, Black Cat was already 25 years old, and long-term exercise had given her an impressive figure. Her slender waist and tight legs were tightly wrapped in a black leather coat, swaying with her steps.

Her bust is equally eye-catching, well, Gwen definitely loses in this regard.

Peter searched through his memory and found that only Natasha, the Black Widow, an agent of SHIELD, could compete with Black Cat in terms of figure. However, in terms of height, Black Cat might have an advantage. Although they are both hot and sexy, Black Cat has a more slender figure. This is a typical mature beauty.

The long silver-white hair fluttered in the wind as the black cat walked, but it was very rhythmic. Imagine that a super beautiful girl winked at you, claimed to be your fan, admired you very much, and asked you to sign for her. What would you do? Refuse it cruelly? I'm afraid few men would do this, especially an immature boy like Peter Parker.

Peter was about to use spider silk to trap the black cat running towards him, but was interrupted by her whisper: "I am willing to go with you. It is my honor to be caught by you, Spider-Man! You can't imagine how much I want to see you. The New York police are all idiots. They can't catch me."

"I know you like to help the police, and I wanted to get your attention and let you see me. You know, seeing you today, I feel like all my dreams have come true!" The black cat jumped and jumped excitedly.

He really looks like a crazy fan. It is not uncommon in real life for people to do radical things or even commit crimes in order to see their idols.

However, this is usually the treatment that super idols or Hollywood stars encounter. Peter Parker never thought that he would have such a crazy fan, which made him feel a little flattered. Especially when the fan is a super beautiful woman, this feeling makes Peter enjoy it even more. Although he said with a straight face: "Miss, do you know that what you do is illegal? No matter how much you want to see me, you shouldn't use this method. This will put you

in jail. And stealing famous paintings is also a felony."

"I know, I know!" Black Cat said excitedly, "I didn't sell any famous paintings or artworks. They are all in my warehouse. I just want to see you. As long as you give me an autograph, I will return the items to their original owners and turn myself in."

If that was the case, Peter thought, it shouldn't be a big problem and no damage would be caused.

Peter was flattered by Black Cat's fanatical behavior, but the following action made the untested Peter Parker a little overwhelmed.

"Can you sign an autograph for me?" Black Cat took out a marker from somewhere and handed it to Peter.

"Will you surrender yourself after signing?" Peter asked as he took the pen.

"certainly!"

"Okay then, where do you want me to sign? The autograph book?" Peter glanced at Black Cat and thought that she didn't bring an autograph book or anything like that.

The black cat Filiasi just smiled at Peter, bent down, and exposed her back and buttocks directly in front of Peter.

The black cat in the tight leather jacket was very hot, and just by leaning over, she fully displayed her graceful curves in front of Peter. This made Peter's ears blush, and what made his heart beat faster was the black cat's next move.

Filiasi used her fingers to find the zipper on the leg of her pants and slowly slid the silver-white zipper upwards. Because her leather pants were designed with such zippers on both thighs for easy wearing and taking off.

Starting from the ankles, the zipper was pulled all the way to the waist. With the click of the zipper, Filiasi's wheat-colored legs gradually appeared in front of Peter. First the ankles, then the tight and elastic calves, then the graceful knees, and finally the powerful thighs. The zipper was pulled to the top.

Her entire slender legs, including her buttocks, were fully exposed to Peter's sight. Filiasi put one hand on Peter's shoulder and gently pinched his chin with the other hand.

Her face was pressed against Peter's Spider-Man mask. Peter could feel her body temperature through the fabric and smell the faint scent of the black cat, which was intoxicating.

Fortunately, Peter was wearing a mask to cover his face, otherwise his red face would be as obvious as a boiled shrimp.

"How about signing here?" Filiasi whispered in Peter's ear, and the heat made Peter's ears feel itchy.

"Sign here, and I'll find a tattoo artist to tattoo your name on it, so you'll be with me forever." The black cat whispered to Peter in a charming voice.

Peter couldn't resist the stimulation and finally couldn't hold it back, his nose bleed like a fountain. Felicia the black cat easily injured the superhero and made him bleed.

At least the nasal mucosa is damaged and the nosebleed cannot be stopped.

……

"Wow~!!!!" Before Peter finished his story, Li Jie stood up excitedly and asked eagerly: "What happened next?!"

There was a gossipy gleam in Nightcrawler's eyes, and Peter instantly doubted whether it was right to ask this person for help.

Black Cat is tall, almost as tall as Peter Parker when standing upright. Peter's height has always been a sore spot, although the spider bite has increased muscle density, strength and reflexes.

But his height never grew, still maintained at about 1.7 meters. This has always been Peter's heart knot. When he went out with his good friends Jiyou and the three, Li Jie had grown to nearly 1.85 meters, Harry was also nearly 1.8 meters tall, only Peter Parker was less than 1.75 meters tall, half a head shorter than his two friends. Fortunately, Peter's girlfriend Gwen was not very tall, about 1.68

meters tall, so Peter was still somewhat confident without wearing high heels.

But even in her heels, Black Cat is about the same height as Peter Parker, and she can simply stand so that her cheek is against Peter's.

I don’t know if the scent of the black cat is shampoo, shower gel or perfume, but the sweet and charming scent keeps entering Peter’s nostrils.

From her charming face, slender neck, earlobes with amethyst earrings, and the occasional turn of her wrists, these fragrances emanated from every part of the black cat's body, constantly eroding Peter's resistance.

Peter Parker may never have seen such a scene in his life. Black Cat's current actions are the strongest shock to him in his life, both physically and mentally.

The beautiful Felicia gently rubbed Peter's masked head with her delicate cheek, and the subtle touch accompanied by her warm breath brushed Peter's face, as if he was really being approached by a docile cat.

However, most cats will not gently bite their earlobes with their teeth, but will pull them intimately.

"No, no. I can't do this." Peter tried to sober himself up and wanted to push the black cat away, but was interrupted by her light laughter.

“What?” Felicia asked, but her tone was full of temptation: “It’s just an autograph. Isn’t it worth leaving an autograph for a fan like me?”

There was even a hint of resentment in Black Cat's words. She clung to Peter, bit his ear, and whispered in his ear: "It's just a signature, no big deal, right?"

"It's just a signature, just a signature." Peter repeatedly reminded himself in his heart. But now he had forgotten his original purpose. He came to catch the black cat, not to give her an autograph.

There is no doubt that the black cat now has the upper hand. She uses her charm to make the inexperienced Peter dizzy and unable to tell east from west.

Chapter 97 Praising each other

She gently pressed Peter's shoulders, motioning him to squat down and leave the Spider-Man mark on her thigh. Although her slender hands looked extremely weak, with just a slight pressure, the New York City superhero could only follow her gesture.

Peter was completely confused, not knowing who he was or what to do. The sweet scent of the black cat, the warmth she left when she hugged him, and the amazing touch and elasticity all made him uneasy. And now there was the long, wheat-colored thigh in front of him. If Peter and Gwen's relationship was like a youth campus love movie, then this encounter with the black cat was like an innocent boy meeting a charming mature woman who seduced him. This was a new shock, and Peter was completely at a loss.

Like a mouse being teased by the black cat, he could only follow her instructions. He had lost the ability to think independently and was at her mercy, as if he had become a puppet. Just as Peter was about to sign on her thigh, an odorless gas blew out of the black cat's belt. The smell was the same as her perfume, and Peter couldn't tell the difference.

After a dizzy spell, when he came to his senses, the black cat had disappeared with the stolen manuscript, leaving Peter kneeling on the roof in a daze. Before leaving, the black cat left a souvenir for Peter - a note saying "Good night, idiot" and a red lip mark on Peter's cheek, which was a kiss she gave after removing half of her mask.

……

After listening to Peter's story about his first encounter with the black cat, Li Jie and Harry looked at each other and shook their heads.

Obviously, this is the use of charm. If the black cat is really as beautiful and charming as Peter described, it is reasonable for Peter to fall for it. This guy had

never been in a relationship before dating Gwen, and Gwen is a girl with strict family education. George's style shows how he disciplines Gwen.

"Forget it this time. It was a gentle trap set by the beautiful female thief, and you were stupid enough to fall for it." Li Jie touched his chin.

Although the charm technique is vulgar, it is indeed effective, especially for simple boys. Harry's expression eased a little: "But then you continued to see the woman named Black Cat."

Peter nodded helplessly: "Yes."

……

Peter felt deeply humiliated by the Black Cat's trick last time. Even if it had nothing to do with the police, he was determined to bring the Black Cat to justice. It was a complex emotion, not just anger, and Peter himself couldn't tell what it contained. After all, he was flattered when the Black Cat claimed to be a fan of Spider-Man and showed an extreme obsession with him.

Is the Spider-Man who shuttles through the city just chasing Black Cat? Peter is not sure, maybe he wants to see her again. Although she fooled him, she left a kiss in the end, and the half-opened hood did not reveal his true identity. Black Cat has advances and retreats, always teasing you at the most seductive moment, but it is hard to figure out her thoughts.

A beautiful female thief is a character that can easily inspire men's fantasies. But sometimes, there is only a fine line between fantasy and delusion.

When Peter cooperated with the police to hunt down Black Cat again, he told himself not to be fooled again. When he saw her, he couldn't say anything, couldn't ask anything, just hand her over to the police.

The idea is good, but sometimes plans cannot keep up with changes.

Black Cat manipulated the zipline to move between the tall buildings as planned, and Spider-Man followed closely behind, obviously a little angry. Provoked his mother last time? Felicia smiled silently.

"Do you really want to catch me?" Felicia shouted at Peter while dodging the

gap in the spider silk: "I am your number one female fan, and perhaps the most beautiful one. Do you really have the heart to attack me?"

Peter didn't want to respond, he just wanted to catch her first.

"Don't be so angry. Didn't I already compensate you with a kiss?" the black cat said in a teasing tone.

The two move quickly around the city, Peter relying on spider silk and Black Cat relying on home-made equipment and pre-planned routes.

"I have nothing to say to a thief!" Peter Parker was really angry, very angry. This anger was not only because he failed to catch the black cat last time, but Peter himself couldn't explain the specific reason.

"Do you really not care about me? Or do you think I am not attractive to you? Who was the one who kept staring at my thighs last time?" The black cat's words made Peter blush, but he quickly suppressed it: "Stop talking nonsense, you'd better surrender, and the sentence will be lighter."

Peter was already very close to the black cat, and she said nonchalantly, "If Spider-Man doesn't care about me, what difference does it make if the sentence is heavy or not?"

As she said this, Black Cat did something that Peter Parker had never expected. She let go of the rope and began to fall freely—more than 70 meters in the air!

As soon as he fell down, he was turned into a meat paste. Peter instinctively accelerated and flew towards the direction where the black cat fell.

He caught her a split second before she hit the ground, then immediately used the spider web to leave the block.

"Are you crazy? If I hadn't caught you just now, you would be dead!" Peter couldn't help cursing as he looked for a safe place to tie up the woman. Felicia's crazy behavior was beyond his expectations.

Felicia's long white hair fluttered in the night breeze. "Didn't you catch me? My superhero. I think you deserve a little reward!"

As she spoke, she slowly took off Peter's mask. Peter held Filiasi in one hand and shot spider silk with the other, and he couldn't stop her at all.

The black cat slowly lifted Peter's mask, stopped at the height of his nose, and smiled slyly. She hugged Peter's head and pressed her lips tightly against his.

As Spider-Man hovers over New York City, Black Cat gives Peter a hot kiss, one that makes him truly understand the meaning of a "French kiss."

Filiasi's passionate kiss seemed to have no end, once again confusing Peter's brain.

……

After listening to Peter's story, Li Jie and Harry suddenly felt that it was not unfair for Peter to lose to the black cat. If Li Jie had to use a word to describe the black cat's behavior, the only thing he could think of was "annoying little goblin."

For Li Jie and Harry, if what Peter said was true, they fully understood what mistake Peter made.

Black Cat was a powerful woman, and she used her feminine charm to the extreme. This was a type Peter had never seen before. He had almost no resistance to this kind of situation.

After all, compared with Li Jie and Harry, Peter is too simple.

Needless to say, Li Jie is a shrewd man who can maneuver between various forces, establish underground organizations, and even change the world.

Harry is no less inferior in this respect. As a super-rich man, he has experienced various temptations since he was a child, especially after entering high school.

All kinds of women surround him, each with their own purpose. Some are charming, some are pure, but Harry is not Mary Jane's first love.

Before that, Harry had dated several women, which was deliberately arranged by Norman Osborn. As a super-rich man, such temptations will only increase.

Norman has been secretly protecting Harry and preventing him from crossing the line, but he has also pushed him into various social occasions to train his self-control over beauty.

Therefore, Harry can now show grace in necessary social occasions, but he always knows his limits. He knows what he wants, and he only loves Mary Jane.

However, Peter is different, he is too innocent and easy to be taken advantage of. Li Jie and Harry heard from the story that Peter was just played by the black cat in various ways.

It's just that the person involved is not in a clear mind now. Ever since he was dizzy from the black cat's kiss, Peter doesn't know how to face her.

Because before this, Peter had only kissed Gwen, and both of them were first loves. There was no skill in kissing between novices, and it didn't exist at all.

"You're a great kisser!" "You too!" It's just a compliment between two rookies.

Peter has always believed that kissing is a sacred thing, just as he believes in the sacredness of love. The appearance of the black cat completely upsets his heart. He doesn't know how to face this woman.

This was exactly what Black Cat wanted. She smiled and left Spider-Man with her back, leaving Peter standing there in a daze.

……

"Currently, the Justice League has more than seventy-five members, including twelve core members, and the rest are peripheral members under investigation. Just like Moonbird you met before, she was one of the first core members to join the Justice League." Kick-Ass David, wearing a green one-piece tight diving suit, talked incessantly to Mindy and Laura.

They are now in Brooklyn's Sixth Street District, which is usually where Kick-Ass hangs out and is also one of the less safe areas in New York.

Since the last time he met and fought with the extraordinary twins Mindy and Laura, David has tried every means to invite them to join the organization. Although Mindy is always aloof and Laura never expresses her opinion, David

feels a little frustrated.

"Can Yueniao be considered a core member?" Mindy was a little confused. Yueniao's fighting power was at most that of an ordinary person and could not be compared with that of a core member.

"We don't determine our status by our fighting ability." David waved his hand and said, "Although Yue Niao is not good at fighting, she has helped many people. She has saved dozens of women who might have been sexually assaulted because of drunkenness."

David said seriously: "Preventing crime is always more important than holding criminals accountable afterwards! This is why we formed the Justice League." "Patrolling and helping others can increase the sense of security in the community and reduce crime rates more effectively than simply catching criminals." David's words made some sense, so Mindy and Laura looked at each other and didn't refute him.

"Then why did you contact us? Just to treat us to ice cream?" Mindy and Laura each held a box of ice cream in their hands. David bought these two boxes of premium ice cream from 7-11. He felt very distressed that he had spent a week's pocket money on two boxes of premium ice cream. "For cooperation, about the cooperation between the Justice League and the Beyonder Twins." David said straightforwardly. "Most members of the Justice League are ordinary people. Apart from me, only [Colonel] has strong combat ability. He is a retired Marine Corps." "I contacted Night Walker when I signed up for the Night Watch Alliance. I know him. He provided us with some simple equipment, such as the positioning belt that Moonbird used when he contacted me.

If a member is in trouble, we can find her quickly." Mindy was unaware that Nightcrawler was secretly supporting the Justice League.

"The members of the Justice League are ordinary people from all walks of life in New York. We get a lot of information, but there are some things we can't solve alone. Only the few members who can fight, such as the colonel and I, can't take care of everyone." David said a little helplessly: "Just like the last time you met Moonbird, if you weren't there, Moonbird would definitely be injured when waiting for my support." "So you want to find a bodyguard?" Mindy didn't like banana-flavored ice cream very much, so she scooped a spoonful and fed it to

Laura, who liked this flavor. The two little girls sat side by side, and Mindy fed Laura one spoonful at a time. "So, I think we have a lot in common, right? You want to fight crime, and the Justice League can provide intelligence!" David said seriously. "Why don't you just cooperate with the Night Watch?" Mindy glanced at David.

David seemed unsure: "Well, we deal with mostly petty criminals, and the night watchmen may not be interested. We can't always find a night walker for a thief who stole fifty dollars!" Mindy shrugged: "Not necessarily. As far as I know, there are nosy people among the night watchmen, such as Spider-Man." "But I don't know Spider-Man." David was a little embarrassed. "It's okay, you will have a chance to meet him. Look, he's over there." Mindy pointed to the ten o'clock direction and saw Spider-Man holding a girl and slowly landing in the alley.

Chapter 98 A new beginning

"You can take this opportunity to get to know him." Mindy patted David on the shoulder. David was a little uncertain: "Really? The girl in his arms is his girlfriend? Aren't they dating? We won't disturb them?" "You'll know when you go! I also want to know who Spider-Man's girlfriend is!" Mindy's gossipy heart burned. During the year she spent with Nightcrawler and Spider-Man, she learned from daily conversations that Spider-Man had a girlfriend. Mindy has always been curious about who Spider-Man's girlfriend is.

Peter was Mindy's tutor and they often played games together, so they had a good relationship. She took Mindy and David and quietly walked towards the direction where Spider-Man landed. "You can't do this again." As soon as she got close to there, Mindy heard Spider-Man's familiar voice. "What's wrong?" Another voice sounded very charming, making Mindy frown. "You can't kiss me without my consent!" Spider-Man seemed very angry. Mindy had already taken Laura and David to hide on the roof to the side to observe Spider-Man and Black Cat.

That charming woman is Spider-Man's girlfriend? Mindy doesn't believe it, because she knows from daily bits and pieces that Spider-Man's girlfriend is a student with strict family education. That hot woman has nothing to do with strict family education. "And those paintings, you must return them." Spider-Man shouted to Black Cat excitedly. "Don't be excited, wasn't the kiss just now enough? I can do it again." Black Cat said and hugged Peter again. "No!" Peter blocked his mouth and didn't let Black Cat kiss him again. He was already dizzy from the kiss just now and didn't want to do it again.

This time, Black Cat didn't kiss Peter's lips, but gently kissed his neck. Mindy was sure from a distance that this woman was definitely not Spider-Man's girlfriend, which could be judged from the conversation just now. This made Mindy very angry. Spider-Man and Nightcrawler have always been her brothers and role models. Her role model was actually having an affair with a female

thief? !

Mindy almost instinctively took out her cell phone and turned on the recording mode. She planned to record all the evidence!

Peter and Black Cat didn't notice Mindy in the distance until Mindy turned off the video, switched to photo mode, and pressed the shutter. The "click" sound caught their attention.

"It looks like there's someone here. I'll leave first, bye!" The black cat left a deep kiss mark on Peter's neck, then jumped away, and blew a kiss to Peter before leaving.

Tonight Peter was so confused by the black cat that he didn't have time to react before the cat ran away.

"Who's there?" Peter shouted in the direction of the sound.

A petite black figure descended from the sky. Although she was dressed up, Peter recognized her at a glance. After all, they had been together for more than a year and their relationship was already very close.

"Spider-Man, you're such an idiot! Don't tell me this sexy goblin is your girlfriend?!" Mindy showed her cell phone, which showed videos and photos of Black Cat kissing Peter.

Peter saw this and immediately broke out in a cold sweat: "No, it's not what you think. Can you give me your phone?"

"Huh?" Mindy sneered sarcastically, "You still want to quibble? I heard your conversation with Night Walker, and your girlfriend is not like that in his words. Or do you have a new girlfriend now?"

"I told you, it's not as simple as you think!" Peter couldn't help yelling at Mindy, "And why are you dressed like this? Are you playing Hit-Girl again?"

Mindy snorted coldly, crushed the phone with force, and threw it in front of Peter. "It's none of your business! I have uploaded the information to the cloud. I won't interfere with your mess, and you don't bother with me! If you dare to mention my affairs to anyone, I will post everything I saw today on the Internet,

so that everyone can see the true face behind Spider-Man! He is actually having an affair with a thief!"

Mindy said, turning and disappearing into the darkness.

……

Peter recounted everything that had happened during this period, and he regretted it: Gwen's breakup, Mindy's distrust and breakup with him, and even the cold attitude of the two old friends.

He felt more powerless than ever before, and his momentary loss of control had cost him a heavy price. Peter lowered his head, held his face in his hands, and cried silently.

Li Jie looked at Peter and shook his head, and Harry had the same expression.

Li Jie didn't think it was a bad thing for Peter to go through all this. In this world, Peter's life was too smooth compared to his original life journey.

Uncle Ben had not died, and Peter had not learned the truth that "with great power comes great responsibility."

Gwen did not die in the Electro incident, Peter has never experienced the pain of losing a loved one, and he has not yet realized the value of true love.

At the same time, he did not break up with his most important friend Harry, and did not understand the importance of choice and responsibility.

In the original life, Uncle Ben's death put Peter's family into financial difficulties. Aunt May was rejected for a credit card, just to get a pot given by the bank. Later, they had to sell their property to make ends meet.

Peter Parker is busy studying and fighting crime every day, and he also has to work part-time as a pizza deliveryman and photojournalist. He has experienced all kinds of despair and lows in life.

After constant training, he finally became the Iron Spider-Man, an irreplaceable existence in the Marvel world.

In Peter Parker's original life trajectory, all experiences have changed in this world. Without those setbacks, life is as sweet as honey to him.

Love went smoothly, career went smoothly, fighting crime became a hobby rather than a firm belief. Everything I did became insignificant.

Although Spider-Man in the original story likes to laugh and joke, he has an indelible heaviness deep in his heart. That is something that is branded in his soul.

It is this quality that allows Peter Parker to stand up again no matter how many setbacks he suffers. Unlike now, he seems frivolous and impatient.

This is why George dislikes him and thinks he is not worthy of Gwen.

Li Jie stood up and patted Peter on the shoulder. Perhaps this is the setback that one must experience on the road to becoming Spider-Man.

There is always a price to pay for growth. I just hope that Peter can truly recognize himself from this blow and transform into a real Spider-Man.

Otherwise, the gap between him and Li Jie and Harry will only get bigger and bigger.

For Gwen, the recent days have been quite tormenting. Gwen's life has always been smooth sailing. She has the beauty and wisdom that other girls envy, and she has an enviable happy family.

In the internship group of the Osborne Group, she is the most respected by the professor. She is a role model for her younger siblings and the pride of the family.

Her parents' love did not make her spoiled. Although she was indeed outstanding, she tried her best to treat everyone kindly.

Gwen has almost never experienced failure or setbacks since she was a child. She always demands the best of herself in every aspect. You can think that she is competitive or ambitious, but this is all part of her character.

Gwen's independence is her trademark, and it is also due to her excellence and

uniqueness. Since elementary school, many boys have had a crush on her. In high school, even the stars of the school basketball and football teams wanted to date her. But she rejected them one by one.

She knew exactly what she wanted in her heart, and those boys were not her type. Until she met Peter, although he was a little slick, he exuded a unique charm when he was serious about his work.

Peter was not as handsome or as built as the basketball players who were courting Gwen. Compared to many people, Peter did not have much of an advantage in looks, especially in height, where he was only a little taller than her.

However, it was this boy who attracted Gwen. Compared with his peers who only knew how to show off, Peter's mind was full of knowledge and novel ideas. In biology and genetics, his insights would make even senior professors feel enlightened. Therefore, Peter gradually became the focus of Gwen's attention.

When did she fall in love with him? Gwen herself didn't know, everything seemed to happen naturally. She remembered that Peter awkwardly invited her to dinner for the first time, at Li Jie's house, when he had just got a dining car.

Although they sometimes quarrel over trivial matters, they never really get angry. A little romantic, a little warm. Gwen wants to plan her love in her own way, just like planning her life.

She originally thought that her love story with Peter would develop peacefully and smoothly, and go perfectly as she planned. Until that kiss appeared and broke the peace.

She didn't want to listen to Peter's explanation, because she knew what it meant. Explanations or cover-ups were just excuses, and all excuses were to cover up the truth.

Gwen knew what she wanted and she didn't want to be blinded by the truth, so she proposed a breakup.

But why did my heart hurt so much? It was Peter who did the wrong thing, so why was I the one who was sad? This wasn't fair. Gwen curled up in bed, wrapped her arms around her legs, and buried her face behind her knees.

She didn't cry, she was just sad. On both sides of Gwen sat her two best friends, one was her classmate Ivy and the other was Mary Jane.

Mary Jane is Harry's girlfriend, and Gwen has always had a good relationship with Harry. Mary is an elegant, calm, extremely gentle and strong woman, two years older than Gwen. She made her mark in Broadway operas at a young age. She can be said to be a representative of the new era of women, independent and daring. Gwen quickly fell in love with this girl who was two years older than her, because when she was with Mary, they could always find common topics.

Ivy and Mary were not familiar with each other, but she knew that Gwen was in a bad mood recently and seemed to have a conflict with her boyfriend. She wanted to comfort her good friend: "Okay, Gwen, it's just a man, it's no big deal."

Ivy sat next to Gwen and put his arm around her shoulders. "It's inevitable that you'll meet a few scumbags in your life. Not every relationship can go smoothly to the end. You'll get used to it after a few breakups. Instead of thinking about these things, you might as well think about other things. I recently got a new job to draw the story of Deadpool and Hawkeye. You know, I can't do without your script. You're the best at writing scripts, just like the Spider-Man you wrote, which always gets rave reviews!"

Mary couldn't help shaking her head when she heard Ivy's words. Although Ivy wanted to make Gwen happy and divert her attention, such words could not comfort Gwen.

Gwen forced a smile at Ivy and leaned her head on Ivy's shoulder, who patted her back gently.

"Mary, why am I so sad when it's not my fault? Why can't Peter be like Harry?" Gwen said sadly.

Mary looked at Gwen and said, "Did you know that Harry often comes home with the scent of different women?"

This statement surprised Gwen a little: "Oh my God, Harry too..." Mary shook her head: "Things are complicated, dear. It's not as simple as you think."

She sat down next to Gwen and took her hand. "Harry is the chairman of the

Osborne Group. In that position, you can imagine how many women are around him. Various social events, business affairs, and competitors using all kinds of despicable means."

Mary smiled as she spoke this, but Gwen listened with her lips tightly closed: "But Harry never did anything wrong, right."

"If it were you, and you saw him coming home with the scent of a different woman every day, would you trust him?" Mary looked at Gwen with a smile. Gwen shook her head under her gaze. She couldn't do that with her personality.

"So do you trust Harry so much?" Gwen suddenly felt disgusted with Harry.

Mary said, "Because Harry also trusts me. On stage, I perform all kinds of emotional entanglements with other men. If I go on tour, I often don't go back to New York for a month."

"You should understand the chaos in this circle. Whether it's models or actors, gossip and scandals are often reported in the newspapers. Some are groundless, but many are true. I have been out there for a long time, hanging out with these people, and Harry believes me too." Mary lifted a strand of hair.

Chapter 99 Ring

If we switch places, Peter becomes Harry, and you become me, how long do you think our relationship can last? "Gwen was stunned for a moment when she heard this question, and finally gritted her teeth and said, "Probably no more than three days."

Mary held Gwen's hand and patted the back of her hand gently: "Trust is mutual. Small conflicts between lovers are inevitable. Communication is always better than quarreling. Even if we have to separate, it can be more decent."

Mary looked at Gwen with a smile, and then Ivy suddenly interrupted: "Are you trying to persuade Gwen and Peter to reconcile?"

"No." Mary shook her head. "Emotional ups and downs are just a small hurdle in life that everyone has to go through. Harry and I's love is different from yours and Peter's. You two are both still novices in love. Peter couldn't resist the temptation, and you panicked because of a little emotional trouble. In fact, it's not that serious yet." At this point, Mary couldn't help but shake her head slightly.

"Harry told me honestly that he had dated many girlfriends before, some of whom he chose himself and some of whom were arranged by his father Norman. Before I was with Harry, I had also dated other boys. After going through these, we are more clear about what we want. Staying vigilant and not crossing the line is the key. Only when you truly understand what you need can you face your feelings."

"You and Peter are like flowers that have never been through the wind and rain. Everything has gone smoothly for you and you take many things for granted. But life doesn't go according to your plan. There will always be twists and turns and we must learn to overcome obstacles. For us, love is mutual trust and support. You still need to grow more."

Gwen listened to Mary's words quietly with her head lowered.

Harry said the same thing in front of Peter.

……

It was a whole week later that Gwen was willing to see Peter again. At nine o'clock, she heard knocks on the window. Peter was standing on the fire escape of her thirty-story building! Gwen didn't know how he got there. The fire escape of this apartment building had safety measures. However, Gwen finally decided to meet Peter and tell him what she had been thinking for more than a week.

"Good evening." The two stood on the separate balcony of Gwen's house. Peter seemed a little nervous, just like when they first met. So did Gwen.

"I say..." The two spoke at the same time, and then fell silent at the same time. The atmosphere was a little awkward.

In the end, it was Peter who broke the deadlock: "You go first."

Gwen smiled and said, "I'm sorry, I shouldn't have hit you last time. No matter what, it's always wrong to solve problems with violence. After all, my dad is a policeman, and he always told me not to use violence if I can solve the problem rationally."

Peter quickly waved his hands: "No, it's my fault. I couldn't resist the temptation, and as a boyfriend, I wasn't honest with you. Although I'm not honest with you now."

After hearing this, the two fell silent again.

Gwen looked up at the night view of New York and asked absentmindedly, "Can you tell me the specific circumstances of your dishonesty? Mary told me that communication is always a good thing, even among ordinary friends."

Peter took a deep breath and said, "There are many things that are hard to describe in one sentence. If you have time, I would like to start with the Osborne Group."

Peter Parker tells everything about himself in detail, including his experience

becoming Spider-Man, showing Gwen his super powers, and the matter of Black Cat.

"I'm not saying this to ask for your forgiveness." Peter put down the cup of water stuck by spider silk in his hand and said, "I have a clear conscience. I fell in love with Black Cat, and I betrayed you at that moment."

"I can't force you to forgive me. I just think there are some things I should tell you. Sometimes I am too naive. I am too self-righteous about you and other things, including my feelings."

Peter was depressed but sincere. He had been reflecting on himself for a week and finally came to the conclusion that he was not worthy of forgiveness. If you do something wrong, you will have to pay the price. He had the ability to push the black cat away, but he wavered.

The purpose of his coming today was to admit his mistake to Gwen. The mistake he made should not cause pain to others again.

Gwen gave Peter a long look, "It's not bad actually, at least I dated a superhero."

"Yes, you also drew my comics with Ivy." Peter suddenly remembered this: "When I heard that you wanted to be a screenwriter, I begged you not to be Ivy's screenwriter in Central Park."

"What nonsense are you talking about!" Gwen's face instantly turned red, like a boiled shrimp. She couldn't help but pat Peter on the back, and the relationship between the two seemed to ease instantly.

When the laughter and playfulness died down, the two realized that some things always existed.

Gwen looked at the night view and said, "I plan to go to London University as an exchange student for a year."

She spoke in a very soft voice, and Peter asked in an equally soft voice, "Why?"

"My life is too monotonous. I have always been taken care of by my parents, teachers and you." Gwen shook her head. "I have never tried to be truly independent. I have never experienced setbacks and failures in my life. It seems

that everything is going well, but perhaps a blow will make me fall into despair and madness."

Gwen looked into Peter's eyes intently, and Peter could feel the twinkle in her blue eyes: "Just like our feelings, Peter."

"Can't you just stay?" Peter couldn't help asking. Gwen shook her head slightly at him.

"When are you leaving?" "In five days. I want to get used to life in London before school starts."

They chatted on the roof like ordinary friends, talking about future studies and life, and discussing how many times it rains in London in a year.

At the New York International Airport, on the day Gwen left, her friends came to see her off, including Li Jie, Harry and Peter. Gwen warmly hugged everyone, after all, they would not meet again for a year. As an exchange student, Gwen arranged a busy study and life schedule for herself. Facing an unfamiliar environment, she expected to encounter many unknown challenges, so she could not even come back for vacation.

"Goodbye," Gwen said quietly as she gave Peter one last hug.

"Have a safe trip. Maybe I'll find time to visit you in London." Peter forced a smile.

"Then I'll prepare the most delicious fish and chips to welcome you." Gwen said seriously, and everyone laughed.

As Peter watched Gwen board the plane and Gwen looked at the land gradually moving away, both of them seemed to have some indescribable feeling in their hearts.

Traveling far away does not mean saying goodbye forever. The place you think is the end is often a new beginning.

At this moment, both Peter and Gwen felt that they were growing up.

...

At Osborne Manor, Harry hugged Mary tightly and breathed in the scent of her hair deeply: "Seeing Peter and Gwen, I realized how important you are in my life. Mary, you will never leave me, okay?"

"Is this a confession?" Mary also hugged Harry and playfully touched his nose with her finger: "But can you promise to love me like this forever?"

"I can promise you that," Harry said solemnly, "anyone who wants to take you away from me will have to step over my dead body."

"I love hearing that." Mary smiled and kissed Harry.

"If possible, let me be your guardian forever." Harry suddenly knelt on one knee, took out an exquisite little box from his pocket, and opened it to reveal a carefully selected diamond ring.

The cut facets of the diamond ring sparkled in the sun. Harry stared into Mary's eyes and said sincerely, "Ms. Mary Jane Watson, please marry me!"

Harry proposed solemnly, Mary looked at him in disbelief, feeling like she was dreaming. But this dream was so real that great joy instantly filled her body and mind.

Her eyes were moist, and Mary took the ring, and said in a trembling but happy voice: "Then, my knight, please put this ring on me."

"At your service, my princess."

...

Li Jie went home with two movie tickets in his hand. Peter and Gwen's affairs made him think a lot, whether good or bad, whether it was inexplicable irritability or other emotions.

Not everything can go as you wish, and sometimes what you miss will make you regretful. He knocked on Lan's door, and Lan was studying the wizard's notes.

"Are you free tonight, Lan?" Li Jie asked.

"Yes, what's the matter? Do you need me to help you open a space door?" Lan

turned his head and glanced at Li Jie.

"No, I just want to invite you to see a movie." Li Jie held up the movie ticket in his hand.

Lan tilted his head to think for a moment, then smiled and said, "Okay."

...

Peter has been living in Li Jie's house recently, and Gwen's departure still affects him. He longs for some comfort from his good friend.

But today, Li Jie seemed to be completely unwilling to pay attention to him and even refused to play PS4 games with him, which made Peter very frustrated.

"Can't you just comfort me a little?" Peter walked into Li Jie's room and said to Li Jie who was changing clothes.

"I have comforted you many times during this period. Do you remember who told me that he has grown up, understood a lot of things, and wanted to be a better person so that he would have a chance to win Gwen back?" Li Jie adjusted his hair in front of the mirror, wondering whether he should comb it more to the right.

"I'm going to the movies with Lan tonight, so I don't have time to accompany you."

"Take me with you." Li Jie paused, looked at Peter in surprise, and then continued to work.

"You don't want to watch this movie with us."

"why?"

"Because the name of the movie is A Dog's Purpose."

Chapter 100: Full of Excitement

"Hey, kid, you're just a noisy kid. You hang out on the streets all day, dreaming of making it big someday. You're bruised and battered, throwing things around, come on, let's sing together! We're going to make you rock and roll!"

Taking light steps and humming the immortal song "We Will Rock You" by Queen, Mindy was as brisk as a fawn and full of energy.

Each step is in sync with the beat of the music: "My friend, you're young and a tough guy. Roaring in the streets, gonna rule the world someday. Your face is covered in blood, you've lost all your dignity, you've got a flag waving high. Come, we're gonna rock you crazy!"

Mindy's every step was in time with the drum, and her footsteps were the best accompaniment. She waved her hands and skipped through the gate of the Night Watch base, singing and dancing along the way, her face full of excitement.

She looked extremely happy, and even picked up the sausage on the table as a microphone. She ran to Li Jie holding the sausage, pointed it at his mouth, and motioned him to sing along.

"Man, you are old and have nothing. Your eyes are full of begging for forgiveness. One day, you will be given peace. You are dirty and miserable. It would be better if someone could drive you back to your hometown! We want you to rock and roll like crazy!"

Everyone is used to Mindy's liveliness and her craziness when she is happy. Li Jie cooperates with Mindy and sings together: "We want to make you rock crazy!"

"Everyone come sing! We want you to rock like crazy!" Mindy waved her hands as if she were performing on stage: "Come on!"

She sang loudly and attracted the attention of other people in the base. The little girl with golden curly hair stood on the conference table like a little queen. She led the other members of the Night Watch to sing together. It felt good.

Mindy is really happy recently, in every aspect. Her interaction with Laura needs no introduction, the two of them are as close as sisters. Another reason is the partnership between Beyond: The Twins and the Justice League that has been established over the past month or so.

Although the Night Watch has a complete intelligence system, it will not be shared with Mindy. However, the Justice League has many members and is well-informed. Mindy got a lot of useful intelligence through David.

She worked with David and used the intelligence of the Dispute Alliance to destroy a gang of thieves. Although it was a small team of only five people, considering that the eyes and ears of the Justice League could not be involved and to protect the safety of the organization, Mindy just knocked them out.

This was a little different from what the violent little girl usually did, but she hadn't felt this way in a long time. The last time she fought organized crime was over a year ago, and Mindy felt like she was getting rusty.

Now that she finally had enough, she was particularly happy today and even treated Kick-Ass to a box of chocolate ice cream for the first time. You know, it was always David who treated her in the past.

"Come on! Let's rock and roll together!" Mindy shouted finally, handed the sausage-like microphone to Frank, and looked at him expectantly, hoping that he would start singing.

Come to think of it, she had never heard Frank sing. He and Mike seemed to have no interest in entertainment, and even Big Daddy would sometimes listen to music or watch a movie.

Frank glanced at Mindy and opened his mouth. Mindy thought he was going to sing, but he just opened his mouth, bit off the sausage, and began to chew.

"Oh, please." Mindy immediately lost her temper, pouted helplessly, and handed the remaining half of the sausage to Frank. Then she lazily fell on the sofa. She had finished her summer homework long ago, and she was ready to turn on the

game console to play games.

At this time, Nightcrawler came over, sat next to Mindy, picked up another game controller, and seemed to want to play doubles with her.

"What do you want to play? NBA2K17 or FIFA?" Mindy asked as she took out a few game discs from the TV cabinet.

Li Jie touched his chin: "How about the extraordinary twins?"

Mindy was startled but kept a straight face: "This game is not suitable for two people, and I have already finished it. If you want to play, play it by yourself." With that, Mindy prepared to leave.

"It's not a game, Mindy. You know what I'm talking about. How about Beyond: The Twins?" Li Jie called out to Mindy.

Other members who had originally gathered together because of Mindy's singing blocked her way.

"I don't know what you're talking about, I'm going to do my homework." Mindy tried to squeeze between Frank and Big Daddy, but failed. Frank grabbed her collar.

"Don't lie, Mindy, you finished your homework five days ago." Damon half squatted down to talk to Mindy.

Mindy looked at the people surrounding her, and the Night Walker who was sitting on the sofa waiting for her answer, and suddenly felt angry: "You promised not to spy on me! You didn't keep your word!"

"I promise, we are not monitoring you. No one is." Li Jie said, spreading his hands.

Mindy glared at Spider-Man in the distance, and Li Jie had to speak: "Don't blame Spider-Man, believe me. His punishment is much more serious than you think. Really, he was dumped."

"Hey!" Peter shouted when he heard this, asking Li Jie to pay attention.

Li Jie shrugged: "So, let's delete the video in the network disk. Next time we go to catch the black cat together."

Mindy curled her lips helplessly: "I have never been a super killer, nor have I chopped anyone or cut off their limbs." She first clarified that she did not break the rules.

Because she had a strong murderous aura since she was young, it was cultivated. For her health, everyone hoped that she would stay away from certain activities of the organization. But unexpectedly, she still couldn't stand the loneliness, and after more than a year, she returned to the arena.

The only good news is that there were no sudden appearances of a bunch of injured people with broken limbs or corpses with their heads chopped off by martial arts practitioners in New York.

"I know, Mindy. I contacted David from the Justice League and asked about your situation. Although Frank and Damon were worried that you would cross the line, fortunately you controlled yourself." Everyone found a chair and sat down.

Mindy was relieved to see that this was not a trial against her, but Li Jie's next words made her nervous again.

"We are just curious, who is the little girl with you? Is she your friend? Can we meet her?"

Mindy did not immediately answer Li Jie's request to see Laura. She seemed a little hesitant, frowning and thinking.

Li Jie and others felt surprised because this was not an excessive request.

"What's your purpose in meeting her?" Mindy asked cautiously, as if she was afraid of losing her best friend. "Are you trying to stop me from meeting her?"

"No, Mindy. We are not the rude type." Li Jie immediately shook his head: "We, including Damon and Frank, have discussed it. We have no objection to you making friends, we just want to get to know her."

Li Jie was speaking from the heart. When he had heard about the Amazing Twins from David, he had specifically asked about the girl who worked with

Mindy.

The answer is that this girl is more mature and quieter than Mindy. Mindy handles most of the things, and the girl named Laura just follows Mindy silently and helps her.

Well, now what everyone is worried about is not that Mindy has made bad friends, but that Mindy will become a bad friend to others and lead a girl astray.

Although there is nothing wrong with being a vigilante to help the citizens, everyone knows Mindy's personality. If she is really angry, her knife is very sharp. Smashed limbs and heads are common for Mindy. They don't want Mindy to scare another girl, even if that girl has some extraordinary abilities.

But they are still too young after all.

"Mindy, if you just want to be a vigilante like the Justice League, we have no objection." Li Jie's words were nodded in approval by Frank and Dad.

Although the Justice League is an underground vigilante, it is more like a neighborhood mutual aid association, a spontaneous community protection organization. Crime prevention and voluntary patrols are their main work, similar to the Moonbird, sending drunk girls home to reduce the occurrence of sexual assaults. To put it bluntly, it is a group of volunteers with more active actions and a wider jurisdiction.

So far, their most sensational event was helping the police crack a five-member theft gang, and it was Mindy who helped. So, as long as it does not exceed a certain range, everyone thinks Mindy can go out.

Mindy was not allowed to participate in the Night Watch activities before because those activities were too dangerous. The Justice League is not bad. The leader, Kick-Ass David, has a good relationship with Lee Kit and regards Lee Kit as an idol. If there is any problem with the extraordinary twins, David promises to tell Lee Kit as soon as possible.

It is better to release than to block. Mindy is a person who can't sit still. Instead of waiting for her to make mistakes one day, it is better to find a suitable channel for her to release her excess energy.

However, Mindy obviously didn't know that the adults had held many meetings to discuss her, and the final decision was made after Li Jie persuaded her and several meetings.

So Mindy was a little bit unconvinced: "Really? You don't care about the Amazing Twins and the Justice League?"

"Of course." Li Jie nodded: "As long as you know the limits, Damon and Frank both agree. If you feel that the summer vacation is too boring and want to find something to do, we can allow you to cooperate with the Justice League. But you need a new summer homework, listing what you have done, and hand it in to Frank, Damon or me every day."

The members of the Night Watch were not stubborn old-timers, and they would not deliberately erase Mindy's personality. After all, there were more than seven billion ordinary people in this world, and only a handful of extraordinary people were different.

Don't say that smoothing out the edges is suitable for social survival. That only applies to ordinary people. Either change the world or be changed by the world. These people are obviously the former.

"So what exactly do you want to do with Laura?" Mindy finally relaxed and sat on the sofa and said seriously: "She is my best friend, I can't let her take any risk of getting hurt."

Chapter 101 Weapon X Project!

Li Jie couldn't help but laugh. It turned out that Mindy was a very loyal girl. He gave Mindy a thumbs up and said, "You are a good brother. We just want to make sure she is safe. After all, you have our consent, but she may not have her parents'. Being a vigilante is indeed a bit risky, even if the mission of the Justice League is considered safe."

Mindy pouted: "Okay, in that case. I can tell you that Laura has no guardian. She is a refugee."

Mindy told everyone Laura's story in detail. She was a mutant from Mexico. She originally came to New York to seek help from the mutant school. But now the school was closed and she had nowhere to go. Mindy temporarily took her in and hid her secretly in her original base. There were some things that Mindy would not ask unless Laura took the initiative to tell her, so she didn't know everything.

"If you want to see her, that's not impossible, but you have to tell me first. I have to talk to her and ask for her opinion. I can't force her." Mindy said seriously.

"Okay, as you say." Li Jie smiled, then carefully ruffled Mindy's blonde hair.

"Hey!" Mindy pushed Li Jie's hand away in annoyance.

Li Jie didn't mind at all and asked Mindy with a smile: "There's no ice cream in the refrigerator. What flavor do you like? I'll buy more next time."

"Hmm?" Mindy suddenly couldn't understand what Li Jie wanted to do. Not only Li Jie, but other members of the Night Watch also looked at Mindy with a smile. This made her feel strange. She acted on her own and was not punished? These people must have made a mistake!

For the other members of the Night Watch, especially Frank and Damon, what

they want to see is a growing Hit-Girl Mindy who has her own sense of right and wrong, rather than a girl who is always obedient and follows the rules. That kind of Mindy is not the real her.

Mindy's loyalty to Laura and her increasingly mature behavior allow everyone to see her growth. Self-discipline, independence and self-confidence are not just as simple as following the rules.

……

"If you don't want to see them, I can help you refuse. It's okay, they said they won't make things difficult for both of us." Mindy put her arm around Laura's shoulders comfortingly, her tone firm and gentle. They stood in Mindy's old base, surrounded by a tense atmosphere, but Mindy's eyes were full of determination and protectiveness.

Laura nodded gratefully, with a hint of relief in her eyes. Mindy continued, "I've already told them that we will face this together. No matter what, I will stand by you and support you."

Laura took a deep breath, felt Mindy's warm embrace, and her heart gradually calmed down. She knew that she was not fighting alone, and with Mindy by her side, everything was no longer so scary.

Mindy patted Laura's shoulder gently and took her into a room. The room was simply decorated, but it exuded a warm atmosphere. Mindy pointed to a chair, motioned Laura to sit down, and then sat next to her.

"Now, let's think about how to deal with it together." Mindy looked at Laura with a smile, encouraging her to think positively.

Laura nodded and tried to concentrate. They began to discuss various possible situations and make corresponding plans. Mindy's experience and wisdom gave Laura a lot of inspiration, and she gradually regained her confidence and courage.

As time went by, Laura and Mindy's discussion became more and more in-depth. Although there were still many challenges ahead, they believed that as long as they supported each other and worked together, they would be able to overcome the difficulties.

Finally, as the sun gradually rose, Laura and Mindy walked out of the room, holding hands, ready to face the unknown future. Their faces were filled with determined smiles, because they knew that no matter what happened, they would protect each other and never give up.

Laura was silent for a while, and glanced at the comics on the bedside. These were all given to her by Mindy, various comics from Marvel.

It includes individual publications and collaborative collections, such as joint publications between the Night's Watch, the Avengers and the X-Men.

She pondered for a while, and Mindy thought Laura didn't want to see Li Jie and the others. However, Laura walked to the bedside, picked up a comic book, flipped through it, and then said, "I'll go with you to see them."

"It's okay, Laura, no need to force you." Mindy thought Laura was worried and embarrassed.

"It's okay, Mindy, maybe I can get an autograph from them." Laura raised the comic book in her hand.

"Good boy!" Mindy smiled.

……

Li Jie, Frank and Damon were ready to meet Mindy's new friend, who had long chestnut hair and eyes the same color as her hair. She had two stubborn eyebrows and a straight nose on her pretty and delicate face.

This is a very beautiful girl. Her temperament is completely different from the lively and active Mindy. Laura seems more quiet.

Frank and Damon were talking in low voices.

Frank: "Are you saying she really has no guardian?"

Damon: "Mindy probably didn't lie to us, what's wrong?"

Frank: "I was just saying, maybe we could adopt another daughter."

Li Jie didn't hear the two people's whisper and was about to ask Laura a question, but Laura was one step faster.

She pulled a comic book out of her pocket, a crossover between Nightcrawler and the X-Men, and flipped to a page that showed Li Jie and Wolverine fighting side by side.

She pointed at the characters in the comics, and Li Jie took a look and saw that she was referring to Wolverine, not himself.

"Do you know him?" Laura pointed at Wolverine's portrait.

"You are Laura, right? If you want him to sign something, I think I can help you." Li Jie said to the little girl with a smile, trying to make his voice sound gentler, and gave a smile that he thought was very handsome, then turned to look at Wolverine, trying to get his consent. He thought to himself that this girl might just want to get close to her idol, or ask for an autograph or something, after all, Wolverine is a big star!

But Laura didn't care about that and said to herself, "I want to see him."

"Huh? Why?" Li Jie knew that Laura was also a mutant and was a little curious.

"Because of this." After hearing Laura's words, the little girl stretched out a pair of diamond claws, flashing the light of adamantium. Li Jie's mouth was wide enough to fit an egg.

Frank and Damon, who were discussing whether to adopt Laura, also stopped the topic. Frank frowned, and Damon squinted at Mindy's diamond claws.

Li Jie sighed helplessly. Another pair of diamond claws appeared. Logan, how much sin have you left in this world!

"Are you serious?" In the Rocky Mountains of Canada, Professor X prepared a cup of coffee for Li Jie. The two sat opposite each other and talked about Laura.

"Yes, professor. If I'm not mistaken, the child named Laura should be related to Logan. Although she is unwilling to reveal her background and past. However, the same healing ability, and those adamantium metal claws..." Li Jie shrugged, indicating that there was no need to say more.

"You think she is also Logan's daughter, another child besides Daken?" Although the professor already had an idea in mind, he still found it hard to believe.

"Oh, who knows. Logan's love life seems to be almost as chaotic as Tony's. At least Tony doesn't have any illegitimate children. But Logan already has two now, and it's hard to say whether he will have a third one in the future." Li Jie was also quite helpless.

"But Logan himself never mentioned these. Ever since you gave him a dream last time, he began to slowly recall the past. He vaguely remembered having a brother, but his memory of his daughter was blank." The professor touched his bald head.

Strangely enough, the Shuguang 101 hair growth water worked well for other people, but not for the professor. Even if his hair grew quickly, it would fall out again the next day.

At this point, everyone can only guess that maybe the professor was born to be bald.

"Whether he remembers or not, at least there is no doubt that Laura is related to Logan. Although Laura didn't say it, I guess she must be related to the previous Weapon X plan. After all, no one is born with adamantium claws." Li Jie mentioned Laura's claws.

"It can be basically concluded that it was added artificially later. Spider-Man examined Laura and found that the inside of her bones was normal, but the outside was covered with a layer of adamantium, which made her have claws similar to Logan's." Li Jie introduced their preliminary examination results of Laura.

"But it is certain that Laura is not from Stryker's side. The last time the students attacked his base, most of the information was destroyed. They also saw a lot of his secret files, but there was no record of Laura in them. The only experimental subject similar to Wolverine is a man named Deadpool, but he is still in the theoretical stage and has not started practice." Professor X said with some concern.

"Whether Laura is Logan's daughter or someone stole Logan's genes for experiments. At least one thing is certain, in addition to Stryker, there are others

carrying out the Weapon X program!"

"That's right, so I remind you specifically, professor. Laura doesn't want to talk to us more, and we naturally won't force a little girl. She wants to see Logan, hoping he can get more information." Li Jie touched his chin and said seriously.

The professor smiled and said, "It may be a good thing for Logan. Although he is not married, he now has children. From what you said, Laura seems to be a very good child."

"Although it's not appropriate to say this, she is much better than Deacon." Li Jie drank the rest of his coffee, stood up and prepared to find Logan.

"Logan's emotions have stabilized. I think I can start teaching him some Buddhist training and martial arts to help him control his anger. Even turn anger into usable power. Once he's got the hang of it, I'll tell him about Laura, otherwise he'll be upset again."

The professor looked at Li Jie who was about to go find Logan and asked, "So Laura is at the Night Watch now?"

"To be precise, at Frank and Damon's place." Li Jie waved his hand: "Don't worry about Laura, they both treat her as another Minnie, and now she is their other daughter."

……

By the lake outside the villa, Logan had already been waiting for Li Jie to arrive. As for Deacon, Li Jie had no idea what effect the last illusion had on him. Although he had become much quieter and less impulsive after coming back, he still seemed to have not completely come out of the illusion, and his willpower was obviously much weaker than Logan's.

Li Jie planned to teach Logan some things first, and then Logan would teach Daken. To be honest, Li Jie didn't like Daken, after all, this guy had tried to kill him with a knife twice before.

If it weren't for Logan, Li Jie would have taught him a lesson long ago. When he saw Logan again, Li Jie felt that he was completely different from the previous Wolverine.

In the past, Logan's eyes were always burning with anger, no one knew where it came from, but it never went out. Rage, rage, killing and indulgence, these all accompanied Logan.

Now when he looked at Logan again, his eyes were calmer. Li Jie almost thought he was dazzled, because he saw Logan's nostalgia for beautiful things, including friends and his current life.

Logan has become more calm and resilient now, but the fire in his heart has not been extinguished. After experiencing the illusion created by Li Jie, he understands what is more important to him, and there are some things he is willing to protect with his life.

So even though he was a little confused about what Li Jie wanted to teach him, he still maintained basic respect, unlike Logan before, who would walk away in anger when he was unhappy.

Chapter 102 1 divided into 2

"'Rage of King Kong'? What the hell is that?" Logan had no idea what Li Jie was going to teach him. The Chinese name sounded particularly awkward to him.

"This is a Buddhist martial art that I discovered in Kamar-Taiki. It's very suitable for you." Li Jie explained seriously: "Buddhist practitioners are mostly peaceful, but occasionally they will show the appearance of an angry Vajra and do things like slaying demons and exorcising monsters."

"I don't think it's possible for you to become a compassionate Buddha. If that were the case, I'm not sure you would still be Wolverine. However, Wrath of the King really suits you."

"It can make your normally suppressed anger and rage burst out within a controlled range. This skill is specifically designed to train your spirit and reason. It may be troublesome for you to practice it by yourself, but we can ask Professor X for help, and add my Mind Labyrinth and Mahavairocana Seal. In this way, even in a rage, you can remain rational and unleash the true power of this skill."

Li Jie spoke very seriously, and although Logan still couldn't understand what he was saying, it didn't affect his basic trust in Li Jie and Professor X. So he asked, "How do we get started?"

"First, the most basic method is to recall the things you hate the most. If you can't commit to it, I can help you create illusions like last time and use these things to stimulate your body and muscles. This is a purely external skill. Ordinary people may have sequelae after practicing it, but you have the ability to heal yourself, so don't worry about it."

"Tell me when you're ready and I'll start. The professor will be watching through the window upstairs, and if anything seems wrong, he'll help you exit the illusion."

When Logan heard that Li Jie was going to create an illusion, he frowned slightly. He didn't like that kind of experience. But this time, he rationally overcame his instinct and did not reject Li Jie's proposal.

"Well, let's get started," Logan said firmly.

Li Jie nodded. This time, Logan was going to become the real Wolverine.

"Vajra Fury" is a relatively easy Kung Fu. Li Jie spent a long time searching for it in Kamar-Taiki's Buddhist martial arts. Compared with those Kung Fu that focus on both internal and external cultivation and the pursuit of a high degree of unity of spirit and energy, this Kung Fu seems direct and rough.

Because it is an external practice, from the outside to the inside. It tempers the body through hard training, enduring great pain and torture, and at the same time, it trains the spirit by enduring pain.

Similar ascetic practices are not uncommon in Buddhism, and most of the legendary ascetic monks practice this kind of skills.

But ordinary people have limitations in practicing this kind of kung fu. At the beginning, they can only use anger or sadness to stimulate the body and make the body reach the limit within a controllable range. As the kung fu deepens, the pain that the practitioner endures will also increase, including fire, water, electric shock, etc. It can be said that learning this kung fu itself has a tendency to self-abuse.

Use these pains to temper your will, and then combine them with specific exercise methods to stimulate the body, so as to achieve a state of internal and external balance.

The practitioner of "Vajra Fury" must first go to hell before dragging others into hell. First endure the hellish suffering, and then pass the pain on to others.

It is because of the great pain that it has such great power when it explodes. It is as calm as the Buddha, full of compassion; it moves like thunder, with the wrath of a diamond. This is the true meaning of this kung fu.

It is difficult for ordinary people to achieve great success in this kind of Kung Fu. It is usually difficult to improve after getting started. This is because the

body of ordinary people has its limits. Even if they follow the special rhythm of Kung Fu, they will still be injured in the cruel practice.

Li Jie felt that this was a bit like the Seven Injury Fist, which first hurts oneself and then hurts others. When the Seven Injury Fist is practiced, the practitioner's own internal organs will also be damaged.

Therefore, in the limited records of Kamartai, there are very few Buddhist practitioners who practice this kind of kung fu. Apart from the master who created "Vajra Wrath", it is difficult for later generations to practice this special kung fu to a high level.

Because this kind of kung fu requires extremely high willpower and physical talent.

But Li Jie found that this skill seemed to be tailor-made for Logan. In terms of willpower, Logan has never lacked it, whether it was his experience in the illusion or when he was forced to undergo the X experiment earlier.

At that time, his bones were pulled out one by one and replaced with adamantium. The pain was unimaginable for ordinary people. Not to mention the various wars and injuries that Logan had experienced over the past two hundred years, he had seen atomic bomb explosions, and he had tried almost all the weapons on Earth.

As for his physical talent, there is no need to say more. What has supported Logan in all these years is his extraordinary self-healing ability.

His self-healing factor is controlled by his own mentality. As long as Logan's mentality is young, the self-healing factor will remain active. In simple terms, as long as Logan doesn't want to die, he can't die.

If one day he is killed and cannot be resurrected, there is only one reason, that is, he is tired and wants to leave this world.

However, Logan has no intention of dying yet, especially after experiencing those illusions, he knows better that he must live and become stronger. He doesn't want those illusions to come true, and he has a son now. By the way, he doesn't know that he actually has a daughter. If he knew, he would probably be more eager to live.

Li Jie nodded to Logan, who also said he was ready. The combination of the Millennium Blocks and the Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva statue started again.

Logan let down his guard and sank into the world of pain he had created for himself. All the scenes that frightened him reappeared one by one.

His veins bulged on his face, and his muscles trembled as if stimulated by electricity. His eyes were red as fire, and his diamond claws were stretched out as if he was looking for someone to fight.

Li Jie gestured towards the professor on the second floor. The professor understood that Li Jie needed his cooperation, so he directly controlled Logan's body. Although he was on the verge of losing control, he was unable to move.

Professor Charles was surprised at the anger within Logan, and his rage almost took over his body again without the professor noticing, breaking free from the professor's restraints.

"Calm down, Logan! Try to control your anger. They are your weapons. People should control weapons, not be controlled by them!" Li Jie came to Logan.

If Professor Charles had not controlled Wolverine, Li Jie would never have approached the angry Wolverine, because history has proven that a Wolverine approaching a state of berserk will only be torn to pieces.

Li Jie's palm tapped lightly on Logan's forehead, and the power of the Vairocana Seal gently washed over Logan's soul like running water.

Li Jie had used this set of skills to deal with wild beasts and to help Spider-Man who was possessed by wild beasts. Although he seemed to be busy with worldly affairs, he never stopped practicing. Now, he has become more and more proficient in controlling his own power and has begun to comprehend the true meaning of the Great Sun Tathagata Seal.

Under the impact of the power of the Great Sun Tathagata Seal, Logan felt that his soul was artificially split into two. One half was the angry Wolverine, raging with anger, wanting to destroy everything in front of him; the other half was the rational sage Wolverine, looking at himself from the perspective of a bystander. At this moment in Li Jie's mind maze, Logan was fighting fiercely with Magneto.

In the previous illusion, the scene of Magneto betraying Logan was still clear. After returning to Dusk Wolf and settling his grandchildren, he was determined to take revenge.

However, Magneto's power happened to restrain him, and he didn't even need to use his hands. Just pointing a finger at Logan was enough to make him unable to move.

Under Magneto's control, the adamantium claws began to deform slightly, tearing his hand bones and muscles. Magneto waved his hand lightly, and Logan was firmly pressed to the ground by the magnetic force.

The angry Wolverine was like a trapped beast. Although he struggled hard, he was imprisoned in a cage and all his roars seemed powerless.

The forcibly separated Sage Wolverine watched the battle from a third-party perspective, as if it was not him who fell to the ground. He could observe the subtle tremors of every muscle, the speed and direction of blood flow, and the creaking sounds coming from the bones of King Kong.

Magneto has an absolute advantage, and perhaps it is this advantage that makes Magneto relax. Sage Wolverine noticed that Magneto approached him and looked down at him.

He keenly felt that the pressure on his left hand was less than that on other parts of his body. Unlike his previous rage, he was now calmer and tried to concentrate his strength on his left hand, hoping to move it to surprise Magneto.

Harder! Harder! Sage Wolverine had to resist the pressure of Magneto and fight for control of his body with the angry Wolverine, which made him exhausted.

However, these efforts were not in vain. After unremitting efforts, his left hand was finally able to move forward a little bit, and his claws had already touched Magneto's leg!

"Go..." Before Wolverine finished saying the word "die", Magneto noticed something was wrong. With a light push, he threw Logan more than 30 meters away and hit a big rock.

The violent collision made Logan faint immediately. When he woke up, he

found himself sweating all over, as if he had fallen into a lake. The Night Walker in front of him was also shaking with his hands, panting, and looked very tired.

Logan knew he had left the illusion, but he didn't know how effective the training was. He tried to raise his left hand, but found that it had lost sensation, as if it was exhausted after overexertion, which confused him.

In contrast, Li Jie and Charles were more surprised, especially Li Jie, who did not expect that Logan could achieve soul separation and rationally control anger in the first training. According to records, the fastest person to do this took more than three months. Although Logan had the help of himself and Charles, it also showed that he was highly compatible with this practice.

Chapter 103 Extremely Dangerous

Li Jie is now becoming more and more interested in Logan's experiences in the illusion.

Charles was also surprised, because at the last moment, Logan's left hand actually broke free from his control and moved slightly. Although the movement was small, it was the first time Charles had encountered such a situation.

You know, even his old friend Magneto had to wear an anti-brain wave helmet before he dared to face Charles. Even this veteran strong man could not resist Charles' brain wave control.

Logan's slight struggle just now was the first time for Charles. Now, he and Li Jie began to look forward to what level Wolverine would reach if he could completely break free of Charles' control.

Logan's speed of practicing King Kong Fury exceeded Li Jie's expectations. This technique seemed to be tailor-made for Logan.

The tempering of willpower is guaranteed by the external forces of Li Jie and the professor, ensuring that Logan will not actually suffer a mental breakdown.

The physical asceticism depends entirely on Logan's irrational and super self-healing ability.

Then, Li Jie used the energy of his Vairocana Seal to penetrate Logan's body and cleanse his body and soul with his own energy.

After all, it would take too much time for Logan to figure out the complex knowledge such as the paths of martial arts and the operation of meridians by himself.

After all, Logan had never been exposed to this kind of cultural education. Even

though Li Jie had been influenced by martial arts culture, it took him nearly a year to learn this knowledge.

Initially training and studying with Iron Fist, he then obtained various books from Kamartekhi.

Now that Lan has moved in, although she is not specializing in martial arts, she knows a lot about it.

Because the mages in Kamar-Taki are not the fragile high-attack mages that Li Jie knows in the game.

They were melee mages, like Gandalf. Li Jie still remembered seeing the king wielding two huge swords in Kamar-Taki.

Rather than saying he is a mage, it would be better to say that he is a berserker with added mage skills.

In the Marvel world, if a mage does not improve his strength, critical strike, defense, and health, he cannot be considered a good mage.

What?! You said you can't dismantle Tony's Iron Man armor with your bare hands? You can't even do that, and you call yourself a wizard!

A mage who cannot defeat a berserker is not qualified to be a wise man.

So, although Lan looks weak and rarely participates in close combat, he is actually a very powerful master.

What the mage had to learn was far beyond Li Jie's imagination.

Therefore, Li Jie has learned a lot from Lan recently. His understanding of the human body's meridians and the operation of the exercises is no longer the ignorant novice at the beginning, and he no longer relies solely on the abilities granted by the system.

Ever since Logan was able to separate his soul into anger and sage during his first training, he found that he could use the sage state to carefully perceive any subtle changes in his body.

This was of great benefit to Logan's cultivation. He completely memorized the trajectory of Li Jie's exercises running in his body.

Although he didn't know what that energy was, it didn't prevent him from remembering it through rote and body memory.

After repeated training, on the fourth day, Logan actually developed a faint sense of Qi.

Originally, other people who practiced this technique did not progress so quickly, because in the early stages of practice, even a slight amount of breath energy produced would be used to repair physical and mental damage.

Use this energy to continuously repair the injured body and make the body stronger. However, Logan can skip this step because of the self-healing factor. The energy he generates does not need to be used to repair himself, but can be directly accumulated.

Of course, at present this energy is still very weak, and at most it will circulate once in the body according to the route taught by Li Jie before dissipating.

The dissipated energy did not disappear, but strengthened the body in a more efficient way. This was much better than the effect of passive strengthening that ordinary people would get after practicing for several years.

After all, this is an external skill, and the highest level is to pursue the sanctification of the physical body.

In the entire Marvel Universe, Li Jie feels that no one is more suitable for this skill than Logan.

If we have to find someone who can be compared to him, it might only be Hulk, who also uses anger as his power.

However, Hulk is too unstable, unless he can remain rational even after turning into Hulk, like the cartoons Li Jie watched when he was a child.

Otherwise, Hulk remains an extremely dangerous individual.

After more than a week of training, Professor Charles found that it was

becoming increasingly difficult to forcibly fix Logan's body, and it required more and more mental effort.

At first, Professor Charles could easily trap Logan without much effort. Now, Charles must at least enter a serious state to restrain Logan, otherwise he will break free.

This proves that Logan's willpower is increasing, and his control over his body is also increasing.

If one day, Logan practices his skills to the extreme, even if the professor uses all his strength, he will not be able to trap him.

At that time, Wolverine was truly invincible and could kill anyone who stood in his way.

However, even in the current situation, Logan is much stronger than before.

Just like he's currently sparring with Cyclops.

Cyclops Scott began to launch a long-range attack on Logan from 300 meters away. Scott's eyes can emit strong laser beams, which are no less powerful than the energy cannons fired by Tony's iron armor. Moreover, Scott's ability is more flexible than those weapons that require mechanical equipment to operate.

The special glasses that Professor Hank made for him were not only to prevent him from accidentally firing laser beams. These glasses also helped Scott to accurately lock onto the enemy. Normally, it was almost impossible for Logan to rush to Scott at a distance of 300 meters. He would be suppressed by the laser beam and couldn't raise his head. But now, Logan seemed to have changed. His face was full of rage, but he no longer rushed forward with anger like before. Instead, he became more rational. Whether it was attacking Scott's flaws or predicting and avoiding laser beams, he could do it with ease. Occasionally, when he was hit by laser beams, he also used his adamantium claws to resist them.

The actual combat training ended only when he suddenly jumped up and pointed his claws directly in front of Scott. "You seem to be getting faster and stronger." Scott pushed Logan's claws away and said. This was just training. He didn't go all out, just simply standing and attacking without using advanced lasers.

But for the original Logan, it was very difficult to break through Scott's long-range suppression at a distance of 300 meters, unless he used a life-or-death tactic. This time, Logan had no scars on his body, and Scott was sure it was not an illusion. Logan was indeed faster and more responsive. If the previous Logan was like a berserker, then now he began to transform into an assassin.

Logan smiled: "Maybe your laser ability has regressed." Since returning from the illusion, his personality has obviously improved, and he is no longer the kind of person who gets angry easily. Scott is actually a generous person, otherwise he would have stopped being friends with Logan, let alone becoming teammates. Now that Logan's temper has improved, the relationship between the two has eased a lot.

While the two were chatting, Li Jie was brought to them by Shan Shan. "Logan, it looks like your kung fu has improved a lot." Li Jie watched their actual combat training from a distance. "Not bad, it feels very strange, even when angry, I can still stay rational." Logan was curious about this. "That's a good thing, anger is a weapon, you should control it, not let it control you." Li Jie patted Logan on the shoulder. "By the way, if you are free, let's talk." Seeing that Li Jie had something private to discuss with Logan, Scott said goodbye to Shan Shan.

"What's up?" Logan asked. "How is Daken doing recently?" Li Jie suddenly mentioned Logan's son. "Much better. He used to have a weird temper. Now, although he is still silent, he is no longer so impulsive and irritable." Logan replied. Li Jie nodded: "This is a good thing. Maybe the illusion has made him grow up. You know, people always become better after learning to take responsibility." "Just like you have Daken, I think you have obviously become more responsible." This sentence made Logan wave his hand a little embarrassed.

Li Jie continued, "In fact, I think Daken can improve his sense of responsibility, not just in this aspect." "You mean help him find a girlfriend? I'm afraid that's not possible now. He still feels guilty about Katie." Logan gently stroked the hard beard on his chin. "No, that's not what I meant." Just kidding, Katie is now the president of the country, and it's simply a fantasy for Daken to pursue her. "I mean, what if Daken had a younger generation." "Younger generation?" "For example, a younger sister, what do you think?" Li Jie said seriously, "Have you ever considered raising another daughter, Logan?" "Huh?"

"Huh?" Logan didn't react for a moment. Li Jie felt a little embarrassed. Originally, Wolverine was a free bachelor who could drink, pick up girls, kill people and dance. However, last time he went to Japan, he brought back his son Daken. Well, he hadn't recognized his son for long, and now there was a child who might be his daughter. A bachelor inexplicably became a single father, with a son who was a problem teenager, and a daughter who was prone to becoming a problem teenager. Although he felt embarrassed, Li Jie still told Logan everything about Laura.

"I can be sure that I have never had sex with any Mexican women." Logan scratched his head, his hair becoming even more messy. "Really?" Li Jie glanced at him. "Uh, really?" Logan himself was not sure. A few years ago, when he was wandering, he did have one-night stands with many women, but they were all voluntary, so it didn't matter who lost or gained.

However, it was really hard for Logan to accept the sudden appearance of a daughter. Especially according to Nightcrawler, this girl seemed to be involved in the Weapon X program. Just look at her modified claws inlaid with adamantium.

Her fate is exactly the same as Logan's.

"No matter what the truth is, Logan. This little girl wants to see you." Li Jie looked at Logan and said seriously, "I don't think you would refuse such a trivial request from a cute little girl."

"Okay, but..." Logan was interrupted by Li Jie before he could finish his words.

"Okay, it's settled. I'll bring her next time. By the way, in order to avoid making it too formal, you'd better prepare some desserts and toys that she likes. After all, it's a father and daughter who have been reunited after a long time, so it's always better to make it warm." Li Jie counted on his fingers as he spoke, reminding them one by one, as if he was afraid of missing something important. His eyes revealed a kind of expectation and nervousness, as if what was about to come was not just a meeting, but an emotional collision.

He knew that this reunion was of great significance to them. The father and daughter who had been reunited after a long separation needed more time to adapt to each other's presence, and creating a warm atmosphere would help alleviate the possible embarrassment and strangeness. Desserts can bring a sweet

taste and make his daughter feel warm; while toys can bring them closer and add a touch of childishness.

Li Jie couldn't help but imagine the scene at that moment: his daughter happily tasting her favorite dessert with a happy smile on her face; the two of them playing with toys together, their laughter filling the whole room. Such a scene filled him with anticipation, and he also hoped that he could leave good memories for his daughter.

"She's been living with us lately, so I know her preferences pretty well. Get some vanilla and strawberry ice cream, her favorite Chip N' Go chocolate chip cookies, and some M&M's chocolate covered peanuts. You should have some of that ready."

Logan was stunned when he heard this, but Li Jie continued, "Also, she likes unicorn and rainbow pony patterns and dolls. You can decorate the meeting place with these, which will make the atmosphere more cozy."

Wait, forget about the desserts and snacks, but what are these unicorns and rainbow ponies? Logan felt confused. Did he have to run dozens of kilometers to the town to buy wallpapers and posters with rainbow ponies?

Chapter 104 Karma

Logan was the only one left, feeling a little dazed by the wind. He felt that the "Rage of King Kong", which had just started to show some signs of improvement, seemed to have cracks.

It was not until Li Jie walked further and further away that Logan remembered that he had forgotten to ask a question: "Why do you always find my child?"

However, Li Jie would not give him the opportunity to ask this question now.

Although this girl is very different from ordinary girls, everyone still treats her as a little cutie. Like Mindy, Laura becomes the new favorite of the Night Watch team.

Of course, she was treated like a mascot, and all the delicious and fun things were given to her and Mindy first.

Now that Laura's affairs have been clarified, Mindy now plays with Laura, including various equipment in the base and newly developed equipment.

Of course, there are also Mindy's various comics and prepared games. Li Jie spent several thousand dollars to buy a new projector for the base, which can be used to display materials during meetings, watch movies and play games at other times.

Now, when Mindy has nothing to do, she plays games with Laura on the projector. Sometimes she goes out to interact with the superheroes of the Justice League and do some work as a New York vigilante. Life is pretty comfortable.

Laura is an introverted but very sensible child. Unlike Mindy who is lively and playful, she is always alert and lacks a sense of security.

Only when she is with Mindy can she relax. Li Jie found Laura and told her: "Hi,

Laura. I have already told Logan that he will be ready and you will be able to meet him soon. Maybe you will have another brother."

Hearing Li Jie's joke, Laura just shook her head slightly, glanced at him, and said nothing. She turned and went into the room, and found a schoolbag from under the bed that she never let anyone touch.

"Are you going to see him now?" Laura asked softly.

"No, I want him to be ready and not be rude when he sees you." Li Jie leaned over and touched Laura's soft brown hair.

Especially Storm, who was nagging: "The tablecloths and napkins are all from My Little Pony. Is that too much? I bought so many My Little Pony things in town that the store owners were surprised."

"Storm, stop complaining." Jean Grey glanced at her, then looked at Logan who looked a little depressed, and was amused by his expression: "Hehe, at least you can't expect Wolverine to buy these."

Jean Grey found a large glass bowl and filled it with chocolate beans. On another plate, there were some Chocolaty Chocolate Cookies piled up in the shape of a small tower, which looked quite delicate.

Of course, there are potato chips and ice cream in the kitchen refrigerator. It is the first time to buy so many snacks in the villa since coming to Canada.

Logan said a little embarrassedly: "Anyway, thank you."

"You're welcome!" the two ladies answered in unison. Qin smiled and said, "After all, she is your daughter. I never thought you would be so lucky to have both a son and a daughter."

"Logan, the professor wants you to come over." Scott came to the restaurant and shouted, "He has prepared a new shirt, pants and leather shoes for you."

"What?" Logan's eyebrows were about to frown together.

"You can't go to see her wearing a tank top and old jeans. She's a girl, not like boys. You should pay attention to your image." Regardless of whether Logan

was willing or not, Scott dragged him to the professor to change into new clothes.

So, in the newly decorated restaurant, Logan, wearing a neat shirt and trousers, waited for the girl named Laura to appear. Beside him, Daken also changed into new clothes with a curious look on his face.

She would only feel at ease when she was with Mindy, so in order to calm Laura down, Mindy had to come with her.

In addition, Mindy also has her concerns: "I don't know if that guy with a beard and paws is reliable. What if Mindy is bullied by him?"

So, after hearing what Mindy said, Li Jie had no reason to refuse her from accompanying Laura to meet Logan.

Charles and Qin were chatting at the gate of the forest villa. When they saw Li Jie coming with Laura, Charles said to Laura with a smile on his face, "Welcome, I think you are Laura. Come in quickly, Logan is waiting for you in the restaurant."

The professor is always kind and friendly, especially to young mutants. He is always like a good teacher and elder.

Li Jie greeted Charles and Jean, and then took the two little girls to the restaurant. Storm and Jean had decorated the entire restaurant in the style of My Little Pony, with posters, tablecloths and napkins everywhere.

Logan surprised Tenderloin a little. He was wearing a formal shirt and trousers. His hair was obviously well-groomed and neatly combed back. He looked like a product manager.

This is very different from the image of Logan in Li Jie's memory.

Charles walked through the restaurant and winked at Li Jie: "Not bad, I picked it for Logan."

Li Jie shook his head helplessly and patted Laura on the shoulder: "Laura, this is Logan, Wolverine."

The little girl stared at Logan in confusion for a while, then said suspiciously: "You are lying to me!"

"Wait, what? What did I lie to you about?" Li Jie was confused by Laura's questioning look as if she was a big liar.

Laura pulled a comic book out of her pocket, pointed to Logan on the cover and said, "That's Wolverine."

The Logan on the cover has messy hair and untidy beard, which is completely different from the image of the product manager in front of us.

Laura pointed at the neat version of Logan: "He's not Wolverine!"

"Huh?" Li Jie felt helpless and looked at Mindy, hoping she could say something, but Mindy pretended not to see it.

Li Jie had no choice but to walk over to Logan and apologize: "I'm sorry."

"What?" Before he could react, Li Jie had already rubbed Logan's head, completely ruining his carefully styled hairstyle.

He also tore off several buttons on Logan's shirt, instantly turning Logan from a successful person into an unkempt middle-aged man.

"Hey! What are you doing!" Logan took great pains to dress up in order to leave a good impression on Laura, but Li Jie ruined everything.

Li Jie shrugged helplessly, ignoring Logan's protests, and said to Laura: "Look, this is Wolverine."

Laura carefully compared the image in the comics with the Logan in front of her, and discussed it quietly with Mindy.

Finally, the little girl nodded: "Okay, he's Wolverine."

Li Jie patted Logan's shoulder and whispered, "I hope you don't mind me messing up your hair."

Logan took a deep breath and thanked Li Jie for teaching him the "Vajra Fury"

technique. If it were his old self, he would have definitely been angry.

The two girls sat at the dining table and Logan motioned for Daken to go to the fridge and get some ice cream.

"Nightwalker said you like these. I don't really understand what girls like. I hope you like them." Logan's words seemed a little stiff.

He handed over a mix of vanilla and strawberry flavored ice cream.

"Thank you." Mindy took it readily and thanked him.

Laura glanced at Logan and Daken before taking the ice cream and whispering, "Thank you."

"Laura, how about I take you out to eat?" Li Jie noticed the awkward atmosphere and pulled Mindy.

Mindy pouted, but nodded. Before leaving, she leaned over to Laura's ear and whispered, "Call me if you need anything."

Li Jie took Mindy out of the restaurant, and Logan looked relieved.

He asked Laura, "Where's your mother?"

"Dead." Laura answered without even looking up. Logan could not read any more emotions or feelings from this child.

"Well, what were you doing in Mexico before you came to New York?" Logan was a little embarrassed. Daken was curious about this girl who might become his sister.

"They trained me to be a weapon. To kill people and stuff like that." Laura recounted her experience without much emotion, as if it didn't matter.

Logan frowned. Why did his children all have such experiences? Was it really karma? Did his sins affect his descendants? Now, Logan began to believe in the cycle of fate.

"Everything you want to know is here," Laura said, opening the backpack that

she had always kept hidden from others.

It was filled with thick files, containing all of Laura's experimental data and mission objectives.

Logan noticed that Laura's code name in the experimental data was X23.

Chapter 105 Gene Replication

"What does X23 mean exactly?" Logan asked.

"I am the twenty-third experimental sample. The previous ones were all unsuccessful." Laura's voice was cold and she stopped eating ice cream.

Logan realized that he might have asked a question he shouldn't have asked: "Sorry, if you don't want to tell me, you don't have to tell me."

“It’s nothing. I can tell you that I still have X24 to X50 behind me.” Laura’s tone became worse and worse.

“But you don’t have to worry about the others.”

"Why?"

"Because I solved all of them." Laura's voice was as calm as if she was telling an insignificant thing, but this sentence made the air around her seem to freeze into ice, heavy and depressing. The ice cream in her hand melted, and the rainbow pony pattern on it seemed to have lost its former bright colors, unable to bring a trace of warmth to the cold atmosphere.

This answer was like a heavy hammer, shattering the originally harmonious situation. Everyone looked at each other with expressions of disbelief and fear on their faces. No one thought that this seemingly gentle and kind girl would have such a cruel side.

Laura doesn't care how many people she kills. In this respect, Laura and Mindy are quite similar.

Although they are both young girls, they both have blood on their hands. The only difference is that Mindy volunteered and she didn't think there was anything wrong with killing a bunch of villains. Laura was forced to do it, and the mission

she performed included killing, which was not her preference. Because she couldn't ensure that everyone she killed deserved it.

It is very likely that those who were killed by her had their own families and lives, and their peaceful days were torn apart by Laura's metal claws. Therefore, for Laura, if she can, she does not want to kill. Of course, if someone thinks she is a kind little girl because of this, she will have to pay the price.

Logan looked through the information brought by Laura and clearly saw that Laura was cloned using his genes.

Although it seems that Laura has little to do with him, Logan can feel a sense of flesh and blood connection. In his memory, he only remembers one time when he participated in the X-weapon program and his genes were extracted, which was when the adamantium alloy was implanted (Logan recovered some memories after waking up from the illusion, although they were still vague, but he still couldn't remember some things that happened a long time ago).

The Weapon X project was led by Stryker, who also destroyed it with other X-Men.

Logan flipped through the documents and finally found a line of source at the end of the pile of files: Mexico's AIM Genetic Engineering Department.

Logan frowned and decided to discuss what this so-called AIM was with Nightcrawler and Professor X later.

He thought it would be better to discuss Laura's whereabouts first. After all, this girl had a close relationship with him. Besides, as Night Walker said, he already had a son, so he wouldn't mind having another daughter.

Moreover, Laura escaped secretly, and AIM would definitely hunt her down. She was just lucky that she was not caught now, but there was no guarantee that she would always be so lucky. Therefore, someone had to protect Laura.

"Laura, I don't know what to say." Logan sorted out his thoughts. He didn't know how to express his complicated emotions. After all, he was not mentally prepared for this daughter who suddenly appeared.

After a moment of silence, Logan slowly said: "In a way, I... I think I can be

considered your father."

When Logan said this, he felt a little awkward. He had never thought that such a child would appear in his life, let alone take on the responsibility of being a father. But facing the girl in front of him, he could not deny the special connection between her and himself.

Perhaps he had never said such words to anyone in such an affectionate way. Even when facing Deacon, he kept his emotions in his heart and did not express them easily.

"So, if you want, you can live with me." Logan pointed to Daken who was standing next to him and continued, "This is your brother. You can call him brother from now on. If you are not used to it, you can just call him by his name, Daken. Of course, the same goes for me. You don't have to call me uncle or anything like that. Just call me by my name, Logan." After saying this, Logan looked at Daken again and said, "Daken, from today on, you have a younger sister. You must protect her well."

Logan smiled and tried his best to appear friendly.

When Deacon saw that Laura had finished her ice cream, he handed her another one, not knowing that it was not good for girls to eat too much cold food. Laura said thank you, then lowered her head and silently ate the second box of ice cream.

"To be honest, Laura, I may not be a good father. I have never done anything like caring about others." Logan looked at Laura and then at Daken.

He said with a hint of guilt: "For most of my life, I have hurt others instead of helping them."

"I have taken far more lives than I have saved." This is Logan's own statement, and it is also the curse of Wolverine's bloodline.

From Logan to Daken, and then to Laura, every life is full of twists and turns. The world has undergone many changes due to Li Jie's intervention, including the bloody curse of this family.

If Li Jie had not intervened and brought Logan's children back to him, it would

be hard for Logan to imagine what kind of people these two children would become in the future.

Perhaps Daken will become a mentally ill lunatic under heavy pressure. Although he is a little crazy now, at least he still has a chance to correct himself. And what about Laura? Logan didn't even dare to imagine what a girl like her would experience in the future.

The three members of the Wolverine family sat in silence, with only Laura quietly eating her ice cream. Daken quietly looked at this girl who looked like a sister, and suddenly felt a sense of blood connection. This was wonderful.

Sometimes, you can tell who is your friend, who is your enemy, and who is your family the first time you meet them. Laura is definitely one of those people. She gives Daken a feeling that even surpasses Logan's.

Daken smiled for the first time since he and Logan left the East, and the reason was simple.

He pointed at the corner of Laura’s mouth: “You have something stuck here.”

When Laura was eating ice cream, it accidentally got stuck to the corners of her mouth, and her cheeks looked like they had white beards.

Seeing this, Logan picked up his napkin and said, "Don't move."

He gently held Laura's little head and carefully wiped the ice cream residue from the corner of her mouth with a tissue. His movements were as gentle as if he was taking care of a baby, for fear of hurting her.

"I..." Logan wanted to refuse because he didn't like sweets like ice cream, cake and chocolate either.

But seeing Laura's expectant eyes, he still said, "Thank you," and ate up the ice cream she handed him.

"Wait, I know a good way to eat ice cream." Logan said suddenly. He had seen Iceman use a good method at school.

He picked up a few chocolate chip cookies from the table, broke them into

pieces and threw them into the ice cream, then said with a smile, "Try it. I've seen people eat it this way, and it seems to be delicious."

Laura took a bite. The smoothness of the ice cream and the crispness of the cookies intertwined in her mouth, so delicious that she squinted her eyes.

"Daken." Laura scooped a spoonful of ice cream and handed it to Daken, asking him to try it. After Daken scooped it, he handed it to Logan: "Logan." She was not used to calling him dad.

Logan scooped a spoonful, and finally Laura scooped another large spoonful herself.

This is what a family is, right? Sharing hardships and sweetness. Although Wolverine's family is incomplete and lacks a hostess, Logan finds that he has established an indescribable connection with the two children.

An inseparable and unforgettable emotion, just like at this moment, the three of them are sharing a bowl of ice cream.

Logan experienced tenderness, Daken smiled, and Mindy found support. Although this family is not perfect, Logan feels that he has something to protect with his life, regardless of whether there is any reward.

Anyone or any organization that attempts to take it away will suffer the wrath of Wolverine, such as AIM!

After Logan and Laura recognized each other, Laura officially joined this special family and became Logan's daughter and Daken's sister. Although Laura's personality made it difficult for her to express, this feeling was obvious.

The Wolverine family is more reserved in expressing their emotions, and they don't easily reveal all their emotions, but this does not hinder the maintenance of family affection. Laura is temporarily staying in a villa in Canada, and Mindy is also invited to stay in Canada for a while and play with Laura.

For Laura, Mindy is an irreplaceable friend. Now that there is a new girl in the villa, the X-Men don't mind having another little girl, after all, they were all teachers before and have a lot of experience in taking care of children.

Moreover, Mindy is lively, active and sociable, and she quickly won the love of other mutants, and everyone accepted her.

Logan shared the information he saw in the folder carried by Laura, including information about AIM, with Li Jie and Professor X.

"AIM Genetic Engineering Department?" The professor said he knew very little about this organization.

Li Jie shook his head and said, "It has a formal company name and looks like a formal company. On the surface, it may be legal."

"But developing the Weapon X program is by no means a legal act," Logan said. "I thought the Weapon X program would end after Stryker's death. I heard that the U.S. Congress has shut down funding for the project."

Li Jie nodded and relayed the captain's message: "Yes, Congress believes that the X Weapon Program costs hundreds of millions of dollars every year, but has no substantial results. There has been no breakthrough progress in decades."

"It's understandable that members of Congress are reluctant to invest any more." Li Jie continued, "After all, the Weapon X program was originally led by the Nazi Hydra, and the US military only accepted the surrendered ones. It's hard to say where the other Hydra members are hiding."

Li Jie shrugged: "Maybe AIM is the remnant of Hydra." In fact, AIM is indeed related to Hydra. Li Jie remembered that this organization existed among the Hydra branches.

As for whether the Extremis virus is still related to the company in the original work, Li Jie is not quite sure.

In this world, Li Jie never claims to be a prophet, because there are too many ambiguous things. Before doing anything, it is best to think twice before acting.

"But we know nothing about AIM's background. If it is a legitimate company, we can't just break into their headquarters and force them to give us information," the professor said with a frown.

"Brotherhood of Mutants." Li Jie suddenly blurted out this word.

"What?" Logan was puzzled as to why Li Jie suddenly brought this up. Li Jie ignored him and just looked at the professor.

"You mean Max, also known as Magneto?" The professor suddenly understood what Li Jie meant.

"Yes, isn't he looking for his children?" Li Jie glanced at Logan. Logan now has a son and a daughter, but poor Magneto lost his wife and his children have been missing for decades. One can imagine the resentment in his heart.

"If his children are also mutants, and were taken away because of those things, what do you think the chances are that they will fall into AIM's hands, especially if AIM is involved with Hydra."

"Since they can study the Weapon X program, if Magneto's child is a powerful mutant, the research value is self-evident." Li Jie's words made the professor nod: "But we still can't be sure that AIM is related to the disappearance of Magneto's child."

"Who cares?" Li Jie said nonchalantly, "There's a Chinese saying that goes, 'Whether there are dates or not, try it three times.' Let's give it a try first. Besides, we're not the ones going to pick the dates, so we don't even need to use the poles to pick the dates."

The professor looked at Li Jie helplessly. This guy's ability to divert attention and pass the buck was getting better and better.

"Then let's do as you say." Charles agreed with Li Jie's plan.

Li Jie waved his hand and said, "Then I'll leave Mingdi in your care for the time being. Her father also agrees that she can stay here for a while."

After saying that, Li Jie prepared to leave. He had other things to do, such as helping Iron Man test the new real version of the VR game.

Inside the Stark Industries Building.

"You are late." Tony Stark has been waiting for Li Jie in the laboratory for a long time.

"Sorry, something took me a while." Li Jie waved his hand.

"How much do you know about AIM, Tony?" Li Jie told him everything about Logan and Laura, and also cleverly mentioned the Extremis virus.

"AIM is an extremely professional company. It does not have many physical industries and mainly provides technical support to other companies and countries. It is a scientific research-oriented enterprise. People outside the circle rarely hear about it." Tony briefly introduced what he knew about AIM, and at the same time let Li Jie enter a special spherical cabin.

Chapter 106 Dawn Magic Water

"If what you said is true, then if AIM is connected to Hydra, with their scientific research capabilities, they will probably quickly develop weapons against mutants. But it's amazing that the girl named Laura killed all the experimental subjects in one breath." Tony whistled.

"Laura is Logan's daughter. Don't show this attitude in front of Logan." Li Jie reminded.

Tony immediately said: "No, I don't have any moral prejudice against clones. Because they also have souls, not tools, especially when they are still little girls."

Tony has begun adjusting the parameters of the spherical cabin to ensure that everything is functioning properly.

"Don't you think there are too many villains on Earth? They're a bit like those characters in comics who can be resurrected no matter how hard they fight." Tony helped Li Jie get into the cabin, which was a full-body immersive device.

It utilizes many new technologies researched by Tony, including a new brainwave sensing control method inspired by Professor Charles' brainwave sensing.

After Li Jie got dressed, he started the machine as Tony requested. Before he started the immersive training, he smiled at Tony and said, "So we need a super fleet that spans the ages and has decisive power at critical moments, so that the whole world can shut up when necessary!"

Since the Dawn 101 Hair Growth Water became a global hit, the Dawn Technology Company founded by the Illuminati has embarked on their global road to making money.

After the first month, the production of Shuguang 101 began to expand rapidly.

The original plan was to expand to one million bottles per month, but the market demand far exceeded expectations. Although we knew from the beginning that the product would be a best-seller, we did not expect it to be so popular that it was almost crazy.

In New York, Tokyo, and Shanghai, cities that sell Shuguang 101 hair-growing water, long lines formed outside all sales outlets overnight. Some people even came to line up two days in advance with food and blankets.

This allowed Pepper to expand its original production capacity of one million bottles, which increased to one and a half million bottles in the second month, but this still could not meet market demand.

In just two months, Sugon Technology Co., Ltd. has earned hundreds of millions of dollars in profits worldwide. This explosive profit is not a one-off, but a sustainable development trend.

The global pharmaceutical cosmetics production line is being strongly impacted by Sugon Technology, especially another product recently launched by the company, which has had a huge impact on the traditional skin care market.

This is the Dawn Skin Repair Fluid. As the initial promotion said, this new product developed by Dr. Hank has a magical effect on the repair of various scars, which can almost be said to be subversive.

Whether it's burns, cuts, surgical scars, or other injuries, it can repair them. The only downside is that it can only repair the epidermis, not the structural damage to the underlying muscles.

But if it can repair the damage of muscle structure, it will no longer be a skin repair fluid. It will not be able to obtain a cosmetic license, but will be classified as a drug. After becoming a drug, sales and distribution may not be as good as cosmeceuticals, and sales may not necessarily be comparable to cosmeceuticals.

This new repair fluid is named: Dawn Magic Water. A single bottle is priced at $980. Is it expensive? It does not look cheap.

But how do people usually repair their skin after it is damaged? The most common method is skin grafting, but skin grafting has many limitations, and the cost of surgery is high, so not everyone can afford it.

Moreover, the effect of skin grafting is far inferior to the perfect repair of Dawn Magic Water. In the United States, a skin grafting operation of about 10 cm by 10 cm can cost thousands or even tens of thousands of dollars.

For scars of the same size, the price of Magic Water is only one-tenth of the cost of surgery, and the effect is even better.

Before the magic water was officially launched on the market, 50 bottles were released in the pre-sale stage alone, and they were sold out worldwide seven minutes after their release.

Even some Hollywood actresses who had had relationships with Tony contacted him directly, expressing their willingness to reconcile with him as long as he could be guaranteed to provide this magic water in the future.

This has made Pepper's attitude towards Tony unfriendly recently, but the money is real, and this income has made the Illuminati earn hundreds of millions of dollars more.

Tony once again invested this money in the development, construction and expansion of the Venus base.

Today, the Venus base is fully operational. Collecting resources on Venus is not like collecting resources on Earth, where you have to consider sustainable development or ecological protection. On Venus, you only need to ensure that Venus will not be completely destroyed within a certain period of time, and you don't have to worry too much about other things.

It can even be said that the exploitation of many resources is destructive. The goal of the Illuminati is to build a powerful fleet in a short period of time to silence the world, whether it is the establishment of a mutant nation, the madness of Hydra, or any other threat.

Li Jie and Tony were in no mood to argue with them anymore. Sometimes, when negotiations break down, just flip the table! When the Star Fleet appears, it will always shut up those bullies!

The main purpose of this fleet is to guard against possible alien invasions. Although the exact time of the invasion is uncertain, it is better to be prepared.

Under this premise, it is acceptable to hollow out a Venus.

The Iron Man Factory and Iron Man Mine are producing at maximum capacity with continued crazy investment and resource allocation.

So far, the Venus base has manufactured two interstellar battleships of each class except the Yamato-class strategic cruiser in more than a month.

However, since it was the first time to manufacture them, despite the design drawings, various problems still occurred during the production process. One-third of the warships were not capable of actual combat, and another third had obvious defects. The only one that really met the standards and could perform the mission was the last Viking-class multi-purpose interceptor produced.

But this is to be expected. Although Tony is a genius, he has never produced an interstellar weapon. It can be said that no human race has ever produced such a weapon.

The first production is to accumulate experience. For Li Jie and Tony, the first failure is nothing. People with foresight never care about temporary gains and losses.

The first month of production was experimental, and many equipment and factories had not yet been put into operation. Now, Tony had mastered certain rules, and Dr. Hank was also stationed at the Venus base, responsible for the process of the entire production line.

This has accelerated the production of the second batch of warships and ensured better quality.

For Li Jie, only a dozen warships could not ensure the advantage in the war. He still remembered that the interstellar army of the Chitauri covered the sky and the sun.

Li Jie was not sure whether his fleet could gain a technological advantage, so in terms of numbers, the Earth fleet must at least not be at a disadvantage.

In the immersive simulation cabin, Li Jie controlled a fleet consisting of twelve Vikings, six Banshees and one Nighthawk to conduct tactical training.

The training ground on Earth was a simulation, and the actual command room of the fleet was located on Venus. During this period, Jarvis acted as an intelligent auxiliary to the work that should have been done by Friday, the artificial intelligence at the Venus base.

"Sir, a heat source signal was detected at coordinates 3000, 105,3302 kilometers away from the fleet." Li Jie's simulated opponent was set by Tony based on the information in "Star Wars".

Chapter 107 Stealth Mode

Including things like X-wing fighters and Destroyer battleships. It's really cool to imagine a fierce battle between Starfleet and the Sith fleet.

"Activate stealth mode, start microwarp drive. Go forward three degrees."

"Understood, sir."

"Activate the guided missile system."

"The guided missile has been activated."

"Prepare the Wild Eagle EMP bombs. Aim at the core of the enemy fleet." Be it Li Jie, Tony or Captain Rogers, none of them had ever actually fought in an interstellar war, and they were all unsure.

When it comes to tactical command, everyone is a novice. But Li Jie has the least connection with politics.

Charles has a mutant stance, while Tony and Captain Rogers have close ties with the US government. So in the end, everyone voted for Li Jie to command the Starfleet, after all, he was the one who provided the fleet's design.

While Li Jie was simulating an interstellar war, Hawkeye of S.H.I.E.L.D. received a new mission.

"Why should I pick someone up?" Patton looked at Hill.

Hill explained: "This way you can get rid of Deadpool for a while. You've shot at least fifteen arrows at him in the past three days! Don't tell me it was a mistake. If you were so careless, I would have to consider kicking you out of the Avengers team!"

"He deserves it!" Patton said indifferently, "He can't be shot to death anyway, so what does it matter?"

"I know there are some comics on the Internet. Coulson told me. It's disgusting that he put me together with him! It would be better if it was Captain Rogers or something like that." Hawkeye's complaint gave Hill a headache.

"Okay, I'll do my best. However, I don't think the S.H.I.E.A. will cause us any trouble. They are just a bunch of pretentious guys." Hawkeye said disdainfully.

"I agree with you, but this mission is very important. If anything goes wrong, it may affect the relationship between the two countries. So, we must handle this matter carefully." Hill said seriously.

"No problem, I will pay attention. But if they dare to do anything bad to us, I will not be polite either." Hawkeye said.

"I hope everything goes well." Hill sighed. She knew that this mission was full of challenges and uncertainties, but she believed that her team could cope with any difficulties.

Soon, Hawkeye and Coulson arrived at the airport, ready to meet the agents of the S.H.I.E.A. When they saw each other, they were surprised. It turned out that the agent sent by the S.H.I.E.A.A. was a young woman named Zhang Heng. She was wearing a black tights, tall, beautiful, and her eyes revealed a firmness and confidence.

"Welcome to America, Miss Zhang Heng." Hawkeye extended his hand politely.

"Thank you for your hospitality. On behalf of the Shenmao Bureau, I would like to express my gratitude to you." Zhang Heng responded with a smile. She spoke English fluently, which was impressive.

"Nice to meet you, Miss Zhang Heng. I'm Coulson, in charge of the reception. If you need anything, please feel free to let me know." Coulson also said friendly.

"Thank you. I would like to know your plans first." Zhang Heng asked.

"Of course, we have prepared a detailed plan, including the meeting agenda, accommodation arrangements, etc. If you have other requirements, we can also

adjust them according to actual conditions." Coulson replied.

"Okay, I will study this plan carefully. At the same time, I also hope to communicate and cooperate with your special agent team to complete this mission together." Zhang Heng said.

"No problem, we will fully cooperate with your work. I hope we can establish a good cooperative relationship and jointly maintain world peace." Hawkeye said. Although he had some reservations about the S.H.I.E.A., he still showed a certain respect for this young and beautiful agent.

In the next few days, Zhang Heng worked closely with Hawkeye and Coulson to jointly develop a series of action plans against terrorist organizations. They gave full play to their respective advantages and cooperated with each other to make the entire operation more efficient and orderly.

At the same time, Zhang Heng gradually integrated into the team and established deep friendships with everyone. She demonstrated outstanding leadership and professionalism, winning the trust and respect of everyone.

Finally, after arduous efforts, they successfully fought against the terrorist organization, rescued the kidnapped hostages, and protected the security interests of the two countries. The operation was a complete success and was highly praised by the governments of both sides.

At the celebration banquet, Zhang Heng toasted with Hawkeye, Coulson and others. She said with emotion: "This operation made me feel the friendly and cooperative atmosphere between China and the United States. We defeated the enemy together and defended justice. I hope there will be more such opportunities in the future, so that we can work together and make greater contributions to world peace."

Hawkeye smiled and raised his glass, responding: "I believe that as long as we unite, there will be no difficulties that cannot be overcome. I look forward to fighting alongside you again in the future!"

Everyone raised their glasses to celebrate the victory. At this moment, they were full of confidence and courage, ready to meet new challenges and opportunities.

"As long as you do a good job this time, I won't hold you accountable for

shooting Deadpool."

Barton thought for a moment and said, "Okay. But what is the S.H.I.E.A. going to do in New York?"

"The Stark Industrial Expo has begun. Ever since Tony Stark announced the new energy plan and Harry Osborn announced the limb regeneration plan, the world has begun to accelerate. Perhaps we are now at a turning point in history, and no one wants to fall behind." Hill suddenly said earnestly.

Hawkeye thought for a moment that the person in front of him was not Hill, but One-Eyed Nick. But, was this just his illusion? Hawkeye shook his head and drove the absurd idea out of his mind.

Stark Industrial Expo has become a regular event of Stark Group since Howard Stark first held this world-renowned industrial event in the suburbs of New York in the 1930s. It is held every four years in New York. From then to now, it has a history of more than 70 years.

It can be said that this has become part of the corporate culture of Stark Industries and has been integrated into the company's blood. In this world, the scale and influence of the World Expo or BMW Industrial Exhibition cannot be compared with the Stark Industrial Expo.

As early as the 1930s, Howard launched an epoch-making advanced car at the first industrial exposition he held - the first floating car. It can be said that it was the prototype of Tony's floating car, but the difference was that the car Tony designed was a real anti-gravity car that used the earth's magnetic field to achieve suspension and even flight.

Howard's car made extensive use of the concept of ground-effect vehicles at the time and did not really solve the energy problem, so it can only be regarded as a semi-finished product. Even so, Howard's innovation and ideas at the time still shocked the world.

Seventy years later, the Stark Industries Expo has grown from a commercial show that initially showcased Stark Industries' latest inventions and company development plans to a large-scale expo with global influence. This is related to the twenty years of development since Tony took over Stark Industries. Compared with his father, Tony Stark has a broader vision and prefers to show

himself in the spotlight.

You can think of this as showing off, but it's much more than that. Tony's leadership has enabled Stark Group to reach more areas, including environmental protection, energy, charity, information technology and supercomputers, artificial intelligence, industrial integration, etc.

Stark Industries no longer relies solely on weapons to make a fortune. If the World Expo is a stage for countries to display their national business cards and images, then the Stark Industries Expo is a big show that affects countries around the world to show their strength. Over the past 70 years, more than 170 countries have participated in this industrial feast, and as many as 17,000 companies have participated. The one-month exhibition attracts tens of millions of tourists and visitors.

At last year's Stark Industries Expo, the amount of transaction intentions reached in one month reached 1.1 trillion US dollars. This grand event held every four years indicates the possibilities and plans for global industrial development in the next four years. Here, you can see more than just cold machines.

People with real vision can see those grand machines, which are either awe-inspiringly huge or amazingly exquisite. They contain the power of civilization and technology. These things are reshaping human society and influencing the future!

Here, you can see the world's most advanced industrial equipment and innovative thinking that breaks the rules.

This is a stage for countries to showcase their industrial strength. Although promoting a country’s image at the World Expo is important, it is only a superficial business card.

What is on display at this industrial expo is the true essence of a country.

Industry and machines demonstrate awe-inspiring power.

On the highway from New York to Atlantic City, the Stark Industrial Expo Park has been expanded and renovated for more than 70 years and is now connected to a large area. The most remote rest stop can even connect the two cities.

The land value here alone is astronomical. For successive mayors of New York City and Atlantic City, hosting the Stark Industrial Expo is their top priority during their tenure.

This year's expo is destined to be extraordinary because Tony has previously announced a new energy plan and launched a lunar development project.

This is an era of great change. Every country and every person can feel the unstoppable trend impacting traditional society.

For Li Jie and Tony, they both understand the significance of this Stark Industrial Expo. This may be the starting point of a new era.

Regarding the vision of this new era, Li Jie and Tony had the following conversation:

Tony: "I firmly believe that mankind will truly enter the era of the universe for the first time."

Li Jie: “Is it good or bad?”

Tony: "What?"

Li Jie: "When humans enter the universe and start interstellar colonization, are they still the humans we know? Just like the farmers in the Age of Exploration, after they boarded the ships to conquer the New World, they were destined to be associated with guns and blood, and brutally killed the indigenous people."

Li Jie: "Is that farmer still the same farmer?"

Tony: "What do you want to say?"

Li Jie frowned and said seriously: "Compared to our explosive growth in technology, our social science progress is too slow. It's like a person's body becomes stronger, but his mind remains rigid."

He paused and continued, "This imbalance has led to a series of problems. For example, we have more advanced technology and can produce more and better products, but it also brings problems such as waste of resources and environmental pollution. These are all because our thinking has not kept up with

the pace of the times and we have not adjusted our values and behaviors in time."

“For example, although we have communication tools such as the Internet, the level of trust between people is getting lower and lower. Everyone feels that others are untrustworthy, and even family and friends are not easily trusted. This is because our social sciences have not developed to a mature enough stage to guide people to view the world correctly.”

Finally, Li Jie concluded: "So I think if we want to truly achieve sustainable development, we must attach importance to the research and development of social sciences. Only when our minds catch up with our bodies can we make better use of technology and create a better future."

Tony: "So, you have an idea?!"

Li Jie: "Yes, I have an idea. By forming an interstellar fleet, humans will one day go beyond the solar system. Unlike the Age of Exploration, we can now predict some things. Even if they are not necessarily correct, at least we can prepare in advance."

Tony: “For example?”

Li Jie: "For example, the study of cosmic sociology and cosmic philosophy."

Tony smiled and said, "I thought you were not interested in scientific theories, especially social science theories."

Li Jie laughed louder than Tony: "Yes, I am not interested most of the time. But if we want to build a new era, we must take action. Philosophy and sociology may not be used in a lifetime, but they are what every politician must learn. They need to find the right leadership strategy."

"We need our own people. Prepare before the great cosmic era comes, and then clear out those old and dirty things! There will be a new order in the new era."

Li Jie burst into laughter, and the whole room was buzzing with laughter. His eyes were shining with excitement, as if he saw infinite possibilities in the future. He continued, "Maybe it will be more radical. You said my plan was crazy, but why can't we be even crazier? Let's make this plan more radical and

more shocking!"

He stood up, clenched his fists, and continued passionately: "Imagine what kind of changes will be brought to the world if we can successfully implement this plan! We will become the creators of history and change the course of human society! This is not just a business plan, but a revolution, a challenge to traditional concepts!"

His voice became more and more passionate, as if he was already in a future full of change and hope. His eyes were firm and passionate, full of determination and courage. He believed that his plan had great potential to change people's lifestyles, promote the development of science and technology, and even affect the direction of human civilization as a whole.

"I feel great to be a person who changes the world!" His face is filled with confidence and pride. He knows that the road ahead is full of difficulties and challenges, but he firmly believes that as long as he has the courage to try, he will be able to create miracles. He decided to go all out and use his wisdom and hard work to realize this seemingly crazy but exciting dream.

Tony also laughed: "To the madman who changed the world, I toast to you!"

Li Jie: "For this dull and crazy world!"

Stark Industries is about to hold an expo, and Osborn Group has naturally received an invitation. As the world's leading biotechnology and genetic engineering giant, Osborn Group has participated in the Stark Industries Expo every time since the Norman era.

Three months ago, the Osborne Group began researching and preparing for this important exhibition, intending to showcase the company's flagship products to attract a lot of media attention and potential business cooperation.

Since Harry took over, the Osborne Group has adjusted its strategic focus and optimized its resource allocation in the three major areas of energy, biotechnology and weapons.

Not to mention the energy business, this market has been firmly occupied by the Stark Group. Competing with them not only requires a huge capital investment, but the return on investment is not necessarily guaranteed.

Medical biotechnology is now the core focus of the Osborne Group. The company has developed a longer-term development plan around the limb regeneration program. This includes research on various medical bones and cooperation with external experts to carry out more sophisticated minimally invasive nerve repair surgery. Through the comprehensive treatment of doctor surgery combined with limb repair formulas, many originally difficult nerve injuries have been successfully cured.

In addition, a series of medical projects centered on limb restoration have emerged.

Despite the high cost of surgery and repair for these medical options, many people are still willing to line up for appointments, even if they are deeply in debt, they are willing to pay hundreds of thousands or even hundreds of thousands of dollars for treatment. After all, compared to permanent physical damage and disability, many people prefer to spend everything they have.

Currently, the Osborne Group team is exploring how to reduce costs and simplify surgical procedures to moderately reduce surgical costs. This is not only beneficial to patients, but also allows the Osborne Group to expand medical centers on a large scale around the world by controlling costs, and may even replace the trauma department of traditional hospitals. If achieved, this will bring huge profits to the Osborne Group.

After all, how many people in the world are traumatized by accidents every day, and how many such injuries are irreversible permanent losses for ordinary people. As for the weapons business, since the Stark Group and the Osborne Group exchanged weapons channels and energy channels, both parties benefited from it.

Chapter 108 1 Soaring into the Sky

Osborn has obtained sufficient weapons resource channel advantages. Unlike the arms dealers that most people imagine, although Osborn Group and Stark Industries are world-renowned arms dealers, their main business is not simply selling "weapons" as most people understand.

What real large arms dealers sell is a complete set of [integrated solutions]. Take the famous missile designed by Tony, the Jericho missile, for example. It looks like a missile with mass destruction, but to support its operation and exert its maximum power, it also requires a complex system, including fire control integration, radar search, and related control computers and transportation tools. These components are usually part of the entire product line.

Stark Group's weapons use their own code, and only their own weapons can get the best support for things like fire control systems. The value of the entire system is many times greater than that of a missile. This is actually a closed system, a necessary self-protection measure in business.

However, under Li Jie's coordination, the Osborn Group cooperated with the Stark Group, and the Stark Group opened up some old model codes to Osborn. This enabled Osborn to produce weapons compatible with the Stark integrated system. It was also because of the Stark Group's concession that Harry was able to shut up the conservatives in the group and mobilize the power of the Osborn Group to assist the Stark Group in dealing with the pressure of the release of new energy, and also traded all the energy channels it controlled. In addition, it also resisted the pressure from Congress to hand over the Iron Man armor.

There is always a reward for every effort, and this is an equal exchange. With the code, the weapons produced by the Osborne Group will be compatible with the Stark platform previously purchased by the military. This is a good thing for the military, because in addition to the Stark Group, the Osborne Group is also an important weapons supplier. But the systems of the two companies have always

been incompatible, which means that the military needs to prepare two different logistics systems, which increases the difficulty of the work!

Now, the Osborn Group has integrated everything, and other countries that previously purchased weapons from the Stark Group have turned to Osborn, including the US military. This has made the weapons department of the Osborn Group a lot of money. At the same time, due to Osborn's involvement, Tony did not agree to the US military to manufacture armor such as War Machine or Iron Patriot. Instead, the US military turned its attention to Osborn, and the low-cost version of the [Elf Armor] developed based on the Green Goblin Armor is more in line with the needs of the military for large-scale equipment.

After all, the military emphasizes collectivism, and superhero-style elites are not necessarily popular. Military generals prefer obedient elite teams. This makes life increasingly difficult for Hammer Military, which has always been following Stark and Osborn. It cannot get involved in large projects, and has to endure the squeeze of its peers for small projects with meager profits.

Moreover, in this world, Ivan Vanko, who built the first generation of the Ark Reactor, did not join Hammer Military, but joined Latvia. This gave Hammer a headache. As a scientist, although he was greedy for money, he didn't mind making a fortune through the weapons business. However, the world will not compromise or change because of personal will.

"Albert, I told you I won't sell my company! No way!" Hammer yelled into the phone. The other party was another arms dealer, Albert Manstein, a 25-year-old young arms dealer. Hammer didn't think there was anything special about this guy except that he came from a wealthy arms family. In his eyes, even Tony Stark was the same.

The Manstein family's company produces a variety of rapid-fire weapons and light weapons. Its business does not conflict with Osborn and Stark Group, and even complements these two companies that focus on heavy weapons in some ways. This is a wise path, at least there is no need to compete head-on with the two giants. However, Hammer has lofty ambitions and limited capabilities. He has always dreamed of building a super company like Stark Industries.

However, ideals are full of hope, but reality is very skinny. The crash of the attack drone made for General Ross last time and the heavy casualties caused by

the imitation of Iron Man armor put the company in a difficult situation. The military has turned a large number of orders to the Osborne Group. Now, except for buying some finished single weapons, they almost no longer order a full set of weapon platforms from him. This made him feel frustrated. He always felt that he only needed a platform and an opportunity. As long as the time was right, Hammer could also soar into the sky!

"Ding-ling-ling~!" The phone rang again. Hammer grabbed the phone irritably and roared: "I told you Albert! I won't..."

There was a slight laugh from the other end of the phone, with a hint of sarcasm. It was a slightly old voice, obviously not Albert's.

"Mr. Hammer, I am not the Albert you mentioned." The voice sounded sophisticated and majestic.

"Oops, I'm so sorry. I lost my composure." Hammer realized that this might be an important customer, so he immediately changed the subject: "Excuse me, who are you?"

"Someone who can help your company out of trouble can at least make you shine at the Stark Industries Expo in three months." The person on the other end of the phone answered seriously.

"What?" Hammer thought this might be a scam.

The person on the other end of the phone seemed to see through Hammer's thoughts, so he said, "Don't hang up yet, Mr. Hammer. My people left a little gift for your window. Take a look before making a decision. We'll contact each other then."

After that, the other party hung up the phone, which confused Hammer.

He looked out the office window and saw someone had posted an envelope more than 20 floors above the ground. This was probably the "gift" that person was talking about.

Because compared with the arrival of personnel, mechanical equipment needs to be assembled and debugged for a period of time after long-distance transportation before it can be exhibited in the best condition. If the equipment is

not in good condition, potential customers may be missed, and they may hold hundreds of millions of dollars in orders.

Today's Stark Industrial Expo is no longer an amusement exhibition among a few companies, but a competition of industrial strength between countries.

In the early 20th century, there was a popular saying: Whoever controls steel controls the world, and steel production was regarded as a sign of a strong country. By the middle of the 20th century, the saying had changed to: Whoever controls energy controls the world.

Nowadays, people are shouting: Whoever controls information controls the world. It seems that the world is really changing rapidly, and what needs to be controlled in each era is different.

In fact, apart from the superficial phenomena, the laws summarized by humans in the past hundred years show that only by mastering technology can we control the future, and only by controlling the future can we dominate the world. Therefore, everyone came to the Stark Industrial Expo to look forward to the future!

Many exhibitors have employees who live in Buffalo, which is even farther away. Even if they take the highway without stopping, it takes more than three hours to get from Stark Industrial Park to Buffalo. For them, this one-month exhibition will be a difficult tug-of-war.

During times of increased passenger traffic, it is not easy to pick someone up at New York airports because the flow of people is so large.

Fortunately, as agents of S.H.I.E.L.D., Coulson and Hawkeye Barton don't have to wait at the airport exit with other people. After all, S.H.I.E.L.D. enjoys some privileges.

The Lincoln SUV they were riding in was parked directly on the airport maintenance road, so they could pick up the arriving SHIELD agents directly from the runway.

For SHIELD, receiving SHIELD's people is a formal diplomatic mission. Of course, they don't want too many SHIELD people to come. After all, the other party is also an intelligence agency. If SHIELD's people collect intelligence

everywhere on their own territory, it will make SHIELD lose face. Although intelligence agencies usually infiltrate each other, they are all done privately. It would be embarrassing to do it publicly.

According to SHIELD, they sent two agents to the United States to learn from SHIELD's advanced experience and establish a normal cooperation mechanism based on mutual trust. Both sides should deepen exchanges and learning based on a good foundation of mutual benefit and mutual trust.

"Can't SHIELD say what they want to say more simply?" Hawkeye sat in the passenger seat, feeling a headache as he looked at the information Hill handed him.

Fortunately, Coulson next to him is good at handling these matters. Coulson himself is not known for his combat ability. His personal combat ability is almost at the middle and lower level among field agents, barely not the worst.

However, he is one of SHIELD's most important field agents, because many things cannot be solved by fighting alone.

Chapter 109 Level 7 Agent

Simply put, SHIELD wants to maintain regular contact with S.H.I.E.L.D., and the two agents are not here to play this time. Coulson explained to Hawkeye.

Just like sending an ambassador or diplomat, they expect our two agencies to communicate with each other and even share certain intelligence. I think this is what the S.H.I.E.A. means.

Coulson's words made Hawkeye frown: Are you kidding? There is not even an extradition agreement between the US and China, how can there be real cooperation? The Ten Rings gang members captured last time are still in the United States and have not been sent back to China!

Coulson spread his hands, looking puzzled: "I don't know what they are up to. But have you heard of that rumor? About our internal affairs?"

SHIELD and SHIELD? You believe this, that the two organizations are actually one? Come on, that's bullshit. We're lucky we don't hold each other back. Hawkeye's attitude represents the views of most SHIELD agents.

But Coulson seemed to know something. He said with a hint of doubt: "Yeah, I used to be like you. But you know, I have a good relationship with the captain. Once, we participated in a veterans' aid event together."

He told me something about the captain's attitude towards the S.H.I.E.A. and he didn't see them as enemies or opponents.

Hawkeye immediately became curious: What did the captain say?

The captain said: We are like two sides of the same sword, seemingly parallel, but finally meeting at the tip of the sword. Coulson recalled Captain Rogers' words, and he and Hawkeye fell into deep thought, pondering the meaning behind these words.

The two were thinking silently when the plane carrying the S.H.I.E. agents arrived at the New York International Airport. Hawkeye and Coulson had to suspend their discussion, after all, the current mission was more important.

There were two agents from the SHIELD, one male and one female. The male was about 1.8 meters tall, not a muscular European or American man, but his tight shirt revealed that he was actually very strong. He had a well-defined, slightly square face, thick eyebrows and big eyes, and looked righteous.

The female agent has black hair that reaches her ears, neat and tidy, a typical oriental beauty, with a delicate oval face and big eyes, she is a great beauty even without makeup.

Coulson, the seventh-level agent of SHIELD. Barton, the seventh-level agent of SHIELD, you can call me Hawkeye. The two introduced themselves.

The male agent of the SHIELD Bureau smiled and nodded: Hello, I am Shang Qi, an agent of the Chinese SHIELD Bureau.

The female agent gently raised her left hand, and Barton then realized that she was chewing gum: "Li Qianhuan." She introduced herself concisely.

Barton raised his eyebrows and looked at the girl in front of him who seemed ordinary but exuded a unique temperament. He was curious about her name, but did not ask much. After all, they were now in an environment full of danger and unknowns, and any information could become a key clue.

"We are going to carry out an important mission." Li Qianhuan said calmly, as if it was just a common thing. However, her eyes revealed a kind of firmness and courage, which made Barton understand that this mission was definitely not simple.

Barton nodded silently, showing his understanding. He knew that as an agent, he must always remain calm and decisive, no matter what difficulties and challenges he faced. And this female agent named Li Qianhuan seemed to have the same belief and determination.

In the following operations, Patton and Li Qianhuan worked closely together to complete a series of difficult tasks. Despite facing numerous obstacles, they never gave up, and finally successfully completed the mission with their

tenacious will and outstanding skills.

In the process, Barton gradually learned more about Li Qianhuan. She is not only smart and brave, but also has a kind heart. At critical moments, she always protects her teammates without hesitation, showing a selfless spirit.

She noticed that Barton was staring at her mouth while chewing gum, so she fumbled in the pocket of her denim shorts and pulled out a large piece of gum that was still warm from body temperature: "Want to eat? This is my last piece."

No, thank you. Hawkeye shook his head in refusal.

Come on in the car, we have arranged a good place for you to stay. Coulson invited the two to settle down first.

But the girl named Li Qianhuan suddenly said: Is it easy to buy Dawn's 'Dawn Skin Magic Water' in the United States? I want to buy some first. If you know Tony Stark, can you help me order some? Of course, I will pay, plus a little handling fee.

What? Barton and Coulson were stunned for a moment.

Qian Huan. Shang Qi glanced at Li Qian Huan.

Don't look at me like that, Boss. I didn't buy it. Do you know how many people in the United States asked me to buy things for them? Li Qianhuan took out a small piece of paper from another pocket, which was filled with the names and quantities of the people who bought things for me.

In addition to the people in the bureau, there are also my mother and my sister... If I can't bring it back, they will kill me. Do you know how difficult it is to buy 'Dawn Magic Water' in China? ! Li Qianhuan said seriously.

Coulson, who drove to pick up the two people, looked at Shang Qi with some confusion, asking with his eyes what to do.

Let's go to the place where we live first. Shang Qi shook his head helplessly: Don't mind, this is a bit of Chinese characteristics.

Stark Industries Building.

Okay, let's stop here for today. Tony said, cutting off the power and program of the simulation training cabin. Li Jie staggered out of the training cabin.

The fleet he operated today was upgraded in size. It was no longer a commando force composed of Vikings and Banshees, but had Yamato-class battlecruisers added to it.

With the twelve Yamatos as the core, a truly large fleet of nearly five hundred different ships was formed.

He trained here for nearly eight hours. Using the immersive training cabin for a long time was a considerable burden for ordinary people. Because the number of fleets and enemies was magnified, the total amount of information increased dramatically, and the pressure on the brain also increased.

You need to make various correct responses in a short period of time. Although Jarvis's artificial intelligence assists, the burden is still not small.

It seemed that Li Jie entered the training cabin as easily as usual, practicing how to command the fleet and interstellar combat skills like playing a game. But this was not a game, and it was not fun at all. Most of the time, Li Jie could not see the enemy fleet at all, and could only make judgments based on the data on the ship.

For Li Jie, he had been looking forward to witnessing a thrilling and fierce battle scene, but the reality disappointed him greatly. Although he was in the command center, he could only get some simple and cold data and information feedback from Jarvis. Whenever the enemy attacked, Jarvis always told him calmly: "Lock the target, miss, sink the target..." These monotonous words did not bring him any intuitive feelings, let alone any excitement. So, Li Jie could only rely on his imagination to describe the scenes of those fierce battles - missiles streaking across the sky, leaving a beautiful arc; aircraft carriers breaking through the waves on the sea, raising surging waves; fighter jets whizzing past, leaving a harsh roar... But all this was just a fantasy in his mind.

Because in interstellar battles, long-range strikes from hundreds of kilometers away are the norm, and the main gun range of Yamato-class battleships and missiles is thousands of kilometers. Therefore, in reality, there will not be such a spectacular scene of two ships bombarding each other face to face.

If Tony could build a mobile suit combat robot similar to Gundam, space wars might become more shocking. Li Jie told Tony about this idea, but the response he got was a roll of the eyes: "Do you know how large the reflection area of a 20-meter-tall giant robot would be?"

"Aliens could probably detect the reflected signal from tens of thousands of kilometers away, which is about the same as a Yamato-class battleship. However, the firepower of weapons carried by such a large robot could not possibly exceed that of the Yamato-class."

"This thing's flying speed may not be as fast as those Viking and Banshee fighters called 'Sky Wolves'. It seems that it can neither reach the battlefield quickly nor show a strong firepower advantage in battle. In addition, its armor protection capability is not outstanding, which really makes people wonder: how much effect can such a seemingly mediocre equipment have?" Tony frowned and said dissatisfiedly. His eyes revealed doubts and disdain for this so-called new weapon.

"Although I like the Iron Man Armor, I never thought of enlarging it into a mass-produced weapon and sending it to the front line."

"Unless in a specific battlefield, humanoid weapons have advantages and do not need to hide their whereabouts. Only giant humanoid weapons like that are valuable."

Tony threw a bottle of mineral water to Li Jie and continued, "So, don't think about your childhood dream anymore. There is no point in designing a Gundam MS/MA. It's not as valuable as designing the weapons in Macross."

Li Jie took a sip of water and noticed that Tony's tone was a little different when he mentioned Macross: "So, you want to design a space fortress?"

"What? No." Tony denied it at first, but after thinking about it, he changed his words: "Well, it doesn't hurt to tell you. This is a requirement of Congress and the military. They can't get the Iron Man armor from me, and I don't want to give it to them. So the two sides reached a compromise."

"So, you want to help the military design a space fortress that can fly into space?!" Li Jie was a little surprised.

"You're overthinking it. Unless it's built directly in space, there's no way that design can break through the atmosphere. I don't intend to give them the manufacturing methods of the jump engine and the micro-warp engine." Tony shook his head and waved his hand. His tone was firm and confident, as if he had seen through everything. He knew that he had the key technologies in his hands. These technologies were the result of his years of hard work and were also his bargaining chips for negotiating with other forces. Therefore, he would not hand them over easily.

His eyes revealed a shrewdness and determination, which reminded people of his successful experience in the business field. He knew that only by maintaining control over core technologies could he ensure his invincibility in future competition. Therefore, even in the face of strong pressure, he did not back down and insisted on his position.

Tony knows that mastering advanced technology means having greater voice and influence. He believes that as long as he holds on to this advantage, he will have the upper hand in future games. Now, all he has to do is continue to improve his plan and make his power stronger. At the same time, he must be careful to deal with those who try to obtain technology from him and protect his own interests and dignity.

"It's just like an improved version of the SHIELD aircraft carrier, using anti-gravity engines to fly, just like I designed on the car, but more complicated. Let this big guy float above the earth and transform."

"So, it's really just a space fortress within the atmosphere?" Li Jie was still surprised: "I thought you no longer helped the military design weapons."

"Yes, this is not a weapon." Tony said frankly: "It's just an accumulation of technology."

"what?"

"Like I said, it's technology accumulation. I'm not sure if this thing has combat effectiveness, or even whether it can be built. Because the deformation structure is very complicated. I just found some inspiration from the drawings you gave me, and these inspirations need a platform to display."

Li Jie immediately understood what Tony meant: "Borrowing chickens to lay

eggs?"

"Huh?" Tony didn't understand.

"I mean, you use the money from Congress and the military to do your own experiments, and you can't guarantee the results, but they don't know." Li Jie explained briefly.

"Don't say it so harshly. After all, any new thing requires experiments and technological accumulation. It's normal to fail a few times. The military should be used to it. After all, the Weapon X project has been going on for so many years and billions of dollars have been invested, but there are no results." Tony still looked serious.

"Well, my great scientist, I have to go. I'll have to let the professor train with me next time. It's too tiring for me to do it alone without a professional weapons officer."

Li Jie finished his bottle of mineral water and said, "Your Stark Industrial Expo will open tonight. Don't you need to prepare something? Like a speech or something."

"Preparation? No, I don't need it. I am a natural orator and a natural star. My mind becomes extremely active under the spotlight, as if I am endowed with unlimited energy." Tony Stark looked confident and his tone was full of narcissism. The corners of his mouth were slightly raised, and his eyes were shining, as if he was ready to meet any challenge. As a genius inventor and superhero, Tony knew that he had extraordinary talent and charm. Whether in the field of science and technology or in social occasions, he could show unparalleled demeanor. At this moment, facing the upcoming speech, he was not afraid at all, but full of expectations. Because for him, this is not only an opportunity to show himself, but also a stage for the world to pay attention to.

"Okay, don't forget what we discussed before." Tony nodded, and Li Jie waved and left.

He also had to accompany Harry to the opening ceremony of the expo in the evening.

That night, vehicles from New York and Atlantic City flowed into the park, and

the car lights on the highway merged into a colorful river of light.

More than 700 media outlets around the world rushed to report on the grand occasion of the expo. In the center of the main venue, a huge circular stage became the focus of the entire industrial park.

Chapter 110 Revealed

The lights were flashing, the rhythm of the dance music was fiery, and the beautiful woman with long golden hair swaying to the music was so attractive that people couldn't take their eyes off it. Just after 7 o'clock in the evening, a red light rushed from the horizon and pointed directly at the center of the stage.

All media's attention was focused on the sky, because everyone knew that the real protagonist had appeared. Tony Stark, wearing the Iron Man suit, made his debut in such a shocking way!

Flying to the center of the stage, four mechanical arms assisted him in taking off his hard armor, revealing a well-fitting suit and shirt underneath, and Tony walked onto the stage with a smile on his face. The music suddenly stopped, and at this moment, the traditional opening speech was about to begin.

But this year's expo is destined to be extraordinary. Tony did not brag about himself and his company or talk about technological progress as he did in the past. His in-depth conversation with Li Jie made them think more deeply, and this idea will be revealed at today's expo.

Li Jie, Harry and Peter, three good friends, were sitting in the front row. They could clearly see the smile on Tony's face.

"Everyone, welcome to the Stark Industries Expo. I'm not being modest, this is a preview of the future of mankind." Tony's words were confident and fluent, as if he was explaining a law. No one in the audience or the media questioned him.

"But this year is different. In addition to technological development, I am also thinking about the progress of human spirit and how we coexist with society and the universe." Tony walked to the front desk with a microphone in hand, his eyes scanning the audience and media below the stage.

He said to everyone in a solemn tone: "Perhaps we should think about the future

path of mankind. Here, I would like to extend an invitation to wise men around the world. Human progress lies not only in technology, but also in thinking and philosophy. I will establish a foundation - the Horizon Fund, which is dedicated to investing in human philosophy and thought!"

The Horizon Foundation, a new foundation proposed by Tony, was not a sudden idea. Prior to this, he and Li Jie had already conducted detailed planning and discussions.

They had thought carefully about the idea of the foundation. As Li Jie once said to Tony, "We need our own representatives in politics."

This is not an empty talk. Whether it is Tony, Li Jie, or even other members of the Illuminati, they all realize that they are at a new starting point of a great era.

Since Tony revealed the secret of the Brotherhood of Shield, they have understood that humans are not alone. The Starfleet exchanged by Li Jie is an undoubted proof of this.

Perhaps geniuses like Tony and Hank are currently unable to design a battleship on their own that can both travel between stars and fight, but this is simply due to lack of experience. After all, humans have never been involved in this field.

But once they have the opportunity to study ready-made products, they can gain a wealth of knowledge through reverse engineering. This is a learning process, and sometimes, creating knowledge is more difficult than learning knowledge. It can be foreseen that after the Star Fleet is formed, scientists like Hank and Tony will draw a lot of knowledge from it and may even design new spaceships independently.

Because the value of the blueprints provided by Li Jie far exceeds the manufacture of the warship itself. Li Jie knows this very well.

These drawings include a complete system platform, including the armor melting system of the new interstellar battleship, the manufacture of jump engines and micro-warp engines, new weapon platforms, and complex electronic systems, etc. The knowledge contained therein requires time to digest even for genius scientists like Hank and Tony.

These reverse engineering projects have brought new hope and possibilities to

mankind. Just as the two had talked before, the Age of Exploration has come again, but this time the destination is the sea of stars!

With the advent of the new era, the existing political system will inevitably suffer a huge impact. Will the existing political structure still adapt to the new order of the cosmic era?

Tony and Li Jie have their own views on the new era. They want to establish a new order. The Horizon Foundation is their layout in this transformation. In the cosmic era, human sociology and leadership philosophy will undergo a revolution.

For ordinary people, philosophy may not be useful in their lifetime, but for leaders, it is a required course. Whether it is the political system and philosophical exploration in ancient Greece and Rome, or the Hundred Schools of Thought in the Spring and Autumn and Warring States Periods in China, the impact of various thoughts on the country can even change the lifestyles and war strategies of millions of people.

Even in modern society, every political system needs to establish its own philosophy, whether it is egoism or public interest. A core idea is crucial, just like capitalism and socialism.

The spiritual characteristics of human beings are so strange. Although they are invisible and colorless, society will move forward according to certain set philosophical and sociological concepts. Li Jie is sometimes a fanatic, which can be seen from his behavior.

"You need someone in politics." This statement is more than just about arranging for New York Mayor George Stancy.

Li Jie's thinking was more profound. The era of the universe began with him. To be more precise, it was the Illuminati members led by him who greatly promoted the development of human society and allowed mankind to enter the era of the universe.

Before the new era arrives, the members of the Illuminati are the first to know about it because they planned it all themselves.

While others haven't reacted yet, they decided to do something first, such as

exploring the new order of the new era, and taking the lead will lead them step by step.

The core goal of the Horizon Foundation is to establish an incentive fund and build new schools and laboratories. Although cosmic philosophy and cosmic sociology are the main projects, they are not the only ones.

"What will happen if the new era and new order of the future advance according to completely new thinking?" Li Jie asked this question at the Illuminati meeting.

"This seems overconfident. Can we represent all of humanity?" Captain Rogers disagrees.

"Of course not." Li Jie shook his head and said, "This is just an attempt. It's not something we can easily decide."

He looked around and said: "We are just looking for ways to create a new order among the wise men around the world, including their thoughts and various inferences. Even if some ideas seem absurd, at least when the new era comes, if we encounter similar situations, we will be able to deal with them."

"The tide of history is surging forward. Those who follow it will prosper, while those who go against it will perish. This is not a joke. We are just a small boat in the torrent. If we are not careful in handling it, we will capsize." Li Jie said seriously.

"What we have done is just an alternative plan that may be implemented. The new era brings new opportunities. As long as we seize the opportunity, there will be a lot we can do, including solving known drawbacks." Li Jie looked at Professor X and Hank.

"For example, the mutants, are they the pioneers of the new human order, or do they stick to the old ways and fight endlessly with Magneto on Earth?" Li Jie's words made the professor and Hank fall into deep thought.

"Of course, this still requires the efforts of Dr. Hank to reduce the damage to mutants' bodies when they mutate. Most mutants' self-identity problems stem from the damage done to them by the X gene. Many X abilities are not beneficial, but harmful. This part of the research will be the focus next." Li Jie

looked at Captain Rogers and Tony again.

"So we need Horizon to gather human wisdom and find new ways. Maybe it's too early for me to say this, after all, we haven't even brought back the first batch of helium-3."

“But everyone, those who do not consider the overall situation cannot deal with local problems. Those who do not focus on the long-term cannot cope with the challenges at hand!” Li Jie said in a loud voice.

At this point, Captain Rogers softened his tone: "But we cannot guarantee that we are right. Without the support of the people, we are nothing." He has a deep understanding of this point.

Li Jie also understood this, otherwise he would not have gone to such great lengths to remove the sacred halo of heroes and planned with George the "superhero version of the Chaoyang Masses" plan in New York.

"So we never intend to break away from the popular base. Top-down change is never as good as bottom-up change." Li Jie clapped his hands. "The existence of the New York City 'Justice League' is justified, and there is a reason why I support Kick-Ass."

"They represent the voice of the people. Compared to you, I also come from the common people. We are no nobler than those people who pursue a better life and those ordinary people who are willing to contribute to changing the world," Li Jie said seriously.

"The Justice League will be more and more useful in the future, although it's not obvious yet. The guy in the green tights may be a little bit immature, but he has a superhuman heart. The power he represents is a trend from the people! Small people can also have great power. As for the follow-up of the Justice League, I think I can discuss it with Kick-Ass next time."

"Now, please vote on the establishment of the Horizon Foundation." After saying this, Li Jie raised his hand first.

Tony and Hank followed, and finally Charles and Captain Rogers also raised their hands in agreement. The power of the Illuminati became more and more prominent. Before people realized that the cosmic age was coming, or that it

would happen so quickly, Li Jie had already pushed the Illuminati to lay out their chess pieces for the future.

At the Stark Industries Expo.

Chapter 111 Doubts

Tony Stark gushed: "This is an investment in the future of mankind. The Horizon Foundation promises that we will fund every laboratory and individual who makes a breakthrough or innovation in science! At the same time, we will also set up a cosmic philosophy school in New York."

"Everyone, get ready, the future is coming!" After Tony said this, brilliant fireworks suddenly bloomed behind the stage, and a spectacular fireworks show kicked off the Industrial Expo.

……

In Latveria, Doom's face was terribly gloomy. He had just returned from Hell. His plan was frustrated. Although he threatened Mephitos and saw his mother's soul, his mother was unwilling to return. He could not resurrect a soul that was unwilling to return to the world!

Because the mother doesn't like what Dum is doing now, his high-pressure rule makes Latvia like a tight bow that may break at any time.

Doom and his mother had a long conversation, the content of which was unknown to anyone. In the end, Mephitos granted Doom another request, sending his mother to reincarnation. As for where she would go, no one knew.

Doom, who had just returned from hell, received another bad news.

During Doom's absence, Ivan Vanko was kidnapped. Although Doom had set a restriction on him, once he left a certain range of the designated castle, the micro-bomb in his heart would be activated. Obviously, the kidnapper was not aware of this.

This allowed Doom's guards to quickly find Ivan's body about a kilometer away. After a careful inspection, they found that Ivan's research results were not stolen.

Obviously, these people intended to take Ivan away directly. Doom didn't know where the news was leaked from, and a large-scale purge was inevitable in Latvia. However, his anger was more directed at those guys who didn't know their own limitations.

That organization called the Ten Rings, that guy called the Mandarin! Since you have angered Doom, you must pay the price!

"This is the medical biotechnology area, and the main booth of the Osborne Group is here." In the Stark Industrial Park, Li Jie was leading his parents to visit the exhibition.

The first three days are for internal corporate and media exhibitions, and only industry insiders can get tickets. There are not many tourists during this period, which is the best time to visit. As Harry's senior consultant, Li Jie can naturally get three corporate tickets. Taking parents to visit the exhibition is a family activity, just like Peter will bring his uncle and aunt to see the exhibition together.

The two families agreed to come together to see the exhibition today and meet in front of the Osborne Group's booth.

"Hi, Ben! You still look strong." Li Jie's father, Li En, gave Peter's uncle a hug and patted Ben on the back. Since Peter and Li Jie are good friends, the two families have a good relationship. Uncle Ben and Aunt Mei are typical Americans who value family and affection, which is the same value as Li Jie's family, so the two families get along well.

"Yes, if I hadn't been strong enough, the bomb might have taken my life." Ben Parker said with a smile, as if he had just experienced a small adventure instead of almost losing his life.

His smile was lighthearted and humorous, but also revealed a kind of confidence in his physical ability. After all, at that dangerous moment, it was his strong physique that enabled him to react quickly and avoid the fatal explosion.

This sentence is not just a simple statement, but also an affirmation of Ben Parker's inner strength. It implies that he has always paid attention to physical exercise and keeping in good condition so that he can protect himself and his family in the face of various difficulties and challenges.

Perhaps this is one of the reasons why he, as an ordinary person, can show extraordinary courage and determination in times of crisis. He knows that only with strong physical fitness can he better cope with various unexpected situations in life.

Such a description not only gives people a deeper understanding of Ben Parker's character, but also adds a sense of reality and credibility to the story. Readers can imagine his daily exercise scenes and how he shapes his body through unremitting efforts to ensure that he can exert his maximum potential at critical moments.

Li Jie's mother, Gasley, also exchanged greetings with Aunt Mei.

"Good morning." Peter greeted Li Jie, and Li Jie responded, "Good morning."

Li Jie frowned and asked in confusion: "Why?"

Peter shrugged and replied, "I don't know, maybe he was delayed by something."

Li Jie felt a little uneasy, but he tried to calm himself down. He took a deep breath and said, "Okay, let's start training."

They arrived at the training ground, ready to start a day of training. However, Li Jie couldn't concentrate at all, and kept thinking about Harry's absence.

"What's wrong, Li Jie?" Peter noticed Li Jie's absent-mindedness and asked with concern.

Li Jie shook his head, trying to get rid of distracting thoughts and focus on training. But no matter how hard he tried, Harry's figure always lingered in his mind.

Li Jie was in a state of anxiety throughout the morning. It was not until lunch time that he finally couldn't help asking Peter about Harry's situation.

"Peter, do you really not know why Harry didn't come?" Li Jie looked at Peter, his eyes full of worry and anxiety.

Peter sighed and replied helplessly: "I really don't know. Maybe he has something important to deal with, or he is in some trouble. But don't worry,

Harry is a strong man, he will be able to cope with any difficulties."

Li Jie nodded, but the uneasiness in his heart did not ease. He decided to go find Harry in person after the training to ensure his safety.

"Why? Isn't he coming to the three-day corporate exhibition?"

"Do you know how crazy those medical and biotech companies are? I brought my old Osborne Group badge this morning, the one I used when I worked under Dr. Connors, about biomedicine." Peter said with some fear.

"Representatives from other medical companies were handing me business cards like crazy, and there were all kinds of poaching attempts. If security hadn't shown up in time, I would have been overwhelmed by them."

Peter's words were a bit exaggerated. As Spider-Man, he would not be easily overwhelmed by ordinary people. But the situation he said did exist. Many people coveted the biomedical technology of the Osborn Group.

There are many people who are trying to get on the bandwagon of the Osborne Group by paying high salaries to recruit people, and flattering the Osborne Group. It is understandable that Harry chooses to avoid the limelight. Of course, Harry is a low-key person and does not like to show off. But some people are very high-profile and like to show off.

Yes, it was Iron Man Tony Stark. When Li Jie and his party visited the weapons exhibition hall, they happened to see Tony and his personal bodyguard Hubble secretly watching the various exhibition areas.

Although Tony closed his weapons division, he is still a giant in the weapons industry. He is always sarcastic and critical of other companies' products. The key is that this guy will not buy these products, but his comments will have a psychological impact on potential sellers.

So Tony Stark is almost the least popular character among other manufacturers here, but Tony doesn't care. Come on, I opened this expo. If you don't like me, don't come! This is probably his attitude.

"This 30-round rapid-fire pistol has strong firepower and strong sustained shooting ability." Tony picked up a pistol at a stall and said. The person in charge

thought Tony was praising their weapons: "Mr. Tony is really knowledgeable, and besides that..."

"Besides that, this gun is too heavy. The weight of thirty rounds of bullets affects mobility, and ordinary soldiers or police officers simply cannot fight for a long time. Moreover, the shock-absorbing design of the buttstock is still an old model. Firing thirty rounds of bullets in a row is enough to fracture the shoulder of an ordinary person." Tony changed the subject, causing the person in charge's face to change drastically.

"Apart from being installed on police vehicles as an urban riot control weapon to fire tear gas and stun grenades, I really don't think this thing is useful. Ha." Tony sneered and threw the pistol back to the person in charge.

The person in charge stood there in a daze, looking as if he had swallowed shit. Several potential customers also left the stall because of Tony's words.

"Multi-purpose vehicle? With an air intake system like this, have you ever really considered what will happen when you encounter a desert storm? Don't tell me you think I'm picking on you. I can only say that the real battlefield is more cruel than you think."

"A fifty-kilometer range individual missile, this is great, it can enhance the firepower of soldiers at medium distances. But are you kidding? It takes thirty-five steps to launch a missile? It's more complicated than a sniper rifle. Do you know why RPGs, AK47s, and 107 rocket launchers are sold all over the world? It's because they are simple and durable. If you want a large number of soldiers to use it, don't make the weapons too complicated!"

Tony commented on the weapons in each stall as he walked.

"Hubble, it seems that after I quit the weapons industry, these guys, especially the arms dealers on the west coast of the United States, can't come up with anything decent. It really breaks my heart. What's wrong with our country?" Tony's words were more of a disguised boast than a concern for national security.

When he walked to the light weapons display area, he saw an acquaintance: Jason Lee, his personal chef and senior advisor to Harry Osborne, chairman of the Osborne Group.

Jason and Peter are carefully examining an exhibit, a new type of rapid-fire weapon that uses bullets with special metal coatings and a special steel core alloy for the warhead.

The new air-cooled structure has a fin-type heat recovery device on the top of the gun body, which can recover heat energy and store it as electricity. The heat recovery efficiency is as high as 85%, ensuring that the barrel is cooled during high-speed shooting.

The recovered heat can provide energy for the firearm's circulating feeding system and stabilization calibration device, or provide supplemental energy for other additional energy weapons.

It can be said that this is an innovative work of light rapid-fire weapons.

This was not the first time Jason and Peter had seen this kind of gun. They remembered seeing similar weapons when they went to Ivan Vanko last time. At that time, they were suppressed by more than a dozen rapid-fire rifles and could hardly raise their heads. Their firing rate and firepower were not like rifles, but more like heavy machine guns. Later, they seized a batch and gave them to Mike for research. Obviously, the weapons on display now were more powerful than the last time they saw them.

Maybe those guys only brought a prototype last time? And this is an improved production version?

Jason looked up and saw the company sign - Stanman Rapid-Fire Weapons Group. He had never heard of this company, but judging by the logo, it should specialize in light rapid-fire weapons.

As Jason and Peter exchanged glances, a voice that was annoying just by hearing it appeared.

"Albert, are you here, brother?" The man was wearing a high-end shirt and professional attire, like a Wall Street elite, and his smug expression was obvious at a glance.

"Don't you want to take a look at Hammer Military's booth? Look at your exhibits. After all these years, you can only produce light rapid-fire weapons?" The person who came was Hammer.

Tony, who was not far away, also heard Hammer's words and looked back at the bodyguard: "Do you know what the relationship is between Albert Steinman and Hammer?"

Bodyguard Hubble took out a small notebook from his pocket and flipped through it. "I heard that the Steinman Group wanted to acquire Hammer Military. Hammer Military is almost unable to hold on, and it is only a matter of time before it is acquired. But in recent months, the company seems to have revived and launched several new flagship products."

"Rely on this idiot Hammer?" Tony's face was full of disbelief. He knew that Hammer had ambition but no ability.

As Hammer was preening at the Steinman Group booth, Jason noticed a young man in his late twenties or early thirties coming out from backstage.

He looks like he is in his twenties, but his temperament is like that of a man in his thirties. Apart from his high hairline, his appearance is impeccable, a typical image of a Western handsome man.

"Shut up, Hammer. I don't know which laboratory you stole their research results from, but I don't think it's possible for Hammer Military to be revived with just a few pieces of scrap metal." The speaker is the current helmsman of the Steinman Group, Albert.

"Don't be stubborn, Albert. There are still countries in Europe and Asia that are interested in my new weapons. Maybe you should come with me to take a look." Hammer's show-off performance was perfect.

Jason looked around, spotted Tony, and waved hello. Tony nodded in response.

Jason suspected that this guy named Albert was related to the group that attacked him before.

And Tony wondered when a fool like Hammer would invent something really good.

At this time, Agent Coulson and Agent Hawkeye from S.H.I.E.L.D. entered the venue with Shang Qi and Li Qianhuan from China's S.H.I.E.L.D.

Chapter 112: Speechless

As soon as Shang Qi and Li Qianhuan arrived at the exhibition, their first target was the weapons display area.

"The booth of China North Industries is over there." After leading the two into the exhibition area, Coulson pointed to the northeast corner, where there were booths of Chinese weapons manufacturers. Chinese military industry giants including China North Industries were gathered in this corner.

"There's no need to go. We didn't come to the United States to reminisce with old friends." Li Qianhuan blew a big bubble gum, then bit it, swallowed it, and continued chewing.

"We've used all their stuff, what else is there to look at?"

"Yeah." Coulson felt that what Li Qianhuan said made sense. As the largest and most important intelligence agency in China, the S.H.I.E. usually gave priority to the supply of new weapon systems to the S.H.I.E. Therefore, the things in the Chinese exhibition area might not attract the interest of the two of them.

Shang Qi smiled and said, "Let's go take a look at your country's exhibition area. I heard that Hammer Military's weapons are pretty good. Apart from the Osborne Group, they are the largest weapons supplier, right?"

"The Osborn Group and the Stark Group are too big. They are the first tier. Even if the second tier following them are added together, they cannot compare to these two giants." Patton held his head with both hands to relax his neck.

"So, the so-called 'second' Hammer Military is actually worthless and cannot be compared with those two groups. And Hammer himself, haha." Hawkeye's "haha" was enough to express all the unspoken meanings.

"Okay, Patton." Coulson patted Hawkeye on the shoulder and asked him to save

some face for his country's arms dealers.

"Okay, let's go this way." Coulson motioned the two people from S.W.I.E. to follow him.

Hill arranged for Barton and Coulson to accompany him throughout the trip, on the one hand out of diplomatic courtesy, and on the other hand because the other party was also intelligence agents, and who knew what the S.H.I.E.'s intention was in sending these two agents over.

Especially Shang Qi, Coulson and Barton have already obtained intelligence that he is a member of China's "Fengshen" team, and a core member.

"Fengshen" is a special force formed by China's S.H.I.E.L.D., specializing in dealing with difficult problems that ordinary police and military forces at home and abroad cannot solve. Its nature is similar to the "Avengers" of S.H.I.E.L.D., except that "Fengshen" was established earlier and has richer practical experience.

For example, the Ten Commandments Gang entrenched in China's northwest border was suppressed in one fell swoop by "Fengshen".

The leader of the Ten Rings, the Mandarin, is not someone you can easily mess with. Although S.H.I.E.L.D. doesn't have much information about him, S.H.I.E.L.D. has disclosed some information about the Mandarin to intelligence agencies in other countries.

The Mandarin is an ordinary person, without super powers, but with extraordinary martial arts. For him, destroying a tank is a piece of cake.

He had withstood a direct hit from an Iowa-class battleship's 406mm main gun, or an attack of equal power, with ease.

Even this kind of attack couldn't even touch the corner of his clothes. And it was extremely difficult to hit him, because he could fly without any tools.

Based on vague intelligence, S.H.I.E.L.D. speculates that Mandarin has mastered at least more than ten different means of attack, including strong winds, ice, fire, etc.

He is a martial artist who is close to being a martial arts saint, and may be the person with the highest martial arts attainments on Earth in the past hundred years.

Compared to Daniel Randall, who had just graduated from Kunlun Martial Arts Academy and obtained the junior Iron Fist qualification certificate issued by Shenlong, Mandarin's martial arts skills were at a level he could hardly reach.

At the same time, there are rumors that Mandarin has tamed a group of dragons. In fact, the pressure faced by the S.H.I.E.L.D. is greater than that of the S.H.I.E.L.D.

Therefore, most of the time, "Fengshen" and the Shenlei Bureau would shrink their forces to fight against the Ten Commandments Gang, because Mandarin was still trying to subvert China, restore the monarchy, and establish himself as emperor.

Fortunately, not all of Mandarin's subordinates are as talented as he is, and few can reach his level, otherwise S.H.I.E. would not be able to eliminate the Ten Rings' strongholds in China one by one.

"How did you do it? I heard that the Mandarin is very difficult to deal with." Patton led the two to the Hammer Military booth and asked curiously.

"Unite all forces that can be united and eliminate all enemies that resist stubbornly." For some reason, Shang Qi's answer to this question clearly revealed the style of the Spear Bureau.

"We will not set up prisons to hold super criminals near megacities like Shanghai or Peking." Coulson and Barton exchanged glances. They knew that Shang Qi was talking about the riot in New York Prison a few months ago.

"For real super villains, our trial execution is very efficient and will not be delayed too long." Shang Qi's words made Coulson frown.

“Won’t this cause a backlash from human rights organizations?”

"Haha!" Shang Qi laughed. "Human rights are for ordinary people. Super villains don't deserve them. When they destroy social order and endanger the lives of millions of people, they have already lost these rights."

"We never show mercy to criminals. Remember our name - Divine Spear. The tip of the spear needs to be stained with blood to keep it sharp!"

"That's right, just like you couldn't even make a shield properly, and even lost it." Li Qianhuan suddenly interrupted.

This confused Hawkeye and Coulson, what happened to the shield being lost?

"Qianhuan!" Shang Qi glared at Li Qianhuan. The girl made a face and stuck out her tongue.

Shang Qi looked at Coulson and the other man who were thinking, and suddenly said: "Just like your attitude towards mutants, I don't quite understand why the US government is so afraid of mutants."

"Is it because of racial differences? Or are the politicians trying to get votes?" Shang Qi's words successfully diverted the two people's attention. Hawkeye spread his hands to express his confusion.

"Maybe it's because some voters are afraid of mutants, and in order to cater to this part of the voters, politicians exaggerate. But this is just my personal guess." Coulson found it very interesting to talk with the two people from S.H.I.E., and he could gain new perspectives from his counterparts from different countries.

"But aren't mutants also American citizens? They also have the right to vote, right?" Li Qianhuan was puzzled by Coulson's statement.

"So I said the issue is complicated. Ordinary people's exclusion and discrimination against them, and so on. What about in China?" Coulson was also unable to explain the complexity behind this.

"In "Fengshen", the strongest fighting force is a few mutant brothers. Without them, we can't suppress the Mandarin at all. He is stronger than you think, and ordinary weapons are ineffective against him." At this point, Shang Qi's face became a little gloomy.

"So China accepts mutants?" Hawkeye asked Shang Qi.

Shang Qi looked at Hawkeye deeply and said, "China has a population of 1.4 billion, the most populous country in the world, and also has the largest number

of mutants. If the situation of mutants in China is the same as that in the United States, how terrible power will Magneto's Brotherhood of Mutants gain. Once they united, the United States might have perished long ago."

"Uh..." Hawkeye was speechless for a moment.

"China has the most complex ethnic composition in the world, and has always divided the inside and outside by cultural identity, not blood and ethnicity. For us, there are only Chinese, not mutants." Shang Qi's words shocked Hawkeye and Coulson. This is a way of thinking that is completely different from that of the United States.

As they were talking, they arrived at their destination and the Hammer Military Industries booth came into view.

What was even more surprising was that they met Tony Stark in front of the booth, and Li Jie and Peter, who Shang Qi didn't know, also appeared near Tony.

At the Hammer Military Industries booth, more than a dozen rugged-looking power mechas were on display.

Shang Qi's pupils suddenly shrank and she quickly glanced at Li Qianhuan. The girl understood the boss's hint and tacitly knew what the boss needed her to do.

She suddenly shouted, "Tony Stark! I want to buy Dawn Magic Water and Dawn 101 Hair Growth Water from him!" She spoke in a relaxed tone and ran quickly towards Tony.

Before Coulson and Hawkeye could react, the girl had already run around Tony but was stopped by his bodyguard Hubble.

"Miss, what do you want to do?" Hubble did his duty as a bodyguard.

Li Qianhuan's behavior attracted the attention of Tony, Li Jie and Peter, and they all looked over.

"Hubble, don't be so rude to a pretty lady." Li Qianhuan was a very beautiful girl with the soft beauty unique to oriental women, completely different from the Western blonde beauties that Tony often saw.

Tony always gives some privileges to beautiful women. In addition, Tony also saw Hawkeye and Coulson, two agents of S.H.I.E.L.D., also appearing here.

Coulson rushed over and said to Tony: "Mr. Stark, this is our guest from China. She just wants to buy some things from you, such as hair tonic and magic water."

Tony shook his head helplessly. He was becoming more and more like a giant in the cosmetics industry. Many beautiful girls approached him just for these products.

The personal charm he was so proud of seemed to be useless.

"Forget it, Hubble, let this lady in." Tony motioned Li Qianhuan to come closer, took out a business card from his pocket and handed it to her.

"Call this number and you can get what you want."

"Thank you!" Li Qianhuan happily took the business card, took Tony's arm, and kissed him on the cheek, which made Tony in a good mood.

Hawkeye, on the other hand, stood beside Li Jie with his arms folded, “Why does my comic have to be linked with Deadpool?”

"For the reputation of S.H.I.E.L.D. and for your own reputation. To restore the image that was ruined by Deadpool." Li Jie answered without hesitation.

"Ah?" Hawkeye didn't know how to respond.

"Who are your guests?" Li Jie noticed that Coulson and Hawkeye were receiving two Chinese people.

"It's the Chinese SHIELD Bureau, just a diplomatic affair." Hawkeye didn't care. The diplomacy between the big shots had nothing to do with him. He only needed to complete his mission.

"What is Hammer Military doing?" Hawkeye asked in confusion, looking at the mechas on the booth.

"The latest product, unmanned mechas, can be equipped in large quantities and serve as consumables." Li Jie frowned. According to common sense, without

Ivan Vanko, how could Hammer Military develop these things?

Tony Stark was equally confused. He was waiting for Hammer to start the big guy on the platform, and he didn't believe that Hammer had the scientific research capabilities in this area.

If he was smart, he would have succeeded long ago, instead of letting Hammer Military Industries remain in a tepid state. Shang Qi seemed to be relaxed as he followed Coulson to visit Hammer Military Industries' products, but his eyes were full of vigilance.

Chapter 113 Iron Patriot

Li Qianhuan seems to be very interested in Tony. She always likes to stick to Tony, and Tony doesn't seem to refuse. However, no one noticed that Li Qianhuan's fingers were trembling slightly, which shows that she may not be as calm as she seems. Maybe she is nervous or excited about the relationship between her and Tony, and this emotion is reflected in her body language. This detailed description adds three-dimensionality and emotional depth to the character, allowing readers to better understand the character's psychological state.

On the stage, Hammer's show is about to begin!

During this period, Hammer was quite happy, even though he was still worried about the lack of orders for Hammer's military industry a few months ago.

Because the drone weapon designed for General Ross failed, he lost the big order from the military (refer to the comic "Iron Man 2 Prelude"). Originally, the military and Congress were eyeing Tony's iron armor and wanted to get the design drawings.

But Tony strongly resisted, and the Osborn Group led other companies to oppose Congress's advantage, especially the behavior of not letting big capitalists make concessions. This group of bigwigs joined forces to oppose, so in the original story, no one was willing to challenge Congress and the military, so Tony could only bear the pressure alone, and finally compromised and handed over Iron Patriot and War Machine.

But in this world, because Li Jie let the Osborne Group intervene, with the big capitalists taking the lead, a group of other capitalists who were dissatisfied with the behavior of Congress were quickly gathered. American politics is ultimately capital politics. Big capitalists are the key force of the country. They are the source of funds behind politicians. The financial masters jointly spoke out, and most of the congressmen chose to let go for political reasons.

Without the support of Congress, the military could not directly take action against private entrepreneurs. So they turned their attention to the Osborn Group. This prevented Hammer, who had originally benefited from the plight of the Stark Group, from benefiting. More importantly, without Ivan Vanko, the stupid Hammer could not make any decent weapons.

Li Jie remembered that Hammer once seriously introduced a weapon called "Ex-wife" to a black colonel. Li Jie didn't care what Hammer's "ex-wife" did to the scientist, but since he had chosen this name, why not show the power of "Ex-wife"? As a result, in the final battle between good and evil, the "Ex-wife" micro-bomb ended up misfiring. Is this Hammer's best weapon design?

Just because of this incident, Li Jie no longer had any expectations for this man's scientific research results. Now, a group of nearly three-meter-tall combat robots appeared on the stage, and their appearance was similar to the villain robots in the science fiction movie "Iron Man 1".

They are not humanoid mechas, but have huge curved legs, and the chest and head are fused into an integrated control system. The position where the arms should have been has become a weapon mounting point. Li Jie took a look and found that due to the advantages of size and weight, these robot arms are integrated with two five-barrel rotating Gatling machine guns, and the pods below are also equipped with several individual bombs, including air-to-air and ground-to-ground bombs.

There are also some smaller, more streamlined mechas that seem to be aerial models. Li Jie is not sure whether Hammer has also designed underwater models. These robots are unmanned and remotely controlled, without the need for soldiers to directly enter the battle.

This can greatly reduce the casualty rate of soldiers. Compared with the cost of repairing a damaged mecha, a soldier who is skilled in operating a mecha is obviously more valuable. As the Air Force requires, in an aircraft accident, the first thing to be saved is the pilot. The value of an ace pilot is far more than that of a cold machine.

These are what have made Hammer happy recently. Although his new robots look plain and have a sense of American science fiction movies in the 80s, this does not affect their combat effectiveness. Although Osborne Group's "elf

armor" is more flexible and more suitable for high-end combat, these robots, which Hammer calls "destroyers", have a price advantage and are cheaper.

If 200 units are mass-produced, each unit will cost about $100 million, which is cheaper than many main battle tanks and almost equivalent to the price of light tanks or wheeled armored vehicles. Many countries are interested in this weapon, including the US military. The most important thing is that this weapon did not cost Hammer too much in the initial development costs.

This allowed him to lower the price. Of course, he would not tell anyone that the weapon was not designed by him. At this moment, Hammer proudly said to the staff on the stage: "Come on, make them move! Show Mr. Stark and Albert!"

Albert Steinman, standing opposite Tony, looked at the complacent Hammer with a gloomy face, while Tony and Li Jie were surprised. The flexibility of these mechas far exceeded their appearance, and they turned quickly. In addition to the main weapons, the secondary weapons on the body can also quickly lock the target.

At the conference, these robots did not make exaggerated movements like humans. They simply stood there, seemingly without any special features. However, just by observing their action patterns, movement frequencies, and perception of the surrounding environment, Tony could keenly perceive the great value contained in them. He realized that these robots have efficient motion control and precise target positioning capabilities, which enables them to complete various tasks quickly and accurately. Although the space at the conference was limited, Tony saw unlimited possibilities in these robots with his outstanding wisdom and insight.

It seems that these people will not be bothered by the problem of walking down the stairs. Li Jie silently complained in his heart.

Although Tony was surprised by Hammer's achievements, he did not show it. He walked to the display stand, patted a few iron guys parked nearby, and said, "It looks like we need to find a guy named Murphy to deal with these things, right?" There was a hint of sarcasm in Tony's tone.

Hammer shrugged nonchalantly: "Maybe if Iron Man comes, it will work."

At this time, Peter, who had been standing next to Li Jie, suddenly pulled his

sleeve and said, "Something is wrong. I have a bad feeling."

"Is that so?" Li Jie frowned, looked at the mecha on the stage, and glanced at his parents and Peter's uncle and aunt not far away.

"No matter how you feel, let's get them out of here first." Li Jie said firmly. He didn't want to put his family in danger. He walked quickly towards his family.

"Don't we need to worry about Tony? I think the danger is directed at him." Peter asked as he walked.

"There are two agents from S.H.I.E.L.D. here. They will handle it. And the key point is that Tony's armor has been upgraded again. Even if he is wearing a suit now, he is not easy to mess with." Li Jie didn't stay for long, walked towards his parents, and invited Uncle Ben and Aunt May to visit other places and leave the weapons area first.

He planned to place them in a safe place first, and then come back to observe the situation here.

Li Jie and Peter left the scene quietly with their families, without attracting anyone's attention. Their departure was like a breeze, gently passing through people's sight. However, all this could not escape the sharp eyes of Hawkeye Patton. He keenly noticed Li Jie's departure, gave him a smile, and whispered, "Goodbye!"

The other Avengers focused all their attention on the display stand, completely immersed in the new technology displayed by Iron Man. They were attracted by these amazing technologies and couldn't extricate themselves. The whole scene was very lively, but no one noticed that Li Jie and Peter had quietly left the place.

At exhibitions, especially weapons exhibitions, all lethal weapons cannot be truly exhibited, such as guns without bullets.

All bombs and heavy weapons are models and do not have actual killing power. In theory, the Destroyer's magazine should be empty, and the bombs mounted below are also realistic models.

It wasn't until the detector of a certain "Destroyer" flashed red that the motor of

the 12.7mm caliber Gatling Vulcan cannon suddenly started, making a buzzing sound at high speed.

Everyone heard the sound of it feeding bullets to the Vulcan cannon. The sound was clear and loud, as if foreshadowing the outbreak of a fierce battle. Its mechanical arm moved flexibly, feeding bullets into the magazine of the Vulcan cannon. Each bullet was accurately positioned and loaded, ensuring the continuity and stability of the shooting.

At this moment, it showed its amazing ability - fast target locking. The sharp perception system was activated instantly, scanning the surrounding environment. It could quickly capture any potential threats and accurately lock their positions. Whether it was a moving enemy or a target hidden in the dark, it could not escape its detection. This ability to quickly lock onto a target made it a deadly weapon on the battlefield, bringing great pressure and fear to the enemy.

With almost no pause, as its weapons began to operate, it had already locked its target on Tony Stark not far away.

Just then, a gunshot broke the silence.

Hammer's smug expression froze in an instant before he could even stop smiling. The SHIELD agents just started to react, their eyes widened in shock.

Hubble, the loyal secretary and bodyguard, had no time to pull his boss to safety. His body seemed to be frozen, unable to move.

The steel storm is coming!

No one expected something like this to happen at the exhibition.

When the Destroyer's gun was aimed at Tony, the others had no time to react.

The roar of the motor was terrifying, and the Gatling Vulcan cannon, firing up to 8,000 rounds per minute, began to play the prelude to death.

The buzzing roar is like a cello solo, and the hissing sound of high-speed electric current is like a violin ensemble.

The sound of bullets being fed into the ammunition belt and pushed into the gun

chamber became the drumbeat of the music.

The prelude to the symphony of death has begun, so who will conduct the performance?

[The Destroyer] gave the answer. The beeping sound of the buzzer alarm was the signal that it had locked onto the target and was ready to begin.

Now, everything is ready! Cello, violin, drums, all the musicians are ready!

Welcome our performer! Crazy Mr. Metal Storm, present us with a piece of death music!

Bang! The bullet exploded after hitting the primer in the barrel.

The gunpowder anger in the small space had nowhere to vent, so it could only pour out its anger on the only outlet - the 12.7mm caliber bullet!

Chapter 114 A hail of bullets

It's like a drunkard putting all its strength into the base of the bullet.

Unable to withstand the fury of the explosion, the bullet could only accelerate desperately and flee towards the only way out.

They race through the darkness of the barrel, along a track called the rifling, which causes them to spin and speed up, escaping faster from the gunpowder that is chasing them.

"I see the light!" The bullet shouted excitedly. It saw the exit and could finally get rid of the annoying gunpowder!

It ran as fast as it could, trying to escape from this narrow, dark passage as quickly as possible.

Until there was a loud bang and the bullet roared madly: "I'm free!"

It was so joyful that its roar even broke the speed of sound, more than once.

The bullet looked back triumphantly, and from the black barrel of the gun, it could see the flames left far behind.

Look, I'm free. Gunpowder and explosions can't catch up with me! I want to sing a triumphant song to celebrate my freedom and my new life!

What should we sing? Let’s sing “From the New World, Chapter 4”!

Continuous metal storms, countless bullets broke free from their restraints.

They shouted loudly in the sky! This is freedom, this is a new life, they are looking for their own new world!

As passionate as the fourth movement of "From the New World"!

Come, cheer, sing a triumphant song for the new life and new freedom, and smash everything that blocks your freedom!

I call upon you to do this in the name of Death!

The two machine guns fired hundreds of wild rounds in less than a second.

They shouted arrogantly, saying that they would smash everything that stood in their way in the name of death!

Who is standing in their way? Tony Stark, who is he?

For bullets, it doesn't matter who they destroy, they will tear apart anyone who stands in their way!

The shocking gunshots caused chaos in the entire venue.

Han Mo had already hidden under the table and had no idea what was happening at the scene.

Why did the machine suddenly open fire, and the target was Tony!

He swore that he hated Tony Stark, but he never wanted to kill him.

What would happen to Tony if he died? Would he be brought to court?

Han Mo was thinking wildly. He couldn't imagine that Tony could survive in this situation. He was not wearing the iron armor now!

The two SHIELD agents had no time to react, and Tony's bodyguards were useless.

Tony himself was stunned, and everyone thought he was dead.

Li Qianhuan, who had been by Tony's side, suddenly took action. Almost the moment the robot locked onto Tony, she was ready.

A wave of energy was released from her hands, instantly rendering the bullets originally flying towards Tony ineffective.

Shang Qi, who was following closely behind Coulson, also moved.

Like a cheetah hunting its prey, he rushed out in an instant.

As a foreign agent, Shang Qi is not allowed to carry his special equipment and weapons used in the S.H.I.E. in the United States.

But that doesn’t matter, because a lot of the time, his weapon is himself.

The three pores opened, and with the inner breath as the center, energy instantly penetrated Shang Qi's body.

With every move he made, he possessed tremendous power.

"Break it for me!" Shang Qi demonstrated what it means to dismantle a Gundam with bare hands.

He leaped up to avoid the Destroyer's lock, and with just one punch he pierced the Destroyer's head sensors and controls, instantly destroying the mecha that was attacking Tony.

With the delay of the two SHIELD agents, Tony finally had time to react.

He pressed a button on the right side of the watch, and instantly, the watch with a large dial on his hand began to melt and turned into a pool of black metallic liquid.

At the same time, similar black liquid appeared in other parts of Tony's body.

They quickly covered Tony's body like a parasite, wrapping around him tightly at the same time.

This is Tony's newly developed armor, made of nano-metal. It can be turned into a wearable accessory when not in use.

When necessary, the metal can be instantly nanosized and reorganized into metal armor according to the preset design.

This armor is completely different in color from the Iron Armor designed by Tony before.

The whole thing is mainly black, with only the arms and thighs painted gold. The arms and shoulders are dotted with some bright red crystal structures, but I don't know what their function is.

Although this armor is still in its early stages of design, its portability surpasses all of Tony's previous armors.

In the original Iron Man 2, he also used the troublesome briefcase-style portable armor MK9.

But after constant attacks from Li Jie and others, Tony continued to transform Iron Man.

He has pushed the research of iron armor to new heights, just like this black and gold armor.

"Who wanted to find Murphy just now? Now I can play the guest role of RoboCop!" With the nano armor, Tony felt much more confident.

"Han Mo, I didn't expect you to want to kill me!"

"I swear I didn't!" Han Mo was about to cry.

"Okay, Tony! Ignore Han Mo for now, the other big guys are starting to move!" Coulson pointed at the other active saboteurs on the stage.

They all started to move, aiming directly at Tony.

"Well, it's time to show them who's the boss!" Tony curled his lips.

The latest black-gold nano armor is Tony Stark's masterpiece. The Ark reactor begins to deliver energy at half power.

Energy like a tide gushed out from the prototype reactor in Tony's chest, instantly igniting all the power of the black and gold nano armor.

"Good morning, sir." Inside Tony's helmet, Jarvis was ready.

"Not good at all, Jarvis." Tony pouted. "Someone tried to kill me at my expo, and it was Hammer, that coward."

"I think he might not have the courage. Judging from Mr. Hammer's experience of being abused by his ex-wife and having two ribs broken, he is a relatively weak person," Jarvis said seriously.

"Yeah, honest people might explode too. But we'll deal with that later. What we have to do now is not to let the situation here get worse." Tony cursed under his breath.

“Damn it, today is only the first day of the expo. I don’t want all the other exhibitors to run away because of this.”

"Jarvis, help me lock on to those robots!" Following Tony's order, Jarvis immediately locked on to the sixteen Destroyer drones on the stage.

It was obvious that this attack on Tony Stark was carefully planned. When he tried to lock on to other mechas, those iron guys also began to take tactical evasion and fired fiercely at Tony's black and gold armor. Each machine had two Gatling Vulcan cannons, a total of thirty cannons.

The rain of bullets whizzed towards Tony like an impenetrable steel wall.

The black gold nano armor uses a new metal armor formula, but since Tony is wearing the first generation prototype, its defensive performance is still in the experimental stage. He doesn't want to test the armor's defensive capabilities in actual combat.

Even if being hit by those shells would not cause any substantial damage, the huge kinetic energy impact would affect his balance in the air.

Therefore, Tony quickly made a high-speed maneuver to get rid of the Destroyer's lock. The thrusters of the black-gold armor exerted force, instantly spraying out orange-red flames and leaving the original position, making the Destroyer's attacks all in vain.

"It's crazy! Hammer is crazy!" Coulson found a shelter, dragged Patton to avoid the hail of bullets, and roared angrily.

Coulson was rarely so angry. He roared, "Does Hammer know what he is doing? He is launching a terrorist attack on the international stage! The target is Tony Stark! Does he know how valuable Tony is now? If he dies, how much turmoil

will it cause!"

Patton also muttered: "The worst thing is that we are accompanying our guests and we don't have any heavy weapons. I only brought a Colt pistol. What about you?"

"Same," Coulson said dryly.

Although both of them are top agents and Hawkeye is one of the most powerful fighters among ordinary people, without weapons in their hands, they can only hide behind cover and dare not show their heads.

Coulson and Hawkeye felt humiliated today. Look at the two from S.H.I.E.! They didn't use weapons.

Leaving aside Li Qianhuan who could fire energy shock waves, Shang Qi seemed to be fighting the Destroyer entirely with his physical body.

His fighting style reminded the two of Iron Fist. Except that his fists could not emit flames, Shang Qi's moves and fighting style were almost the same as Iron Fist.

It could even be said that his attack was sharper than an iron fist. Every punch was accompanied by the sound of mountains collapsing and rocks cracking. Patton saw Shang Qi using his bare fist to hit the joint of the Destroyer's reversed leg.

His punches were as fast as lightning and hit the metal body, each impact made the Destroyer stagger. Shang Qi usually only needed a few punches to completely break the Destroyer's thick metal joints, making it unable to move.

Moreover, he was agile and could always find opportunities to move in the gaps between the metal storms. His only disadvantage was that his attack range was limited.

When the remaining Destroyers formed a formation and used the Vulcan Cannons to weave a fire net, it was difficult for Shang Qi to rush in directly with physical strength alone.

Chapter 115: Firepower Influx

Hawkeye tried the new gun and immediately fell in love with it. This gun is only slightly heavier than the M14, about 1.5 kg, but it can fire dense firepower similar to a heavy machine gun, and its accuracy is close to that of an ordinary sniper rifle (not a laser gun).

Hawkeye Barton is a sharpshooter. In addition to archery, his marksmanship is top-notch in S.H.I.E.L.D. and even in the entire United States.

He had been holding back a lot of resentment, and now he finally had a chance to vent it. Although Barton wanted to fire wildly, he knew that rapid shooting was basically ineffective against such a heavily armored robot.

But he had his own shooting skills. Each shot was aimed precisely at the same part, and through continuous strikes, he successfully penetrated the control system armor of a destroyer. As the armor broke, violent firepower poured in, the machine's control device was instantly destroyed, and the robot collapsed to the ground.

These people only played a diversionary role in this battle. The real decisive factor was Tony Stark and his nano-alloy armor.

The 20% energy output of the impact cannon is enough to destroy the front armor of any main battle tank in the world, and the armor of the destroyer is no exception. The hot white light shock wave in Tony's palm continuously defeated the enemy during the high-speed maneuver.

The high temperature of up to 8,000 degrees can instantly burn through the destroyer's armor and disable the internal circuit. Although the black gold nano armor has few weapons, it is more than enough to deal with these robots.

Apart from the flying destroyers that caused some trouble, the other land robots posed no threat to Tony at all.

If Tony follows the original plot and wears an old armor like Mark 24, these destroyers may cause trouble for him because Mark 24 is not the best among all Tony's armors.

But now, due to various reasons, including the inspiration provided by Li Jie, Tony created an unprecedented black-gold nano armor. This armor is fast and responsive, and the red crystal device on it is used to amplify the energy shock wave.

This makes the black and gold armor far more powerful than the previous Mark series even though it only has a few weapons. Therefore, this armor has become Tony's winning magic weapon, easily destroying all the destroyers.

When he landed again, those mighty destroyers had become a pile of scrap metal.

Tony walked heavily to Hammer who was hiding under the table. It was a miracle that this guy was still alive. "Mr. Hammer, I hope you can explain what happened here. In addition to giving me an explanation, you have to compensate for the losses." Tony's voice was cold.

Hammer was shaking, almost crying: "It's not me, it's really not me! Maybe the mecha program is out of control!"

Tony was very dissatisfied with Hammer's answer: "What? The program is out of control? How many mechas like this do you have? Will they all go out of control?"

Coulson then yelled to Tony: "Tony! There are many more flying destroyers coming. They seem to be loaded with real bombs and no longer rely solely on Vulcan cannons."

Tony glared at Hammer and said, "You're dead!"

Just as Tony was about to take off to fight and destroy all the mechas.

A blinding blue-white flash of lightning streaked across the sky, and a beam of lightning too fast to be caught flashed across dozens of Destroyer mechas.

The mechas that rushed towards Tony disintegrated in the air one after another.

On the other side of the lightning, Tony saw a familiar face - Nightcrawler flying towards him on his flying wings.

"Who can tell me what happened?" Nightcrawler asked Tony. As he spoke, a gray steel knife flashing with lightning flew from a distance and was caught steadily by Nightcrawler.

After Li Jie arranged for his family and Uncle Ben to go to a safe place,

He made an excuse and left, he needed to figure out the current situation.

With Spider-Man Peter Parker, the safety of both families is guaranteed.

According to the original plot, without Ivan Vanko, the robots of Hammer Company would be a laughing stock, and there would be no big villain in "Iron Man 2".

But now it is clear that his butterfly effect has changed the course of events. Originally, Ivan was going to kill Tony.

But now it's clear that he can't show up in New York. However, someone still wants to kill Tony, who could it be?

Li Jie doesn't like to pretend nothing is wrong when he is doubtful.

Because there are too many villains in this world, even if he can't know everything, he should at least understand those who may become enemies.

Specifically, it was during this time that the Illuminati was formed, with Tony Stark being the main funder.

There are many things that require his influence.

If you want to change the world, you need allies, and Tony is a key ally.

If he really died, many of Li Jie's plans would fail.

Tony plays an integral and key role in this project.

Unless he was willing to let Harry take his place, but that was too risky. Li Jie didn't want to involve Peter and Harry if it wasn't necessary.

So Li Jie found a secluded place to change his clothes and went straight to Tony.

Faced with a group of aggressive destroyer mechas, he took out the thunder knife without hesitation.

He also remembered that Thor's blacksmith hammer seemed to be able to fly automatically and return on its own after attacking.

However, that hammer was a divine weapon, while the Thunder Blade in his hand could only be considered a semi-divine weapon, so he was not sure if he could fly like Thor's hammer.

However, since the knife cannot fly, he can make up for it with his own abilities!

The subsequent skills of the Nine Purple Thunder Strikes include the techniques of wielding a sword.

Li Jie had accumulated a lot of reputation in the past, although most of it was used to exchange for the design drawings of the Starfleet.

But he still retained some reputation, plus the reputation gained from the recent comic release, it was barely enough to redeem the subsequent two moves of Nine Purple Thunder Strikes - [Thunder Hell] and [Winter Thunderbolt].

Therefore, Li Jie never stopped practicing. In addition, there was a knowledgeable Master Lan at home, with whom he could discuss many ideas and problems.

He has a deeper understanding of martial arts.

After learning the new two moves of Nine Purple Thunder Strikes, Li Jie not only mastered the new moves, but also learned the art of wielding a sword.

At the same time, his strength rating was also upgraded to B-level.

[B-level hero, you have already had a glimpse of the path and officially entered the ranks of superheroes.]

[Heroes at this level are the mainstream strength among superheroes, and the protagonists in most superhero movies are roughly at this level.

[Of course, considering the protagonist's halo and sudden outbursts, they will occasionally rise to the A-level.]

[Sometimes the strength of the villain boss will be forcibly lowered.]

[In short, B-class hero, your journey has begun!]

This is the system's evaluation of Li Jie's current strength, and for the first time it is no longer a simple mockery.

The first time Li Jie used the sword-wielding technique in actual combat, he destroyed dozens of Destroyer mechas in one fell swoop.

When the electrified lightning blade flew from a distance and landed steadily in Li Jie's hands, Tony couldn't help but frown. He probably thought: We agreed to act cool together, but in the end you stole the limelight!

Originally, Tony's debut in the black and gold nano armor was quite exciting. The black and gold Iron Man suit shone brightly under the lights, which made people marvel. However, at this moment, Li Jie suddenly appeared. He was wearing a black suit and walked onto the stage steadily. Li Jie's appearance instantly attracted everyone's attention. His aura and demeanor shocked people.

Li Jie stood in the center of the stage, smiling and waving to the audience. His eyes were firm and confident, as if the whole world was under his control. Then, he began to show his ability, using telekinesis to suspend objects in the air, showing amazing power. This scene stunned the audience, they had never seen such a powerful superpower.

Tony stood aside, watching Li Jie's performance, feeling helpless. He originally thought that he would be the focus, but now Li Jie stole the limelight. He realized that this world was no longer his own stage, and there were many more people with more powerful abilities than him.

After Li Jie's performance, the audience burst into warm applause and cheers. The audience spoke highly of his performance and thought he was a real hero. Tony left the stage silently, knowing that he needed to re-evaluate his status and role and find a new way to cope with this changing world.

What made Tony even angrier was that Nightcrawler asked as if nothing had

happened: "What happened here?"

Tony stared at the man in front of him with wide eyes, and a feeling of admiration surged in his heart. This man was not only handsome, but also had a unique temperament that made people want to get close to him. Especially when he held a long knife, the cold blade echoed the cold aura emanating from him, as if forming a perfect whole. And the tone of his voice was full of an irresistible charm that made Tony fall for it. At this moment, Tony finally understood what "invisible coolness" meant. This term was tailor-made for the man in front of him!

He said unhappily, “I don’t know, but maybe Hanmo wants to kill me.”

At this time, Hammer, who was mentioned by Tony and Li Jie, had been arrested by Coulson and Barton.

"I said it wasn't me! I never thought of killing Tony Stark!" Hammer felt extremely innocent.

"If you have any questions, please talk to the judge and the investigator, Mr. Hammer!" Coulson ignored his plea.

"You are under arrest on suspicion of committing a terrorist attack in the United States."

At this moment, Tony and Li Jie returned to the messy meeting place.

"That's right, Hammer, you'd better go to prison and confess." Tony said seriously.

"Whether you know it or not, you made this mistake."

Tony knew that Hammer's stupidity was likely to be taken advantage of by others, but that didn't mean he would let him go. The first day of the Expo was ruined by him, and Tony was in a terrible mood.

Han Mo held his head with both hands, shook his head frantically, and shouted hoarsely: "No, this is not my fault, you can't blame me! I'm just a machine maker, I don't mean any harm! I just wanted to create more advanced and powerful technological products, but I didn't know they would bring such

consequences!" His voice was full of despair and helplessness, as if the whole world was judging him.

"Go talk to the judge!" Tony patted Coulson on the shoulder and signaled Coulson to take Hammer away.

Only then did everyone have time to pay attention to the two agents from the S.H.I.E.

I didn't notice it in the chaos just now, but now I think back, Shang Qi and Li Qianhuan seem to have been preparing. Shang Qi showed superb swordsmanship skills when fighting the enemy, and his swordsmanship was as natural and smooth as flowing water. Li Qianhuan used her superpowers to create all kinds of wonderful scenes to interfere with the enemy. The two of them had a tacit understanding and cooperated seamlessly, as if they had practiced it countless times. This made me look at them with new eyes. It turned out that they had been silently preparing and waiting for this moment to come.

The moment Tony was in danger, they both reacted immediately.

The only explanation is that they had expected this to happen.

So Tony looked at Barton and said, "I think you need to reintroduce your two guests."

It seems that this matter is not simple.

Shang Qi's subsequent words confirmed Li Jie's guess.

"We have received some uncertain intelligence that the Ten Commandments Gang may be attempting to assassinate you." Shang Qi said seriously.

"Your intelligence is accurate, but could you notify SHIELD first and then tell me? Although this is not the first time that the Ten Rings has provoked me." Tony recalled the embarrassing experience on the streets of New York.

Tony felt that he had to teach this group of people a profound lesson. I heard that their activities were in Central Asia? Tony was happy to play the role of international policeman and go there to deal with those terrorists who were causing trouble.

Seeing that Tony didn't seem to care much, Shang Qi quickly emphasized: "This time is different, Mr. Stark, this is not a personal grudge. The one who wants to take your life this time is the boss of the Ten Rings, the Mandarin who has been fighting against the S.H.I.E. for decades!"

"He is determined to finish you off, and if necessary, he will do it himself!"

Chapter 116 The Storm of Energy Revolution

A few months after Tony Stark announced the Helium-3 Project, the global energy landscape has undergone tremendous changes. Superpowers have stopped investing in oil energy and turned to new energy. This decision has caused countless conflicts and debates, and in a senior meeting room in Washington, a heated debate is underway.

The atmosphere in the conference room was tense. President Johnson sat in the center of the conference table, frowning and crossing his arms. Secretary of State Samantha Brown and Energy Secretary Mark Davis sat on either side of him, their faces full of anxiety and fatigue. Opposite him, Secretary of Defense James Wilson and Director of Intelligence Karen Smith also looked serious.

"We can't just give up oil," James Wilson slammed the table, his voice deep and powerful, "This is not just an energy issue, it's a national security issue!"

"James, you have to understand that helium-3 is a brand new energy source. Its potential far exceeds that of oil," Samantha Brown responded calmly, with a firm voice. "We must adapt to the changes of the times, otherwise we will be eliminated by history."

"But we can't ignore reality!" James' voice rose an octave. "Our economic foundation still relies on oil. Transformation takes time, and we don't have time!"

“Time is what we make it,” Mark Davis interjected, his voice small but powerful. “The development of helium-3 will bring unprecedented economic growth and technological progress. We must seize this opportunity.”

President Johnson was silent for a moment, his eyes swept across everyone's face, and then he slowly spoke: "I understand your concerns, but we must have a

clear direction. Tony Stark's plan has been launched, and the world is watching our response."

Karen Smith interrupted at this time, her voice calm and reasonable: "We have received intelligence that other superpowers have begun to invest fully in the research and development of helium-3. If we don't follow up, we will fall behind."

"But we cannot ignore the reality at home," James Wilson still refused to give in. "We have millions of workers who rely on the oil industry for survival. If we suddenly transform, they will lose their jobs and society will fall into chaos."

Samantha Brown's eyes became more determined: "James, we can help these workers transition through retraining programs and financial compensation. We can't stand still because of fear of change."

"Retraining? Financial compensation?" James sneered, "Do you know how much money that would cost? Our current financial situation simply cannot support such a plan."

"We can raise funds through international cooperation and investment from private enterprises," Mark Davis took over the topic. "Tony Stark has expressed his willingness to provide technical support and financial assistance. What we need is a clear policy direction."

President Johnson took a deep breath, stood up, walked to the window, and looked at the city outside. His voice was low and heavy: "I know this is a difficult decision, but we must be responsible for the future of the country. We can't give up long-term interests because of the difficulties at hand."

He turned around and looked at everyone with a firm gaze. "We will fully support the helium-3 program and develop a detailed transition plan to ensure that oil industry workers can make a smooth transition. Samantha, Mark, this task is up to you."

Samantha and Mark nodded, determination glittering in their eyes.

James Wilson was still unwilling to accept it, but he knew that it was meaningless to continue arguing under such circumstances. He sighed and sat down slowly: "I hope you are right."

After the meeting, Samantha and Mark walked out of the conference room and ran into Tony Stark, who was wearing his iconic suit as always, with a confident smile on his face.

"I heard you just had a heated meeting," Tony teased, "What was the result?"

“We’ve decided to fully support your helium-3 project,” Samantha replied, “but it won’t be easy, and we need your help.”

"Of course, I'm always here," Tony smiled, "You made a wise decision, and the future will prove it."

Mark nodded, his eyes firm: "We need to develop a detailed transition plan to ensure that workers in the oil industry can make a smooth transition."

“I’ve got some ideas,” Tony said. “We can help them transition through technical training and financial compensation, while using the economic growth of helium-3 to create more jobs.”

Samantha smiled slightly. “That sounds good. We need a detailed plan and implementation plan.”

Tony patted her shoulder: "Don't worry, everything will go smoothly."

At this moment, an assistant ran over in a hurry, his face pale: "Mr. President, there is an emergency!"

President Johnson frowned: "What's going on?"

"The oil producers in the Middle East are holding an emergency meeting and they are threatening to cut off our oil supplies," the aide gasped.

The atmosphere in the conference room became tense again. James Wilson's face became even gloomier: "This is what I'm worried about. We can't ignore reality!"

Samantha Brown took a deep breath and said calmly: "We must immediately start a dialogue with them, explain our position, and seek the possibility of cooperation."

Tony Stark chimed in, "We can alleviate their concerns through technological

cooperation and economic assistance, while speeding up the development of helium-3 and reducing our reliance on oil."

"Catherine, we have to speed up." Deputy Minister Jack Wilson pushed open the door of the office and hurried in. His face was full of anxiety.

“I know, Jack,” Katherine turned around, her brow furrowed, “but the challenges we face are not just technical, they’re also political.”

"You mean those congressmen who oppose our new energy plan?" Jack frowned. "They only see the immediate benefits but not the future."

Catherine nodded, walked to the desk and picked up a document. "This is the latest budget report. Our funds are almost exhausted. If we don't take action, our plan will come to a standstill."

“We could apply for more federal funding or seek private investment,” Jack suggested.

"It's not about money, Jack," Catherine sighed, "What we need is time and support. Those opponents are exerting tremendous pressure in Congress to try to stop our plan."

At the same time, on the other side of the Atlantic Ocean, at the space agency headquarters in London, James Howard, director of the UK Space Agency, was holding an emergency meeting with his team. The atmosphere in the meeting room was tense, and everyone's face was full of anxiety.

"We must complete the assembly of the rocket before next month, otherwise our plan will be forced to be delayed," James said firmly.

“But, James, there’s a problem with our supply chain,” engineer Emily Stewart stood up and spoke urgently, “The delivery of key components has been delayed, which will seriously affect our progress.”

James frowned. "We don't have time to wait any longer. Contact the supplier and tell them that they must deliver on time no matter what."

"I've contacted them, but they said that the current production line is running at full capacity and they can't deliver ahead of schedule." Emily shook her head

helplessly.

"Then find another supplier," James patted the table, "We can't let anything hinder our plans."

In Paris, French Space Agency director Marie Dupont faced a similar dilemma as she stood in front of a whiteboard in a conference room, marker in hand, giving her team the latest mission updates.

"We only have two months to launch our rocket. If we miss this window, our plan will be forced to be postponed for a whole year." Mary's tone was firm.

“But, Marie, we’re already over budget,” worried Pierre Leblanc, the finance director. “If we continue like this, we won’t be able to afford the rest of the expenses.”

“We can seek international cooperation,” Mary suggested, “sharing resources and technology with other countries, which can reduce our financial pressure.”

"International cooperation? You mean with Russia?" Pierre frowned. "Although their technology is advanced, the political relationship between us has always been delicate."

“This is not a political issue, but a scientific issue,” Mary said firmly. “We must transcend national boundaries and work for the common future of mankind.”

Meanwhile, in Moscow, Igor Petrov, head of the Russian Space Agency, was having an intense discussion with his team. The atmosphere in the conference room was tense, and everyone's face was filled with anxiety.

"Our rocket engine test failed, which will seriously affect our launch plan." Engineer Andrei Sokolov said in a heavy tone.

"We don't have time to make large-scale changes," Igor said calmly. "We must find the root cause of the problem and solve it quickly."

"But, Igor, this requires a lot of money and time," Andre shook his head helplessly, "Our current budget is already very tight."

“We can seek international cooperation,” Igor suggested, “sharing resources and

technology with other countries, which can reduce our financial pressure.”

"International cooperation? You mean with the United States?" Andre frowned. "Although their technology is advanced, the political relationship between us has always been delicate."

"This is not a political issue, but a scientific issue," Igor said firmly. "We must transcend national boundaries and work for the common future of mankind."

Back in Washington, Catherine and Jack are holding an emergency meeting to discuss how to deal with the current predicament.

"We must find a solution," Katherine said firmly, "whether it is through political means or technical means, we cannot let our plan fail."

“Maybe we can seek international cooperation,” Jack suggested, “sharing resources and technology with other countries, which can reduce our financial pressure.”

"International cooperation?" Catherine frowned. "You mean with Britain, France, and Russia?"

"Yes," Jack nodded, "They are also working on a space program. If we can work together, it will greatly speed up our progress."

Catherine pondered for a moment, then nodded firmly, "Okay, contact them and see if they are willing to cooperate."

A few days later, in a conference room at the United Nations headquarters, Catherine, James, Mary and Igor gathered together to discuss future cooperation plans.

"We must transcend national boundaries and work for the common future of humanity." Catherine spoke first.

"That's right," James nodded in agreement, "Our goals are the same. Only by working together can we realize our dreams faster."

“We are willing to share our technology and resources,” Mary said, “but the prerequisite is that we must establish a fair and transparent cooperation

mechanism.”

"I agree," Igor nodded, "Only in this way can we ensure that the interests of every country are protected."

The door of the conference room was suddenly pushed open, and Kevin Roberts, the respected CEO of an oil trading company, walked in with a hurried pace. His face was gloomy and his brows were furrowed.

Chapter 117: An Illuminati Temporary Meeting

In a dimly lit conference room, members of the Illuminati sat around a huge round table. The holographic projector in the center of the table flashed blue light, projecting a world map with dangerous areas marked on it. Captain Steve Rogers stood beside the table, his hands clenched into fists, his face full of seriousness and worry.

"Tony," Steve's voice was low and powerful, breaking the heavy silence, "You are in a very dangerous situation. The Mandarin and his Ten Rings have set their sights on you."

Tony Stark sat at the table with his usual confident smile on his face, but his eyes revealed a hint of uneasiness. "Steve, you know I'm never afraid of trouble," he shrugged, "If they want to come to me, let them come."

"This is not a joke, Tony!" Steve slammed the table, his voice echoing in the room, "The Mandarin is not an ordinary enemy. His methods are much more terrible than you think."

"I know how dangerous the Mandarin is," Tony's voice also rose a few degrees, "but we are the Illuminati, we have the ability to deal with any threat."

"Tony," Professor Charles Xavier, who was sitting on the other side, interrupted, his tone gentle but full of authority, "We all know your ability and courage, but the situation this time is different. The Mandarin is not just targeting you personally, he may also use you to attack our entire team."

Tony was silent for a moment, his eyes sweeping over everyone present. In addition to Steve and Charles, there were Bruce Banner, Natasha Romanoff and Clint Barton. Everyone's face was filled with worry and determination.

"Okay," Tony finally sighed, "what do you want me to do?"

"First," Steve said, his voice regaining its composure, "we need to ensure your safety. Natasha and Clint will be responsible for your personal protection."

"No problem," Natasha smiled slightly, with a cold light in her eyes, "I will make sure Tony doesn't make any mistakes."

Clint nodded and added, "We will monitor any suspicious movements 24 hours a day."

"Secondly," Charles continued, "we need to come up with a counterattack plan. Bruce, what do you suggest?"

Bruce Banner pushed his glasses, frowned and thought for a moment before saying: "The Mandarin's power comes from his ten rings, each of which has different abilities. If we can find his weakness, perhaps we can weaken his power."

"I can use my technology to analyze the energy fluctuations of these rings," Tony suggested, "Maybe we can find a way to crack it."

"That's settled then," Steve nodded, "We must unite and face this crisis together."

At this moment, the door of the conference room was suddenly pushed open, and a young agent ran in hurriedly, looking pale and panting, and said, "Captain, we just received intelligence that the Mandarin has sent out an elite force, targeting Stark Industries."

"Damn it!" Tony stood up suddenly, "We have to act now!"

"Calm down, Tony," Steve held his shoulder, "We have to make a careful plan and not act rashly."

"Steve is right," Charles nodded, "We can't take this lightly."

"Okay," Tony took a deep breath and tried to calm himself, "So what should we do?"

"First," Steve said, "we need to split up. Natasha and Clint, you are responsible

for protecting Tony. Bruce, you and I will go to investigate the movements of the Mandarin. Charles, you stay here and use your ability to monitor the entire situation."

"Understood," Natasha and Clint responded in unison.

"Let's go," Steve patted Tony's shoulder, "Remember, we are a team, no one will be left behind."

Tony nodded, a determined gleam in his eyes. "Thank you, guys. I know I'm not fighting alone."

"Of course not," Steve smiled, "We'll always have your back."

As Steve, Bruce and Charles left the meeting room, Natasha and Clint followed closely behind Tony, ready to deal with any emergencies.

"Tony," Natasha whispered, "are you sure you want to face the Mandarin yourself?"

"Natasha, I have no choice," Tony said, a hint of fatigue in his voice, "This is my responsibility."

"We'll always be here for you," Clint patted Tony's shoulder, "no matter what happens."

Tony nodded, a trace of gratitude flashing in his eyes. He knew that although the road ahead was full of dangers, with the support of these friends, he would be able to get through it.

As night fell, the lights of the city flickered in the darkness. Tony, Natasha, and Clint stood on the top floor of Stark Industries, overlooking the entire city. The wind blew the corners of their clothes, as if warming up for the upcoming battle.

"They're coming," Clint whispered, his eyes fixed on the dark figures in the distance.

"Prepare to fight," Tony's voice was calm and firm, "No matter what happens, we can't back down."

"Tony, you must understand that your new armor alone is not enough to deal with the current threat." Captain Rogers' voice was low and firm, his blue eyes looking directly into Tony Stark, as if he could see into his soul through his eyes.

Tony Stark sat at one end of the conference table, with his usual confident smile on his face, but a hint of uneasiness flickered in his eyes. "Captain, I know what you're worried about, but my armor is already the most advanced technology available. We don't need to rely on external forces anymore."

"External forces?" Natasha Romanoff sneered. She stood by the window with her arms crossed over her chest. "Tony, you are too confident. The Ten Rings and the Mandarin are not ordinary enemies. The power they possess is far beyond your imagination."

"Natasha is right," Captain Rogers nodded, "We have fought against them many times. Their strength should not be underestimated. Especially the Mandarin. His power is a combination of magic and technology. We cannot rely solely on armor to fight him."

Tony frowned, clearly unwilling to admit his own shortcomings. "So what's your advice? We can't always rely on others."

At this time, the door of the conference room was pushed open, and Sam Wilson walked in with a trace of fatigue on his face. "I just came back from the front line and have some new intelligence."

"Go on, Sam," Captain Rogers motioned for him to continue.

"The Spear Bureau has recently discovered some new movements. They seem to be looking for some ancient artifacts that are said to be able to enhance their power." Sam handed a document to Captain Rogers.

Captain Rogers flipped through the file, his brows furrowed. "This means their threats will escalate further, and we must act quickly."

Tony looked at the file, his face turning serious. "Okay, Captain, I admit we need more help. But who can we rely on?"

"We need to form a new alliance." Captain Rogers said firmly, "Not just the Avengers, but other powerful allies."

"Like who?" Tony raised an eyebrow.

"Doctor Strange," Natasha said, "His magical powers can counter the Mandarin's magic."

"And Black Panther." Sam added, "Wakanda's technology and resources can provide strong support."

Tony pondered for a moment, and finally nodded. "Okay, I agree. But we need a detailed plan."

"I'm already preparing." Captain Rogers took out a plan and handed it to Tony. "We need to split up and contact these allies while strengthening our defenses."

"I'll be responsible for contacting Doctor Strange." Natasha volunteered.

"I'm going to Wakanda." Sam also expressed his willingness to go.

"Then I will be responsible for upgrading the armor and contacting other potential allies." Tony said.

After the meeting, everyone left, leaving only Captain Rogers and Tony in the meeting room.

"Tony," Captain Rogers walked up to Tony and patted him on the shoulder, "We must unite to defeat these powerful enemies."

Tony looked at Captain Rogers, a complex emotion flashing in his eyes. "I know, Captain. I will do my best."

Captain Rogers nodded and turned to leave the meeting room. Tony stood there, looking at the night view outside the window, with a lot of thoughts in his mind.

A few days later, the Avengers split up, with Natasha heading to Doctor Strange's temple, Sam flying to Wakanda, and Tony working in the lab, improving his armor.

"Tony, are you here?" Pepper Potts' voice came from the laboratory door.

Tony looked up and saw Pepper standing at the door with a concerned look on

her face. "Pepper, I'm here."

Pepper walked into the lab and looked at the parts and tools scattered all over the floor. "You haven't rested for a few days. Your body won't be able to hold on if you continue like this."

"I'm fine, Pepper." Tony managed a smile, "I have to get these upgrades done as soon as possible."

"I know you're worried about everyone's safety, but you have to take care of yourself too." Pepper held Tony's hand, her eyes full of concern.

Tony felt her warmth and was touched. "Thank you, Pepper. I'll pay attention."

Meanwhile, Natasha has arrived at Doctor Strange's temple. She walks into the temple and sees Doctor Strange meditating.

"Doctor Strange, we need your help." Natasha said straight to the point.

Doctor Strange opened his eyes, his gaze was sharp. "I have sensed the surge of dark forces. The threat posed by the Mandarin and S.H.I.E. cannot be underestimated."

"We need your magical power to fight them." Natasha said earnestly.

Doctor Strange nodded. "I will do my best to help you. But we need more allies."

"Sam has gone to Wakanda, hoping to get the support of Black Panther." Natasha said.

"Very good, we must act quickly." Doctor Strange stood up, "Time is running out."

In Wakanda, Sam Wilson also successfully met the Black Panther, T'Challa.

"Sam, you've arrived just in time." T'Challa greeted him with a smile, "We have noticed the movements of the S.H.I.E. Bureau. Wakanda is willing to provide all necessary support."

A group of young men in black leather jackets gathered together, their faces showing tension and expectation. At the end of the alley, a tall figure slowly approached, his figure looked particularly burly under the dim street lights.

"Jack, I heard you've been doing a good job recently." A tall figure approached, revealing an angular face. He was the leader of the Night's Watch - Mark.

Jack nodded, a hint of pride in his tone, "Yes, Mark. We recently caught a group of drug dealers and handed them over to the police."

Mark nodded with satisfaction, "Very good, Jack. We need more people like you."

At this time, a young girl walked out of the crowd, her eyes full of determination, "Mark, I also want to join the Night Watch Alliance."

Mark glanced at her and frowned slightly, "Lisa, are you sure? This is not a game, this is a real battle."

Lisa nodded without hesitation, "I'm sure. I want to do something for this city."

Chapter 118 Frankness

In a hidden corner of the Marvel Universe, villain tycoon Dr. Victor von Doom is contemplating an upcoming meeting in his Latverian castle. Wearing his signature green cape, Dr. Doom stands in front of a huge window overlooking his kingdom. His mind is filled with mixed emotions about the future, especially with two people he believes have similar ambitions to his own - Jack Lee and Tony Stark.

“They think they are the saviors of the world,” Doom muttered, “but in reality, they are just pretentious people like me.”

At this moment, the gate of the castle was opened, and Li Jie and Tony Stark walked into the magnificent building at Doom's invitation. Li Jie was wearing a black combat suit with a cold smile on his face. Tony Stark was wearing his iconic red and gold steel armor, with his mask off, revealing his confident expression.

"Dr. Doom," Li Jie spoke first, his voice calm and firm, "You said you had something important to discuss. What is it?"

Doom turned around and glanced at the two men sharply. "Li Jie, Tony, I invited you here because I think it is necessary for us to have a frank conversation."

Tony raised his eyebrows and said with a hint of sarcasm: "Frank conversation? Doom, are you kidding? You have never been a frank person."

Doom smiled coldly, "Tony, it is precisely because we are not honest with each other that we need this conversation. The three of us are the smartest and most ambitious people in the world. We all want to change the world, but we have different means."

Li Jie nodded and looked at Doom sharply. "You are right. We all have our own plans and goals. But I don't think we are the same."

Doom walked to the center of the room, with his back to the scenery outside the window, and crossed his arms in front of his chest. "Li Jie, there is no essential difference between you and Tony. You both believe that you have the ability to control the world and change the fate of the world. The only difference between you is the method and approach."

Tony put his hands on his waist with a disdainful look on his face, "Dum, you mean we are all pretentious arrogant people? You included?"

Doom nodded. "That's right, Tony. I never deny my ambition and confidence. That's why I can understand your mentality. One of you relies on technology, one relies on force, and I rely on wisdom and magic. We are all the same kind."

Li Jie sneered, "Doom, your logic is too simple. The three of us have completely different beliefs and values. You will do anything for power, but Tony and I have our own bottom line."

There was a flash of anger in Dum's eyes. "Bottom line? Li Jie, your so-called bottom line is just an excuse to cover up your true intentions. You are all pursuing a false justice."

Tony's face turned serious. He took a step forward and looked Doom in the eye. "Doom, Li Jie and I are at least trying to protect this world. And you are just using all means to satisfy your own ambitions."

Doom remained unmoved and sneered, "Tony, do you think your so-called protection is so noble? Aren't the weapons and technologies you created also exacerbating the chaos in the world to some extent?"

Li Jie interrupted, "Doom, Tony's technology is at least for the purpose of protecting innocent people. And you? All your actions are for your own benefit."

Doom's eyes became even colder. "Li Jie, Tony, do you really think you are nobler than me? Your actions are just another form of selfishness. You are all using your power to shape a world that suits your ideals."

Tony couldn't help but clench his fists. "Doom, you will never understand the true spirit of a hero. We are not doing this for our own benefit, but for those innocent people."

Doom sneered and shook his head. "Heroism? That's just a disguise you use to cover up your ambitions. You don't want to admit your true motives because it would make you look like me."

Li Jie's eyes flashed with anger. He took a step forward and looked directly at Dum. "Dum, you are wrong. We are not the same kind of people as you. We have our beliefs and principles, but you only have endless ambitions."

Doom's face turned gloomy. "Faith and principles? They are just excuses you use to comfort yourself. In the end, you will all find that only power can decide everything."

Tony sneered, "Doom, your power is based on fear and control. Our power comes from trust and cooperation."

Doom's eyes flashed with disdain. "Trust and cooperation? That's just an excuse you use to cover up your powerlessness. True power can only be achieved by controlling everything."

Li Jie said coldly, "Doom, you will never understand what true power is. It is not obtained through fear and control, but through faith and courage."

Doom's expression grew even darker. He turned and walked to the window, overlooking his kingdom. "You can continue to indulge in your fantasies, but in the end, you will find that only I can truly control this world."

Tony and Li Jie looked at each other, their hearts filled with mixed emotions. They knew that Doom's ambition and power should not be underestimated, but they also firmly believed in their own beliefs and principles.

"Doom, we won't let you succeed," Tony said firmly, "We will protect this world in our own way."

Doom turned around and smiled coldly, "Then let's wait and see whose method is more effective."

"Tony, long time no see."

Tony forced a smile, looking a little absent-minded. "Yeah, long time no see, Li Jie." He picked up the coffee cup and took a sip, trying to hide his inner anxiety.

Li Jie noticed Tony's uneasiness and asked with concern: "You look a little worried, what happened?"

Tony sighed, put down his coffee cup, folded his hands together, and whispered: "The company has encountered some problems recently, and I am a little undecided. You know, I have been relying on your advice."

Li Jie nodded and motioned Tony to continue.

"The company has an important project recently, but I don't know whether I should take it on." Tony's voice was filled with helplessness and confusion. "This project is very risky. If it fails, it may cause great losses to the company."

Li Jie pondered for a moment and asked, "Do you think this project has a chance of success?"

Tony frowned and thought for a while. "Yes, but the risk is also great. The key is that I don't know if I have enough confidence to take this risk."

Li Jie nodded, his eyes becoming deeper. "Tony, I think the key to this problem lies in your attitude. Your attitude towards this project determines whether you can succeed."

Tony looked at Li Jie in confusion, "My attitude?"

Li Jie nodded, his tone firm, "Yes, attitude. You have to ask yourself, do you really believe that you can do this project well? If you don't believe it yourself, how can you let others believe in you?"

Tony fell into deep thought. He knew that what Li Jie said made sense, but the doubts in his heart still remained.

At this moment, the door of the cafe was pushed open again, and a tall woman walked in. She was wearing a neat business suit, and her sharp eyes swept around, finally stopping at Tony and Li Jie's table. She walked straight over and stood in front of Tony.

"Tony, I heard you were here." The woman's voice was calm but firm.

Tony looked up and saw that the person coming was Emily, the company's vice

president. He was a little surprised, "Emily, why are you here?"

Emily smiled coldly, "I heard you were thinking about that project, so I came to see if you were shirking your responsibilities."

Tony's expression turned a little ugly. "Emily, this is not shirking responsibility. I'm just weighing the pros and cons."

Emily said bluntly: "Tony, what the company needs now is a decisive leader, not an indecisive person. If you can't even make this decision, how can we trust you to lead the company out of the predicament?"

Tony was stung by Emily's words. He clenched his fists and tried to calm himself down. "Emily, I just want to make sure we don't make the wrong decision."

Emily sneered, "Wrong decision? Tony, any decision has risks, but a true leader will face these risks bravely instead of hesitating."

Li Jie looked at the tense atmosphere between the two and interrupted, "Emily, I think Tony just needs some time to think. He's not shirking his responsibilities."

Emily glanced at Li Jie and softened her tone a little, "Li Jie, I understand what you mean, but we don't have much time now. The market is changing very quickly, and we must make a decision as soon as possible."

Tony took a deep breath, struggling internally. He knew Emily had a point, but he still couldn't completely let go of his concerns.

At this moment, on the other side of the cafe, a young waiter accidentally knocked over a tray, and the cups and plates fell to the ground with a crisp cracking sound. Everyone's eyes were drawn to it, and the waiter turned pale and apologized in a panic.

Tony looked at the mess and suddenly felt enlightened. He stood up, walked to the waiter, and said softly, "It's okay. Everyone makes mistakes. The important thing is that we should learn from our mistakes."

The waiter looked at Tony gratefully and thanked him repeatedly.

Tony returned to the table, his eyes becoming firm. He looked at Emily and Li Jie and said firmly, "You are right. I can't hesitate any longer. We will take this project!"

There was a flash of surprise in Emily's eyes, but then she showed a satisfied smile, "Very good, Tony, this is the you I know."

Li Jie also smiled and nodded, "Tony, I believe you can succeed."

Tony looked at the two of them gratefully. "Thank you for your support. I will do my best and live up to your expectations."

Emily nodded, "Then let's go back and prepare. There is still a lot of work to do."

Tony and Li Jie stood up, and the three of them left the cafe together. The sun was still bright, shining on them, as if illuminating the way forward for their future.

In the company's conference room, Tony called all the senior managers together and announced the decision to take on the project. Everyone expressed their support and approval, and the entire conference room was filled with a positive atmosphere.

After the meeting, Tony stood alone in front of the office window, looking at the city scenery outside. His heart was full of fighting spirit and confidence, as if he saw hope for the future.

Li Jie walked into the office and patted Tony on the shoulder. "Tony, I believe you can succeed."

Tony turned around, smiled and nodded, "Thank you, Li Jie. Your words helped me regain my confidence."

Li Jie smiled and said, "Remember, attitude is everything. As long as you believe in yourself, nothing is impossible."

"Tony," Natasha Romanoff's voice sounded behind him, "are you sure you want to do this?"

Tony turned around and saw Natasha's deep eyes looking straight at him. He sighed and put down his glass, "I have no choice, Natasha. The Mandarin has threatened too many innocent lives. We need Doom's power."

Chapter 119 The hidden truth

The atmosphere in the conference room of SHIELD headquarters was extremely tense. SHIELD's senior staff sat at the conference table. Nick Fury sat at the head seat with a serious expression. His single eye looked particularly sharp under the dim light. Natasha Romanoff leaned back in her chair, crossed her arms over her chest, and glanced at everyone present from time to time. Clint Barton stood by the window, looking thoughtfully at the night view outside.

"We need to discuss the latest intelligence," Fury began, his voice deep and powerful. "Captain Rogers, what have you discovered?"

Steve Rogers sat at one end of the table with a complicated expression on his face. He knew that the next topic would cause a huge stir, but he had to say it.

"I discovered some secret history about the founding of SHIELD," Rogers said, his voice firm but with a hint of hesitation, "Howard Stark's purpose in establishing SHIELD was not just to protect the world."

Everyone present exchanged surprised looks. Tony Stark's eyes widened, obviously unaware of his father's secret.

"What are you talking about, Rogers?" Tony couldn't help but ask, his tone full of questioning and uneasiness.

"Howard Stark established S.H.I.E.L.D. to fight against an organization called the Brotherhood of the Shield," Rogers continued. "The existence of this organization was deliberately concealed, and their goals are completely different from ours."

"The Brotherhood of the Holy Shield?" Natasha frowned. "I have never heard of this organization."

"I only discovered this during my recent investigation," Rogers explained.

"Members of this organization are scattered all over the world. Their goal is to use advanced technology and ancient magic to control the world."

"That sounds like a fairy tale," Clint interjected, a hint of skepticism in his tone.

"I know it's hard to believe," Rogers sighed, "but I have proof."

Fury tapped the table with his fingers, signaling for silence. He looked directly at Rogers, as if he wanted to see more secrets from his eyes.

"Keep going," Fury ordered.

"I found some hidden files that detailed the activities of the Brotherhood of Shield and Howard Stark's plans," Rogers said. "These files were hidden deep in the underground database of SHIELD, and only a very few people knew of their existence."

Tony's face became even gloomier and he clenched his fists, seeming to be trying to control his emotions.

"Why didn't you tell us earlier?" Tony demanded, anger and disappointment in his voice.

“I need to confirm the authenticity of this information,” Rogers responded, “and I know it will cause a huge conflict.”

"Conflict?" Natasha sneered, "This is simply a huge conspiracy."

"What are you all discussing here?" A new voice interrupted their conversation. Everyone turned around and saw Maria Hill standing at the door with a serious expression on her face.

"We were discussing some of the hidden history surrounding the founding of SHIELD," Fury replied briefly.

Hill walked into the conference room, closed the door, and walked over to the table.

"I just received some new intelligence," Hill said, "It seems that the Holy Shield Brotherhood has begun to take action."

"What?" Fury stood up suddenly, a hint of surprise flashing in his eyes, "Where are they?"

"In Europe, they are searching for an ancient artifact that is said to control time," Hill replied, "We must act now."

"That's why Howard Stark founded S.H.I.E.L.D." Rogers chimed in. "He knew about the existence of these artifacts, and tried to prevent them from falling into the hands of the Brotherhood of Aegis."

"We can't let them succeed," Fury said firmly, "Hill, gather all available agents immediately. We must stop them."

"Understood," Hill nodded, then quickly left the meeting room.

The conference room fell silent again, as everyone digested the information they had just heard. Tony looked at Rogers, his eyes filled with mixed emotions.

"You know what this means to me?" Tony whispered. "I always thought my dad was just a scientist."

"I know it's hard to accept," Rogers said, "but we have to face it."

"Face the reality?" Tony sneered, "Do you know how ridiculous this is? A secret organization, an ancient artifact, these sound like fairy tales."

"But it is real," Rogers said firmly, "We must unite and stop the Brotherhood of the Shield."

“I agree,” Natasha interjected. “No matter how ridiculous the stories are, we can’t ignore the potential threat.”

"Me too," Clint nodded, "We have to take action."

"It is decided, then," Fury said, "We will do our utmost to stop the Brotherhood of the Shield."

After the meeting, Rogers and Tony walked out of the conference room, and the corridor was empty. Tony stopped and turned to face Rogers.

"Do you really believe this?" Tony asked, with a hint of doubt in his tone.

"I believe it," Rogers replied firmly, "because it was Howard Stark's last wish."

Tony was silent for a moment, then sighed.

"Well," he said, "let's go and uncover this secret together."

Rogers nodded, and the two continued to walk forward. At the end of the corridor, it seemed that there was a door waiting for them, leading to an unknown world.

In the underground database of S.H.I.E.L.D., Rogers and Tony stood in front of rows of filing cabinets, flipping through the long-sealed documents. Every page of paper recorded the conspiracy of the Brotherhood of Shield and Howard Stark's secret plan.

"There are too many files. We need more manpower," Tony said, a hint of fatigue in his eyes.

"We will find the truth," Rogers said firmly, "no matter what the cost."

Suddenly, the door of the database was thrown open, and Natasha and Clint walked in.

"We heard you needed help," Natasha said, a hint of a smile on her face.

"Thank you," Rogers said gratefully, "We need to find the key information about the Holy Shield Brotherhood as soon as possible."

"Let's get started then," Clint said, walking over to a filing cabinet and starting looking through the papers.

Time passed quietly in the tense atmosphere, and finally, Natasha found a key document.

"Look at this," she said, handing the document to Rogers, "This contains a detailed list of the members of the Brotherhood of the Shield and their action plans."

Rogers took the document and read every word carefully. His face became more serious.

"We must act immediately," Rogers said, "Their target is an artifact called the 'Eye of Time', which is said to be able to control time."

"It sounds like science fiction," Tony frowned, "but we don't have a choice."

"We have to stop them," Rogers said firmly, "no matter what the cost."

The four quickly left the database and prepared for the upcoming battle. In the command center of S.H.I.E.L.D., Fury was directing all agents to make emergency deployments.

"We have locked down the location of the Holy Shield Brotherhood," Fury said, "Everyone prepare to go."

"Understood," all the agents responded in unison.

Shang Qi broke the silence: "Tony, you have to understand that the cost of the Ark Reactor is too high. Ordinary factories and people simply cannot afford it."

Tony raised his eyebrows, a hint of impatience flashing in his eyes: "I've already said that technology always has a cost. You can't expect us to provide these technologies for free."

Shang Qi took a deep breath and tried to suppress his anger: "I'm not talking about free. I'm talking about reality. Do you know how many small businesses and ordinary families have gone bankrupt because of the initial renovation costs?"

Tony shrugged. "That's their problem, not mine. My job is to develop technology, not solve their financial problems."

Shang Qi clenched his fists so tightly that his knuckles turned white. “Tony, you can’t be so cold-blooded. We need to find a more feasible solution so that more people can afford this technology.”

Just then, the door opened and Peter Parker walked in with an anxious look on his face, "Sorry, I'm late. What happened?"

Shang Qi turned to look at Peter, a glimmer of hope in his eyes: "Peter, maybe you can help convince Tony. We are discussing the cost of the Ark reactor."

Peter frowned and walked over to Shang Qi and sat down: "Tony, Shang Qi is right. We can't ignore the needs of ordinary people. Is it possible to reduce costs and benefit more people?"

Tony sighed, stood up, walked to the window, and looked at the city scene outside: "Peter, you know this is not such a simple matter. The materials and manufacturing process of the Ark Reactor are very complicated, and high costs are inevitable."

Peter's eyes flashed with determination: "But we have to try, right? Maybe we can reduce the cost through mass production or other means."

Tony turned around with a hint of impatience in his eyes: "Do you think I haven't thought about this? I have tried my best, but this is the reality."

Shang Qi stood up, walked up to Tony, and looked him straight in the eye: "Tony, we are not questioning your ability. We just hope you can think about it more and find a compromise."

Tony's face turned gloomy. "I've already said that this is not that simple. If you think you can find a better solution, then go and try it yourself."

Shang Qi's voice became more resolute: "Tony, this is not a battle you have to fight alone. We are all working towards the same goal. Please don't be so stubborn."

Tony sneered: "Stubborn? Maybe. But this is the reality. If you can't accept it, you can only give up."

Peter looked at the confrontation between the two and felt powerless: "Tony, Shang Qi, we can't keep arguing like this. We need to find a way to cooperate."

Tony took a deep breath and tried to calm himself down. "Okay, Peter. What do you suggest?"

Peter thought for a while and said slowly: "Maybe we can set up a fund to help small businesses and families who cannot afford the cost of Ark reactor

modification. This can alleviate their pressure to a certain extent."

Shang Qi nodded: "This is a good idea. We can unite some powerful companies and institutions to jointly invest in establishing this fund."

Tony's expression softened a little, but still showed a hint of doubt: "Are you sure this will work?"

Peter nodded firmly. "We can at least try. If it can help a few people, it will be worth it."

Shang Qi agreed: “Yes, Tony. We can’t just sit back and do nothing. We have a responsibility to let more people benefit from this technology.”

Tony was silent for a moment, and finally nodded: "Okay, I agree to give it a try. But we need to make a detailed plan to ensure that this fund can operate effectively."

Peter and Shang Qi both smiled with satisfaction: "Thank you, Tony. We will do our best to ensure the success of this plan."

Chapter 120 Reunion and Choice

Daniel and his father John are standing on the temple's training ground, surrounded by towering pine trees and falling snow. This is the sacred land of Kunlun, where the heirs of the Iron Fist have trained for generations, pursuing the ultimate martial arts and spiritual power. However, this father and son are facing a huge challenge.

Daniel stood in the middle of the training ground, panting, with beads of sweat on his forehead. His father John stood by with a frown on his face, obviously not satisfied with his son's performance.

"Daniel, you're too slow," John said sternly, "You need to be more focused. Kunlun's martial arts are no joke."

Daniel took a deep breath and tried to calm himself. "I'm trying my best, Father," he whispered, "but I don't think I can master these techniques."

John's face became even gloomier. "Try your best? Trying your best is not enough, Daniel. As the heir of the Iron Fist, you must surpass your limits and reach unprecedented heights. You know that our family's position in Kunlun is already precarious. If we cannot prove ourselves, the consequences will be disastrous."

At this time, the elders of Kunlun came from the other side of the training ground. Their eyes were as sharp as hawks, and they seemed to be able to see through everything. The leader was Elder Baimei, who was the highest authority in Kunlun and controlled everything here.

"John, Daniel," the White-browed Elder said, his voice as thunderous as thunder, "how is your training going?"

John lowered his head, looking a little embarrassed. "Elder White Eyebrow, we are still working hard, but the progress is not as good as expected."

Elder White Eyebrow turned his gaze to Daniel, with a hint of disappointment in his eyes. "Daniel, do you know the meaning of being the successor of the Iron Fist? This is not only the inheritance of martial arts, but also the inheritance of spirit. You must prove yourself and prove that you are worthy of this title."

Daniel felt a surge of pressure, knowing that he had to respond to the elders' expectations. "I understand, elder. I will continue to work hard and live up to Kunlun's expectations."

However, Elder White Eyebrow was not satisfied with this answer. "Effort is not enough, Daniel. What you need is determination and perseverance. Kunlun's enemies will not show mercy because of your efforts. You must become stronger."

John looked at his son, his heart full of contradictions. He hoped that Daniel would succeed, but he was also worried that he could not bear such great pressure. “Elder White Eyebrow, please give us some time, we will prove ourselves.”

Elder Baimei nodded, but there was still doubt in his eyes. "Time is limited, John Kunlun can't wait too long. I hope you can find a way to break through as soon as possible."

After the elders left, Daniel and John stood on the training ground, the atmosphere was heavy. Daniel felt overwhelmed, he knew what his father and Kunlun expected of him, but could he really do it?

“Father, can I really become the powerful Iron Fist?” Daniel asked in a low voice, with a hint of uncertainty in his voice.

John sighed and patted his son on the shoulder. "Daniel, I believe you can do it. You are my son and the hope of Kunlun. If we work together, we will definitely find a solution."

Daniel nodded, determination burning in his heart. He knew he couldn't give up and had to fight for his father and Kunlun.

In the next few months, Daniel and John trained day and night. They tried various methods to try to break their own limits. However, progress was still slow, and Daniel began to waver.

One night, Daniel sat alone on the roof of the temple, looking at the starry sky. His heart was filled with doubts and uneasiness. Could he really become the powerful Iron Fist? Could he shoulder this heavy responsibility?

At this time, a figure quietly appeared behind him. It was his friend and senior brother, Li Tianxiang.

"Daniel, what are you thinking about?" Li Tianxiang asked with concern in his tone.

Daniel turned his head and looked at Li Tianxiang, with complex emotions flashing in his eyes. "Tianxiang, I don't know if I can do it. I feel like I've been standing still and can't break through."

Li Tianxiang patted him on the shoulder and said with a smile: "Daniel, everyone has their own difficulties, but the important thing is not to give up. You have great potential, but you just haven't found the right way yet."

Daniel smiled bitterly. "But time waits for no one. Kunlun's expectations are overwhelming me."

Li Tianxiang nodded, understanding his feelings. "I know it's stressful, but you're not alone. We are all part of Kunlun, and we will face these challenges together."

Daniel looked at Li Tianxiang gratefully, and a glimmer of hope ignited in his heart. "Thank you, Tianxiang. I will continue to work hard and live up to everyone's expectations."

The next day, Daniel and John came to the training ground again. This time, they decided to try a new training method that combined Kunlun's traditional martial arts with modern scientific training.

"Daniel, we need to find a balance," John said, "Kun Lun's martial arts are the source of our strength, but modern science can also help us break through our limits."

Daniel nodded and began to practice according to the new training plan. He felt his body gradually adapting to the new rhythm, and his strength and speed also improved.

A few weeks later, Elder White Eyebrows came to the training ground again to observe their progress. This time, there was a hint of surprise in his eyes.

“John, Daniel, your progress is remarkable,” said the White-browed Elder, with approval in his tone, “It seems that you have found the right direction.”

John smiled and nodded. "Thank you, Elder. We will continue to work hard and strive to achieve our desired goal as soon as possible."

Shang Qi stood in front of Daniel's door, with mixed emotions in his heart. They hadn't seen each other for several years, and although they had kept in touch, face-to-face communication was another matter. He took a deep breath and pressed the doorbell.

The door was soon opened, and Daniel stood at the door with a warm smile on his face. "Shang Qi! You are finally here!" He opened his arms and gave Shang Qi a tight hug.

"Daniel, long time no see." Shang Qi patted him on the back, feeling his warmth and strength.

They walked into Daniel's apartment. The simple yet warm decoration made Shang Qi feel familiar and at ease. Daniel poured him a cup of coffee and invited him to sit on the sofa.

"How are you doing in the United States?" Shang Qi asked, his eyes sweeping over the various furnishings in the room.

"Not bad," Daniel smiled, "The salary at SHIELD is even higher than that at S.H.I.E.L.D." There was a hint of pride in his tone, but more of helplessness.

"Then why did you come back?" Shang Qi went straight to the point. He knew that Daniel would not leave SHIELD easily.

Daniel's smile gradually faded, and a gloomy look appeared on his face. "My father's legacy," he whispered, "He devoted his entire life to the research and development of ultra-high-speed railways. I can't let his efforts go to waste."

Shang Qi nodded and looked at him with understanding. "I understand. This must be very important to you."

"Yes," Daniel sighed, "but this also means that I have to give up everything in SHIELD and return to the United States to face those complicated situations and endless challenges."

"You don't have to bear this alone," Shang Qi held Daniel's hand and said firmly, "We are friends, and I will always support you."

Daniel looked at him gratefully, tears in his eyes. "Thank you, Shang Qi. Your support means a lot to me."

At this time, the doorbell rang again. Daniel walked over to open the door, and a tall and burly man walked in with an anxious look on his face.

"Jack, why are you here?" Daniel was a little surprised.

"Daniel, we are in trouble," Jack said directly, "There is a problem with the funding of the railway project. The investor suddenly withdrew the capital. We need to find a new source of funds immediately."

Daniel's face became solemn, and he looked at Shang Qi, his eyes full of helplessness and anxiety.

“That’s what I call a complex situation,” he said with a wry smile. “Every step is full of challenges.”

Shang Qi stood up and patted Daniel on the shoulder. "Let's face it together. Don't give up."

Daniel took a deep breath and nodded. "Okay, let's work together."

The three of them sat together and began to discuss solutions. Shang Qi made some suggestions and Jack also shared his ideas. After a heated discussion, they finally came up with a preliminary plan.

“We need to contact more investors and demonstrate the potential and prospects of this project,” Shang Qi concluded. “Only in this way can we attract new funds.”

Daniel nodded, and the flame of hope rekindled in his eyes. "Okay, let's take action immediately."

At this moment, Daniel's cell phone rang. He glanced at the caller ID and his expression suddenly became more solemn.

"It's SHIELD," he whispered, "I have to take this call."

Shang Qi and Jack looked at each other and nodded silently. Daniel walked aside and answered the phone.

"Daniel, this is Phil Coulson," a steady voice came from the other end of the line, "We need you to return to S.H.I.E.L.D. immediately. There is an urgent mission."

Daniel's heart sank suddenly, he knew what this meant. SHIELD's emergency missions were never trivial.

"I understand," he replied quietly, "but I have something very important to take care of right now. Can you please delay it for a while?"

"I'm afraid not." Coulson's voice was still calm, but with unquestionable firmness, "This mission is related to global security. We need you."

Daniel closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He looked at Shang Qi and Jack, his eyes full of pain and struggle.

"I need time to think about it," he said finally. "Give me a few hours, please."

"Okay, but please get back to us," Coulson said and hung up.

Daniel put down his phone and sighed heavily. "S.H.I.E.L.D. needs me, but I can't give up this project."

Shang Qi walked up to him and patted his shoulder gently. "You have to make a choice, Daniel. Whatever you choose, we will support you."

Jack also nodded and said firmly: "Whether you decide to stay or go back, we will understand."

Daniel looked at them gratefully, with complex emotions flashing in his eyes. "Thank you, I need a moment."

He walked to the window and looked at the city outside, his heart full of contradictions and pain. He knew that no matter which path he chose, he would face huge challenges and sacrifices.

"Daniel," Shang Qi's voice broke the silence, "whatever you choose, we will be by your side."

Daniel turned around, his eyes flashing with determination. "Thank you, I've made up my mind."

He walked back to Shang Qi and Jack and took a deep breath. "I will continue my father's legacy and complete the ultra-high-speed rail project. But I will also try my best to help SHIELD, do whatever I can."

Shang Qi and Jack looked at each other and smiled with relief. "We believe in you, Daniel," Shang Qi said, "You can do it."

"Yes," Jack nodded in agreement, "Let's work together."

Daniel looked at them with gratitude, his heart filled with strength and hope. He knew that no matter how difficult the future would be, he would never be alone again, because he had these trustworthy friends by his side.

"Okay, let's start now," Daniel said, "Time waits for no one, we must seize every minute and every second."

Chapter 121 Falling apart

Dr. Ethan stood in the top floor conference room of Stark Industries, overlooking the bustling night scene of New York City through the French windows. On the conference table, documents piled up like a mountain, and the display screen flashed complex new energy solutions. Tony Stark sat at the other end of the table, playing with a pen in his hand, with a hint of impatience on his face.

"Ethan, do you know how unrealistic this plan is?" Tony finally broke the silence, with obvious doubt in his tone.

Ethan frowned, rested his hands on the table, and leaned forward slightly: "Tony, this is not unrealistic, but a reality we must face. The earth's resources are running out. We need to find a sustainable new energy source instead of continuing to rely on traditional energy sources that pollute the environment."

Tony sneered and shook his head. "You are too idealistic, Ethan. You always think about saving the world, but the reality is that we need to make a profit and need the support of investors. Your plan is too risky, and no one will be willing to invest in it."

Ethan's eyes became sharp, he stood up straight, and his voice became louder: "Tony, this is not just about money. This is about our future, about the survival of our next generation. Can't you see it?"

Tony stood up, walked to the window, and turned his back to Ethan: "Of course I can see it, but I also see the cruelty of reality. Do you know how many employees our company has and how many families depend on us? We can't take this risk."

Ethan took a deep breath, his chest rising and falling slightly, as if he was trying to suppress the surging anger in his heart. He clenched his fists tightly and said through gritted teeth: "So, you would rather continue on this dead end than try to change?" His voice was low and full of majesty, as if every word carried a heavy

weight.

Ethan's eyes were firm and sharp, like a burning flame, staring straight at the other person. His eyes revealed an unshakable determination and belief, which shocked people. He seemed to be telling the other person in this way that no matter what difficulties and obstacles he faced, he would not easily give up his goal.

Tony turned around, a complex emotion flashing in his eyes: "Ethan, I know you are right, but I can't take this risk. I have a responsibility to protect this company and these employees."

Ethan felt powerless. He knew Tony's concerns, but he couldn't accept such a compromise. His voice became low and firm: "Tony, I have made up my mind. If you don't support this plan, I will do it myself."

Tony's expression suddenly changed: "Are you threatening me?"

Ethan shook his head. “This is not a threat, but my determination. I can’t waste any more time arguing here. I will return to my hometown of Gemilla. The people there need me, and I will realize my plan there.”

Tony was silent for a moment, and finally sighed: "Okay, Ethan, if this is your decision, I won't stop you. But you have to know that this road is difficult."

Ethan nodded, with a firm light in his eyes: “I know, but this is the path I must take.”

Ethan turned and left the meeting room, leaving Tony standing alone in front of the window, silent.

A few days later, Ethan returned to his hometown, Gemil. This small town was once devastated by war, but now Ethan is determined to bring new hope here.

In a simple laboratory in Gemilla, Ethan and his assistant Emily are working hard. Emily is a young scientist who used to work in Ethan's team and has full confidence in his plan.

"Dr. Ethan, the design of this reactor looks promising, but we still need more funds and equipment." Emily looked up and wiped the sweat from her forehead.

Ethan nodded. "I know, Emily, but we can't give up. We've come so far, we can't stop here."

Emily's eyes flashed with worry: "But, Dr. Ethan, our resources are really limited. Without Tony's support, it will be difficult for us to continue."

Ethan pondered for a moment, then said firmly: "We will find a way. The people of Gemilla need us, and we can't let them down."

At this moment, the door of the laboratory was pushed open, and a middle-aged man walked in. He was the mayor of Gemilla, named Carl.

"Dr. Ethan, Emily, I have good news." Carl's face was filled with excitement.

Ethan and Emily looked up at the same time, their eyes full of anticipation.

"We have found some companies willing to invest, and they are very interested in your new energy plans," said Carl.

There was a flash of surprise in Ethan's eyes: "Really? That's great!"

Carl nodded: "Yes, they are willing to provide funds and equipment to help you complete this project."

Emily excitedly held Ethan's hand: "Dr. Ethan, we have hope!"

Ethan felt relieved. He knew this was just the beginning, but he firmly believed that as long as they persisted, they would succeed.

A few months later, Gemilla's laboratory was full of busy figures. Ethan and Emily led the team to work day and night. The design of the reactor was constantly optimized, and the experiment made significant progress.

At night, the light in the laboratory shines through the window onto the lawn outside, making it particularly bright. Ethan stands there quietly, looking into the distance with focused eyes. His mood is like a colorful painting, with hope and determination intertwined, making him feel extremely fulfilled.

Ethan's eyes pierced through the darkness and the clouds, as if he could see the endless universe. He thought about the goals he pursued, and those dreams that

once seemed unattainable have now become a reality. He knew that all this was achieved through unremitting efforts and persistence.

At this moment, a strong belief surged in his heart: anything is possible as long as there is enough courage to pursue it. This belief is like a burning flame, illuminating his way forward. It made him understand that even if he encountered difficulties and setbacks, he should not give up easily. Because only after experiencing wind and rain can he see the rainbow; only by perseverance can he achieve glory.

Ethan took a deep breath and felt the fresh night air. He told himself that no matter what challenges he would encounter in the future, he would face them without fear, because he believed that as long as he maintained a positive and optimistic attitude, he would be able to overcome difficulties and move towards the other side of success.

In this quiet night, Ethan's inner world is filled with hope and determination. He knows that this will be a new starting point, a beginning of pursuing dreams and realizing the value of life. And he will use his actions to prove that as long as you have faith in your heart, you can create miracles.

"Dr. Ethan." Emily's voice came from behind.

Ethan turned around and looked at her with a smile: “Emily, why haven’t you rested yet?”

Emily walked up to him, her eyes revealing a trace of worry and uneasiness, and whispered, "I wonder, can we really succeed?" Her voice was low and gentle, as if she was asking an unsolvable puzzle. She looked into the distance, as if she wanted to find the answer from the endless sky, but in the end she could only shake her head helplessly. Her hands unconsciously clenched the corners of her clothes, showing her inner tension and worry.

Ethan's eyes flashed with determination: "We will succeed, Emily. As long as we don't give up, we will achieve our goal."

Emily nodded, her eyes full of confidence: "I believe you, Dr. Ethan."

As time went by, Ethan and his team finally achieved victory. The reactor was successfully operated, and the new energy plan made a breakthrough.

The people of Gemilla cheered, they knew that this was not only Ethan's victory, but also their victory.

On the night of celebration, Ethan stood on the stage, facing the cheering crowd, his heart filled with gratitude and pride.

"Thank you all for your support and trust." Ethan's voice echoed in the night sky. "This is our victory, and it is Gemilla's victory. We have proved that as long as we have faith and persistence, we can create miracles."

The crowd erupted in thunderous applause, and Emily stood on the stage with tears in her eyes.

The sky of New York City was dotted with colorful neon lights. Ethan Blake stood in the top floor conference room of Stark Tower, overlooking the city that never sleeps through the huge floor-to-ceiling windows. His eyes passed through the busy streets, but his heart was filled with heavy worries.

"Ethan, what do you want to talk to me about?" Tony Stark's voice came from behind, interrupting Ethan's thoughts.

Ethan turned around and saw Tony, dressed in casual clothes, holding a glass of red wine, looking calm.

"Tony, I need to talk to you about your new energy plan." Ethan said bluntly.

Tony raised an eyebrow, walked to the conference table and sat down, motioning Ethan to sit down as well. "Go ahead, I'm all ears."

Ethan took a deep breath and sat opposite Tony. "Tony, I know you have invested a lot of effort in the research of new energy, but have you ever considered the risks it may bring?"

Tony chuckled and put down his glass. "Ethan, you know I'm always cautious. New energy is the future, and we can't stand still because we're worried about the risks."

Ethan's face turned serious. "Tony, I'm not against progress, but I've seen wars started because of energy interests. I lost family members, and I don't want to see such tragedies happen again."

Tony's smile faded and his eyes turned cold. "Ethan, I understand your pain, but you can't stop future progress because of past pain. We need this new energy, it can change the world."

"Change the world? Or destroy the world?" Ethan's voice became a little louder, and he was very excited. "Do you know how powerful this new energy is? If it falls into the hands of criminals, how much damage will it cause?"

Tony stood up and walked to the window, his back facing Ethan. "Ethan, you are too pessimistic. We can't back down because of fear. You should trust me, I will make sure it is safe."

"Believe you?" Ethan also stood up and walked behind Tony. "Tony, it's not that I don't believe you, but can you guarantee that everyone is as responsible as you are? Can you guarantee that no one in this world will use this to do bad things?"

Tony was silent for a moment, then turned to face Ethan, his eyes flashing with mixed emotions. "Ethan, I know what you're worried about. But we can't give up the opportunity now because we're afraid of future possibilities. We can put in place stricter security measures to ensure it won't be abused."

Ethan shook his head, his eyes full of pain and helplessness. "Tony, I know you have your ideals and ambitions, but I really hope you can postpone this plan until we have a complete safety plan."

Tony sighed, walked back to the conference table, picked up his glass and drank it all. "Ethan, I will consider your suggestion, but I can't promise anything. This is a complicated issue, and it's not something that can be easily solved by the two of us."

Just then, the door of the conference room was pushed open, and Pepper Potts walked in with a hint of anxiety on her face. "Tony, there is a group of protesters outside who are against your new energy plan."

Tony frowned and put his glass down. "Protesters? How did they know?"

Pepper shook her head. "I don't know, but they are very emotional, and several of them have tried to rush into the building."

Ethan's expression became more serious. "Tony, this is what I'm worried about.

People are full of fear and suspicion about this new energy plan. If you continue to push forward, it may cause a greater conflict."

Chapter 122 Expectations and Visions

Ethan sat in front of the TV, and the screen was playing the latest news reports of the war in Eastern Europe. In the picture, there was smoke everywhere, buildings collapsed in the artillery fire, and soldiers fought hard in the mud. All this confirmed his previous guess: the war was not over, but just a temporary ceasefire, and it would become more intense afterwards.

"Ethan, have you read the news?" Tony's voice came from the door. He walked into the room with a hint of anxiety on his face.

Ethan nodded, his eyes still fixed on the screen. "I saw it, and this is exactly what I was worried about."

Tony sighed and sat down next to Ethan. "You always thought the war would continue, and now it seems you were right. But what can we do?"

Ethan turned his head and looked at Tony, his eyes full of determination. "We can't just stand by and watch, Tony. We have to take action and do everything we can to help those who are suffering."

Tony frowned, looking a little hesitant. "But we are just ordinary people, there is only so much we can do. The government and the military are helpless, what can we do?"

Ethan's voice became more resolute. "Because of this, we can't just sit there and do nothing. We can organize donations, provide material assistance, or even go to help those refugees in person. Every tiny effort may change the fate of some people."

Tony was silent for a moment, with a hint of hesitation in his eyes. "I know you are right, but this requires a lot of courage and determination. We need more people to support us."

Ethan nodded, a glimmer of hope in his eyes. "We can contact some like-minded friends, such as Kate and Lisa, who have always been concerned about these issues. And Mark, who works for an NGO, may be able to give us some advice."

Tony thought for a moment and finally nodded. "Okay, I agree to try it with you. Let's contact them first and see if we can form a small team."

Ethan smiled and patted Tony on the shoulder. "Thank you, Tony. I know this is not easy for you, but this is the most meaningful thing we can do."

A few days later, Ethan and Tony met Kate, Lisa and Mark in a cafe. Everyone sat together and the atmosphere seemed a little tense.

"Ethan, I understand what you said, but what should we do specifically?" Kate asked first, her eyes full of confusion.

Ethan nodded and took out a plan and put it on the table. "This is the plan Tony and I worked out together. First, we need to raise funds, through fundraising events, charity sales, etc. Second, we need to contact some reliable logistics companies to deliver supplies to refugee camps near the war zone."

Lisa frowned, looking a little worried. "All of this requires a lot of resources and manpower. Can we do it?"

Mark thought for a moment and nodded. "I have worked in non-governmental organizations and know some channels and resources. We can contact some international aid organizations and seek their support."

Tony took over the conversation with a firm tone. "We can use social media to mobilize more people to participate. As long as we unite, we can definitely make some changes."

Kate and Lisa looked at each other and finally nodded. "Okay, we're willing to try. Ethan, you're right, every little effort may bring hope."

Ethan showed a relieved smile, with a hint of determination in his eyes. "Thank you for your support. Let's get started now."

In the following weeks, Ethan and his team were busy preparing for the fundraising event. They contacted local businesses and schools to mobilize more

people to participate. On social media, their appeal received a wide response, and more and more people joined them.

One night, Ethan and Tony were sorting donations in the office, while Kate and Lisa were counting the donations.

"Ethan, do you think these supplies can really help the refugees?" Tony asked as he sorted them out, with a hint of worry in his tone.

Ethan stopped what he was doing and looked at Tony firmly. "Every piece of material represents a hope. Maybe we can't change the entire war situation, but we can keep some people alive and bring them a little warmth."

Kate nodded, a touch of emotion flashing in her eyes. "Ethan is right, everything we do is meaningful. As long as we persist, we will definitely see hope."

Lisa also agreed: "That's right, we can't give up. Those who are suffering need our help, and we can't let them down."

Ethan smiled and patted Tony on the shoulder. "Thank you for your support. Let's keep working hard now."

A few months later, Ethan and his team finally delivered the first batch of supplies to refugee camps in Eastern Europe. Looking at the grateful eyes of the refugees, Ethan felt satisfied and relieved.

A little girl walked up to Ethan, took his hand, her eyes full of gratitude. "Thank you, thank you so much."

Ethan squatted down and gently stroked the little girl's hair, with tears in his eyes. "You're welcome. This is what we should do. You must be strong. We will always support you."

Tony stood aside, tears flashing in his eyes. He finally understood Ethan's persistence and determination, and the significance of everything they did.

After returning home, Ethan and Tony sat side by side on the balcony, bathing in the moonlight and admiring the twinkling stars in the night sky. They were immersed in the tranquil atmosphere, their hearts full of expectations and longings for the future.

"Ethan, I understand your idea now. We can't change the whole world, but we can change the fate of some people." Tony said with emotion.

Ethan smiled slightly, with a hint of determination in his eyes. "Yes, Tony. As long as we persist, we will definitely see hope. The war may not end soon, but our efforts will not be in vain."

Tony nodded, his eyes full of determination. "We will keep going until we see the day of peace."

As the sun sets, the streets of Kabul, Afghanistan, are covered in dust. Ethan stands at the entrance of a simple school with a determined look. He firmly believes that only through education can the next generation of Afghanistan have a better future.

"Mr. Ethan!" A young voice interrupted his thoughts. Ethan turned around and saw a teenage boy running towards him. The boy's name was Ali, and he was one of the students in this school.

"Ali, what's the matter?" Ethan asked with a smile.

"Mr. Ethan, can you help me explain this math problem?" Ali panted, holding a tattered textbook in his hand.

Ethan took the textbook and looked at the question carefully. "Of course, Ali. This question requires you to understand the basic algebraic principles first, and then..."

As Ethan was explaining patiently, an angry voice came from a distance. "Ethan! What are you doing here?" The owner of the voice was Hassan, Ali's father.

"Mr. Hassan, I'm helping Ali study," Ethan replied calmly.

"Study?" Hassan's face became even gloomier. "What can these books bring him? What he needs is survival skills, not this useless knowledge!"

Ethan did not back down. He looked at Hassan firmly. "Mr. Hassan, I understand your concerns. But knowledge is the key to changing destiny. Only by mastering knowledge can the next generation of Afghanistan live a better life in the future."

"Change fate?" Hassan sneered. "Do you know the reality here? There are battles and deaths every day. Can knowledge protect them?"

"Mr. Hassan, I don't deny the current difficulties, but precisely because of this, we need education even more. Knowledge can bring hope and peace." Ethan's voice was full of passion.

"Hope? Peace?" Hassan shook his head angrily. "These are just empty words! I only believe in the reality before my eyes."

At this moment, a gentle voice interrupted. "Hassan, Ethan is right." It was Hassan's wife, Maria, who walked between the two men, tears in her eyes.

"Maria, do you also think that knowledge can change everything?" Hassan looked at his wife with some confusion.

“Yes, Hassan,” Maria said softly. “I know you want to protect our children, but we must look beyond the present difficulties. We must think about their future.”

Hassan was silent for a moment, a complex expression on his face. "But how can we be sure that this knowledge is really useful?"

Ethan seized the opportunity and continued, "Mr. Hassan, I am willing to prove this with my life. I will stay here and teach these children until they can stand on their own feet."

"Are you really willing to do this?" Hassan's voice wavered.

"Yes, I do." Ethan replied firmly.

"Okay." Hassan finally relented. "I'll give you a chance, but if this knowledge doesn't change anything, I won't support you anymore."

Ethan nodded, his heart full of determination. He knew that this was just the beginning, but he was willing to give everything for the future of these children.

As time went on, Ethan put more energy into the school. He not only taught his students math and science, but also taught them reading and writing. He believed that only a comprehensive education could truly change their destiny.

One day, Ethan was giving a history lesson in the classroom when an uninvited guest broke in. It was a member of the Taliban named Abdullah. He was holding a weapon and had a fierce expression on his face.

"Ethan, what are you doing here?" Abdullah asked coldly.

"I'm teaching the kids knowledge," Ethan answered fearlessly.

"Knowledge?" Abdullah sneered. "They have no use for this stuff. You're wasting your time."

"Abdullah, you are wrong," Ethan said firmly. "Knowledge is their only way out. Only through education can they escape the shadow of poverty and war."

"Do you really believe this?" A hint of doubt flashed in Abdullah's eyes.

"Yes, I believe it." Ethan answered without hesitation.

Abdullah was silent for a while, then suddenly turned and left the classroom. Ethan knew that the fight was far from over, but he would not give up.

A few months later, Ethan's efforts began to bear fruit. Ali's grades improved significantly, and he began to show a strong interest in learning. Other students also gradually realized the importance of knowledge, and their eyes were filled with hope.

One day after school, Ali ran to Ethan and said excitedly: "Mr. Ethan, I want to be a doctor! I want to help more people."

Ethan looked at Ali with tears in his eyes. "Ali, you can do it. As long as you keep learning, the future will definitely belong to you."

However, the good times did not last long. One night, the school was suddenly attacked. Ethan was forced to flee with the students, and they hid in an abandoned building, their hearts pounding.

"Mr. Ethan, what should we do?" Ali asked nervously.

"Keep calm, Ali." Ethan tried to keep his voice steady. "We'll find a way."

Just then, Hassan and Maria arrived, bringing food and water, as well as some simple medical supplies.

"Mr. Hassan, Ms. Maria, how did you find us?" Ethan asked in surprise.

“We’ve been keeping an eye on you.” Hassan’s voice was a little apologetic. “Ethan, I get it. You’re right. Knowledge does bring hope.”

Chapter 123 Conspiracy

Li Jie and Tony were sitting in a hidden bar. There was a faint smoke in the corner of the bar. The low music accompanied by the sound of wine glasses clinking created a tense and ambiguous atmosphere.

"I really can't believe that Doom would do such a thing." Li Jie's voice was filled with anger. He squeezed the wine glass hard, as if he wanted to release his dissatisfaction in this way.

Tony seemed calmer. He raised his head slightly and looked directly at Li Jie through the darkness of the bar. "We can't underestimate Doom. His mind is unfathomable. Want to kill the Mandarin? This is definitely not a simple revenge."

Li Jie nodded, frowning. "But if the Mandarin really comes to New York, then we have a chance. With Latveria and the S.H.I.E.A. joining forces, the Ten Rings will have no chance of winning."

Tony sighed softly, with a hint of hesitation in his eyes. "But the problem is that the Mandarin's intentions may not be simple. If he really wants to assassinate Tony, there must be more conspiracy behind it. We can't take it lightly."

"Then what should we do?" Li Jie's voice was filled with anxiety. "Are we just going to sit there and wait for death? I don't want to see my friends get killed."

Tony's face gradually became solemn. He knew the worry in Li Jie's heart. The strength of the Mandarin should not be underestimated, and Doom's plan was even more terrifying. "We need to make a plan to ensure that we can respond quickly once the Mandarin appears."

"Plan? What do you want to do?" Li Jie asked eagerly, with a glimmer of hope in his eyes.

Tony slowly put down his glass, approached Li Jie, and whispered, "We need to find Doom first and figure out his cards. If we can grasp his movements, we may be able to counter the Mandarin."

"But Doom is hiding very deeply. It's not easy to find him." Li Jie shook his head, looking a little frustrated.

"I have a friend who has some connections in the underground world. He can help us find clues about Doom." Tony's eyes flashed with determination. "This matter cannot be delayed. We must act as soon as possible."

"Okay, I believe you." Li Jie gritted his teeth, a trace of fighting spirit ignited in his heart, "We can't let Mandarin succeed."

Just then, the door of the bar was suddenly pushed open, and a burly man walked in with a hint of disdain on his face. His eyes swept around the bar and finally fell on Li Jie and Tony.

"What are you talking about?" he asked coldly, his voice low and threatening.

Li Jie and Tony looked at each other, and Li Jie frowned slightly, "We are discussing some private matters, you'd better not interfere."

"Personal matters?" The man's mouth curled up into a mocking smile, "Do you think you can stay safe in this city? The Mandarin is not to be trifled with."

Tony stood up and said sternly, "We don't need you to lecture us. Who are you?"

"My name is Black Panther, and I'm a minor figure in the Ten Rings." The man shrugged nonchalantly, "But I know what you are doing. Doom's affairs are not for you to interfere."

"You dare to threaten us?" Li Jie was furious and clenched his fists.

Black Panther didn't take it seriously, and a scornful smile appeared on his lips. "Threat? I'm just reminding you. The Mandarin will not let go of anyone who dares to challenge him."

Tony looked at Black Panther coldly, thinking to himself, "Are you here to pass on a message, or do you want to take advantage of the opportunity to make a

fortune?"

"I'm here just to tell you that Doom is ready. His plan will not change because of your interference." Black Panther said coldly, with a sinister light in his eyes.

"We won't back down." Li Jie said firmly, the fire in his heart growing stronger.

"Do you really think you can fight against the combined forces of Mandarin and Doom? Don't dream." Black Panther sneered and turned to leave.

"Wait a minute!" Tony suddenly stopped him, "If you know where Doom is, why don't you tell us? This is also an opportunity for you."

Black Panther stopped and looked back at Tony, with a hint of hesitation in his eyes. "Chance? Do you think I will believe you?"

"We can guarantee your safety." Tony smiled slightly, his tone softened, "As long as you are willing to cooperate, we can let you settle down in this city."

Black Panther was silent for a moment, as if thinking about Tony's words. His eyes moved between Li Jie and Tony, and finally he sighed heavily. "Okay, I'll tell you a clue about Doom, but you have to promise me that you won't involve me in this fight."

"Deal." Tony nodded decisively.

"Doom has been active in an abandoned warehouse recently. I heard that he is planning a big conspiracy." Black Panther whispered, with a sinister light flashing in his eyes, "But you have to be careful, it's not a safe place."

"Thank you, Black Panther." Li Jie said sincerely, with sincere gratitude in his eyes. He held Black Panther's hand tightly, as if to convey his inner gratitude to him. At this moment, he deeply felt Black Panther's kindness and selfless dedication, and a warm current surged in his heart.

Black Panther smiled slightly, his eyes revealing a sense of satisfaction. He gently patted Li Jie on the shoulder to show his understanding and support. Li Jie knew that Black Panther not only helped him solve the current problem, but more importantly, gave him the courage and strength to face future challenges. This friendship was extremely precious to Li Jie.

At this moment, Li Jie realized that the value of friendship cannot be measured in words. The appearance of Black Panther was like a beam of light that illuminated his way forward. He was determined to cherish this friendship and return Black Panther's kindness with the same sincerity.

Li Jie took a deep breath and said to Black Panther with a firm look: "I will remember your kindness and will repay you when I have the chance in the future!" Black Panther smiled and nodded, indicating that he did not care about the return, but he believed that Li Jie would achieve something.

Li Jie turned and left, his steps firm and confident. He knew that no matter how many difficulties were waiting for him, as long as he had a friend like Black Panther by his side, he could bravely face everything. Because their friendship had become a precious treasure in his life.

Black Panther shook his head, a sneer on his face. "Don't thank me. Good luck to you. You're going to need it."

As Black Panther left, Li Jie and Tony looked at each other and understood in their hearts that the challenges they were about to face were far more complicated than they had imagined.

"We must act quickly." Tony said firmly, "We will go to that warehouse tonight and try to find their plan before Mandarin and Doom."

Li Jie nodded, feeling a sense of urgency. "Okay, let's go immediately."

The two quickly paid the bill and walked out of the bar. The night breeze blew towards them, bringing a hint of coolness.

"Li Jie." Dum sat down, his eyes sharp as a knife, "I have considered what you said."

Li Jie smiled slightly, raised his head, and his eyes showed determination: "Doom, I agree to cooperate with you, but I have one condition."

"Oh?" Doom's eyebrows slightly raised, the smile on his face did not fade, but became more mysterious, "Go ahead."

"We must not only kill Mandarin, but also completely destroy the Ten Rings." Li

Jie's voice was low and firm, as if adding a heavy weight to his decision.

Dumu was silent for a moment, with a gleam of thought in his eyes. He moved closer to Li Jie and whispered, "Do you know what this means? The Ten Rings Gang is spread all over the city, and they won't let us go easily."

"I know." Li Jie's voice was calm and powerful. "But if we only kill Mandarin, the others will continue to operate in the dark, and we will still not be able to get rid of their threat in the end. Only by completely destroying them can we ensure our safety."

Doom nodded, and the smile on his face gradually disappeared, replaced by a hint of seriousness. "I am impressed by your determination. Okay, I agree to your terms. However, we need a detailed plan and sufficient intelligence."

At this time, the door of the bar was pushed open, and Tony walked in, followed by several burly bodyguards. He saw Li Jie and Dum at a glance, and a relaxed smile appeared on his face: "Hey, it seems that you two are having a good chat!"

"Tony." Li Jie nodded slightly and motioned him to sit down. "We just reached a cooperation."

"Cooperation?" Tony's interest was instantly piqued. After he sat down, the smile on his face became sly. "Sounds good. What are you going to do?"

"We're going to deal with the Ten Rings," Doom said bluntly, his eyes scanning Tony's face, as if assessing his reaction.

Tony's smile froze instantly, his face turned serious: "The Ten Rings? Are you crazy? They are a huge behemoth! Their men alone are enough to put us in great trouble."

"We have the necessary resources and plans." Li Jie continued, "And we must act quickly and not give them a chance to breathe."

"I don't want to be your scapegoat." Tony frowned slightly, with uneasiness flashing in his eyes, "This battle is no joke."

"Tony, listen to me." Li Jie's voice became more determined. "We have been targeted by the Ten Rings Gang and will be killed by them sooner or later. We

only have two choices now, either take the initiative to attack or passively take the beating. Which do you think is better?"

Tony was silent, his inner struggle was obvious. After a moment, he finally sighed and nodded: "Okay, I'll join your plan. But we have to make sure everything is safe and not take any risks."

The corners of Doom's mouth slightly raised, revealing a satisfied smile: "Very good, the power of three people is always stronger than one. Next, we need to discuss the specific action plan."

"I have some information about the Ten Rings Gang." Li Jie took out a document from his pocket and handed it to Doom. "This is the information I collected before. It lists their members and activities in detail."

Doom took the document and flipped through it quickly, frowning. “This information is important, but we need more in-depth intelligence, especially on their funding sources and supply chain.”

"I have an informant who can provide more information." Tony suddenly interrupted with a cunning gleam in his eyes, "But his price is not cheap."

"It doesn't matter, as long as we can get useful information." Li Jie answered without hesitation, his eyes firm, "We need to act as soon as possible."

“Then, go meet your informant tonight.” Doom said calmly, “We must seize this opportunity and make sure everything goes well.”

The three of them smiled at each other, their smiles full of determination and resolve. Although the road ahead was full of unknowns and challenges, they were not afraid at all. It was as if there was an invisible force supporting them, allowing them to move forward courageously.

They know that the road ahead will be full of thorns and difficulties. But the faith in their hearts is as hot as a burning flame and cannot be easily extinguished. No matter how great the difficulties are, they will move forward without hesitation.

Their determination is as strong as steel and will not be shaken by any setbacks. They believe that as long as they persevere, they will be able to overcome all

difficulties and achieve their goals. On this thorny road, they will go forward hand in hand and never give up.

The night is getting darker, and the lights in the bar are flickering, reflecting the determined faces of the three people. Li Jie, Doom and Tony, three former lone wolves, have now formed an unforgettable alliance in this dark city. Their goals are clear, and their hearts are burning with fighting spirit.

As the plan progressed, Li Jie realized that the power of the Ten Rings Gang was far more complicated than he had imagined. They were not just a criminal organization, but also a huge network deeply rooted in the city's grassroots. Every member and every transaction was the foundation of their survival.

Chapter 124 Commitment and Choice

Under the warm sunshine, Harry Osborn's manor looks particularly peaceful. In the green courtyard, the white tent sways gently in the breeze, and several exquisite tables are filled with delicious snacks and champagne. Relatives and friends arrive one after another, and there is a hint of anticipation in their laughter. Today is Harry and Mary Jane's engagement ceremony. Although it has not been made public, close friends and family know that this is an event worth celebrating.

"Harry, are you sure you want to hold it here?" Mary Jane asked softly, with a slight worry on her face. She was wearing a light blue dress and her hair was tied into an elegant bun, looking both beautiful and nervous.

"Of course, dear." Harry smiled and held her hand. "This is our home, the best place for us to start our new life."

Mary Jane took a deep breath, her eyes flashing with mixed emotions. "But I don't want you to think that I'm just an accessory. My stage career means a lot to me."

"I know." Harry's voice became soft, with a firm strength. "But I hope you can focus on us. You will always be the brightest star in my heart, even if you are not on the stage, I will always support you."

"But I've already given too much for this role." Mary Jane's voice trembled a little, with tears in her eyes, "I don't want to give up my dream."

At this moment, the cheers of friends came from the door, interrupting the conversation between the two. Harry turned around and saw his good friend Michael walked in with an excited smile on his face.

"Harry! You are so lucky! Mary Jane is so incredibly beautiful!" Michael shouted, attracting everyone's attention.

"Thank you, Michael." Harry smiled slightly, trying to hide his uneasiness.

"I just saw your engagement ring, it's so perfect!" Michael said, walking up and holding Harry's shoulders, "Are you ready for the challenges ahead?"

"Challenge?" Harry smiled bitterly and shook his head. "I just hope to be with Mary Jane every day in the future."

"You have to cherish her." Michael said seriously, "There are not many people like her."

Mary Jane smiled slightly, but her heart was still heavy. She knew that her choice would affect their future.

"I hope you will be happy." Michael patted Harry on the back and turned to greet other friends.

"Harry, I really don't know what to choose." Mary Jane's voice interrupted Harry's thoughts again.

"Choose what?" Harry frowned and turned to face her.

"Give up the Broadway stage, or give up our future." Mary Jane's voice trembled, with helplessness in her eyes.

"You don't have to give up anything." Harry said firmly, "We can face it together and find a balance."

"But I don't want you to feel like I'm a burden to you." Mary Jane's tears finally burst out. "I love you, but I also love my career."

"Mary Jane, you will never hold me back." Harry's voice was low and powerful. "I hope you can pursue your dreams instead of giving up everything for me."

"But, as your fiancée, I should prioritize you." Mary Jane shook her head, tears streaming down her cheeks.

"You are my fiancée, but you are also yourself." Harry held her hand with a firm look in his eyes. "I hope you can make the best choice for yourself instead of sacrificing for me."

"Can you really accept me continuing to perform on Broadway?" Mary Jane asked with a hint of uneasiness in her voice.

"Of course." Harry said softly, "As long as you are happy, I am happy. We can discuss it together and find a suitable solution."

"I'm afraid that if I continue with the show, it might affect our relationship." Mary Jane lowered her head and spoke weakly.

"Relationships require communication and understanding," Harry said seriously, "If you're willing, we can face these challenges together."

At this moment, the door of the manor opened again, and more relatives and friends walked in, breaking the tense atmosphere between the two. Harry smiled slightly and turned to greet the guests.

"Welcome everyone! Today is a special day and we should celebrate together!" Harry's voice was loud and confident, attracting everyone's attention.

"Congratulations, Harry and Mary Jane!" Friends congratulated them one after another, and the atmosphere instantly became lively.

Mary Jane wiped away the tears from her eyes, tried to adjust her mood, and greeted the guests with a smile. Although her heart was still full of contradictions, she knew that today was their day.

"Honey, come here and take a photo with everyone!" Michael waved to her. Mary Jane forced a smile and followed Harry towards the crowd.

"Look, Mary Jane's smile is so bright!" Michael joked, and everyone gathered around and raised their mobile phones to take pictures.

"I love you, Mary Jane!" Harry said loudly in front of everyone, his eyes full of tenderness and determination.

"I love you, too, Harry," Mary Jane responded, still conflicted.

At the moment of taking the photo, Harry gently held Mary Jane's hand and gave her a firm look. At that moment, Mary Jane felt a kind of warmth, as if all the contradictions were relieved at this moment.

"I will try to find a balance." She vowed silently in her heart.

As time went by, the party gradually reached its climax. Amidst the laughter and joy, Harry and Mary Jane's hearts gradually moved closer. Although the future was still full of unknowns, they both knew that love for each other was the most important.

"We've walked this road together," Harry said softly, his eyes determined.

"Mary Jane, I think..." Harry tried to interrupt her performance, but his voice was drowned out by the cheers of the audience.

"Harry, wait a minute." Mary Jane shook her head slightly, with a faint smile on her face, but an uneasy light flashed in her eyes, "I don't want you to be laughed at because of me. You know, they will find any reason to attack us."

"But I don't want to see you get hurt." Harry's voice became firm. "We can find a way to make them shut up. I can..."

"What do you want to do?" Mary Jane interrupted, frowning slightly, "What are you going to do? This will only make things worse."

Harry's face changed, but he immediately regained his composure, trying not to look too excited: "I just want to protect you and don't want you to be disturbed at this time."

"Protect me? Do you think that's protection?" Mary Jane's voice rose a few degrees. "I hope you can understand that my career and my performance are my own choices. I don't want to make everything complicated because of you."

Harry was silent for a moment, and understood her difficulties. He thought about it, and suddenly an idea came to him: "Then, let's buy a theater company! Let you be the leader, and you will have full control of your own stage, and no one can interfere with you!"

Mary Jane was stunned, with a hint of surprise in her eyes: "Buy a theater

troupe? Do you think this is possible? This is not a small amount of money!"

"I'll find a way." Harry's eyes flashed with determination, "You deserve a stage of your own, not to be controlled by others."

"It would be wonderful if I could really be the leader and make my own decisions." Mary Jane's face gradually showed an expectant expression, "But... can this really be realized?"

"Of course!" Harry smiled and vowed to himself that he must make this dream come true for her.

At this moment, a quarrel was heard in the backstage. Harry's two good friends, Peter and Li Jie, were arguing about something.

"Listen to me, I must give Harry the engagement ring myself!" Peter's voice was loud, with excitement flashing in his eyes.

"Are you crazy? I am the most suitable candidate!" Li Jie refused to give in. He clenched his fists and his face was full of anxiety. "Harry and I have known each other longer. He must want me to do this!"

"You two stop arguing!" Harry walked over helplessly, trying to calm the argument, "I just want to propose, I don't want you to argue for me."

"But Harry, this is a big deal!" Peter said eagerly, "I have already prepared the ring, it is absolutely the perfect choice!"

"But I have one too! I've been planning it for a long time and want to give it to you at the most special moment!" Li Jie interrupted, his eyes full of unwillingness.

"Calm down, both of you!" Harry shook his head, feeling helpless. "I don't need you to fight over me. In fact, all I want is a true heart, not a ring given by someone."

"But this is different!" Peter retorted unhappily, "The ring is a symbol, it's your promise to Mary Jane!"

"Yes, I know." Harry's tone softened, "But what I want is to be able to share this

decision with her in a beautiful moment, instead of arguing about the ring."

"Okay, Harry." Li Jie sighed, as if he realized his impulsiveness, "But we still want to do something for you. After all, this is an important moment."

"I hope you can stand by my side instead of arguing with each other." Harry smiled slightly, grateful for the concern of his two friends. "Your support is more important to me."

"Well, we won't argue about it." Peter finally compromised, forcing a smile on his face, "But I hope you can consider my ring."

"I will." Harry nodded, but he was thinking about his own plan in his mind.

Not far away, Mary Jane's performance continued. Her voice flowed like a spring, intoxicating. Harry turned around and looked at the stage, his heart full of longing for the future.

"Do you think Mary Jane will like the surprise I prepared for her?" Harry asked suddenly.

"Of course!" Li Jie and Peter answered in unison, with expectant smiles on their faces.

"Then let's get started!" Harry had a determined smile on his face and vowed to himself that he would make Mary Jane feel his love and support.

As the night deepened, the lights on the stage were still flickering, and Mary Jane's singing echoed in the air. Harry's heart was ablaze with hope, and he knew that every step in the future would be for her. He would protect her dream in his own way and let her shine on this stage.

"I will make you the brightest star, Mary Jane." Harry whispered to himself, his heart full of determination.

At this moment, Mary Jane's performance ended and the audience gave her warm applause. She walked off the stage and saw Harry and his friends, with a warm smile on her face.

"What are you discussing?" She approached, curiosity gleaming in her eyes.

"Nothing, we're just proud of your performance." Peter responded immediately with a smile on his face.

"Yeah, you're awesome!" Li Jie echoed, his eyes full of admiration.

"Thank you." Mary Jane smiled slightly, feeling warm in her heart, "Your support means a lot to me."

Harry watched her silently, his heart full of love. He knew that he was about to take the most important step in his life, and this step would change their future.

"Mary Jane, I want to talk to you about something." Harry finally mustered up the courage and stepped forward, his heart beating faster.

Chapter 125 True Love

Li Jie's face became even gloomier, and a burst of anger rose in his heart: "Shut up! Gwen and I have nothing to do with each other anymore. The most important thing is that I am with Mary!"

"But you can't let go of Gwen, right?" Peter's voice was like a thorn that pierced Li Jie's heart. His expression changed from anger to confusion for a moment, and then was covered by anger again.

"You don't understand me at all!" Li Jie almost roared, his voice echoing in the empty banquet hall, attracting more people's attention. He pointed his finger at Peter, as if accusing him of ignorance, "Who do you think you are? What qualifications do you have to judge me?"

"I just want you to understand that you don't really want this engagement." Peter's tone was full of sarcasm, "You just want to prove to yourself that you can still have Mary, and that you can still maintain your demeanor in front of others."

Li Jie felt a sharp pain in his heart. Peter's words were like a needle that pierced his defenses. He took a deep breath and tried to calm himself down: "Mary and I are together because we love each other. I don't need you to teach me what to do."

"Love? Do you really believe that is love?" Peter's voice was filled with contempt. "The relationship between you is just like this engagement ceremony, gorgeous but empty. You don't know what true love is at all!"

"Enough!" Li Jie roared, his voice as deafening as thunder. His eyes flashed with anger, and the people around him held their breath involuntarily, fearing that they would miss the climax of the dispute.

"Who do you think you are? You're just a lost guy who can't even handle his own feelings, and you come to teach me a lesson!" Li Jie's tone was filled with

ruthless sarcasm, and his eyes were like knives, staring straight at Peter.

Peter smiled slightly, seemingly not caring about Li Jie's attack: "I just want to remind you not to make the wrong decision at the wrong time. You know in your heart that Mary is not the one you want."

Li Jie's heart was shaken, and his thoughts were instantly disrupted by Peter's words. Indeed, his relationship with Mary was not as strong as he thought. Although they had had sweet times, Li Jie felt more and more uneasy as time went by.

"What are you talking about? You don't understand the relationship between Mary and me at all!" Li Jie tried to refute, but his voice sounded weak.

"I know more than you think." Peter's tone was calm. "You are just avoiding what you really feel deep down. You want Gwen, not Mary."

Li Jie's face suddenly turned pale, and the fear in his heart surged like a tide. Peter's words were like a mirror, reflecting the struggle and anxiety deep in his heart. His hand unconsciously touched his chest, as if trying to calm the unspeakable pain.

"You're right, my relationship with Mary is not perfect, but that doesn't mean I have to give up." Li Jie's voice gradually lowered, revealing a hint of helplessness, "I just want to give her a promise, a future that I can protect."

"But can you really do it?" Peter's voice was still calm, as if he was examining Li Jie's heart, "Can you really let go of Gwen and focus on Mary? If not, then you are just telling a lie to yourself and her."

Li Jie's heart was like a surging sea wave, unable to calm down. His thoughts kept struggling in Peter's words, as if they were torn in half. Finally, he sat down powerlessly, his face pale, and a trace of confusion in his eyes.

"I don't know... I really don't know what to do." Li Jie's voice was low and weak, as if all his strength had been drained away.

Although their argument was intense, he could sense the pain in Li Jie's heart. "I don't mean to hurt you, Li Jie. I just want you to find your true self and not be swayed by the expectations of the outside world."

Li Jie raised his head, his eyes flashing with complex emotions, as if he was thinking about Peter's words. His heart was full of struggle and contradiction, wanting to maintain his relationship with Mary, but unable to forget the obsession in his heart.

"I'll think about it carefully." Li Jie finally said slowly, with a hint of firmness in his voice, but more of confusion. He knew that he had to face his true feelings in order to find the real answer.

Peter nodded, seeming to be satisfied with Li Jie's attitude. Although the argument between them was fierce, they finally reached a tacit understanding at this moment. The people around them gradually returned to the joyful atmosphere of the engagement ceremony, while Li Jie and Peter re-examined their relationship and their true feelings in this argument.

"I hope you can find your own happiness." Peter said softly, with a hint of understanding and sympathy in his eyes.

"You know what? I heard that the black cat you used to date has been taken away by Frank." Li Jie teased while stirring his coffee, with a playful smile on his lips.

Peter raised his head, a hint of curiosity and dissatisfaction flashed in his eyes, "Black Cat? Are you talking about her? So what? She and I have broken up, there is no need to mention her again."

Li Jie shrugged, not seeming to give up. "But she is a legendary figure. Even Frank is attracted to her. Don't you think this is interesting?"

"Funny? You're such a jerk." Peter's voice gradually rose, and he was obviously a little angry. "You always like to make fun of my past. Can't you respect my feelings?"

"I'm just trying to make you happy, don't take it so seriously." Li Jie blinked innocently, trying to ease the atmosphere, but Peter obviously didn't buy it.

"Happy? All you remind me of are those unbearable memories." Peter's tone became cold and his eyes turned to the window, as if he was recalling the past.

At this time, Harry, who was sitting next to them, couldn't help but interrupt,

"Hey, stop arguing like this. You two are good friends, why do you have to argue over these trivial matters?"

"Good friend?" Peter sneered, "If this is the way friends act, then I would rather not have such a friend."

Li Jie frowned, feeling a little aggrieved, "I didn't mean it, I just wanted to lighten the atmosphere."

Seeing this, Harry decided to mediate. "How about we use rock-paper-scissors to resolve this dispute?"

"Rock, Paper, Scissors?" Peter was stunned for a moment, then laughed, "Do you think this can solve the problem?"

"Of course." Harry nodded seriously, "If you are all okay with it, why not give it a try?"

Li Jie also seemed a little excited, "Okay, I'm not afraid of losing anyway. Come on, Peter!"

The two looked at each other, and Peter finally nodded, thinking that this might help ease the tense atmosphere.

"Let's do it then, are you ready?" Harry held out his hand, ready to count.

"Come on, three, two, one!" the three shouted in unison.

"Scissors!" Li Jie stretched out a pair of scissors and looked at Peter triumphantly.

"Stone!" Peter clenched his fists firmly, feeling secretly proud in his heart.

"I lost..." Li Jie's voice became low. Although he said that, there was a look of unwillingness in his eyes.

"See, I told you you would lose." Peter's lips curled up into a smile. Although he was still a little unhappy, the situation before him made him relax a little.

"This is not the end, don't be too proud." Li Jie sighed helplessly, took out a ring

from his pocket, hesitated for a moment, and handed it to Peter. "This is what I prepared for you. Although I lost, I still give you this ring."

Peter was stunned for a moment, and took the ring with mixed feelings. He understood the meaning of this ring. Li Jie had always wanted to give it to him, but for various reasons he never had the chance. At this moment, he felt complicated, a little touched, but also a little helpless.

"I...I don't know what to say." Peter looked at the ring and his voice dropped.

"You don't have to say anything." Li Jie's tone became serious, "I just hope that we can continue to be friends and not let these little things affect our relationship."

"I know." Peter nodded, his heart gradually calming down. "Actually, I don't want to make things too awkward with you, but sometimes I feel like you don't understand me."

"I will try my best to understand you." Li Jie smiled slightly, and the teasing in his eyes seemed to disappear, leaving only sincerity. "After all, we are friends."

"Yes, we are friends." Peter put the ring on the table, and gradually felt relieved. He realized that although Li Jie's way was a bit helpless, he still cared about him.

Harry watched the atmosphere between the two gradually ease, and heaved a sigh of relief. "That's right, there will always be friction between friends, but as long as we have each other in our hearts, everything can be solved."

"That's right." Li Jie nodded, a trace of gratitude flashing in his eyes, "Thank you, Harry. If it weren't for you, we might still be arguing."

"You're welcome. I just did what I had to do." Harry smiled easily. "Now, let's continue drinking coffee."

The three of them got together again and the atmosphere gradually warmed up. Li Jie began to tell some light-hearted jokes, and Peter couldn't help laughing, as if the dispute just now had never happened.

"Have you heard the joke about cats and dogs?" Li Jie began.

He had been thinking about an important issue: choosing a godfather for Harry and Mary's child. Peter flashed through his mind, and Peter was always so enthusiastic, as if he was looking forward to everything.

"Li Jie, what are you thinking about?" Anna, who was sitting opposite, asked softly, with curiosity flashing in her eyes.

"I'm thinking about the Godfather." Li Jie frowned and looked out the window. The sun was shining brightly and pedestrians were passing by in a hurry.

"Godfather? You mean Harry and Mary's child?" Anna's voice raised a pitch, obviously very interested in the topic.

"Yes, I think Peter is very suitable for this role, but I am thinking..." Li Jie hesitated for a moment, but finally said, "He always seems to put himself first."

"You mean he might see this role as an opportunity to show off?" Anna nodded, understanding Li Jie's concerns.

"Yes, I want to make this role more meaningful rather than a superficial honor." Li Jie sighed and his gaze returned to the window again.

"So what are you going to do?" Anna asked.

"I want to have a good talk with Harry." Li Jie's tone became firm, "I hope he can understand that the responsibilities of a godfather are far more important than a glamorous appearance."

At this moment, Peter pushed the door open with a bright smile on his face, as if he was full of endless enthusiasm for the outside world. He saw Li Jie and Anna at a glance and walked over immediately.

"Hey, guys! What are you talking about?" Peter's voice was as energetic as he was.

"We are discussing Harry and Mary's child." Li Jie smiled slightly, but was secretly thinking about how to guide the topic.

"Oh, about the Godfather?" Peter's eyes lit up immediately when he heard it. He sat down, put his hands on the table, and looked expectant. "I think I am very

suitable for this role!"

Li Jie's heart tightened, but he forced himself to remain calm. He knew Peter's enthusiasm, but he was more concerned about the profound meaning of the role of Godfather.

"Peter, do you really think you can do it?" Li Jie asked with a hint of temptation in his tone.

"Of course! I will take good care of their child, take him on adventures, and teach him everything I know!" Peter's voice was full of confidence, even a little proud.

Chapter 126 Work

The lights of the subway station flickered, and in the noisy crowd, Jane looked down at her phone, preparing to reply to a message. Suddenly, she felt a strange breath behind her, and when she turned around, she saw a thin man reaching into her backpack. Jane's heart sank suddenly, her phone had just been taken away by a pickpocket.

"Hey! What are you doing!" Jane shouted loudly, trying to attract the attention of people around her. However, the noise of the subway station drowned out her shouting, and the people around her seemed to be unaware of it.

At this moment, a figure flashed by like lightning. Thor, a stretcher bearer of an ambulance, happened to be patrolling nearby. He heard Jane's cry and immediately realized that the situation was not good. He quickly rushed towards the pickpocket. Thor was agile and like a cheetah, he approached the pickpocket in an instant.

"Stop!" Thor growled, his eyes revealing a determined look.

The pickpocket panicked and tried to run away, but Thor grabbed his wrist with such force that he couldn't get away. Thor pushed him to the ground and took Jane's phone back from the pickpocket.

"You bastard! How dare you steal here!" Thor shouted angrily, his eyes like knives, as if to pierce the pickpocket.

Jane breathed a sigh of relief and looked at Thor with gratitude, a warm feeling welling up in her heart. She never thought that she would meet such a hero in this crowded subway station.

"Thank you, thank you so much!" Jane said hurriedly, tears of emotion flashing in her eyes.

"It's okay. It's my duty to protect everyone." Thor smiled and handed the phone to Jane. "Is this yours?"

"Yes, it's mine." Jane took the phone, her hands trembling slightly, and she was still a little scared.

"Are you okay?" Thor asked with concern, a hint of tenderness in his eyes.

"I'm fine, just a little shocked." Jane shook her head, trying to calm herself down, "You're amazing, that scene just now was like a movie!"

Thor smiled softly, his brows furrowed slightly, "Actually, I was just doing what I was supposed to do. You should be more careful, especially in a place like this."

"I understand, thank you for reminding me." Jane nodded, feeling secretly grateful in her heart.

At this moment, the pickpocket struggled to escape, but Thor immediately held him down and said coldly, "You want to escape? No way! The police will be here soon, you'd better behave yourself."

"I just want to eat something, nothing else!" The pickpocket's voice trembled and he seemed extremely panicked.

"Do you know that stealing is against the law?" Thor's voice was as cold as a knife. "You will pay the price for your actions."

"Please, let me go, I will change!" The pickpocket's face was full of fear, his eyes flickered, as if looking for a chance to escape.

"Change? You stole a cell phone today, and you will steal something else tomorrow." Thor looked at him coldly, without a trace of pity in his heart.

Jane watched silently from the side, and her admiration for Thor deepened. She had never seen such a decisive and determined person, and it seemed that he had a reassuring power.

"My name is Jane, what's yours?" Jane finally plucked up the courage to get to know this hero better.

"Thor." He smiled slightly, his expression slightly relaxed, "I am a stretcher bearer in an ambulance, usually responsible for rescuing the wounded and sick."

"Wow, that sounds amazing!" Jane's eyes sparkled with admiration, "I never thought I would meet someone like you."

"In fact, each of us can be a hero in someone else's life, as long as we lend a helping hand at the critical moment." Thor's voice was gentle but firm, "I just happen to be here."

Thor's heart tightened and he immediately dropped the ring in his hand and rushed towards the scene of the incident.

"Hey! Let her go!" Thor's voice was particularly loud in the noisy crowd.

The man turned around, a flash of surprise in his eyes, but then he smiled grimly, ready to fight back. "Do you want to meddle in other people's business, kid?"

"I don't want to fight, but I will make you regret it." Thor said firmly, his eyes sharp.

At this moment, Thor grabbed the man's wrist and used his strength to push him away. The girl stepped back in fear, and Thor quickly turned around to make sure she was safe. "Are you okay?" he asked with concern.

"I...I'm fine." The girl stammered, her face pale.

Thor turned around, ready to continue to fight the man, but he had already turned and ran away. The passengers around him applauded and praised Thor's bravery.

At this moment, Christine squeezed over from the other end of the car, her eyes sparkling with excitement. "Wow, Thor, you're such a hero! Have you ever considered becoming a superhero?" She teased with a smile.

Thor smiled slightly, but felt a little uneasy. "I just did what I should do."

"What should be done? That's not something that everyone can do." Christine shook her head, her eyes full of admiration. "You know, that guy just now was really bold. He actually dared to rob on the subway!"

"I just hope he won't come again." Thor sighed, still feeling a little uneasy.

"You should be proud, Thor! You saved an innocent girl today!" Christine continued to tease, "Now you are popular with women!"

Thor smiled helplessly and was about to respond, but was interrupted by a burst of urgent alarms. The sirens of ambulances sounded outside the station. Christine clapped her hands with a gleam in her eyes. "We have to go to work at the ambulance center. We must be busy today!"

"Let's go." Thor nodded, but his mind was still thinking about what had just happened and he couldn't completely let it go.

The two walked out of the subway station and were greeted by a biting cold wind. Christine pulled her coat tighter and turned to Thor and said, "You know, that was so cool! I wanted to take a picture of it and post it on social media!"

"Don't be like this, Christine." Thor shook his head, "I don't want this to be hyped up."

"Okay, okay, I respect your choice." Christine said with a smile, but in her heart she admired Thor's low-keyness even more.

They walked into the ambulance center, and the busy atmosphere hit them. Thor and Christine quickly changed into work clothes and prepared for the upcoming mission. At this moment, Stephen Strange walked in, frowning and looking a little uneasy.

"What happened to you two on the subway?" Stephen asked as soon as he saw them, his tone full of concern.

"It's no big deal, Thor just came to save the beauty." Christine joked, looking extremely relaxed.

"Hero saving the beauty? Are you sure you're not exaggerating?" Stephen frowned, his eyes shifting between Thor and Christine.

"I just did what I should do." Thor repeated again, a hint of uneasiness on his face.

"Don't underestimate this matter." Stephen's tone became serious. "In this city, violent incidents happen from time to time, especially in places like the subway. You have to be careful, Thor."

"I know." Thor sighed, "But I can't just watch others get hurt."

“You’re such a fool.” Stephen shook his head. “Sometimes, keeping your distance is the wisest choice.”

Christine interrupted, "But Thor is not that kind of person. He always wants to help others."

"I understand how he feels, but that doesn't mean he should put himself in danger." Stephen looked at Thor with concern in his eyes.

"I'll be careful, Stephen." Thor nodded, but he felt a little bit resistant in his heart. He didn't like others' desire to protect him, all he wanted to do was to help others.

"Okay, since you said that, I won't say much." Stephen sighed, seeming to accept Thor's choice helplessly.

At this moment, the sirens sounded again, and the ambulance dispatcher shouted urgently: "Everyone, pay attention! There is a traffic accident, please prepare to dispatch!"

"Hurry, we have to get ready!" Christine said excitedly, with a gleam in her eyes.

Thor and Stephen also quickly threw themselves into the work, their hearts full of tension and anticipation. Every time they went out to drive, it was a new challenge, and they had to go all out.

The door opened, Christine sat in the passenger seat, and Thor was in charge of the emergency equipment in the back. As the car drove out of the ambulance center and passed through the city streets, Thor's heartbeat gradually accelerated, and he kept thinking about what happened on the subway.

"Thor, what are you thinking about?" Christine's voice interrupted his thoughts.

"I was thinking that if I could do more, I could prevent more harm," Thor

replied, a hint of determination in his tone.

"You've done a great job, Thor." Christine encouraged, "Every small action will bring about change."

"I hope so." Thor's voice was low, but he secretly vowed in his heart to continue to help more people.

The car quickly arrived at the scene of the accident, and Thor and Christine quickly got out of the car and threw themselves into the intense rescue work. The scene was in chaos, several cars collided, the injured lay on the ground in pain, and the people around were panicked.

"Thor, we need to divide the work!" Christine said loudly, "You go take care of the injured, and I'll contact the hospital!"

"Okay!" Thor nodded and quickly ran to an injured driver to check his injuries.

"Are you okay?" Thor asked with concern, trying to calm the other person.

"I... I feel dizzy..." the driver said tremblingly, with fear in his eyes.

"Don't worry, I'll help you," Thor soothed, quickly beginning first aid.

Christine coordinated and directed other rescuers to carry out the rescue. Her voice was particularly firm in the chaos, giving people a sense of security.

"Quick! Put him on the stretcher!" Christine commanded, looking around and found that there were other injured people who needed help.

"There is another person here! Come and help!" she shouted loudly, her heart full of responsibility.

After Thor treated the wounded, he quickly ran towards Christine, and saw her working with other rescuers. He couldn't help but feel warm in his heart. He knew that they were fighting together for those who needed help.

As time went by, the chaos at the scene gradually subsided, the injured were sent to the ambulance, and Christine and Thor finally breathed a sigh of relief. The two stood aside, silently watching the ambulance drive away, their hearts filled

with a sense of accomplishment.

"We did it, Thor," Christine said with a smile, a twinkle in her eyes.

"Yes, we did it." Thor responded with a smile, his heart full of hope for the future.

However, this warm space was filled with a tense atmosphere. Strange sat at one side of the table, with a thick case report in front of him. His brows were furrowed and his eyes were focused, as if he was thinking about some important decision.

"Strange, you have to make a choice." Peter, CEO of Osborne Group, broke the silence with a hint of anxiety in his voice. "This patient is in critical condition, and we need your technology to save his life."

Strange raised his head, his eyes were sharp and firm. "I know, but this operation is extremely risky. The location of the patient's brain tumor is very complicated. We can't take any risks."

"You are our best neurosurgery consultant, and your surgery success rate is 100%." Peter tried to convince him, with a hint of pleading in his tone, "Without you, we simply can't perform the surgery."

Chapter 127 Heartache

The noise in the bar was particularly harsh at this moment, and the surrounding customers cast curious glances. Jack's face turned pale. He didn't expect Strange to be so excited. "I'm just concerned about you, Strange. You have talent, but if you continue like this, you will lose everything!"

"Lose everything?" Strange's voice rose several decibels, and the people around him began to whisper. A trace of uneasiness flashed across his face, but it was quickly covered by anger. "I have lost a lot, you have no idea what I have been through!"

"I know you've lost before, but you can't let this sink you!" Jack's tone was firm, his eyes flashing with concern. "You can still change, you still have a chance!"

"Opportunity?" Strange sneered, "I don't need anyone's opportunity! I just want to live happily."

"Happy? Do you think this is happy?" Jack retorted excitedly, "You drink every day and get involved with different women. Is this the life you want?"

Strange felt a sharp pain in his heart, and memories came flooding back. He remembered his past glory, the moments when he saved lives on the operating table, and the incomparable sense of accomplishment. But these beautiful memories are shrouded in layers of fog in his current life.

"You don't know what I want." Strange's voice lowered, with a hint of fatigue in his tone.

"Then tell me, Strange, what do you want?" Jack's tone was filled with anxiety and concern.

"I want freedom!" Strange finally burst out his inner voice, "I want to be free from constraints and expectations. I don't want to bear that pressure anymore!"

"Freedom? Do you think you can get freedom this way? You are just running away!" Jack's voice was full of unyielding spirit. "True freedom is to face your own heart, not to hide behind alcohol and women!"

Strange was hurt by Jack's words, and his heart was churning. He wanted to refute, but he was speechless. At this moment, his cell phone rang. It was an unfamiliar number. He picked up the phone and heard the voice from the other end, and his face instantly became gloomy.

"Strange, you must come to the hospital. There is an emergency surgery that requires you!" The voice on the other end of the phone was hurried and serious.

"I'll be there right away." Strange hung up the phone, feeling annoyed. He turned around and was about to leave, but was stopped by Jack.

"Where are you going?" Jack caught up with worry in his eyes.

"Operation." Strange answered coldly, but he was struggling in his heart. He knew that the life he was escaping from would not last long, but he was unwilling to face the reality.

"I'll go with you," Jack said without hesitation.

"You don't need to follow me," Strange said impatiently.

"I just want to follow you!" Jack looked at him firmly, with an unshakable belief in his eyes.

Strange felt a warm current in his heart. He did not refuse and nodded silently. The two walked out of the bar together and set foot on the road to the hospital. The night breeze blew away the fog of alcohol and brought a little sobriety.

In the hospital, the lights in the operating room were dazzling, and Strange quickly got into the state, as if he had returned to that familiar world. His scalpel flickered under the light, as if it was a symbol of the desire deep in his heart. He began to focus on the patient in front of him, and a long-lost enthusiasm surged in his heart.

Jack watched silently from the side, and was relieved to see Strange gradually find himself again. He knew that Strange's talent was not only in technology, but

also in his love for life.

After the operation, Strange walked out of the operating room, soaking wet, but with a long-lost smile on his face. He turned to look at Jack, his eyes flashing with gratitude.

"Thank you, Jack." Strange's voice was low and sincere. "Today I feel the happiness I haven't felt for a long time."

"This is you, Strange." Jack smiled. "What you need is not to escape, but to face yourself."

He had just completed three operations, and although the average duration of each operation was less than five hours, for him, the fatigue of this day had exceeded his physical limits.

"Are you okay, Strange?" A familiar voice broke the silence in the corridor. It was his colleague, Emily, a nurse in the emergency department. She walked forward with a concerned look on her face.

"I'm fine." Strange looked up and pretended to be calm, but his voice sounded a little weak.

"You really look tired. You didn't get any rest last night." Emily sat next to him, her tone uneasiness clear.

"There are always things to deal with in the operating room. I can't stop." Strange put the Coke bottle on his knees, his eyes wandering.

"You can't always be like this, Strange." Emily's voice rose in pitch. "You know, if you don't take care of yourself, who will take care of these patients?"

"I know." Strange's tone turned cold, "But now is not the time to discuss me. You should go about your work."

Emily was obviously irritated by his attitude. She sighed hard, folded her arms across her chest, and looked straight at him: "Do you think you are a superman? Can you save everyone? You know, this kind of thinking will only make you more tired and even make you lose more."

Strange frowned, feeling unhappy: "I am not Superman, but I have responsibilities. Those patients need me, and I can't let them down."

"Responsibility is not just your burden." Emily's voice softened. "We are all part of this team. You need to learn to rely on others instead of putting all the pressure on yourself."

"Depend on others? Do you think I can hand over the responsibility of the operation to someone else?" Strange retorted, anger flashing in his eyes.

"I'm not saying that you should hand over the surgery to someone else, but I'm saying that you can seek help. We can share the pressure together." Emily's tone was firm but gentle.

Strange was silent, his heart was in turmoil. He recalled the scene in the operating room, the patient on the operating table, the rapid heartbeat, the bright red blood... He could not forget those moments.

"I know you're a good doctor, but you also need to rest." Emily's voice sounded again, with a warm concern.

"Rest?" Strange smiled bitterly. "Rest is a luxury here."

"Then can't you make yourself stronger?" Emily raised her eyebrows, with a hint of determination in her eyes, "You can try to do something different and give yourself some space."

Strange lowered his head and took a deep breath, as if thinking about her words. He realized that he had been demanding himself with an almost harsh standard, but ignored his true feelings.

"I just don't want to let anyone down," he said finally.

"You haven't let anyone down." Emily smiled slightly, with a hint of understanding in her eyes, "You are doing your best, but you also have to allow yourself to be vulnerable."

"You always understand me so well." Strange shook his head helplessly, a smile appearing at the corner of his mouth.

"Because I've been there before." Emily's voice softened. "I know how it feels. The pressure is like a mountain pressing down on our hearts, but we can't let it bring us down."

Strange's eyes gradually softened, and the tension in his heart slowly relaxed. He raised his head and stared at Emily: "Thank you, Emily. You always let me see things from a different perspective."

"That's what friends mean." Emily smiled. "Remember, Strange, take care of yourself so you can take better care of others."

At this moment, the door to the emergency floor was suddenly pushed open, and the emergency doctor Mike hurried in, his face full of anxiety: "Strange! Come quickly, the patient is in critical condition!"

Strange's heart instantly rose to his throat. He immediately stood up and his expression became serious: "What's going on?"

"A patient who was in a car accident was just sent here. His injuries are very serious. We need you to perform surgery." Mike said hurriedly.

"I'll be right there," Strange responded without hesitation, turning and walking towards the operating room, feeling a surge of nervousness and sense of responsibility in his heart.

Emily followed behind, her tone firm: "I will be with you, Strange, we will go together."

"Are you going too?" Strange asked, feeling touched.

"Of course, I won't let you face it alone." Emily's voice was as firm as a rock.

The door of the operating room opened, and the dazzling light shone on the white operating table. Strange took a deep breath and quickly got into the state. His fingers wandered over the scalpel, his eyes focused and determined.

"Are you ready?" Mike asked.

"Ready." Strange's voice was low and powerful, as if all the pressure had been transformed into an invisible force.

The operation began, and Strange felt a strong sense of mission. He knew that this was not just an operation, but a respect for life. He was fully focused on the operating table, and with every incision and every suture, his heart was slowly released.

"The patient's heartbeat is unstable, speed up the blood transfusion!" Emily gave orders in a clear and firm voice.

"Understood!" Strange responded, the blade in his hand cutting through the patient's skin, but he was praying silently in his heart.

The operating room was filled with the smell of disinfectant, and the instruments made a low humming sound, as if they were playing a prelude to the upcoming battle for life. Strange was wearing a surgical gown, with a blank expression and a hint of coldness in his eyes. His assistant, the young surgeon Amy, nervously prepared the surgical instruments.

"Dr. Strange, the patient's family is getting impatient waiting outside. They... they are very worried." Amy said cautiously, with a hint of timidity in her voice.

"Worried? What do they have to worry about?" Strange responded coldly, tapping his fingers lightly on the operating table. "I will do the operation well. The result is not important. The process is the key."

Amy frowned, feeling dissatisfied. She had always believed that doctors were not only operators of technology, but also emotional supporters of patients. However, Strange did not understand this at all. She tried to persuade him: "But what patients need is care and understanding. They are experiencing a life-and-death moment..."

"Care?" Strange interrupted her, his mouth corners slightly raised, revealing a sarcastic smile, "I'm not a psychiatrist, I'm a surgeon. My job is to cut and sew, not to comfort and soothe."

The atmosphere in the operating room suddenly became tense. Amy couldn't help biting her lip, anger and helplessness intertwined in her heart. She thought of the patient she saw in the ward a few days ago, the haggard middle-aged man, whose eyes flashed with desire and anxiety for life. She couldn't understand why Strange turned a blind eye to these emotions.

"I know you're great, Strange, but you can't ignore human nature." Amy's voice rose slightly. "No matter how high your surgical success rate is, it can't cover up your indifference to your patients."

Strange's face darkened slightly, and his eyes were as sharp as a knife as he stared at Amy: "Are you questioning my ability? I have never failed. Patients are just data to me. Only results are what I pursue."

"You're just turning patients into numbers!" Amy almost yelled, unable to suppress her emotions any longer. Her voice echoed in the operating room, as if accusing Strange of his indifference.

Chapter 128 Talking to oneself

"Christine, are you ready?" Her colleague Anna came over and asked softly. There was a hint of worry in Anna's voice, and her eyes showed understanding of what was about to happen.

"I don't know... I really don't know." Christine sighed, clenching her hands, her nails almost digging into her palms. Her voice was low and trembling, "I saved him, but now I'm going to end his life again."

Anna sighed and looked at Christine, as if trying to convey some comfort. "Sometimes, the way to redemption is to let go. Sibion's choice was wise, and he hopes you can see him off for the last time."

Christine nodded, but she couldn't calm down. She thought of the operation three years ago, when Sibion was hit by a car and was dying, with almost no hope of survival. She tried her best and finally pulled him back from the brink of death. However, fate played a joke on him. Sibion became paralyzed due to complications during the recovery process, lost his ability to move, and lost hope of living.

"He really doesn't want to live anymore?" Christine's voice was weak, as if she was talking to herself.

Anna looked at her silently, with a trace of heartache in her eyes. "He told you that he felt that living was just suffering. You know, life is not just about survival, but also about dignity."

"But I..." Christine's voice choked, "I saved him before, how could I let him go again?"

At this moment, the door of the operating room opened and Strange walked out. His face was heavy, as if he had just gone through an inner struggle. "Christine, don't think about it anymore. You can't save everyone. Death is a fact that

everyone must face."

"How can you say that?" Christine responded angrily, tears flashing in her eyes. "You are a doctor, you should understand the meaning of life!"

Strange sighed, his tone revealing helplessness. "I understand the meaning of life, but I also understand the inevitability of death. You can't take the responsibility on yourself. Sibion's choice is his right, not your burden."

"But I... I just don't want him to leave." Christine's voice almost collapsed, tears welled up in her eyes. She turned around and looked up at the ceiling of the operating room, as if it could bring her some comfort.

Anna patted her shoulder gently, "Christine, don't forget that you are his savior. He hopes that you can accompany him to the end, which in itself is a kind of relief."

"But I..." Christine's voice was choked with sobs and she couldn't continue.

"You have to understand that death is not the end." Strange interrupted her, his tone firm, "Sometimes, letting go is the best respect for life."

Christine's heart was full of contradictions. She remembered Sibion's helpless eyes on the hospital bed and the tears he shed during his recovery. She didn't want him to suffer anymore, but she couldn't face the reality of losing him.

"I need to see him." Christine finally made up her mind, wiped away her tears, and walked towards the operating room. She knew that this would be the last time she and Sibion met.

Walking into the operating room, Christine looked at Sibion, his eyes were full of calmness, as if he had accepted his impending fate. She walked to him, held his hand, and felt his cold fingertips.

"Sibian..." Her voice was weak and trembling, "I'm sorry, I don't know what to do."

Sibion smiled slightly. Although his face was pale, there was a hint of warmth in his eyes. "Christine, don't blame yourself. You gave me a chance to be reborn, and I am grateful. However, living is not the life I want."

"But I..." Christine's voice choked, "I don't want to lose you."

"You didn't lose me." Sibion's voice was firm but gentle. "I will always remember you. You are my savior. I hope you can see me off for the last time and give me a decent farewell."

"I will." Christine squeezed his hand tightly, tears welling up again, "I will stay with you until the end."

"Thank you." Sibion's voice was weak, but it was full of deep gratitude. "This is enough for me."

Christine felt a pain in her heart, she knew she was about to make a decision that she could not turn back. She turned around and looked at her colleagues outside the operating room. Anna and Strange were watching her quietly at the door, with understanding and support in their eyes.

"I'm ready." Christine's voice was firm. Although she was still struggling inside, she knew she had to face it all.

Anna nodded, walked into the operating room, and began to prepare the surgical instruments. Strange watched silently from the side, with a complex emotion on his face.

"Sibion, are you sure?" Strange finally spoke in a low voice.

"I'm sure." Sibion's eyes flashed with determination, "I don't want to suffer anymore. I hope to donate my organs to those in need."

"You are such a great man." Strange exclaimed, and admiration for Sibion arose in his heart.

Christine took a deep breath and tried to calm herself down. She knew that what she had to do was not only to end Sibion's life, but also to keep his life going and help more people.

"Let's get started." Christine's voice was firm and clear, as if she was cheering herself up.

The lights in the operating room were bright, and Christine was preparing

carefully in front of the operating table, praying silently in her heart. She knew that Sibion's choice was the last freedom in his life, and she would be the witness of this freedom.

As the operation progressed, Christine gradually calmed down. She felt Sibion's courage and determination, as if she saw another meaning of life in him. Although this was a sad farewell, it was also a new beginning.

"Thank you, Christine." Sibion's voice sounded in her ears, gentle but firm.

"You're finally here." Christine responded coldly, but her eyes did not move away from the window.

Strange sat down and ordered a cup of coffee, trying to break the awkward silence. "How are you doing? I heard you're busy at the hospital."

"Busy? Yes, very busy." Christine finally turned her head, her eyes as sharp as a knife, "But I miss those busy days. At least I know what I am doing."

"What are you talking about?" Strange frowned slightly, with confusion in his tone.

"You really don't know?" Christine's voice gradually became louder, and the customers around her cast strange looks at her. "You are no longer the young doctor full of ideals! Now you are just a coward who is afraid of failure!"

"Christine, don't do this." Strange's voice was low and firm. "I just want to protect my patients and myself."

"Protect yourself? Your so-called protection is just running away!" Christine became more and more agitated, tapping her fingers on the table, making a crisp sound. "You know what? Whenever I see those patients, seeing them struggling on the brink of death, I think of you. I think of the Strange who once bravely pursued his dreams, not the cowardly turtle he is now!"

Strange's face gradually darkened, and a trace of anger flashed in his eyes. "You don't understand the pressure I'm facing! Every decision may affect a life. I can't take any more risks!"

"Do you think I don't know?" Christine almost yelled, "I face the choice between

life and death every day. I see how doctors struggle in despair and how they watch patients die helplessly. But I have never thought of giving up! Are you willing to be a doctor who is afraid of failure?"

"I'm not afraid of failure, I just want to give the best treatment to the patients." Strange's voice trembled, as if he was defending himself, but more of it was helplessness.

"What do you mean by 'best'? Letting the patient lie in bed, letting the shadow of death loom over him?" Christine's tone was full of sarcasm. "Do you think death is the end? No, death is just a new beginning. You don't know how to face it and understand it."

Strange's eyes flashed with confusion, he lowered his head and remained silent. Seeing this, Christine felt uneasy, as if her words hurt the softest part of his heart.

"I don't want to hurt you, Strange." Christine's voice softened, "I just hope you can find your brave self again. You once believed in the power of life and that there would be a new beginning after death, but now you are just running away."

"Do you think I want this?" Strange finally raised his head, tears flashing in his eyes. "I struggle every day. Facing those lives that I cannot save, my heart is broken like a knife. But I can't give up. I can't let myself become weak."

"Weakness is not giving up, but facing it." Christine looked him straight in the eyes and said firmly, "You must learn to accept death and the fragility of life. Only in this way can you truly become an excellent doctor."

"But I'm afraid." Strange finally confessed, his voice so low that it was almost inaudible, "I'm afraid that I will lose more people. I'm afraid that I will become the executioner."

"You are not an executioner." Christine said softly, "A doctor's duty is to save lives, but sometimes, the way to redeem is not to prolong life, but to let the patient be relieved. You have to learn to understand this."

Strange was silent, with a trace of struggle and confusion in his eyes. Christine looked at him, with mixed emotions in her heart. She knew that the man in front of her had once been so determined, but now he was suffocated by fear and

responsibility.

"I don't know how I should face this." Strange finally spoke, his voice full of helplessness and despair, "I don't know how to continue in this environment."

"Then start re-examining your beliefs from now on," Christine encouraged. "You can learn something from every patient and gain strength from every failure. Death is not scary. What is scary is the fear in your heart."

Strange's eyes gradually became firm. He raised his head and took a deep breath, as if trying to digest Christine's words. "I will try my best to face it, but I need time."

"You can't carry your sister's death with you for the rest of your life." Christine's voice was clear and firm. "You can't be both an angel and a devil, Strange. You have to face your own heart."

"I know, but I... I really don't know what to do." Strange lowered his head, his eyes showing helplessness and confusion.

"You always hide behind honor and pretend to be omniscient and omnipotent, but in fact you are a coward who is afraid of failure." There was a hint of blame in Christine's tone, and her eyes pierced into Strange's heart like a sharp blade.

"You don't understand. I have to bear all this." Strange retorted, his voice full of helplessness and anger, "This is my responsibility."

"Responsibility? Or escape?" Christine smiled coldly, her eyes were like torches. "Do you think this can make up for it? Do you think this can bring her back to life?"

Strange's heart tightened, and his throat seemed to be stuck, making it difficult to breathe. He raised his head and wanted to refute, but found that he had no way to speak. Every word of Christine was like a heavy hammer, hitting the depths of his heart.

"I don't want to argue with you, Christine," he said finally, his voice low and weak. "I just want to find a reason to keep going."

"Then you have to face your fear, Strange." Christine's tone softened a little, but

still firm, "You can't escape it anymore."

Chapter 129 5 mixed flavors

"Everyone, the enemy we are facing is the Ten Rings Gang. Their strength should not be underestimated." The Latvian representative, named Emily, spoke in a firm and calm voice, "We must unite and develop an effective response plan."

"But Lord Man is very powerful, at least an A-level existence." Li Jie finally couldn't help but interrupt, with a hint of anxiety in his tone, "I am only a B-level now, and I can't compete with him at all."

"Li Jie, you have to understand that fighting does not rely solely on strength." The SHIELD agent named Harris frowned slightly, his eyes sharp, "Wisdom and strategy are equally important. We must find his weakness."

"Weakness?" Li Jie sneered, with a hint of helplessness in his eyes. "Mandarin is the core of the Ten Rings Gang. His ability is almost impeccable. Even if we find the weakness, what can we do? He will never expose it easily."

"Do you want to escape?" Emily's voice suddenly rose, her eyes were sharp, and she stared at Li Jie, "What we need now is courage and determination, not cowardice. As a member of the Illuminati, aren't you willing to contribute to the organization?"

Li Jie's heart was shaken. He knew Emily was right, but facing the strength of the Mandarin, his fear surged like a tide. He took a deep breath and tried to calm himself down: "I'm not running away, I just want to protect everyone. If I go to fight, I will become a burden."

"If we don't act, the Ten Rings will continue to expand and eventually threaten the safety of the entire city." Harris spoke again, his tone full of urgency, "Li Jie, although your ability is not as good as Mandarin, in this operation, your wisdom and experience are irreplaceable to us."

"What can I do?" Li Jie's voice was low, with a hint of despair in his eyes. "I can't even guarantee my own safety, how can I face the Mandarin?"

"You can be our intelligence officer." Emily's tone softened a little. "Before the battle, we need to have a detailed understanding of the enemy's situation. Your observation and analytical skills will play an important role in this regard."

Li Jie's heart moved, as if he saw a glimmer of hope: "I... I can try."

"Very good." Emily smiled slightly, with approval in her eyes, "Then let's start making a plan now. Harris, you will be responsible for mobilizing the resources of SHIELD to ensure that our actions are not discovered."

"Understood." Harris nodded, a glimmer of determination in his eyes.

"Li Jie, you need to sneak into the outskirts of the Ten Rings Gang and collect intelligence in the next few days." Emily continued, "We will provide you with the equipment and support you need."

"I'll try my best." There was a hint of firmness in Li Jie's voice. Although he was still nervous inside, he knew that this was something he could do.

A few days later, Li Jie sneaked into the outskirts of the Ten Commandments Gang. Under the cover of night, he hid in a dark corner, his heart beating like thunder. He knew that every step he took could be a choice between life and death.

"What are you doing here?" Suddenly, a low voice came from behind. Li Jie turned around suddenly and saw a burly man staring at him with sharp eyes.

"I... I was just passing by." Li Jie panicked and quickly made up a lie.

"Passing by?" The man sneered, a hint of suspicion flashed in his eyes, "Do you know where this place is?"

"I just want to find a place to shelter from the rain." Li Jie tried hard to look indifferent, but he was actually thinking about an escape route in his mind.

"Take shelter from the rain? Do you think I will believe your lies?" The man approached step by step, and the shadow on his face made Li Jie feel suffocated.

At this moment, a voice from the headset rang in Li Jie's ears: "Li Jie, stay calm and be prepared to deal with it."

"What do you want to do?" Li Jie tried to calm his voice, but a hint of fear flashed in his eyes.

"I don't like dishonest guys like you." The man's voice was low and threatening, with a fierce light in his eyes.

Li Jie's heartbeat quickened, and he knew he had to react. He took a deep breath and quickly adjusted his thinking: "I am not an enemy, I can help you."

"Help us?" The man obviously didn't believe it, and a sneer appeared on his lips. "What qualifications do you have?"

"I know some secrets about the Illuminati." Li Jie suppressed his inner fear and tried to make his voice sound firm. "I can tell you how to deal with them."

There was a flash of interest in the man's eyes, but he quickly returned to indifference: "Do you think I will believe you?"

"I can prove it." Li Jie's heart tightened, his mind racing, "If you let me see Lord Man, I can explain my worth to him."

"The Mandarin is not someone you can just meet casually." The man's voice was filled with disdain, "However, I can take you to see him, but you must be careful."

Li Jie was delighted. Although he knew it might be a trap, he knew it was his only chance. He nodded, trying to appear fearless: "I do."

A few minutes later, Li Jie was taken to a dark basement. There were several strange paintings hanging on the walls, and the air was filled with a depressing atmosphere. Mandarin sat on a high chair in the middle, his eyes were like torches, as if he could see through everything.

"Are you that small-time character in the Illuminati?" Mandarin's voice was low and majestic, making Li Jie feel suffocated.

"Yes, Lord Mandarin." Li Jie tried to keep himself calm, with a hint of respect in

his tone, "I have some information about the Illuminati that I want to share with you."

"Information?" Mandarin smiled slightly, with a hint of amusement in his eyes, "I'd really like to hear what value you can provide."

Li Jie's heart tightened, knowing that this was a life-or-death moment. He took a deep breath and mustered up his courage: "The Illuminati is working with S.H.I.E.L.D. and S.H.I.E.L.D. to deal with you and the Ten Rings."

Mandarin's expression changed slightly, and he was obviously interested in the news: "Oh? Go on."

"I can tell you their plans and their weaknesses." Li Jie tried to make his voice sound firm. "If you can give me a chance, I am willing to serve you."

"Lan, are you reading those instructions again?" Li Jie couldn't help but speak, with a hint of helplessness in his tone.

Lan raised his head and smiled slightly, his eyes sparkling with excitement. "Li Jie, these manuals contain a lot of knowledge that I have never come across before, especially the application of spatial abilities. I think they can help me improve my strength!"

"But you've been watching it for several days. Don't you feel bored?" Li Jie shook his head, trying to break Lan's concentration.

"Boring? How is that possible!" Lan's voice rose a few notes, and the smile on his face disappeared instantly, replaced by a hint of persistence. "I must master this knowledge in order not to be defeated in the upcoming challenges. You know, Captain Rogers and Iron Man are not opponents that I can easily deal with."

Li Jie stood up, walked to Lan, and tried to persuade her in a gentler tone. "I understand your thoughts, but you also need to take a break. Focusing too much on these manuals may make you lose your instincts in combat."

Lan frowned slightly, seeming dissatisfied with Li Jie's suggestion. "I know you care about me, but I can't let my guard down. The enemy we are facing is too powerful, I must do my best."

"You are already very strong, Lan." Li Jie's voice softened, and his eyes showed concern. "I believe in your ability, but we cannot ignore the power of the team. We need to cooperate with each other to truly defeat those powerful enemies."

"Team?" Lan's mouth curled up into a sneer, "In this battle, who can rely on whom? I don't want to rely on others anymore. I want to be the strongest version of myself."

Li Jie's heart tightened, and he felt Lan's obsession was deepening. He knew that Lan's strength was the pride of the team, but her paranoia might leave her isolated and helpless. "Don't you think this is dangerous? If you only pursue personal strength, you might lose the tacit understanding between us."

Lan stood up, a flash of anger in his eyes. "Li Jie, you don't understand me at all! What I'm doing is not for myself, but for all of us! If I become stronger, we can face challenges together instead of being defeated by the enemy!"

Li Jie took a deep breath and tried to calm himself down. "I understand how you feel, but I hope you can be more rational. Strong abilities are important, but we also need spiritual communication and trust."

"Trust?" Lan's voice was full of sarcasm. "In this cruel world, what can trust bring us? Only strength is the most reliable!"

"Do you really think you can win like this?" Li Jie's voice gradually became louder, and the anxiety in his heart made it impossible for him to remain calm. "Don't you understand that strength is not everything? What we need is the harmony of mind, only in this way can we truly defeat the enemy!"

The argument between the two was intertwined in the air, and the tense atmosphere seemed to raise the temperature in the training room. Lan's eyes flashed a little shaken, but it was quickly replaced by determination. "I will not give up my pursuit, Li Jie! I will become stronger, even if I am alone!"

Li Jie sighed helplessly, feeling a sense of loss. He knew that Lan's determination was unshakable, but he also understood that overly obsessive pursuit would only make her fall into deeper loneliness. "I hope you can listen to me, Lan. We can practice together and become stronger together, instead of isolating ourselves from each other."

"Do you want me to give up the pursuit of strength?" Lan's voice was filled with despair. "If I don't work hard, I will be abandoned and defeated by the enemy! I don't want to experience that feeling of powerlessness again!"

Li Jie's heart was deeply touched. He walked forward, held Lan's shoulders, and his eyes showed determination. "I won't let you go through those painful things. I will always be with you. We are teammates and friends. I hope you can trust me."

Lan's eyes gradually softened, as if she was moved by Li Jie's words, but she was still struggling in her heart. "I... I don't know how to choose. I have too much fear and anxiety in my heart."

"Then let us face these fears together." Li Jie said softly, "No matter how difficult the future is, we must go on together. Only in this way can we truly overcome everything."

A trace of tears flashed in Lan's eyes, and he finally nodded. "Okay, I will try to let go of those obsessions and practice with you. But I hope you can understand that I still want to become stronger."

Since leaving Kamataki, she found that she could no longer freely read those mysterious books as before. Her heart was full of loss and longing, like a bird trapped in a cage, longing for the free sky.

"Lan, what are you looking at?" Li Jie's voice suddenly came from behind her, interrupting her thoughts. Lan turned her head and saw Li Jie looking at her with concern.

"I'm looking at the instructions for some magic books." Lan sighed, his voice low.

"Instructions? Why don't you just read the book?" Li Jie frowned, seeming confused by Lan's choice.

"Because... because I can't read freely like I can in Kamartaki." Lan's voice trembled slightly, and a trace of loss flashed in his eyes.

Li Jie sat next to her and looked at her seriously: "You are always so obsessed with the past, can't you try something new?"

"Something new?" Lan sneered, "Are you talking about those online novels? I heard there are a lot of unpleasant plots in them."

"But it is also a form of literature, Lan." Li Jie was a little excited. "You can find fun in it, and maybe it can inspire your own creations."

Chapter 130 My Pain

"Thor, you know what? First aid skills can't be mastered by casual practice." Christine said mischievously, with a hint of ridicule in her tone.

Thor shrugged with a helpless smile on his face: "I know, Christine, but I really don't want to find someone to practice with. Every time I have to face Li Jie, he always likes to make excuses."

Christine glanced at him playfully, leaned in close to his ear and whispered, "Don't even think about escaping this time. Ask Li Jie to be your sparring partner. He's a good candidate, although he's always a little hesitant."

"But...what has he been busy with recently?" Thor frowned, seeming a little dissatisfied with Li Jie's attitude.

"Don't worry, I'll help you." Christine patted his shoulder with a firm look.

A few minutes later, Christine came to Li Jie's dormitory and knocked on the door. Li Jie was tidying up his desk when he heard the knock on the door. He looked up with a puzzled look on his face.

"Christine? Why are you here?" Li Jie was slightly surprised, with a hint of uneasiness in his eyes.

"I came to you for a favor." Christine smiled, with a hint of cunning in her eyes.

"Help? What's the matter?" There was a hint of vigilance in Li Jie's tone.

"Thor needs to practice first aid skills, especially CPR and artificial respiration. Can you help him?" Christine said directly with a firm look in her eyes.

Li Jie's expression suddenly became complicated. He thought to himself: CPR? Artificial respiration? This is not a simple matter. He muttered to himself: "I... I

have something to do today and I have to go out."

"Something?" Christine raised her eyebrows slightly, with a hint of dissatisfaction in her eyes, "You always have something to do. Can't you help a friend once?"

Li Jie's heart tightened, but he tried to remain calm: "Something really happened. I...I have to go to the library to return a book." He secretly cursed himself in his heart, wondering why he had to make such an excuse.

"Library? Didn't you go there today?" Christine's voice became cold, and her eyes were as sharp as knives, staring straight at Li Jie.

Li Jie was speechless for a moment, his mind racing, trying to find a more reasonable excuse. But at this moment, Christine's gaze was like a sharp blade, piercing his heart and making him panic.

"I...I still have to prepare for the exam next week." Li Jie stuttered, his voice getting smaller and smaller.

"Exam? You're so well prepared, why do you still need to go to the library?" Christine's voice became more determined, "Li Jie, Thor needs you, and you always evade your responsibilities. Is this really okay?"

Li Jie was shocked. Christine's words were like a heavy hammer that hit his heart. He remembered his friendship with Thor, the happy times they had spent together, and Thor's support when he needed help the most.

"I..." Li Jie finally mustered up the courage, lowered his head, and said in a low voice, "I'm actually not very good at first aid."

Christine's eyes softened and her tone was gentle: "It doesn't matter. Everyone starts from not knowing how to do something and then becomes good at it. As long as you are willing to try, you will definitely be able to learn it."

Li Jie looked up and saw the expectation and encouragement in Christine's eyes, and he was moved. He knew that he could not escape anymore.

"Okay, I'll go help Thor practice." Li Jie finally nodded, his voice firm.

Christine smiled with satisfaction, turned around and walked out of the dormitory. Li Jie followed closely behind her, but he was secretly struggling in his heart: Can he handle this first aid exercise with ease?

A few minutes later, the three of them gathered on the playground. The sun shone on the lawn, the breeze blew gently, and a tense atmosphere filled the air.

"Thor, are you ready?" Christine asked with a smile, her eyes gleaming with anticipation.

Thor nodded. Although he felt a little uneasy, he knew that this was a challenge that had to be faced.

"Li Jie, can you teach me?" Thor asked a little nervously, his voice a little low.

Li Jie took a deep breath and tried to calm himself down: "Of course, I will try my best to explain it clearly."

Li Jie then began to demonstrate the steps of CPR, carefully explaining each movement while Thor watched carefully and took note of every detail.

"First, you have to make sure the surrounding environment is safe, and then check the patient's reaction..." Li Jie explained while making corresponding movements, and Thor silently imitated him.

"Very good, next is artificial respiration." Li Jie's voice became serious, and his eyes swept over Thor, as if looking for something.

"Remember, make sure the patient's airway is open," Li Jie said, demonstrating how to open the airway. Thor watched carefully, and secretly made up his mind to learn these skills.

However, when Li Jie began to demonstrate artificial respiration, Thor couldn't help but feel nervous. He took a deep breath and tried to calm himself down.

"Thor, are you ready?" Li Jie looked at him with a hint of encouragement in his tone.

"I... I'll try." Thor's voice trembled slightly, but his heart was full of anxiety.

Christine watched silently from the sidelines, secretly cheering for Thor in her heart. She knew that this was an important challenge for him.

Thor slowly approached the mannequin, silently reciting Li Jie's instructions. However, when he was about to perform artificial respiration, a wave of fear surged in his heart.

"I... I can't do it." Thor's voice was low and there was a glimmer of anxiety in his eyes.

"Don't worry, Thor, take your time." Li Jie comforted softly, with understanding and encouragement in his eyes.

"I'm really scared." Thor lowered his head and his voice was almost inaudible.

"This is normal. Everyone has a first time." Li Jie said firmly, "The important thing is that you have to believe in yourself."

Thor took a deep breath and tried to calm himself down. He raised his head and said with a firm look: "Okay, I'll try."

He approached the manikin again, silently reciting Li Jie's instructions, and slowly performed artificial respiration. Although he was still nervous, he knew that he had to overcome this obstacle.

"Very good, keep going!" Li Jie encouraged from the side, and Christine nodded slightly, with anticipation glittering in her eyes.

After several attempts, Thor finally got the hang of it, and the tension in his heart gradually dissipated. He smiled, feeling a sense of accomplishment.

"Li Jie, you can't leave!" Thor's voice was trembling, as if he was trying desperately to stop something.

Li Jie shook his head helplessly, with an innocent light in his eyes. "Thor, I just went to buy a book for Lan. She said she needed it."

"She needs it? But you don't know how busy she is lately!" Thor's tone became more and more urgent, with a hint of anxiety in his eyes, "She has no time to read. You are just wasting your time buying books!"

Li Jie took a deep breath, feeling aggrieved. "But she always wants to learn more. How can I not support her?"

At this moment, Lan came down from upstairs. The morning sun shone on her body, as if she was covered with a layer of golden light. She smiled slightly, and her voice was as clear as a bell: "Li Jie, what are you doing?"

Li Jie turned around and saw Lan. The grievance in his heart suddenly surged up. He choked up a little: "Lan, I want to buy you a book. Didn't you say you wanted to read?"

Lan shook his head and sighed slightly: "I really don't need you to buy books now. My time is already filled with various things. I just want to have a good rest."

Li Jie's face turned pale instantly, as if all his strength had been drained away. He murmured, "But, I just want to help you..."

"Help me? Do you think buying books can solve the problem?" Lan's tone became firm, as if telling Li Jie how naive this decision was.

Seeing this, Thor secretly rejoiced in his heart and took the opportunity to interrupt: "Yes, Li Jie, what Lan needs now is relaxation, not more book burdens!"

Li Jie felt a sharp pain, and the grievance in his heart turned into anger. He glared at Thor angrily: "You don't understand Lan's feelings at all! She wants to improve herself, and I just want to support her!"

Lan frowned slightly, and his tone softened: "Li Jie, I understand your feelings, but what I need is for you to be by my side, not for you to do things for me blindly."

"But..." Li Jie's voice became lower and lower, and finally turned into a sigh.

Seeing Li Jie's silence, Thor was secretly pleased with himself and decided to continue to put pressure on him: "Li Jie, you'd better not go. We can do other things together, and Lan can help me practice. Don't you want to participate too?"

Lan nodded and smiled: "Yes, Li Jie, we can practice together and help each other, this is the most important thing."

Li Jie felt lost. He looked up at Lan, his eyes flickering with reluctance and desire. "But, I want to do something for you..."

"Li Jie," Lan walked up to him, gently holding his hand, her eyes soft, "What you have done for me is enough. You being by my side is my greatest support."

Thor smiled coldly beside him, thinking to himself that it seemed that Li Jie still didn't understand Lan's thoughts. He said disdainfully: "Li Jie, listen to Lan. We can practice together, and Lan can also teach us something new."

Li Jie's heart was churning, but he finally nodded helplessly. He turned around, and the disappointment on his face was heartbreaking. "Okay, then we'll practice together."

Lan's eyes flashed with relief, and he smiled slightly: "Thank you, Li Jie. I believe we will make progress together."

"What are you going to practice?" Thor broke the silence, with a cunning gleam in his eyes, "I just need an opponent, Lan, are you willing to join me?"

Lan nodded, his eyes firm, "Of course, Thor. I will help you improve."

Li Jie felt unhappy, but he knew he had no right to interfere. He could only stand aside silently, but a nameless jealousy surged in his heart.

"Then let's get started." Thor said excitedly, with fighting spirit flashing in his eyes.

Lan walked up to Thor and smiled, "I will try to make you stronger."

Li Jie looked at them and felt a sharp pain in his heart. He knew that he seemed to be gradually marginalized in this circle.

Practice began, Lan and Thor kept sparring on the court, and the tacit understanding between them made Li Jie feel more lonely. Every time Thor attacked, Lan could easily deal with it, while Li Jie could only watch silently, feeling helpless.

"Li Jie, why don't you come and try?" Thor suddenly shouted at him, with a hint of sarcasm in his voice.

Li Jie's heart tightened. He knew he was not good at this. Facing such a challenge, he had no way to cope with it. He shook his head slightly: "I... I'm not very good at it."

Lan turned around and looked at him with concern: "Li Jie, it's okay, you can take your time, everyone starts from scratch."

"Yes, Li Jie, you can try it. Don't be afraid of failure." Thor smiled coldly with a hint of provocation in his eyes.

Li Jie felt anger and shame intertwined, and a fire of unwillingness ignited in his heart. He took a deep breath and finally mustered up the courage: "Okay, I'll try!"

He stepped forward, nervous but determined. Lan's eyes moved over him, as if giving him invisible support.

"Come on, Li Jie!" Thor curled his lips into a disdainful smile, with provocation in his eyes.

Li Jie silently told himself to believe in himself. He tried to adjust his breathing, relax his body as much as possible, and challenged Thor.

The practice was in full swing, and Li Jie gradually found his rhythm under Lan's guidance. Although he was a little clumsy at the beginning, his performance gradually improved as time went on.